

System of positive polity.

Vol. 4

1825



Librarian

Uttarpara Jaykanta's Public Library

Govt. of West Bengal

SYSTEM OF POSITIVE POLITY.

SYNTHETICAL VIEW OF THE FUTURE OF MAN.

GENERAL INTRODUCTION

IN the two preceding volumes I have explained, in Vol. II. what the human order is in its primary constituents; in Vol. III. what has been the course which its développement, broadly considered, has necessarily taken. On the basis of these two explanations, my task in this fourth volume is to construct, once for all, the stand-point from which true wisdom may embrace the whole range of human thought and action, combining for this purpose, as a last step, in Morals the two correlative aspects which science was obliged to keep provisionally distinct. But if Philosophy requires that they should be appreciated in succession, not less does Religion require that they should be habitually united, as so only can they guide our

General character of the volume. The fusion of statical and dynamical sociology for the purposes of religion.

tive life, whether private or public.

It finds its natural place in this concluding volume, and, in order to determine man's future, I have continued in connection the statical and dynamical aspects carried on in succession. In every conception of the future, we must in fact respect equally the general laws of human nature and the great leading series of his actions, as these two constant conditions, and as such inadequate to fulfil its

Intellectually considered.

practical purpose. When we undertake, as my eminent precursor Condorcet undertook, to base political science on history, our judgment of the past must be so far reduced to system as to enable it to reveal the future. The continuity this implies requires as the condition of its attainment that man's progress never represent aught but the developement of an unchangeable order; the previous study of this order consequently presides over all historical explanations. But conversely, by a judicious fusion of the two points of view, we may judge the future with as much certainty as the past, so irresistible is the conviction inspired by a satisfactory agreement between our statical conceptions and our historical judgments; and it is in this ultimate determination of the future that we see on the one hand the principal aim of the two branches of Sociology, on the other the conclusive test of their reality.

Prevision as
admissible in
Sociology as
elsewhere.

We are in no way bound to discuss the prejudices by which, on empirical grounds, the process is rejected as inapplicable in social matters, though there is an unanimous recognition of its admissibility in the case of all other phenomena. The inconsistency only proves the non-extension as yet of the Positive spirit to the most complex order of events. The true characteristic of science in all cases is prevision, as its object at once and its test, at least in the eyes of all who recognise the subjection of all phenomena to invariable laws. This theoretical conclusion holds good in Sociology more than in any other science, as its phenomena are at once the most important and the most modifiable. Hence it was that Condorcet was led to conclude his sketch of the past with an outline of the future, and the failure of my spiritual father was solely due to the absence of a systematic view of history.

The fusion
is considered
religiously.

From the religious point of view, the definitive combination of the two previous volumes which this volume is intended to form, consists in the giving full effect to the supremacy in the scale of the sciences of Morals over Sociology properly so called, in obedience to the principle established in Vol. II. Ch. I. In fact, any really systematic guidance of man, even in his private conduct, is impossible without a certain determination of the future. This future depends in some degree on our own efforts, and therefore can never admit as exact a judgment as the past. But over and above the inutility of such exactness under this condition, to be efficacious our interference must adapt itself

always on one side to our nature which is unchangeable, on the other to the developement of that nature through successive ages. It follows that Morals, and this is true even of practical morality, are objectively dependent on Sociology—on statical Sociology in the first place, then on dynamical—as determining the primary direction of all our tendencies without exception. If our advance is to be really positive in its character, it must rest on the theory of order and of progress equally, the one indispensable as a security against caprice, the other necessary to ensure relativity. Without the theory of order the inadequacy of our conviction of the prevailing unity would expose us to indefinite oscillations; without that of progress we should have for guidance nothing but inapplicable or vague precepts in default of any particular adaptation to the given situation.

To ensure the final and complete fusion of the two aspects of Sociology, its dynamical must, whilst retaining their own proper character, be kept in constant subordination to its statical conceptions. The necessary and systematic elimination of time in these latter in no way impairs their reality, either from the scientific, or even the practical point of view. The paramount importance we justly attach to them is due to this, that from them we draw directly our conception of that fundamental unity towards which our nature, individual and social, more and more is tending. In imagination we often mix up all the ages in order to place more vividly before us the permanent conditions of existence, witness in particular the greatest of all epic poems, the 'Divina Commedia.' The general supremacy thus accorded to Statical Sociology is peculiarly appropriate to it when dealing, as in this volume we deal, with the future, for in that future we have man in his maturity, whereas in the past we see merely the gradual and preparatory evolution of the type.

Although, however, as science or as art, Morals must always be statical rather than dynamical, yet if they are to be in the full sense of the term Positive, there must be a large admixture of the historical spirit and feeling. If deficient in this respect, they would fall short of the relativity indispensable to the reality of all our conceptions, but nowhere so indispensable as in the immediate systematic direction of our conduct. Individual existence, as national, is so influenced by the situa-

Dynamical
to 1 sub-
ord. at it to
statical con-
cept ma.

The histori-
cal element
ever present.

4 SYSTEM OF POSITIVE POLITY. THE FUTURE OF MAN.

tion resulting from its history, that to regulate it as a whole we have always to modify the general conceptions of human unity by taking into account the actual stage of its development. In no other way can we form the manners and habits appropriate to each period, avoiding aberrations traceable to misconceptions of the difference of times, such aberrations being either the simple result of routine, or due to a false system. Hence it is that history remains barren, nay, often becomes misleading, for we see in it a mass of examples instead of looking for a series of preparations, in the inter-dependence of which lies their real utility.

The dynamical appreciation as presented in this volume.

In the preceding volume the dynamical conception is always so presented as to form the complement of the statical, on which it rests as its basis; each period, that is, is regarded as intended more fully to embody the type common to all, the type gradually, though imperfectly, evolved by its predecessors. I have now to carry on the succession of the ages—the filiation of man—so far as to determine the normal state, the advent of which is shown by the whole past to be at hand. Direct observation is here unattainable, but as a compensation we have the more complete predominance of statical ideas, and the more extensive series of historical judgments. To guard against illusion, in every step of our argument we have but to see that we are in entire accordance on the one hand with the nature of man, on the other with the sum of his antecedents. Thus doubly checked, we may, in regard to the future, arrive at conclusions as demonstrable as, though less exact than, the conclusions reached in regard to past periods; the investigation of which could not be of equal logical value from the want of a sufficient field for observation.

Completion of the method and the doctrine.

In accordance with the object of this concluding volume, its task is to complete the Positive doctrine and method by subjecting them, as it does quite naturally, to a treatment hitherto inadmissible, and yet the only one which can establish a satisfactory agreement between theory and practice. In it the judicious combination of statical and dynamical Sociology will define the legitimate position of time in the sum total of human conceptions. In it Morals will take their place at the head of the encyclopædic hierarchy as a direct consequence of the normal convergence of all positive theories towards the regulation of the conduct of nations and individuals.

This, the definitive constitution of the human Synthesis, may with advantage be condensed in a form suggested by its inevitable agreement with the constitution of the human brain. Whilst ever asserting the complete supremacy of feeling, I have been compelled hitherto to concentrate the attention mainly on intellect and action as the dominant sociological forces. But with the growth of these beyond dispute, comes the period for their taking their true place in the human system, an ultimate destination which leads to the explicit recognition of the preponderance of feeling as the independent domain of morals.

The pre-
siden-
cy of Mo-
rals accords
with the
cerebral con-
stitution of
man.

After indicating the general character of this fourth volume as devoted to the direct construction of the Positive religion, a statement of the object and connection of its five chapters is required for the completeness of this introduction.

The object
and connec-
tion of the
five chapters
of the
volume,

Taken together, their ultimate object is to lay the foundations for a policy capable of directing on system the unsystematic advance of each people towards the normal state, the time for which, as I have shown, is come. But the direct construction of this policy must be reserved for the last chapter, as it requires for its basis a sketch of the human order more complete at once, and more exact than the primary outline drawn in our social statics. In its larger half the volume deals with this capital operation, an operation which is of itself the inauguration of the state it describes; for what is the maturity of the race but its hitherto spontaneous action reduced to system? A satisfactory conception of the general future of Humanity thus attained, the proximate phase of that future will become quite intelligible, and as such will make it clear what in detail is to be the course of the transitional period of organisation.

General ob-
ject.

Examine these two consecutive operations, and it will appear that the essence of the one is the exposition of the definitive religion, of the other its application in the present. So real and so complete is the Positive synthesis, that its true exposition involves the definite presentation of the adult age of Humanity, just as the indispensable preparation for that synthesis represents its age of initiation.

For a satisfactory exposition of the religion of Humanity, the guide of our maturity under all aspects, we need first to grasp it as a whole, then to survey each of its essential constituents. Hence the first chapter establishes directly the

The objects
of the
chapters suc-
cessively.

fundamental theory of the Great Being, and as a consequence gives a general view of man's normal existence. Proceeding from this synthetical basis, we have in the second chapter the system of worship, in the third that of the doctrine, in the fourth that of the life, thus regulating the three elements of our nature, feeling, intellect, and activity. Then in the fifth and last chapter we intercalate the present between the future and the past, in order to close the Western Revolution, and in order to avoid its recurrence or reproduction in the rest of the world. So the volume as a whole, condensed in a general conclusion, on which follows the conclusion of the whole work, is destined to inaugurate definitively the Positive Religion as a consequence of its direct exposition of that religion, triumphantly applied to practice.

Relation of
Vol. iv. to
the proceed-
ing volumes.
(

Such a statement is for the present sufficient to produce the sense that the fourth volume is adapted to fuse and to complete the leading conceptions of the three others, in accordance with the spirit of the 'General View.' In it my religious construction and the philosophy on which it rests as its foundation, will be at once marked off from one another by the definitive transfer to Morals of the encyclopædic primacy originally assigned to Sociology in the proper sense of the term. Sociocracy, the ultimate, must thus be brought into connection with Theocracy, the initial stage of the race, and closes the period of transition which separates the two, a period of ever deepening revolution, the leading characteristic of which has been the growing tendency of intellect to rebel against feeling.

Effects of
this primacy
of morals.

The paramount position thus irreversibly assigned to Morals issues in the subjection of man's life at length to a real and complete discipline, a discipline in constant harmony with his true wants. The relative character distinctive of that discipline does not make it less regular; far otherwise, it gives it strength and vigour, as it eliminates caprice as well as all absolute tendencies by allowing for the just influence of time, by making, that is, our dynamical conceptions ultimately react on our statical principles. Man's emotional nature wears an appearance of unchangeability, but this is but an appearance; it is inevitably subject to constant modifications, slower it may be, but as regular as those of his intellect and his activity, the progress of which again, it should be remembered, bears upon

the means which feeling employs. The creation of Positive Ethics, the work of this volume, will as a natural consequence bring into relief the truth, that throughout the phenomena of human life, equally as with all other phenomena, movement and existence are radically at one. The natural result of making the emotional nature finally paramount will be to establish a complete agreement between theory and practice, as the impulse given by either concurs with that simultaneously derived from the other, both together aiding us in our systematic conception of the normal state and the last phase of the transition. The indispensable convergence of the two will appear in this volume to be a necessary deduction from our primary principle, that in all cases considerations of progress are subordinate to those of order. This law applies equally to the art and science of Morals; we have only to extend to the improvements of our own creation a relation originally manifested in changes over which we had no control.

In my judgment of the future and the present, I need not aim at a greater degree of exactness than that attainable in the preceding volumes in the treatment respectively of order and progress. Though merely approximative, it is sufficient for any immediate want. When succeeding generations come to need more detailed rules, they will draw them from moral science by the aid of an advance in sociological science, such advance at times involving a corresponding progress in Biology, perhaps even in Cosmology.

CHAPTER I.

THE FUNDAMENTAL THEORY, THE THEORY OF THE GREAT BEING;
WHENCE A CONSPECTUS OF THE RELIGION OF THE RACE AND
OF ITS EXISTENCE IN THE NORMAL STATE.

SPECIAL INTRODUCTION,
pp. 8-23.

The Priesthood of Humanity must embrace the future as well as the past.

Its foundations laid in Social Statics, the Positive religion has already irrevocably taken possession of the Past in its whole range, which never was within the cognisance of the earlier and absolute synthesis. As a sequel of this decisive step the priesthood of Humanity must now take possession of the Future also, that it may impart to the Present the combined impulse of its predecessors and its successors. It will then have completed its attributions by the addition of a new and equally characteristic function—the function of the prophet—to its primary office of judge, and so complete, it will soon overcome the existing anarchy, unprecedented though it be, for it will bring to bear on that object in permanent combination the whole intellectual and moral powers of man.

Functions of the Priesthood. Test of its competence.

The spiritual power of the West in its three social attributes of counsel, consecration, and regulation has more and more fallen into desuetude since the end of the Middle Ages, by virtue of the gradual downfall of the provisional beliefs. Raised to new life by the definitive belief, its future course will be one of unceasing and efficient action. The necessity of its revival is now submitted to the most unambiguous of tests, viz. its exclusive competence to thoroughly reconcile order and progress.

Difficulty of reconciling Order with Progress shown historically.

For an adequate estimate of the difficulty of this task, we must place ourselves at the historical point of view, as we are enabled to do by the preceding volume. The past is divisible into two great periods: the one, common in its essential features to all nations, includes Fetichism and Theocracy; the other, peculiar to the Western nations, effects as a spontaneous process the transition from Theocracy to Sociocracy. Now the two

periods, as successive stages of the education of the race, represent the one, order, the other, progress; and it is the existing discord between order and progress that expresses in its latest form the inevitable opposition of the East and the West. For the order compatible with man's initiation, taken as a whole, was really alone attained under the theocratic organisation, in which we have the true source of the opinions which in many respects still govern the Western mind. On the other hand, all the progress in speculation, in action, and in affection made by the West during the last thirty centuries has been more and more revolutionary in its character, as is most strikingly shown in the system of election and the impairment of the sense of continuity. If the close of the Middle Ages is always to be taken as marking the beginning of the Western revolution, it is so taken only because that is the epoch at which the movement passed into anarchy, on the exhaustion of Catholicism, the latest form of the provisional synthesis. But the three partial evolutions which succeeded one another previously had been in no real sense organic, save as regarded one particular aspect of our nature, to the sacrifice of the other two; none of the three could offer the peculiar completeness which attached to the discipline of Theocracy.

The Initiation of the race, then, under the auspices of the theological synthesis, first establishes order, but an order which has an increasing tendency to become retrograde, sanctioning, though unable to attain, entire fixity; then progress, but a progress which grew more and more revolutionary, a progress incompatible with unity. It was not till the latest phase of modern anarchy that the true principle of the movement of society could take a definite form and statement, the entire completion of the training process being the necessary condition of such statement. Hence its first proclamation had a tendency to sanction an indefinite agitation more alien to human nature, whether in the individual or in the society, than the stagnation of Theocracy. If this tendency were to remain unchecked, it would seem that in the future the two necessities of Humanity, order and progress, far from combining, would but stand in more systematic opposition, and so there would be renewed, in an aggravated form, the spontaneous divergence manifested in the past. Whilst retrograde theologians are alarmed at the thought that nothing short of miracle can

Oscillation
between
Order and
Progress the
apparent re-
sult.

prevent the entire dissolution of society, the metaphysicians who advocate progress justify their opponents' alarm by their aspirations, for the practical issue of those aspirations would be the overthrow of all the institutions on which society ultimately rests.

The remedy
to be found
in the true
picture of
the future.

In this state of things, to calm the blind anxiety of the former whilst correcting the vague hopes of the latter, what is needed is a true picture of the future of Humanity. The priesthood of Positivism, connecting directly Sociocracy and Theocracy, will represent the intervening period of transition as inevitable in the West, and as issuing finally in the modification and completion of the original conception of order by the substitution of a relative for an absolute order. The change is indispensable, and in no way implies a lower estimate of order; on the contrary, it consolidates and extends the power of the principle of organisation, as a consequence of duly subordinating movement to existence. This systematic conception of the human order tends to make it more complete and more stable, as more in conformity with our whole nature. Unquestionably the future will witness no return of the series, of a stagnant order, a dispersive transition, and as the latest step in such transition, an oscillation between retrogression and anarchy. What it will see is the continuous developement of a relative synthesis, such developement, even when the result of man's conscious efforts, consisting essentially in the perfecting the unity which constitutes the synthesis. Whilst, however, we allow for systematic modifications of order, there must be none of the abrupt changes which were fated throughout history to be the distinctive features of the second period of the education of mankind.

Affinity of
Positivism
for the pre-
vious re-
gimes.

The great task of the manhood of the race being the discipline of the powers developed in its period of preparation, there is a natural connection between our ultimate condition and the complete series of its antecedents. Each singly, looked on as a necessary step in our advance, claims and deserves our gratitude and veneration, a gratitude and veneration which will deepen as our estimate rises of the peculiar difficulties attaching to an evolution which had no guide but experience. Each singly offers more than this, it offers a special programme which, transitory in its original form, is eternal in its substance. Where in the past there was succession, in the future there

must be co-existence, for all the social states of the past, though apparently contradictory, answered to so many wants or tendencies of human nature, and as such must be susceptible of harmony. So we verify the complete and exclusive competence of the Positive religion by virtue of its relative character for the ultimate regeneration of Humanity, to which all our aspirations will converge, each having lost the peculiar features which for the time placed it in opposition with the others.

This affinity of Positivism for all earlier states, an affinity implied in its idea, has been already conclusively shown in the preceding volume, especially in reference to the earliest of all, Fetichism. But the full expansion of the idea belongs to our general survey of the future, for no religion could gain universal acceptance in that future unless able to sanction in a certain degree the various tendencies of the past.

At present I have to show the dependence of all these programmes, all alike unsystematic, on the programme of the theocratic period, the Theocracy alone being in its way complete and coherent.

All the programmes subordinated to that of the Theocracy.

True completeness constitutes the main value, as it constitutes the great difficulty of the discipline of man; if it do not extend to our whole nature, it must ever be precarious as well as inadequate. For thirty centuries the priestly castes of China, and still more of India, have been watching our Western transition; to them it must appear mere agitation, as puerile as it is tempestuous, with nothing to harmonise its different phases but their common inroad upon unity. But on the advent of Positivism, they will soon come to feel that the series of partial evolutions has issued in the most complete and most stable order, offering to the East an acceptable union with the West, the concert of the race for the development of all the attributes of Humanity.

Completeness the test of true discipline.

Priesthoods of China and India.

In its systematic constitution of this ultimate state, the definitive re-introduction of the basic formula of the Theocracy is of itself conclusive evidence of the complete agreement of the sociocratic and theocratic priesthoods. *To know in order to improve*, the motto of our primeval ancestors, will equally, with our remotest posterity, be the expression habitually used to indicate the bounden duty of the intellect to devote itself continuously to the service of society. The intervening period

The maxim of the Theocracy adopted by Sociocracy.

of transition from one to the other regime has for result the perfecting the formula, by inserting prevision between knowledge and action, as in the absence of this link the agreement between the extremes could not but rest on merely empirical grounds, until the idea of law triumphed over that of will. But the Western mind has been so trained by its more recent education to look upon prevision as the result of theory and the basis of action, that the intermediate term may be suppressed in the formula, provided that we are ever ready to replace it. By this adherence to its original form, we render it more apt to express the really important combination, making it a better definition of true wisdom without diverting the attention in ordinary cases to a progression which is universally admitted.

To appreciate at its true value the indispensable harmony of the two priesthoods, we must extend it so as to embrace their instinctive agreement as to what is the most important sphere of man's effort, of his intellectual no less than his practical effort. Sociocracy adopts definitively the great fundamental tendency of Theocracy to claim for Morals the first place, equally as science and as art. Whilst the theory of human nature controls both in method and doctrine the whole encyclopædic hierarchy, this, the highest branch of study, is in turn controlled by the directly practical nature of its object.

Naturally then the ultimate Synthesis is destined to consolidate and develop the initial in all its leading features, and it will enable us to form a juster estimate of the merit and difficulty of that effort, even whilst establishing an unity of a completer, purer, and more stable kind.

'Affinity of
Positivism
with the
three partial
transitions:

More unmistakeable still is the natural affinity of Positivism for the characteristics respectively of the three periods of transition, each of which, succeeding its predecessor by a necessary law, was the direct source of a distinct contribution to the solution of the Western problem.

(1) Greek.

Although our final state will subordinate the intellect to the heart more wisely than any other could, it will offer a more favourable field for the true culture of man's mental powers than was possible under the undue predominance accorded to the intellect in the Greek evolution. An integral constituent of Positive life, as the normal complement of happiness and improvement, art will evoke purer and more universal

sympathies than it could do when there was a tendency to sacrifice to it feeling and activity. As it has become the doctrinal basis of religion, science, no longer separable from philosophy, will, as disciplined by Sociocracy, enter on wider fields, and acquire a greater power than it could acquire under the undisciplined anarchy which, in the course of events, replaced the oppressive yoke of Theocracy.

In the future, Humanity will stamp with a special sanction ^{(2) Roman.} the two characteristics of the social life of Rome: its decided preference of action to speculation, and its constant subordination of private to public life. Drawing out the naturally collective character of human activity, so long of necessity individual, the adult age of the race will embody firmly both these conditions, which have lost but too much during its adolescence, from the inability of Catholicism to accept them. Whilst deeply conscious of the superiority of the industrial to the military life, Positivist nations will ever recognise that war had great moral and political utility as a preparation, being as it was the only spontaneous type of temporal organisation.

Catholicism was ungrateful to its Greek and Roman antecedents, but the regenerate West, whilst not deterred by this action of Catholicism from paying habitual honour to our intellectual and social progenitors, will know how to reconcile such honour with due reverence for the Middle Ages. Although the mediæval or affective transition could offer no real discipline for our powers, either of speculation or action, yet from the mere fact that it inherited those powers in an advanced state of cultivation, it was able to give a better form to the programme of man's action than that of the earlier theocracy. The Positivist, equally with the Middle-Age construction, only more directly and more unreservedly, asserts the supremacy of feeling, but without unduly hampering the intellect or activity, and as a natural result of its assertion vindicates the wisdom of Catholicism and the soundness of the feudal instinct ^{(3) Mediæval.}

The relativity, which is its characteristic, enables the final religion fully to recognise the advantages accruing to the race during the two periods of its childhood, from the fusion of the spiritual and temporal powers effected first by the priests, then by the military class. Not the less will it deeply honour the triumphant effort of its adolescence to establish the separation

of the two as their normal relation. The heart and the intellect concur in this conciliatory judgment as indispensable to the true love or the true understanding of the Great Being, the condition of such love or understanding being the right appreciation of the several periods of unsystematic preparation which must precede its systematic creation.

Affinity with
the modern
Revolution.

Impelled by the same relativity, the Western world will justly extend its gratitude to the singular period of anarchy which, in the course of events, followed on the above series of transitions of a partially organic character. Ultimately, no doubt, the whole education of the race in its entirety is the basis of settlement, but immediately, the settlement must issue from the double movement of destruction and construction; from the negative as well as the positive operation peculiar to the last five centuries. The true religion has to look for its adherents mainly to the conservative party; but for its origin, it could take its rise nowhere but in the revolutionary camp; there its first germs found a due welcome as heralding the satisfaction of an imperious want, the termination of the revolutionary movement.

Fetichist
period
reserved.

In this introductory recapitulation of the points of affinity between the future and each of the great constituent phases of the past, there seems at first sight an omission; it does not include, that is, the regime adapted to the infancy of mankind. The readers of the third volume, however, must have felt that this solitary exception, far from indicating less sympathy between Positivism and Fetichism, is on the contrary a consequence of their closer connection. The various forms of Theologism have wholly to disappear, leaving no other traces as a rule but the perpetual celebration of the services they rendered in their day; hence the obligation to recall their several contributions, so indispensable as steps in the preparation of the ultimate state. Fetichism, on the other hand, alone of the series of educational states, by virtue of its unequalled spontaneity, is destined to incorporation with Positivism, and the passage from the one to the other might be immediate. I was justified then in reserving any indication of this enduring affinity for the occasions which will naturally arise in the course of the volume for its exposition in detail.

Result of the
five com-
parisons.

Summing up the five antecedent comparisons, Sociocracy will combine the synthetic power of the Theocracy with the

threefold stimulus derived from the three successive periods of partial and transitional organisation, and the result of the combination will be the carrying out of the true programme of the revolution, which it is its task to close. In this way all the stages of the preparatory life of man, all without exception, contribute to inaugurate the definitive form of his existence. This convergence of all the epochs of the past to the future is but a consequence of the fact that the problem for the race has always been in substance one and the same: viz. to constitute as far as possible the general unity of our nature for the individual and the society. Not to mention that each fresh approximation to such an end necessarily rested on the succession of previous steps, the entire series is required when we come to the special question of the solution, the systematic solution, of the problem, for otherwise it were impossible to state it aright. We may add that the several programmes of the past all admit of combination, provided that we begin by disengaging them from the perishable forms which alone rendered them conflicting.

Such a fusion of the normal state with the whole of the existence which has prepared it, offers us at once the strongest guarantee for the stability of the future, and the best guide in determining its general character. As the philosophy of history rests beyond dispute upon social Statics, these are henceforth its most conclusive summary. For there can be no surer mode of gaining a right conception of the conditions of unity than by tracing it in the consecutive phases of its natural development. Hence the dependence of the future on the past, though not of our choice, is so far from an obstacle to our meditations on the process of reconstruction, that without it they could not be sound and fruitful. By its aid we may avoid, in regard to them, any Utopian speculation, or retrace our steps if we have fallen into one, and this even on the secondary points on which the series of our antecedents does not throw light enough to supersede the necessity of some additional deductions. *

The fusion of the future with the past guarantees stability and offers guidance.

Nor on any other method could we so present the future as that its conception, accepted by all the Western nations in the first place, then meeting, as it is bound to do, the wants of the less advanced portions of mankind, should gradually, by its free adoption, inaugurate the religion of Humanity. One Utopia after another has, during the last three centuries, claimed the

Their neglect of this method explains the impotence of modern Utopias.

guidance of the movement towards definitive reorganisation, none has ever united in real conviction two human souls. Their common failure is simply due to their always having attempted to conceive the future independently, and not as deduced from the past as a whole, a conception beyond our grasp prior to the rise of Positivism. Thus isolated, prophecy was inevitably as barren as it was chimerical when dealing with phenomena, the complex nature of which involves the highest difficulty for the imagination, even with all the aid derived from observation. In Biology we can hardly imagine a completely new organism free from all incompatibilities. In Sociology the difficulty is naturally much greater; there the freest dreams have ever fallen short of actual changes, the most striking instance being that of slavery. Yet the persistent recurrence in recent times of Utopias, undeterred by their inevitable failure, was a sign that the time was approaching for satisfying the instinct of continuity which has been characteristic of the intellect of Western Europe ever since its abandonment of a heavenly for an earthly future.

Properties of the Positive religion: the introduction of prevision; the basing unity on innate altruism.

We are thus led to recognise in the Positive Religion two properties, the one intellectual, the other moral, standing in close relation to one another, and in their consequences forming a clue to the leading conceptions of the present volume. These properties are, on the one hand, the perfecting the constitution of our minds by extending prevision to all phenomena without exception; on the other hand, the basing the unity of our emotional nature on the innate existence of the sympathetic instincts. The two attributes are inherent in true Positivity, and follow on the simultaneous substitution of a demonstrable faith for belief in the supernatural, of pacific industry for existence founded upon war.

First attribute—prevision.

It were a waste of time here to prove, that to determine the future by the past is everywhere the note of a really rational method, as establishing the true connection between speculation and action. During the last three centuries science has satisfactorily exhibited this power, its conclusive test, while industry has, as a natural result, popularised the conception. But the most powerful minds dare not as yet apply it in its most important sphere, owing to their not substituting in that sphere laws for causes.

None the less is it to social and moral phenomena more

than others, that rational prevision is applicable, seeing that continuity is the distinctive characteristic of sociological conceptions, and it is to them that, objectively, our thoughts on Morals must be subordinated.

Prevision
most ap-
plicable to
human phe-
nomena.

It follows that the future of Humanity offers the best field for the intellect as for the activity of man. To determine that future, and to inaugurate it,—for both equally we need the same principle of historical filiation, the recognition of the necessary dependence of the future on the past in which it has its roots, and from which it derives its guidance. The inductions of dynamical require, it is true, in all cases to be verified by comparing them with the deductions of statical sociology, but they are our sole immediate means for the right construction of that synoptical survey of man's future on which alone we can henceforward consent to lean.

The achievement of this construction will at no distant period ensure the universal triumph of the Positive religion, putting an end at once to agitation and stagnation, both equally noxious—both equally empirical. Theology and Metaphysics, from a sense of their common incompetence as regards this highest domain of human thought, will doubtless unite with the distinct object of resisting the solution offered by Positivism. Their ineffectual protest will but serve to display more clearly its exclusive competence to satisfy the chief want of modern reason.

The determination of the future, adapted as it is to form a rallying point for man's instinctive aspirations and his philosophic tendencies, is the foundation for the direct inauguration of the religion of Humanity as the natural sequel of this work. The result must be the definitive establishment of the true Synthesis, since all sound speculations will converge to regulate the general action of the Western nations. Moral science, thus tested and found able to stand the test, will be supreme from the subjective, dependent from the objective, point of view, and the combination of the two constitutes it the immutable basis of our unity, both in theory and practice.

The true
synthesis
now estab-
lished.

Allowing its just importance to this intellectual attribute of Positivism, we must attach superior value even intellectually to the moral attribute which completes it, and this on the ground of its greater influence on the creation of the true Synthesis. For this very reason Theology and Metaphysics reject

Innateness
of altruism.

instinctive altruism more unreservedly than they reject sociological prevision. The innateness of the benevolent instincts and the earth's motion are the most important results of modern science, as laying the essential bases, the one the subjective, the other the objective, of true relativity. The two prepared the way for Positivism, but had to wait for its advent for their due influence on man's whole existence. Dimly seen, each in its own way, at the very beginning of our advance, they could not emerge into full light till Monotheism had lost its power.

Innate altruism necessary if we would construct a systematic morality statically.

Standing in direct connection with the fundamental principle of the Positive synthesis, the doctrine of innate altruism alone enables us to establish a systematic morality, which, by virtue of its subordination objectively to Sociology, may take the presidency, subjectively, of the encyclopædic hierarchy. Before the establishment of this doctrine, in fact, Morals were universally recognised as supreme, but that they were so was due to the wisdom of the priesthood; their supremacy was an empirical truth not able to stand discussion. Theoricians aimed at placing philosophy, practical men politics, above Morals, as a branch of study which seemed limited to the individual, the social point of view being as yet inaccessible. If the unselfish instincts are not part of man's nature the problem of man's life is insoluble, and is not even susceptible of any synthetic statement. Unity from within, subjective unity, thus unattainable by man in consequence of the antagonism between the individual and the species, philosophy would have perpetually oscillated between the various attempts at an objective systematisation. Over and above, then, its value as an affective, the innateness of our sympathies has great importance as an intellectual, conclusion, as indispensable to any abstract conception of social existence. But by virtue of this very connection, its triumphant demonstration, hampered as it was, moreover, by the obstacles offered by theological beliefs and metaphysical hypotheses, naturally coincided with the definitive advent of Sociology.

Dynamically.

To give its full signification to this indispensable connection we must trace it even in social dynamics, though it may appear applicable solely in statics. It is easy to see that, were it not so traced, we could not form the practical scale of man's progress, which, originally material, becomes subsequently in-

tellectual, and finally moral ; for we should, in regard to it, be simply coordinating means without taking account of the end. Further, on the same hypothesis, any philosophical theory of the whole evolution of the race would also become impossible, from the want of any natural condensation. The preceding volume proves to our satisfaction that progress, in reference to the affections, whilst not amenable to any direct impulse, is the resultant, the necessary resultant, of the two simultaneous movements of the intellect and the activity. Had the advance of the two no effect in modifying feeling, it could never be more than a preparatory step, and as such could not be brought under any really comprehensive law. This necessary adaptation of the emotional changes, to be the condensed expression of the whole human evolution, cannot be a property of egoism ; it resides exclusively in altruism, for it is altruism alone which enables us to represent the entire movement by the gradual advance towards ascendancy of the social feelings. Thus it is that in the social instincts we find the source of order and the aim of progress, and this as a consequence of their non-contact with the external world, their dependent position making it, however, more difficult to estimate them, veiled as they are by the dominion of egoism.

Adopting this conclusion, the two leading attributes, moral and intellectual, of complete positivity are henceforth to be held inseparable. So long as social phenomena are not brought within the scope of scientific prevision, the innateness of the benevolent instincts cannot be demonstrated so conclusively as to overcome the repugnance of theologians and the sophisms of metaphysicians. But conversely, the past as a whole remains unintelligible if in its study we have not the guidance afforded by a full conviction of the innateness of these instincts, they alone rendering collective existence a possibility. In their origin a protest against an oppressive system, the two doctrines will now preside at the inauguration of the second period of man's existence, nor could we hope for a better aid at its opening. But, allowing this, it is still for the peaceful development of our maturity that is reserved the main growth of the two attributes, when all the struggles of preparation and installation finally over, the normal powers alone come into view.

Still, in reference to the two, we must not go too far in

Sociological
Prevision
and Innate
Altruism
henceforth
inseparable.

Previous recognition of the two in Fetichism and Polytheism.

claiming them as exclusive characteristics of the Positive state, as that might clash with what has been previously said of the general connection of the second life of the race with its first. It is only since its inevitable decline that the older Synthesis has been really adverse to these attributes. In its period of power it naturally lent encouragement to their spontaneous growth, which had been impossible without it. Firstly, there was no incompatibility between Fetichism and scientific prevision, the rudiments of which we trace in regard to celestial phenomena; still less was there such incompatibility in regard to the direct recognition of the value of the sympathetic instincts. And although Theologism proved less favourable, yet as Polytheism it encouraged both attributes on a decisive scale. By the extension of divination, the priestly, as the military, period of antiquity fostered the practice of prevision in the only form admissible under the then conditions of intelligence and action. Altruism could not receive its due recognition in the polytheistic Synthesis, but the vague presentation of it which that Synthesis allowed, was sufficient to extract their beneficial effects from the impulses of practical life, so long as the fusion of the two powers concentrated man's attention upon his earthly existence.

In Monotheism.

Passing to Monotheism, it is its doctrine alone that is responsible for its more marked opposition to these associate attributes, and the defects in that doctrine were long counter-balanced by the wisdom of its priesthood and the influences of the social state. In the name of its doctrine, Catholicism, the religion of our adolescence, proscribed the divination appropriate to our childhood, but could not substitute prevision, as that was reserved for our adult age, and the proscription would have seriously compromised an indispensable branch of mental cultivation had not some fortunate inconsistencies tempered the compression. Astrolatry, anterior in time and superior in value to Theologism, in defiance of the official belief, was the source of a philosophical impulse which saved our tendency to look forward from irreparable disuse, and gained the victory over the competing power of revelation. As for altruism, the monotheistic period of transition found in its system of life the corrective of its doctrinal antagonism. Its purely objective immortality gave, it is true, in principle the predominance to absolute egoism, but the result, in a social point of view, of the

doctrine was the separation, however imperfect, of the spiritual and temporal power, and the consequence of that separation was, throughout the whole Western world, the culture—the indirect it may be, yet the decisive culture—of our moral nature. The sympathetic portion of our nature was the supreme province of the divine power, and the defective theory of human nature was hereby corrected as far as it could be. Moreover, as any moral discipline whatever tends to second the spontaneous growth of the benevolent inclinations, they really found the greatest encouragement under the empire of the beliefs which were least disposed to admit their existence.

Practically, then, the adverse attitude of the older Syntheses to the two attributes of Positivism must be limited to the decline of Monotheism during the Western revolution, when the priesthood had lost its power of correcting the doctrine. But the peculiar circumstances of that period gave the ascendancy to an intellectual and practical movement, which, in spite of the empiricism and egoism that defaced it, led directly to the growth of prevision in science and of innate altruism in morals. The strongest condemnation of the reaction attempted in the name of order is its futile protest against this fuller acceptance of the two doctrines, an acceptance ever tending towards a complete systematisation.

The hostility of Monotheism confined to its decline.

The doctrine of historical filiation, the inevitable dependence, that is, of the ultimate solution on the whole of the preparatory state of human life, were incompletely stated if in its consideration we neglected the important point of the formation, the instinctive formation of the habits, nay, even of the principle adapted to the maturity of mankind.

Formation under the old Regime of the Habits and the Principle adapted to our maturity.

The most difficult point for Positivism in its effort to reorganise is to secure in the minds of men the continuous developement of the subjective existence. Each generation as it passes must ever feel itself by virtue of that existence placed between the sum of the generations that have preceded it, and of those which are to follow it, so as to give full effect to that basic continuity in the name of which it obeys the past and serves the future. We shall be bound to keep up an intercourse with the dead, and even with those yet unborn, more uninterrupted though less intimate than our intercourse with our contemporaries. We cannot avoid the difficulty of this requirement, and yet it were too great for us were it not

The Habits.

for the previous theological training, which yet had no eye to this capital result. Fetichism gave life to all around us, but in Fetichism we were never in contact with any but actually living, though in many cases absent, beings. It was during the long period of Theologism that we gained the habit of living in the presence of purely ideal beings, in whom, however, none the less was our whole destiny bound up. And although the rise and growth of this habit—of this subjective life—were necessarily due in larger proportion to Polytheism, it was Monotheism which organised it provisionally into a system, and by so doing in some degree made amends for the diminution of intensity it produced.

The Prin-
ciple.

Lastly, when we come to consider the fundamental conception of the new Synthesis, it is not difficult to see, in the light of the last volume, a distinct preparation of it running through the whole past. To minds influenced by the existing anarchy, every collective being tends to present itself as a mere entity, yet none the less is it true that no coherence, no dignity have been or are possible for the individual unless in subordination to some larger and composite existence. It is only in dependence on some such existence that we can satisfy our desire to perpetuate this transitory life, for we thus link it to an imperishable being. This, the direct mode of satisfaction, must be held to have long preceded the indirect mode due to the fictions of Theology, since it dates from Fetichism, being a consequence of the creation by Fetichism of the Family. This primal solution was never superseded by the promises of supernatural religion, for its promises, though increasing in attractiveness, appealed exclusively to man's selfish instincts. Unconsciously he was constantly drawn on by his unselfish affections to extend his relations, so the better to secure a subjective immortality. Prior to the impulse given by Monotheism towards absolute isolation as the true aim of each individual, Polytheism in both its forms, sacerdotal and military, had already definitively created the Country, and in practice the influence of the idea habitually overbore that of the monotheistic theory.

Humanity.

The Family and the Country, these are the two collective beings which in due succession were to lead by a natural process to the conception and the feeling of Humanity, which may be looked on as the common country or the universal

family. The three complex terms will ever be the successive steps of a natural progression indispensable for our heart and intellect if we would reach the true Synthesis. On a comparison of the two terms peculiar to the earlier period, we see at once that the larger union is of a nature to foster our sense of dignity, the more intimate to insure fixity of existence. The family is the basis of the state, but it requires the influence of the state upon it to perfect it. They react one on the other, and are thus seen to be both equally connected with the term which completes the series of collective existences.

* On a closer consideration of this synthetic progression, we see in it an announcement, as it were, of the proximate advent of the third term, Humanity, by the intercalation, after the second, of a new and capital conception.

The West
intercalated.

Between the Family and the State Theocracy had introduced the Caste, on the ground of its value as a combination of birth and calling. Similarly Catholicism legitimately avails itself of the distinction between the two powers to introduce the conception of the West, the immediate precursor of Humanity, which it prepares by familiarising us with a purely spiritual union. This completes the preparatory process needed to enable us to feel and to conceive the Great Being, though each subdivision of that process is threatened with absolute impuissance by the anarchy of modern times. The survey shows us how deeply the reconstruction offered by Positivism is rooted in the past—how it will realise all the aspirations of that past—only under new forms, as the condition of their converging.

Intercala-
tion of the
West be-
tween the
City and
Humanity.

The nature and object of the volume necessitated the special introduction here given. It is sufficient to place us in the frame of mind appropriate to the construction—a construction such as has never before been attempted—on which I now enter without further preface. The imminent danger of such a construction's sinking into a utopia can only be avoided by keeping constantly in view the earlier history of each institution, its roots in the past. This we may do by the aid of the two preceding volumes, so far at least that the regeneration of the world by Positivism may be shown in the present volume to be as indispensable as it is inevitable, in that it offers the sole issue of the Western Revolution. The process of determining the future will be simply the continuation and develop-

The deter-
mination of
the future
depends on
the explana-
tion of the
past. Ob-
stacles not
to be over-
rated.

ment of the method on which I have throughout relied for treating in succession the several phases of the past, each of which in turn was, relatively to its predecessor, future. We must not attach too great weight to the obstacles presented by the spread of disorder. As it spreads, the aspirations after an universal order grow stronger as they have ever done; and the vague presentiment of that order simply demands for the satisfaction of ardent longings its systematic construction. The subversion of the civic and even family ties with which we are now threatened cannot conceal an undefined tendency towards the regeneration which shall place them on a new, sounder, and purer basis, by bringing them into their proper subordination to the only tie which has strength enough to overcome collective selfishness in all its forms. And although it is the longing for order which is above all satisfied by the Religion of Humanity, its first welcome was from the instincts of progress which it undertakes to discipline.

Systematic
Explanation
of Human-
ity.
Preparation
for it in the
previous
volumes.

In entering on the systematic exposition of Humanity, as the basis of the Positive Religion, I presuppose in my readers a familiarity with the earlier volumes and their successive contributions, constituting a natural preparation of the subject. The first volume dealt directly with the conception in its general outline; the second explained its nature in the abstract; the third treated its historical and concrete development. The three facilitate greatly the detailed construction of the present volume, the crowning effort of the work, but they cannot take its place.

Humanity
real and
useful.

Above all, our previous labour warrants us in considering the conception of Humanity as having stood satisfactorily the two general tests of all positive conceptions, that they should be real and be useful.

(a) Its
Reality.

Were there solid grounds for contesting the existence of the Great Being its kingdom could not be at hand. But at its present stage its existence needs no proof; its reality is deeply stamped on all its creations, in morals, in the arts and sciences, in industry; in all of which, by positive analysis, we trace the co-operation of all ages and nations. The less general, the less durable the result, as in industry, the more has this co-operation of time and place been ever recognised, as the greater facility of attainment throws it open to larger numbers to share in it, and this of itself challenges recognition. Where the intensity

of the individual effort masks the influence of the collective, the sublimity of the results of that effort removes the mask, as is evidenced by the incomparable poem in which Dante, under the stimulus of the Middle Ages, has unconsciously embodied the whole system of Catholicism. It is a consequence of the indivisibility which characterises human nature that each particular proof of the highest Unity, Humanity, strengthens all the others, and might logically serve in lieu of them, but that it is wiser to multiply demonstrations inseparably bound up with our noblest emotions. All the current sophisms, of anarchical or retrograde origin, against the accumulating evidence of the existence of Humanity, are inherently self-contradictory, in that the very language in which the blasphemy finds vent is of all human constructions the most social. And no protest has yet been consequent enough to dare to deny also the existence of the Family or the Country, both equally with Humanity, by their nature composite beings, composite whether we regard coexistence or succession, only more limited in extent, and so facilitating our perception of co-operation.

That the conception of Humanity and the feelings it evokes are useful—this is a point which the individualist, be he theologian or metaphysician, can hardly dispute as he disputes their reality. The more sincere among them do not dispute it; they limit themselves to asserting the superiority of their Synthesis as regards man's interests in the other world, leaving this world to the wise guidance of Positivism, which accepts the arrangement. Impracticable, so long as the government of the world we know necessarily vested in theologians of some denomination or other, this final settlement is inevitable when rivals appear, avowing a contemptuous indifference to heaven, and concentrating with dignity their interest upon earth. Then it is at once generally felt, that to govern the world we require on the one hand the knowledge of its laws, on the other, a real interest in its destinies. Exiles in a world governed by unintelligible caprice,—all who so look on themselves are by that very fact incapable of swaying it, for they can as little imagine its future as they can interpret its past. But the exclusive competence of the Positivist conception for the direction of human affairs may be best shown by reference to the question of universality, a question distinctly broached twenty

(b) Its
Utility.

centuries ago, but not answered. It awaits its answer from Humanity, the older Synthesis having evidently failed.

Successive
germs of the
conception.

It were needless to dwell longer on these two general properties of reality and utility, they will come out more and more clearly as we proceed. Before proceeding, however, to the direct statement of the theory of the Great Being, I must here pass in review, in regular order, the germs of that conception. It is of importance, in the case of this basic principle, to bring out with more than usual distinctness the filiation of ideas; a point always to be attended to in synthetical conceptions.

The fact of man's living in society led, at an early period, Feeling to a rudimentary conception, without any rational basis, of Humanity. Pure Fetichism was unable, it is true, to get beyond the family, but within that sphere it gave distinct expression to continuity, primarily in reference to the coming generation, but extending it subsequently to the preceding, a progress dating from the institution of the Elders. But it was more especially civic existence, in which alone there could be a satisfactory developement of the intellect and activity, which originated the tendency, inherent in every human society, to consider itself the nucleus of Humanity. Polytheism—Conservative Polytheism—gave a direct encouragement to this aspiration after universality by the comprehensiveness of its synthesis. The intellectual Polytheism called out the esthetic and scientific powers of man, an implicit foreshadowing of the general convergence of his efforts. The social Polytheism awoke a sense, never again to be lost, of this convergence of the Race, by its successful organisation, under the only form then practically admissible, of collective action. The last step was taken, and the course of preparation was complete, when Monotheism formed a spiritual union between a number of nations politically independent.

In spite of the anarchy of post-Catholic times, this general result of the education of mankind tended gradually to assume a systematic shape, in consequence of the general adoption of the only form of intellectual and practical activity which is susceptible of universal acceptance. The utter collapse of the theological and military regime was really favourable to this tendency, as it evidenced the want of a synthesis based on positive science and peace. In the latest phase of the Western

revolution, the twofold movement of destruction and reconstruction threw up successively the germs from which immediately sprang the systematic conception of the Great Being.

This capital advance, marking as it did the point at which the intellect at length overtook the feeling of man, was due to the undesigned concurrence of three general propositions, enunciated respectively by Pascal, Leibnitz, and Condorcet. Although originating solely in the scientific evolution, the first was an adequate expression of the convergence of the whole past towards the present, as it likened the developement of the race to that of an individual. The second perfected the inchoate notion of the progression which concerns man, by making the future depend on the present. The two together formed the introduction to the third, the logical conclusion from which is the direct conception of Humanity, for it conceives of the species as one single people. The three are the immediate precursors of the definitive systematisation reserved for me, the systematisation in which one and the same principle is to serve as the condensed expression of the feelings, thoughts, and actions peculiar to Humanity.

The three preliminary
opinions of
Pascal, Leib-
nitz, Con-
dorcet.

The Great Being is the whole constituted by the beings, past, future, and present, which co-operate willingly in perfecting the order of the world. Every gregarious animal race has a natural tendency to such co-operation. But it is only the paramount race on each planet that can attain unity as a race, for its ascent to power necessarily checks that of the lower animals. This justifies, in our systematic definition of the composite being, our omitting its peculiar species. On the other hand, the spontaneity of the co-operation and its external end are clearly indispensable conditions, if it is to be consistent and permanent. Eliminating, then, what may be understood without indistinctness, we confine our definition of the Great Being to: *the continuous whole formed by the beings which converge*. In this condensed form I shall often make implicit use of the definition, leaving it to the reader to reintegrate the terms suppressed.

Definition of
Humanity.

Starting from this definition, the theory of the Great Being resolves itself into (1) its constitution, (2) its position, (3) its destination.

Theory of
Humanity.

And first for its constitution. The great point is to distinguish between the peculiar constituent elements, immediate

(1) Consti-
tution.
Distinction

between
elements
and agents.

or mediate, of the supreme organism, and the agents or representatives it requires. Every being must be composed of parts similar to itself, so Humanity is divisible primarily into States, then into Families, never into individuals.

The elements
subordinate
to the whole,
to Human-
ity.

Our race was educated under a synthesis at once egoistic and absolute, succeeded by a period of anarchy. Hence its lack of conceptions and formulas adequate to express a reality which has slowly dawned upon us. The consequence is a proneness to look on the parts as more important than the whole, though the whole alone, and not the parts, admits of completeness and permanence. The true Synthesis will modify this frame of mind and enable us to overcome our earlier habits, so that the opposite tendency, as alone consistent with the Positive spirit, will become natural to us. Familiar as we shall then be with the idea of Humanity, in this new state of regenerated mental power we shall constantly refer to that idea the subordinate ideas of People and even of Family, in obedience to the principle of passing from the more definite to the less definite conception. Even now it is not difficult to understand this, as it is the course we spontaneously adopt in the case of the animals: we refer them to the human type, at least in regard to their principal attributes. By a like process in the case of our own species, we judge each family by the standard of the people of which it is a part. That we do not adopt this course with nations is owing solely to the fact that we do not adequately realise the highest form of human existence.

Humanity
alone not
indistinct
nor arbi-
trary.

That highest form is in fact the only one of which we can form a conception, free at once from indistinctness and arbitrariness. All partial associations, on however vast a scale, are but parts, and parts inseparable, save by a process of abstraction, from the whole race. The limits which seem natural to the several nations, or even families, are but the expression of those relations which have hitherto excited attention. But if we take into account all their real relations, direct and indirect, we see that the distinctions between them have no real foundation in nature. At any rate we may assert confidently that the contact between the nations has become so extended at the present time, that no one is really separable from the others. If it seem capable of separate existence, it is to the detriment of its true attributes, moral, intellectual, and even physical, all

of which, in their different degrees, are affected by the continuous reaction of the whole upon its parts. The remark is still more applicable to families ; each family is, to begin with, inseparable from the people to which it belongs.

The race alone, then, admits of a clear and precise definition ; the subordinate associations prepare that definition by their mutual relations and by familiarising us with those relations. Each of them has been the nucleus, actual or virtual, of Humanity, and will never lose its value as an aid to its less systematic conception. The two essential attributes of all social existence, solidarity and continuity, are necessarily attributes of the lower forms of that existence ; we meet them there, not, it is true, as perfectly developed, but more within our grasp. Thus it is that the Family and the Country will always be, to the intellect no less than to the heart, indispensable introductions to Humanity. But in systematic education, in default of which the process is incomplete, we must henceforth invert the order ; now that we have reached the full conception of the Great Being, we may spread it even to our children, without retracing the series of unsystematised efforts originally required for its elaboration. The essential point is to use more skilfully the power inherent in feeling to outstrip the generalising of the intellect, a result ensured in the Positive system of education by placing it throughout under the proper natural control of the sex in which feeling is predominant.

The conclusion we have reached is this : we definitively look on the Family and the State as each in due order an introduction to Humanity ; we do not consider this indivisible being as composed of elements in the proper sense of the word. The philosophical conception once sufficiently accepted, the priesthood will abandon any formal definition. It is needed now as against the extraordinary pressure brought to bear on any movement in a synthetical direction by the anarchical spirit of analysis which prevails.

Further we must not forget that the highest existence, equally with the lower forms of vitality, is subject to the two laws of growth and improvement, these phases being more marked in the more complex organism. Hence a new obstacle to our grasping the idea of a being of so pre-eminently relative a character, so long as we are under the sway of habits formed under the absolute Synthesis. They lead us to forget that-

Humanity
indivisible.

Humanity
subject to
the law of
growth and
the law of
improvement. It
must therefore
be admitted
before it can
be rightly
judged.

every living being must be judged by its adult state, whilst in the case of Humanity we have as yet before us only its childhood and its adolescence. This explains why it is that the idea of the Great Being could not effectually assert itself previously; it marks the opening of our mature existence; it is an evidence that its preparatory stages are past. But henceforth, in the light of that conception we can appreciate the Normal state by the conjoint aid of the previous periods, sufficiently to ensure a truly rational, as opposed to an essentially empirical development.

The ministers of Humanity.

The peculiar difficulties attendant on its acceptance once fairly overcome, the hardest point remaining in the theory of the Great Being is the right estimate of individuals as its ministers. An uninterrupted service on their part, either as agents or even as representatives, is a necessary condition of collective existence in any form. No association could act, or make itself felt, except through individuals. As this is clear for the Family and the Country; *à fortiori* must it hold good of Humanity. In this condition we find the primary source of the attributes and the difficulties which alike inhere in the very idea of a composite existence.

The problem is how to combine concert with independence.

To combine, and that persistently, concert with independence is the capital problem of society, a problem which religion alone can solve, by love primarily, then by faith as the basis of love. The superiority of Humanity lies mainly in this: that its immediate instruments are beings in nature similar to itself, though at a lower stage of development, and apparently capable of standing alone. On the other hand, as such, they tend to separate, losing sight, in an exaggerated sense of their own importance, of the absolute dependence of the parts on the whole. The danger exists in the best constituted society; in periods of anarchy it takes such proportions as at the present time to be the main hindrance to the advent of the Great Being. And yet the danger to society would be equally great if concert could ever succeed in stifling independence. Distinctness then, no less than convergence of effort, being an essential condition of human co-operation, the great problem ultimately comes to this, how to reconcile Order and Progress, universally held by Antiquity to be incompatible. Of the two dangers, however, the greater is, it must be allowed, the excess of

independence; with few and transient exceptions that from excess of concert is less urgent.

It follows from this discussion of the question that the existence of the Great Being requires, as its necessary basis, that the actual generation be in permanent dependence on the two subjective portions of Humanity, its past and its future generations. In the past we have the source, in the future the aim, of the active service rendered by the present. Man always labours for posterity, impelled thereto by the labour of his ancestors, who have handed down to him the materials with which, the processes by which, he works. It is his highest privilege that the individual can perpetuate himself indirectly in a subjective state, if whilst actually living his course has left worthy results. Thus, even from the very earliest beginning, arose the idea of Continuity properly so called, an idea more really characteristic of man than mere Solidarity. Continuity implies that our successors continue our service as we continued that of our predecessors.

The actual generation dependent on the past and the future. Continuity.

The Family by its very constitution manifests this primary attribute of every composite existence, the children representing the future, the elders the past, both in immediate dependence on the members in full vigour. Hence it is that the chief historical period, the century, equivalent to the length of human life in the normal state, is subdivided into three generations, the object being, that the active portion of any society may be in close connection with the two which can understand it, a conception which had dawned on the old friend mentioned in the general preface of the work.

Continuity in the Family.

To simplify this dependence and give greater precision to the notion, we should now suppress the second subjective element, the element of the future, which indicates the end of human co-operation, but does not affect the question of its origin, or its exercise. Reduced to this dual form, the sphere of continuity is the connection between the representatives and the agents of Humanity. The dead are her representatives, the living her agents; since the dead stand pre-eminent in dignity, the living are superior in efficiency.

Continuity as limited to the past and present.

The direct service of the Great Being is the exclusive appanage of our objective life; but the excellence of Humanity can only be worthily shown by its subjective and eternal existence. Our nature needs to be purified by death for its higher

The Dead. The subjective existence.

attributes to be seen ; they stand out then clear of the grosser accompaniments which previously obscured them. In death alone can we attain the sublime transformation towards which our animal nature tends. The cerebral life, in constant dependence on our organic life, seems ordinarily to have no other function than to strengthen and perfect this last. And yet the higher parts of man's nature, his affections, thoughts, and even actions, all have a relative function, all look to the collective organism and reject a mere individual purpose, in proportion as the animal life attains fuller developement. Social life advances in the same direction towards that state in which the body becomes simply the support of the brain, whilst the direct action of the brain becomes the characteristic of our nature. The change indicated is not, however, fully realised till we reach the subjective life, which at once, by virtue of such a power, becomes our ideal in the objective.

The Dead
represent
Humanity.
Superiority
of the sub-
jective life.

In two senses, then, the living are brought more and more under the patronage of the dead, the dead being at once their protectors and types. The dead alone can represent Humanity; they collectively really constitute Humanity; the living, born her children, as a rule become her servants, unless they degenerate into mere parasites. Granting it possible to form a judgment of the objective life during its course, it seldom is so fruitful in results as to secure its main achievement from being obscured by subsequent degeneration. Till it be ended, even in the best men, the true attributes of our nature cannot fully assert themselves; we have to make constant allowance for the defects due to the necessities of our physical constitution. The true sphere of the soul's superiority is the subjective life; that, apart from exceptional cases of reprobation, belongs exclusively to such of its functions as are assimilable by others, the purely personal elements no longer interfering.

Necessity of
the objective
life.

No amount of superiority, however, can call the subjective life into existence, or give it permanence; for this it is dependent on the objective. The living, it is true, are subject to the sway of the dead, but, on the other hand, the dead cannot exercise their power save through the medium of the living, though it is not open to the latter to refuse their co-operation even when rebelling against the inevitable yoke. The objective life is direct and complete, its chief characteristic is will; the subjective passes under the empire of fate. The function 'of

the dead is to form the immoveable foundation, that of the living to introduce the secondary modifications of man's destiny. The direct service of Humanity, then, has its source in the will, the condensed expression of all our brain action; for the will, in its proper sense, combines the impulse given by the heart with the light derived from the intellect and the guidance furnished by the character. And the will has a natural safeguard against caprice, in that its efficiency depends on the maintenance of the subordination of the living to the dead. Emancipated from this control the will loses its power for good, and becomes a mere source of disturbance.

Our conception of the constitution of the Great Being remains defective unless we associate with man all the animal races which are capable of adopting the common motto of all the higher natures: *Live for Others*. Without the animals, the Positive Synthesis could but imperfectly form the permanent alliance of all voluntary agents to modify the external conditions of our life so far as they are modifiable. Since the close of the fetichist period there has been a growing inability on the part of the provisional religion to sanction this coalition, though its utility has been constantly on the increase. It was reserved for Positivism to organize it by recognizing as integral portions of the Great Being the animals which voluntarily aid man, whilst eliminating its unworthy parasites in human form. The service rendered by the animals is, it is true, indirect, for it is in two senses individual, there entering into it no consciousness of a social function; yet as voluntary, we are justified in our recognition of it.

Incorporation of the animals into Humanity.

The constitution of the Great Being sufficiently explained, the next step in elaborating its theory is to examine its situation, and subsequently its destination. The first of the three points was the hardest, so that I may be briefer in my treatment of the two others.

(ii) Situation of Humanity.

It is a strict consequence of the reality of its existence that Humanity is more dependent, as more complex, than any other being. Freed, so far as the subjective condition is concerned, from the laws of the outer world, her never-ceasing subjection to the laws of the social or moral world is but the more distinctly seen. Although this subjection, owing to its higher degree of complication, could not be understood till last, it was

Humanity intimately dependent on the human order.

felt before any other, more particularly in reference to the moral laws.

Dependent
also on the
external.

But Humanity, whilst bound by laws of her own, submits, for she has an objective basis, to the laws of our bodily existence, the laws that is of vitality; nay, further, she submits to the laws of the outer world, the laws of that material order in the midst of which man lives and works.

The laws of vitality make themselves constantly felt in those conditions of organic life on which ultimately depend the extent and the exercise of all our faculties, during life in the first place, and consequently after death. Nay, more, the Great Being can never escape the sad fate which often deprives it through some flaw in these conditions of its best servants, their highest powers yet unexerted. As for the laws of the outer world, it is equally impossible not to recognise their power, for though less direct, it is more beyond our intervention.

Humanity
dependent,
and still
more so her
individual
servants.

As the economy of things, then, is such that increase of dignity implies increase of dependence, the peculiar eminence of the Great Being subjects it to all the necessary conditions of existence without exception. Still less independent are its servants, indulge what anarchical illusions they may at the suggestion of the will, which is the distinct feature of our objective life. For with it they are subject to the external conditions, whether inorganic or vital, as they are to the statical and dynamical laws of the collective existence. But, besides, they are always subject to the action of the body upon the brain, an influence we need not take into account in the social economy, neutralized as it there is by individual differences, but which cannot but deeply affect the economy of the individual. Without any break, then, the empire of will is subordinate to that of necessity.

This depend-
ence the
source of
greatness.

Accept it in a right spirit, and in this very dependence lies the chief source of our true greatness. I have shown in the last volume, that the attribute of omnipotence introduces a radical contradiction into the idea of God, from the impossibility of reconciling omnipotence with wisdom and goodness. Compare the two cases and we see more distinctly the logical connection between the dignity and the dependence of the true Great Being. The condition of unity for man is complete submission; without it, as I have shown over and over again, his feelings would be ill-regulated, his thoughts incoherent, his

actions a mere source of disorder. We may regret that the order of things is not more within man's power to alter. But true wisdom forbids our wishing it to be in any part open to indefinite modification. As we advance, so far from shrinking from this inevitable yoke, we extend its range by paying to human institutions the obedience we cannot refuse to the laws of nature.

These considerations lead me to the concluding part of the theory of the Great Being, the examination of the destination which its situation assigns it. That destination is, in truth, to give full effect to the action of will, in modifying, so far as they are modifiable, the conditions to which it is necessarily subject. Even when beyond its power to modify, they call for constant exertion on its part—intellectual and active exertion—the better to accommodate itself to them. Its main task, however, is the effecting the modifications within the scope of human will, which the secondary arrangements of the world around us always admit, with the exception of the phenomena of the heavens. Our power in this respect increases as the phenomena become more complex and higher, a compensation, though an imperfect compensation, for the disadvantages attendant on the increase of dependence.

(iii) Destination of Humanity.

On this view, the action of the Great Being has for its main object the perfecting the order of man's world, for the individual as well as for society. Hence it is that human institutions are so mixed up with the laws of nature, that by a grave mistake the dominion of the one is often confounded with that of the other two provinces. Now, the rules of man's creation depend for their value entirely on their having as their substratum natural arrangements, the legitimate sway of which it is their function to increase.

Proper sphere of its action the human order.

Such a destination is peculiarly that of the future of Humanity, her systematic existence. Yet so appropriate is it to the Great Being, that even in the past, its age of empirical effort, with admiration we see how largely it achieved it. Its instinct led it to create: first, the Gods of antiquity, then the one God their heir, as the respective guides of the second period of its childhood and its youth. The praises offered in all sincerity to these subjective guardians are so many acts of indirect homage to the instinctive wisdom of Humanity. In substituting rational for empirical grounds, the Positive religion will

This most applicable to the Future, but true of the Past.

give a new being to this gratitude, and a thorough sanction, for that obligation rests upon it to see that no one of the states through which the Great Being has passed lacks its due appreciation. In its full maturity, its direct and deliberate care for its true servants will be the object of just admiration. This habitual attitude of our minds will naturally deepen the respect deserved by its indirect and instinctive efforts to raise itself, in its earlier life, when the agents it had at its disposal were invariably blind, and often intractable.

This theory is the basis for an abstract and concrete view of the Positive Religion and the Life in accordance with it.

Such is the theory which forms the foundation of our construction. Sketched with sufficient precision at the outset of this work, in the subsequent volumes it was supported by statical, and completed by dynamical considerations, so as to demand in the present place nothing more than a definitive systematisation. It forms a general basis, from which we must now proceed to explain the whole system of the true religion, and with it the life which that religion is to regulate. The full success, however, of this twofold picture depends on this condition: that it present two views in succession, the first abstract, dealing with human nature in each of its leading aspects; the second concrete, dealing with the actual combinations of those aspects in their most important forms.

Synthetical power of the theory.

First, however, the power for synthesis inherent in the preceding theory, must be distinctly drawn out.

Its value in this respect is derived from the fact that the Great Being offers, by its very constitution, the best type of unity; its composite nature precluding divergence, giving full scope to convergence. The offspring of the cooperation of the race stimulates and invigorates cooperation as the embodiment of the idea. In constant submission to the primary order, it condenses and consecrates, even whilst modifying, that order. Endowed with equal power to regulate and to unite, its empire is the source of unity in its true servants, for it impels them to identify themselves with the highest existence. Our personal instincts, concentrated in the will peculiar to our objective life, find in Humanity a guide free from all capricious tendencies, and the more so as all the impulses derived from it are in natural accordance with intelligible laws.

Its future efficacy may be estimated by the results already attained.

The true providence of man has not yet been reduced to system, yet we can even now adequately understand what it will be, morally, intellectually, and materially. Besides, the

measure of its efficiency may be taken by looking to the sum of the results attained during the minority of the Great Being. Superior even then to all real existences, it appears originally placed in a circle without issue, needing, that is, a competent guide, and unable to find one outside of itself. But by its instinctive wisdom it overcame this great difficulty by a spontaneous impulse, creating imaginary guides and endowing them one after the other with the attributes adapted to their provisional function. Victorious in this trial, the being which is destined to regulate everything even then proved its ability to give regularity to its own existence, so far as its age and situation allowed. So admirable an empirical result contains the promise, for the near future, of the great results to be attained by the wisdom of Humanity when systematised,—when she has reached the stage of developement at which she can take on herself the guidance of her various servants, using to that end all the means accumulated during her past life. Such is the primary source whence the theory derives a religious efficacy, which in the rest of this chapter will appear under its more general, in the rest of the volume under its more special, aspects.

Previously, however, to entering on this exposition we have to define the normal relations of the Positive religion with the two capital modes of the provisional synthesis. The relations are these: we connect directly Positivism with Fetichism, not excluding astrolatrical Fetichism; we eliminate Theologism, monotheistic Theologism more especially.

It follows from the several explanations which had their place in the last volume, that the function of Theology was purely to prepare the way for Positivism in the spontaneous evolution of the race, that it can be no element ultimately of the normal state, as the two syntheses are incompatible. Nay, I went further, and showed that its aid was ceasing to be available henceforward wherever an individual or a nation could be submitted to wise direction. Of the two modes of causation under the provisional synthesis, it is the second or theological which, by its introduction of imaginary powers, becomes unsusceptible of any modifications of the absolute tendencies of that synthesis. Then too becomes preponderant its tendency to egotism, for its Gods step between man and Humanity, binding on him a yoke he cannot shake off, a service at all times

Relations of the Positive religion to Fetichism and Theologism.

Theologism eliminated as individualistic.

inherently of a personal character. Though created in order to extend the principle of causation to the world of man, they preclude any social conception from their incapacity to embody even the idea of solidarity, much more that of continuity. On the contrary, social life is the chosen sphere of the relative religion, and therefore it has nothing in common with a purely personal religion, which owed its great social utility, in all essential points, to the wisdom of its priesthood for the time being—the priesthood of Theocracy and the priesthood of Catholicism. Still, in the most distant future, the servants of the Great Being will honour, with just honour, the guardians it created to protect its minority.

Fetichism
incorporated.

Far different is the relation of the final synthesis to the primeval system of causation. I have already represented Fetichism as susceptible of an immediate connection with Positivism, with no theological interlude. Nay, I have stated that the combination was coming to be indispensable for the attainment of our definitive unity. The time is come for explaining the nature of their accord.

Intellectually.

As an intellectual question, the primary object of this ultimate fusion is to fill, as far as possible, the unavoidable gaps left by the Positive spirit in its empirical no less than in its systematic stage. It is essentially to the abstract coordination of our conceptions that laws properly apply; they almost invariably fail to express adequately the concrete facts, even though we use inductions of practice to supplement the deductions of theory. In such cases we must have recourse to causes, as in the beginning of things, as a provisional colligation of facts, bringing Fetichism to the support of Positivism. Not under the illusion that such accessory explanation corresponds to any reality, we avail ourselves of it to facilitate our necessary speculations; we are justified in acting on an instinctive tendency of our nature, which may always be reconciled with a true rational method. A real connection once formed, we throw aside the temporary support we gained, for contemplation and even meditation, by the fiction of an active will.

Esthetically.

The value of such a provisional hypothesis is still better seen from the point of view of art, for esthetically, Positivism differs from Fetichism only in that it pays its homage to results, Fetichism to materials. They find a point of accord naturally, in man's disposition to reverence in each substance or phenome-

non the various uses to which it may be put by the Great Being in its wisdom. Hence Positivism will offer a worthy field for the display of the poetical capacity of Fetichism, a capacity which could not pass the rudimentary stage during the infancy of the race.

Lastly, from the moral point of view, the combination of the two Syntheses is at once easy and fruitful in results. Fetichism, as loving all things and reverencing all things, will always be adapted largely to aid Positivism in its grand function of fostering tenderness, and giving cohesion to submission. Morally.

Thus it is that in the final religion we connect directly the maturity of the Great Being with its infancy. Thus it is that we reconcile, as far as possible, real laws with imaginary wills, so that they supply each others' wants in all respects. Limited by its nature to the external world, Fetichism, unlike Theology, never claimed to represent the world of man, reserved for Positivism to grasp and to regulate. Fetichism traced the foundation of man's true wisdom, in practice and in theory, by its institution of fatalism. That it made it absolute was simply due to its ignorance of modifications, a true view of which was left for Positivism. The primeval synthesis and the definitive religion rest on one and the same fundamental principle, a principle adopted by the instinct of the race and then by its reason; they agree, that is, in proclaiming the constant predominance of feeling over thought and action. Such being their natural affinities, the two extreme ages of Humanity deserved the definitive consecration given by their both sharing in the formation of its true unity. Their fusion with a view to complete that formation I have just explained—without it the true religion could not satisfactorily connect our future in all its stages with our remotest past—a past which invariably recurs in the spontaneous evolution of each servant of Humanity. The two extreme ages of Humanity combined.

It might seem, however, that we are inconsistent in thus incorporating Fetichism with Positivism and excluding Theologism, springing as it does from the one, tending to the other. But there is no real inconsistency, since the two extremes admit of direct contact, and will frequently be brought into such contact, especially in individuals. The only ground for the final acceptance of Fetichism is its perfect spontaneity. When admitted it ceases to have any connection with Theologism, which never can accept the position of inferior as regards Posi- No inconsistency in excluding Theologism.

tivism. In the combination Fetichism, in accordance with its nature, still confines itself to the external world, and no longer strays in the direction of man's world. There is this change, however: its domain was of old purely concrete, it is now in the main abstract, its application, both in affection and action, will concern Phenomena rather than substance, but without ever separating the two.

With the aid of the Fetichist the Positive doctrine can construct the ultimate unity, abstract and concrete.

Its deficiency thus naturally and regularly supplied, the Positive doctrine is able, without further preliminary, definitively to organise human unity, the unity of which I proceed to give the general characteristics, by a description at once of the Positive religion and life. That I can describe them thus simultaneously, first from the abstract, then from the concrete point of view, is in itself an indication of the full completeness of that unity. For hitherto such a conjoint presentation has been impossible, from the want of sufficient agreement between theory and practice.

Abstract View.

Positivity combines all aspects of human existence.

It is the best note of true Positivity,—the harmony, systematic but also spontaneous, which it introduces as a permanent link between the various aspects of our personal and social life. Ever bent on the preservation and amelioration of the Great Being, the affections, thoughts, and actions of man, are, when so harmonised, brought as far as possible under control and into concert.

Positivism alone can secure the supremacy of Love.

The composite nature of Humanity involves its having as its principle, love, the sole source of voluntary cooperation. The constant supremacy of feeling over thought and action thus becomes the fundamental law of the human consensus. Love, as the principle of synthesis, had been instinctively recognised by Fetichism, and deliberately sanctioned by Theocracy. But apart from their inadequate estimate of the benevolent instincts, these two rudimentary religions were found irreconcilable with the ulterior progress of our intellectual and active powers. Their triumphant advance broke through the earlier discipline, but the sense that they needed control gave rise to an admirable attempt to reconstruct the supremacy of the heart. The ultimate result of the effort was, however, to show the increasing loss of power in the fictitious synthesis in regard to this capital problem, the true solution of which necessarily devolved on the principle which gave to reality the sanction of utility. The gradual outcome of the unfettered evolution of

thought and activity, the positive spirit has a natural tendency to restore to feeling its ascendancy, the better to place under its direction the normal developement of our powers.

The several aspirations evolved by the successive stages of the education of mankind thus find a simultaneous satisfaction, however conflicting they may be in appearance, the result simply of the inadequacy of the provisional synthesis. Ever looking to the nature of man in its entirety, the discipline of Positivism ought to promote in an equal degree the growth and concert of all our functions. More favourable to the intellect than the civilisation of Greece, as a social system, it has greater power than Rome had to make public life control private, speculation depend on action; whilst more than feudal Catholicism does it give the primacy to our emotional nature. Completely real, profoundly sympathetic, unceasingly active, the Great Being is pre-eminently qualified to regulate without obstructing. It has a direct tendency to discipline our wills, as it forms us to order by love, with a view to progress. Its nature asserts at once the subjective origin and the objective basis of the true religion. Sanctioning as it does the close connection of the three parts of the soul, Humanity as centre makes the improvement of each depend on the reaction upon it of the two others, founding thereby true unity, an unity as stable as it is perfectible.

Realises all previous aspirations.

Fully to appreciate in the abstract a state which, however near at hand, does not admit of direct inspection, I must now take it in detail, dwelling separately on feeling, intellect, and action.

And first for feeling. Unity in this respect, as conceived by Positivism, has for its basis the existence in human nature of the sympathetic instincts, which found no place in the theological synthesis. So only can we state in its true form the problem man has to solve, the subordinating egoism to altruism. To these instincts we look mainly for the solution of this problem, and it is their continuous growth under the influences of society which is the one standard by which to measure our progress, ever unsatisfactory unless accompanied with this growth. Their unceasing search after the true has for its aim the attainment of the good under the inspiration of the beautiful, and their ascendancy is at once the best stimulus and the best regulator of all our powers. In no degree oppressive as

(1) Unity of feeling.

regards the personal instincts, they offer those instincts the legitimate satisfaction of a noble purpose.

Diversity of
the sym-
pathetic in-
stincts.

The right understanding of this moral unity necessitates our taking into account the inherent differences between the instincts of benevolence. Arranged, as the whole hierarchy of our conceptions is arranged, on the principle of decrease in energy, increase in dignity, the first unites, equals, and regulates the present; the second regards superiors and consecrates the past; the third looks towards inferiors and prepares the future. In every social relation there is room for the free and simultaneous play of the three; but the proper province of the first is private, that of the third, public life, the second alone being common to both. From the closest ties to the widest relations of man, they form, then, by their union, a complete discipline. Attachment secures the growth of the love on which our whole system rests, whilst benevolence directs that love to its true end, universal love; veneration institutes subordination, the indispensable condition of stability in human relations.

Their train-
ing during
the prepara-
tory period.

The preparatory stage of human existence hampered this discipline, in theory as in practice, yet in the natural course of things it tended to prevail, though its rational acceptance was reserved for the present century. It had a natural origin in the fetichist state, for in Fetichism the feelings of man were attributed to all things; but the doctrine of Fetichism could give it no sanction, limited as it was to the outer world, and the life confined to the Family was too narrow a sphere. Subsequently, when theology and war were dominant, the benevolent instincts could have but an indirect and partial sway, for man's action was destructive, and his creed egoistic. Still they grew even then, by virtue of the extension of human intercourse due to common opinions and collective purposes. When Polytheism was condensed into Monotheism, the latter declared them alien to human nature, but in this very rejection lay a consecration of them, for it rested on the superiority which marked them out as the special province of the divine will. The compression of the personal instincts by the religion gave a fuller ascendancy at that time to the sympathetic; although the denial of them on principle stamped a character of selfishness on our whole moral culture. It was under these conditions of provisional acceptance that they received a triumphant recognition by the devotion to them of the three

finest chapters of the extraordinary poem in which Catholicism found its condensed expression.

The metaphysical philosophy, the prevalence of which is due to the indiscipline of modern times, is more adverse than Theology to the free growth of sympathy; and yet sympathy has grown with the Positive spirit even whilst the action of man wore a purely personal, his speculation a dispersive, character. The tendency of science was to demonstrate the innateness of our unselfish affections, and industrial life prepared the way for the universal acceptance of their legitimate rule. Since the outbreak of the final crisis the maintenance of moral order in the midst of intellectual disorder is due solely to the influence of sympathy, nor is there any other possible basis for the reorganisation of the West.

Their fate
in modern
times.

Thus it is that the Positive spirit—the unfailing characteristic of which is the combination of the real and the useful—finds at length its chief sphere, as an intellectual theory and a practical system, in the study and the cultivation of the benevolent instincts. The true unity of the individual, the true unity of the society, springs from their normal predominance, as in them, and in equal degree, order has its source, progress its end. Ever ready to accept dutifully all that is inevitable in our condition, they make a noble resignation the basis of our amelioration, whilst they incessantly urge us to wise exertion. As a consequence of the omnipresent control of Morals, they offer philosophy the soundest discipline and the sublimest object, to the exclusion of all idle speculations and the concentration of our intellectual efforts on the continuous improvement of our nature. To poetry they throw open its noblest field, as by their aid it can idealize all human ties, present, past, or even future. Political action, recognising them as supreme, is enabled peacefully to carry out the largest plans, by bringing all our practical energies to bear on the direct improvement of man's condition upon earth, in concert with the animal races which, as sympathetic, are justly associated with Humanity. These hints give a sufficient idea of the general character of the Positive order of things, as a synthesis resting on universal love, that love aided by a faith susceptible of demonstration.

They are the
true domain
of the posi-
tive spirit.

• And yet the idea were incomplete without a direct examination of the chief attribute of human unity, viz., the necessary

Chief attri-
bute of hu-
man Unity.

Duty and
happiness
coincident.

coincidence of duty and of happiness, both equally placed in *Living for Others*. Complete as is the sanction, and natural as complete, given by the sympathetic instincts to every right exertion of our intellect, every right exercise of our active powers, such efforts are always urged as means to an end, the means adapted to the overcoming the difficulties of man's position. The highest gratification they can afford is derived from their unavoidable and constant ministrations to the Great Being. Set aside these wants, and man's happiness, as his true unity, depends on his emotional nature. A woman's pen has fitly expressed this prerogative of man, and the admirable expression is her chief claim to immortality, '*There is nothing real in the world but love.*'

Feeling to be
encouraged
for its own
sake.

This maxim of Delphine may seem at first sight an exaggeration, yet the Positive religion must adopt it, to enforce the conviction that it is in feeling that lies the chief value of feeling. Whilst speculation and even action contribute to our happiness by their results alone, and results as dependent on external conditions often elude us, the gratification we derive from affection is always direct and certain and depends on ourselves alone. Real happiness, then, cannot reside either in our thoughts or actions, but exclusively in our sympathies, and their highest recompense is their existence. When once by a right exercise we have learnt to appreciate this sovereign good, we cease to find satisfaction as formerly in the most successful intellectual or active exertions. We then see that our opinions and our efforts depend for their main value upon our feelings, the only immediate sources of happiness and duty for the individual as for the society.

Living for
others,
others live
for us.

Thus realising the highest aspirations of theology in its dreams, the kingdom of Humanity is a kingdom of love, perfecting our inward satisfaction by cooperation from without. Each makes others his chief object, and as a natural result gains the support of others in his own need. But he may not gain it, and if he gain it, it is not the motive for altruism nor can it be its adequate reward. We are liable to set too much store by such reciprocity of services, owing to habits contracted under the egoistic synthesis, and any over-value of it would endanger the unity of our sympathetic, by stimulating our personal instincts. Even in the anarchy of modern times, the true moral conception found its spontaneous expression in the noble wish

of the great Danton, '*Perish my memory, only let my country be free.*'

Yet even in this heroic cry we trace the idea that the outward reward of a great life extends to its subjective immortality. He who has truly lived for others should hope to live on, in, and by others. This subjective return is purer at once and surer than the objective, for it carries on the services rendered and perfects the judgment of those services. Under the impulse given by the Positive spirit, spontaneously and systematically, this noble recompense is accessible to all who are capable of understanding it and deserving it. The unhappy daughter of the old friend before mentioned, a few days before her death expressed to me naïvely her deep sense of the value of such a recompense in a touching utterance which connects her memory with that of my eternal companion. She said of her—it was three years after her death—'*She is fortunate indeed, she is sure of immortality.*'

Subjective immortality the fitting reward of a noble life.

An examination in detail of the emotional aspect of Positivism was obligatory from its immediate connection with the fundamental principle of true human unity. In dealing with the intellect and even with the activity of man, I may limit myself to a clear explanation of their proper subordination to feeling. In judging the altruistic synthesis from the intellectual side, we shall take first its esthetic aspect, then its scientific.

(ii) Intellectual Unity.

Rising above modern prejudices, the Positive religion decides that in dignity art ranks above science, as art is more closely connected with feeling, science with action. Hence a synthetical hierarchy, embodied in the order of succession of the principal phases of education, which, common to all equally, is first the education of the affections, then of the esthetic faculties, thirdly of the scientific, lastly of the practical capacity. The classification is in conformity with the principle of the encyclopædic scale; it is a condensed expression of the natural affinities of our various powers; it marks their serial order, and so makes it easy to compare them.

(a) Art.

Art satisfies the deeper wants of our nature better than science. It is more sympathetic; it is more synthetic. At the same time it is invariably alien to mere speculation, and leads directly to action of the noblest kind, viz., the elevating our feelings by their ideal expression. No other form of existence is as completely in unison with the sacred formula of Positivism,

More sympathetic and more synthetic than science.

for an all-comprehensive sympathy is its source, the highest progress its aspiration, the highest order its basis. Its normal developement issues naturally in the combination of independence with cooperation, for its productions are emphatically individual whilst the aim of those productions is agreement on the widest scale.

Art more
closely con-
nected with
Religion.

It is a common error to overrate the ultimate importance of science from regard to its services as a preparation. So long as it was the prime object to call out our several powers, the special exercise of our scientific faculties, as weakest in point of energy, was of importance; for though weakest, it was to them we had to look for the construction of an objective basis for human wisdom. But now that our immediate object is to regulate those powers, religion must employ art rather than science, art being the nearer to the principle of unity. Although art and science alike, tend, if cultivated amiss, to stimulate unduly pride and vanity, the pursuit of science exerts, besides this, a more noxious moral influence—an influence inseparable from it—in that the concentration it demands discourages affection. Therefore it is that in the normal state, science must, by suitable means, be limited to its strict function; the knowledge of the order of the world sufficient for a dignified acceptance and wise modification. Such knowledge is a paramount necessity solely because of the exigencies of our physical condition, binding us to a form of action which at the outset is egoistic, whereas, given a situation so favoured by nature that we stood in no need of science, art would still have an inherent charm and a power to raise us. Even in reference to the objective construction we require for wise action, art contributed more than science to the intelligence of the higher and less obvious phenomena, poetry hitherto having anticipated philosophy in stating, in outline at least, the laws of our intellectual, and still more those of our moral nature.

Art in edu-
cation.

As a part of the system of Positive education art must hold equal rank with science. In real life it passes before science, as all that science gives us is the rational basis for action; its guidance does not enable us in practice to dispense with the complement of experience. With all classes, the priesthood included, the mind will, as a rule, exert itself in the esthetic rather than in the scientific direction, so the better to concentrate our efforts on the knowledge and improvement of our

nature. Scientific works are seldom to be read again even by the theorician, whilst the creations of the artist are the objects of ever fresh admiration. It were superfluous to dwell longer on the strong esthetic tendency of a synthesis, the natural result of which will be the prevalence of the intellectual and moral dispositions most favourable to poetry.

The history of the past carries with it the proof, that such is the future which awaits the Positive spirit in the normal state, as since the disappearance of the Theocracy the master works of poetry have multiplied in proportion as the West disengages itself from the trammels of Theologism and war. The creation of Positivism as a system evidences its affinity for art; for art already owes to it a philosophy of esthetics, whereas true thinkers of the metaphysical school sought one in vain.

Testimony
of the Past.

To place in a clearer light the decided superiority, esthetically speaking, of Positivism, I would indicate here, in general terms, the introduction of a new series of poetical appliances, originating in the perfectly legitimate fusion of the Fetichist with the Positivist spirit.

New Instru-
ments of
poetry.

By the incorporation of Fetichism, art in its maturity repossesses the external world, which in the full sense it possessed only in its infancy, and even then its idealisation of it could only be inchoate. Poetry in the Positive state, whilst cultivating this its original domain, will extend it so as to include phenomena no less than beings, empowered to do so by the general growth of abstraction since the Fetichist age. The new field thus opened requires, to be available, the previous creation of subjective milieus; otherwise, in the cultivation of it, it would be difficult as a rule to avoid lapsing into a metaphysical tendency, in essential antagonism with art—a tendency to consider events independently of beings.

Subjective
milieus.

In its true idea, Space is the first and hitherto the only perfect example of this logical artifice, which, when interpreted, in an objective sense, gave rise to so many errors. For Space logically is to be looked upon simply as an universal fluid, created by man's instinct, in the infancy of his genius, in order to enable him to conceive of extension and even of motion independently of actual bodies. In default of such a milieu, signs without images would be our only resource for the abstract developement of geometrical and mechanical speculations.

Space hith-
erto the
only in-
stance.

• The long familiarity of the western mind with this primeval

institution is a hindrance to our due appreciation of its value, yet we may by imagining it in abeyance, measure the void actually existing in the case of all other phenomena, owing to the want of so powerful an instrument. It follows that we must deliberately create for the phenomena of Physics, Chemistry, nay even of Biology, the equivalent of the milieu which Space offers us without effort in the domain of Mathematics.

The philosophy of art in relation to that of science.

In this way, and in this way only, can art in its maturity adequately idealise the world without, by giving life to these milieus of man's creation, just as in his infancy he attributed life to all the objects of nature. This done, the philosophy of art will be as complete as that of science; as, in accordance with its peculiar genius, it will organise its twofold empire, the world and man, an empire which it has in common with science, though poetically the world is not on the same level with man. Thus comprehensive, art will be better adapted than science to explain and promote the Positive logic, for art has exclusive competence in regard to images, and in Positive logic it is images which bring signs into convergence with feelings in order to facilitate thought.

(b) Science.

The value of Positivism in regard to science admits of a less full statement than its power in regard to art; since as a synthesis resting immediately upon natural philosophy it will be certain to perfect the whole range of scientific investigations. Suffice it here to indicate under its more prominent aspects the influence of religion upon science, in which it repays more than it received.

All Positive theories must converge towards the science of man.

Subject to the inevitable control of moral science, all scientific theories cleared of misdirected investigations take a sacred and synthetical character, as being definitive portions of the body of Positive doctrine, which, step by step, in the natural course of things, has been formed by their contributions. Science, thus renovated, regains with greater completeness and stability the majestic unity it attained under the fostering care of the Theocracy, so justly regretted by the leading thinker of the last half-century. The speciality without unity, which has hitherto been the great feature of modern scientific enquiry, reduces it in truth wellnigh to the level of empiricism, with an exception for Mathematics. And even in Mathematics, the scientific character is but too often purely superficial, since the prevalence of the tendency to substitute the combination 'of

signs for the higher processes of thought, or at any rate, to make the latter subordinate. All the other branches of natural philosophy are so completely given over to anarchy and consequent retrogression, that religion alone, with its power of direction and repression, can introduce discipline and prevent the dissolution of the whole system. Now, for a state of synthesis, it is imperative that every Positive theory, normally viewed, become an affluent of the science by which man studies his nature in order to guide his conduct. For we are still under the dominion of analysis so long as the laws of the inorganic world, with their complement, the laws of life, are not referred directly to the laws of man's social and individual existence,—the domain of Humanity, the sole fountain of intellectual unity.

I can give no better idea of this convergence than by setting it forth in detail with reference to the grand problem of moral science, the continuous developement, viz., of our sympathetic instincts, a problem which of itself alone is large enough to allow for all wise efforts, whether in thought or action.

This convergence in reference to the developement of the sympathetic instincts.

To begin with, the end proposed connects with the whole of active life, the results of the exercise of our feelings reacting on them to raise them. For the present, however, limiting ourselves to the purely intellectual question, we see that the growth of sympathy depends on the cultivation of the sciences, even as regards the external order, in our inevitable submission to which we have a check on egoism, and so an encouragement to altruism. Without forestalling an examination reserved for the third chapter, it must be added, that the contiguity of the organs of sympathy with the apparatus of the intellectual affords us the means generally of modifying the former. Not in contact with the world without, not in contact even with the viscera of organic life, it is only indirectly through the intellect or activity that they can be influenced. Still, by virtue of their peculiar connection with the organs of egoism, we can bring to bear upon them, by the agency of these latter, the influences derived from the nutritive system. So this practical problem, in which Morals depend primarily on Sociology, is in connection with Biology in its whole extent, and through Biology with the whole of Cosmology. Selecting one of the essential elements of the problem for special consideration, we reduce to system the instinctive tendency of the ancient world towards the interpretation, nay more, the direction of dreams; for in dreams there is,

Dreams.

in the conjoint action of physical, intellectual, and moral laws, a basis for a valuable influence.

Positivism
offers science
a better field
and a better
method.

These remarks suffice to show that, if Positivism discipline the scientific spirit to the discouragement of idle enquiries, it is solely in order to direct it to the more difficult and the more important questions, as a more worthy field for its full powers. With a nobler object it gives science new means, not in merely indirectly in the aid derived from the mutual support of the several parts of the system, but also directly by the creation of the true logic, left inchoate by its analytical treatment.

The aid
images will
bring to
science.

Although art on this point will anticipate, and even always surpass science, science may benefit largely from this definitive reduction to a system of the Positive method. Hitherto, scientific meditation has had no help but from signs, the use of images was purely subsidiary, except in Mathematics under the impulse given by Descartes. When synthesis prevails, images will lend their powerful aid in all abstract speculations, in particular by a larger introduction of subjective milieus, an institution not less adapted to science than to art. The discipline of religion, however, must exert its greatest influence, logically, in the systematising the reaction of the feelings on the intellect, such reaction being due, as is that of the intellect on the sympathies, to contiguity of position in the brain. Whilst denying the constant part taken in intellectual operations by the affective impulses, the anarchical thought of modern times is blindly subject to them so far as the self-regarding instincts are concerned, their superior energy balancing their greater distance from the speculative region of the brain. Their power enables us to understand what would be that, purer and more direct as it is, of the altruistic instincts, which are certainly better qualified to facilitate and stimulate thought than the organic stimuli so vaunted by materialists. The admission that veneration is indispensable to success in teaching, implies that it is equally necessary in original thought, and the recognition of this fact will lead shortly to a juster sense than was attained in the Middle Ages, of the great power over the intellect of the three instincts of sympathy.

(III) Unity
in action.

After adequately estimating the capabilities of the Positive religion from the intellectual point of view, I have to complete the description of the synthetical state in the abstract by setting forth in the general its bearing on active life. In these

final remarks, order must be treated first, then progress, on the basis of a study of concert and independence respectively, the complete combination of the two devolving on the altruistic synthesis.

The whole question of the regeneration of man's action (a) Order. may be reduced to this: how to shape into a system the spontaneous tendencies of modern industry to assume the collective character. Sociocracy in this respect will fulfil the Theocracy; it will, by judicious methods, abolish the irrational and immoral distinction, provisionally accepted, between private and public functions. A social order in which everyone habitually labours for others, affords more scope for social feeling than war, though it is in war that such feeling originally finds its sphere. Industrial life gives it purity and consistence, and it gives moreover that which it alone can give, full room for expansion, by extending it from the relations of citizenship to those of mankind. There is no more distinctive note of the Positive religion than its power to deal with industrial activity, the sanction of which in the theological period was mainly due to the priesthood, and even the priesthood failed when the opposition of supernatural religion was aggravated by the condensation of Polytheism into Monotheism.

The organisation of industry has its own difficulties, but at bottom it is easier than the intellectual reconstruction to which it must look for guidance. The power derived from material, is less exposed to illusions than that based on spiritual, superiority; hence pride, nay, even avarice, are more amenable to discipline than vanity. To give its new form and direction to human activity is, it is true, the chief object of the wisdom of the priesthood; but a far more difficult task for the Positive religion, and one far more decisive, if successfully performed, is the formation of a competent priesthood. The disorganisation of industry is more thorough than that of the intellect, but the latter is at present the more serious evil, as it affects our only available instrument for the reconstruction demanded by feeling. Therefore it is, that in the intellectual power of the altruistic synthesis we have the guarantee at once and the basis of its competence in the sphere of action. Cooperation, the cooperation of contemporaries, or even that of successive generations, has never been so completely ignored by the pride of the temporal, as it has been by the vanity of the spiritual power. Consequently, the religion of Humanity once

It is easier
to organise
industry
than intel-
lect.

fairly constituted, it will not be long before it regulate the social milieu most disposed to adopt as final its fundamental formula.

Conservation and increase of the collective treasure of Humanity.

Parasites, as more and more the exception, may be put aside, and, in the Positive state, all practitioners become immediate servants of the Great Being, their service regarding the wealth transmitted by its providence to the present generation in trust for its successor. As this accumulation of former labour suffers in its transmission by the very fulfilment of its proper purpose, the great point in the service is its perpetuation by reproduction. Hence the necessity for continuity in industrial action, a continuity useless in the case of the intellectual treasure of mankind. But in industrial action, more than elsewhere, order necessarily implies progress as its complement, for any development of Humanity had been impossible had reproduction not been attended by increase, on some scale or other. The habits, however, formed by the consideration of the productions of the intellect which do not lose by transmission, and in reference to which the spreading them should be our great care, leads us to overrate the importance of increased production in industry and to underrate that of conservation of the products. If reproduction, and there is no other means of preserving perishable materials, added nothing, their amount would soon be lessened. Yet as such necessary augmentation of the capital of the race is but a fraction of the whole, a fraction constantly decreasing in value, the Positive religion should lay the chief stress on industrial conservation, even in the exceptional cases where it results in no increase. Conservation is the primary duty; in this respect the requirements of practical life differ radically from those of intellectual. Second to this in difficulty stands the accessory function, the transmission of the social capital with the determination of the share to be allotted to the individual.

The two require two distinct services.

In order to organise industrial action on these two points, the altruistic synthesis sanctions two coexistent services, direction and execution, in intimate connection with one another, yet so as not to interfere with the normal condition of separation, for the capacities they require are distinct, and so is the preparation for either. Humanity ratifies, that is, the division between the capitalist and the workman, the gradual and spontaneous outgrowth of Western industry, dating from the middle of the mediæval period. The adoption of this dual arrange-

ment, with its complement, the hierarchy of the patrician order, constitutes the chief actual difficulty of the regeneration of activity.

In this capital operation, the Positive religion will put out its power as a social system, by disciplining at once command and obedience, as both equally consecrated to the service of the Great Being, the highest functions of which have as their basis industrial action. The industrial chiefs are the representatives of Humanity, in the sense of being indispensable as the ministers of its material providence; the condensation they offer being the condition of its right exertion. Individually they may use amiss the wealth committed to their charge, but they do not therefore lose their sacred character, unless the abuse be in degree such as to endanger the conservation of the capital of the race. Still more immediate, still more tangible, is the honourable service rendered by the working classes, though it is inferior in point of generality and duration. They are the chief depositaries of technical skill; the patrician should especially cultivate administrative capacity. In fact, the workmen, in the strict sense of the term, are to be looked on as the proper organs for connecting in detail industry and science, as they work out in a concrete form the theories of abstract science. All their legitimate demands, the appeal of veneration to devotion, are made in the name of the Great Being, as is but natural, seeing that it entrusts its general representatives with the permanent guardianship of its individual servants.

Government
and obedi-
ence both
regulated.

For patrician and workman alike, the habitual sense of usefulness—an usefulness intelligible to all—ennobles and disciplines industrial existence by keeping it in constant connection with Humanity. Private life is raised and strengthened by the stimulus thus given in all directions to public life, each taking that degree of interest in the welfare of the whole which answers to his particular function.

Influence of
the habitual
usefulness.

As regards progress, the great point in the organisation of industry is to combine concert with independence, ever respecting the spontaneous character of the services rendered, as a consequence of the inherent gratuitousness of human labour, the wages of such labour aiming simply at the replacement of materials. The Positive religion leads chiefs and subjects equally, not to use force in any dispute whatsoever; all that is admissible is, the refusal of either party to cooperate with the other, a refusal

(b) Progress.

not incompatible with the continuance of their collective service. All classes equally, find their main happiness in the uninterrupted play of their sympathetic instincts, consequent on their voluntary participation in the action of the society. But whilst the source of human happiness is identical for all, it admits variety of adaptation to the diversities of capacity and situation, by a wise application of the education all have in common. For with the inferiors, attachment holds the first place, with the superiors, benevolence, the function of the inferiors being favourable to private, that of the superiors to public life, whilst veneration is common, wealth respecting numbers, numbers respecting wealth. All the relations of the two rest on confidence, and involve responsibility; even the material retribution of particular services is in every case dependent on the free initiative of the agent. The same principle of confidence regulates the transfer of functions and of the capital they require for their discharge, and so upholds the social continuity; the retiring functionary choosing freely his successor, subject to the assent of his immediate superior.

Industry so constituted favours feeling and intellect.

Such a constitution of industry allows it to attain its full proportions, without ever weakening the moral source of Positive unity or its intellectual basis. Nay, the industrial life so conceived offers the best guarantee for the sound growth and expansion of feeling and intellect, owing to the natural interdependence of the several kinds of progress, the simplest and lowest being always the easiest and least uncertain. This is the way in which the Great Being, in its full prime, will take possession of its domain, the Earth, marking its proprietorship by effecting all the improvements compatible with the order of the whole, in accordance with the principle that particular action must in all cases be subordinate to the general unity.

Concrete view.
I. Constitution of Sociocracy.
II. Its several elements.

The appreciation in the abstract of the ultimate synthesis ended, the rest of this chapter must be devoted to an exposition of the Positive state in the concrete, thus completing our description of human regeneration. The first point in such exposition is to determine the constitution of the sociocracy in the general, afterwards the peculiar character of each of its elements separately.

Principles on which we classify these elements.

In classing these elements, we may have regard either to the emotional source of the Positive religion, or its intellectual basis. The spontaneous convergence of the two modes, the one synthe-

tical, the other analytical, gives the hierarchy of Sociocracy a solidity which nothing can shake. Further, we have a general verification of the two in the agreement which, by the nature of the case, exists between the constitution of society and the nature of the individual.

From the moral point of view, society as constituted by Positivism is the objective presentation of the Great Being. It follows that its constituent elements take rank by their aptness to represent Humanity; that is to say, by the degree in which their nature is sympathetic. From the intellectual point of view, society, or the hierarchy of man, is the highest term of the ascending series formed by the aggregate of known existences. Thus regarded, the elements of society must, equally with the other terms of the series, be classified by their degree of generality, the standard by which throughout we measure the approach to unity. We may coordinate them, by taking as the principle of comparison either sympathy or synthesis. Now the two modes are, in fact, equivalent, sympathy being the source of any true synthesis. We find in language a presentiment of this fundamental agreement; language always offering us a connection of generality with generosity, the fruitfulness in results, common to both, being the ground of the connection.

Both principles of classification point to the distinction of the sexes as the primary basis of the constitution of Sociocracy. For women, the representatives of Humanity, are both more sympathetic and more synthetic than her servants. They are, then, the higher in dignity; in power we cannot but reverse the order. Thus woman occupies the first rank in Sociocracy, as the best personification of the Great Being. Though her intellectual claims have hitherto been less acknowledged than her moral advantages, the Positive religion will secure them the recognition which is their due, by distinguishing what have hitherto been confounded without enquiry, capacity and cultivation. If in the disposition to unity we have the best measure of intellectual power, evidently woman is superior; we have only to take into account her instinctive tendency to consider morality in all cases as paramount, morality being the point to which all our conceptions converge. But this natural superiority of woman does not admit, generally, of any systematic assertion, from her being shut out from collective action, which is adapted only to the active sex.

(1) Women
superior in
sympathy.

The distinction of the sexes answers to that between private and public life.

In fact, we must consider this first division of Sociocracy as answering to the distinction between private and public life. Properly speaking, women do not form a class, since they are never to be considered collectively. Each one of them, the soul of her own family, whilst taking no immediate part in the service of the Great Being, naturally represents that Being for those who serve it directly, and her function is to breathe into them the dispositions most in harmony with their public duties. Whilst the advancement of science or of industry is the result of collective efforts, feeling, the source of unity, is evolved only in the individual. Woman, if she is to attain her full intellectual, still more her full moral, value, must be concentrated on private life, whilst man's development is imperfect unless he look to public life as his true sphere. The pre-eminence accorded to woman in Sociocracy offers no opening consequently for abuse, as, with here and there a well-grounded exception, woman inevitably sinks her claims if she step beyond the sanctuary of her home. She must restrict herself to the direction of private life, as the normal basis of public life, the latter alone, with the sex which administers it, being set apart for the direct service of Humanity.

Distinction of practitioners and theoreticians.

This is the fundamental division, but beyond this the sociocratic order requires the division of the servants of Humanity into her theoretical and practical servants, whilst no distinction is admissible for her representatives. Although the theoretic class may never be more than an extremely small fraction of the whole body, it has been satisfactorily shown in the two preceding volumes that the separate existence of this class, under proper conditions, is the most distinct note of maturity in the Great Being. Eliminate this constituent, and human society remains national and incapable of coextension with the race. The superiority of the theoretic servants of Humanity, in sympathy as in synthesis, to her practical servants, is as indisputable as the inferiority of both to the affective sex. In their normal conception, its theoretic servants are the indispensable interpreters of the Great Being, for they alone possess the requisite knowledge of its nature and its destinies.

Consequences of the previous divisions.

By these two divisions, the constitution of society is found to develop and to secure at once, the consensus in the individual of feeling, thought, and action. The actual generation is, on

this view, bound to the two subjective portions of Humanity, its past and its future—woman impelling us towards the future, the priesthood subordinating us to the past, the active mass having the present as its province. The statical relation thus indicated finds dynamical confirmation in the course of education through which all are to pass in the normal state, with its three stages, the education of the affections, the education of the intellect, and the education of our powers of action.

But the constitution above given would be incomplete without one general distinction, a consequence of the natural subdivision of action into direction and execution. This last falls in naturally with the two other divisions, since by the law of sympathy and generality those who form the plans for the Great Being stand higher than the agents who carry them into effect. Looking upon the whole sociocratic organisation as the seat, objectively, of the true providence, it is vested, for the material order, specially in the patriciate, as for the intellectual it is vested in the priesthood, and for the moral primarily in woman. Love and knowledge, these are the attributes respectively of the two higher elements, whilst provision, or the satisfaction of our material wants, is a function which for its right discharge must be analysed in its two real elements of will and power. In the patriciate is the chief seat of the will, the will condensing in itself as it were our whole objective life, as societies and as individuals. On this ground it is that capital should be concentrated in the patriciate, as the directing class on which devolves the provisioning of the other classes, each in its appropriate way. As for the abuses inherent in such vast power, the Positive religion is adapted to check them by its possession of a common ideal, furnished by the Great Being. Composite and subjective—Humanity is alien to will, and recognises only the sway of demonstrable laws.

Distinction
of the patri-
ciate and
proletariate.

Direction being the special function of the patriciate we are warranted in assigning the complementary function to the proletariat, as the immediate agent of the power of Humanity. Its service, involving merely the responsibility of carrying out instructions, leaves the proletariat free both in mind and heart to apply the common doctrine and make it felt as a check on the abuses attendant on the undue absorption in science or industry. The general superintendence of the social system, vested

Function of
the prole-
tariate.

in the class which suffers the most from its disorder, extends even to the temporary aberrations to which in private life an exaggeration of feeling might easily give rise.

The auxilia-
ries of Hu-
manity.

This then is the ideal constitution of the Sociocracy: the representatives of Humanity preside over the family; under them as supreme, she ranks, first the interpreters of her laws, next the ministers of her designs, lastly the agents of her power. Love, knowledge, will, and power are the attributes respectively of the four indispensable branches of her service, the separation of which, and the coordination of which, mark the full maturity of the Great Being. To complete, however, this fundamental outline, we must combine with the human population the voluntary assistance furnished by the animal races it can associate, which bring a moral or intellectual or material contribution to the common task of directing the aid involuntarily rendered by purely physical forces.

The charac-
ter of the
Sociocratic
elements.

This statement introduces, as the conclusion of the chapter, an examination of the peculiar character of each of the constituents of Sociocracy, the lower being, in obedience to the law of every objective hierarchy, the more independent. To simplify their comparison, we may reduce the constituents to three, for we may regard the service of women as the basis for the individual of his service to society. Subject to this influence in private life, public life aims above all at such a transformation of action, in whatever form it be predominant, as may strip it of its egoistic character, and make it support and expand the altruistic synthesis. The three sociocratic forces contribute by their own natural action to this general result, each in accordance with its peculiar constitution. It is, however, on the patriciate in particular that this transformation depends, as the patriciate alone is competent to give a collective character to individual activity by virtue of the capital it administers. The supremacy, however, of the patriciate, necessary as it is, would continue to have a purely empirical character and would be a source of abuse, were it not for the moderating power vested in the priesthood, which, as the special depositary of our intellectual capital, gives a systematic direction to ordinary life by connecting it with our subjective existence. Lastly, the great body of the industrial workers, connected, though by a different tie, with each of the above classes, is the spontaneous regulator of the disputes which arise in the course of events from the

patrician desire of power, and the sacerdotal craving for influence.

Before characterising each of the three indispensable elements of society, it is desirable to examine into the moral stimulus constantly imparted to all the servants of Humanity by her representative in the family.

In some degree, greater or less, the affective sex has at all times accomplished this holy mission; but, to put out its full power, woman needs, within proper limits, independence. a condition for which the initiation of mankind has gradually prepared the way, though its full realisation is reserved for the adult age of the Great Being. The condition is so absolutely necessary, that its attainment will be a simple consequence of a sound estimate of woman's nature and function, as an intermediate being between men and Humanity. But the change does not merely involve the placing her moral higher than her physical function, hitherto coarsely held paramount. It implies in addition the previous correction of the existing opinions as to this physical function, originally held to be essentially a masculine attribute. On this point the permanent direction of the current of human opinion may be inferred from a comparison of the theory, on which Apollo in *Æschylus* justifies Orestes before Minerva, with the doctrine enunciated by Harvey.

Woman.
Her inde-
pendence.

Admitting, however, this growing disposition to look on man as the offspring mainly of woman, it is still a point on which opinion has by no means reached the normal conclusion. Yet in the antecedent movement we have an indication that the conviction will soon become general, that in the reproduction of the species the larger share by far is the woman's. Even already, and amid the actual confusion of biological conceptions, the share of the man is allowed to be much smaller than might be expected from the activity of his generative system. In the third chapter I shall clear up this difficulty by assigning the system in question another purpose as its main one. In the second place, the conclusive observation of Franklin, that if we go back but a few generations we necessarily come to common ancestors, is but an expression of the truth that, even physically, men are more the children of Humanity than of their several families. Over and above this community of origin, the distinct act of reproduction must also take a col-

Change of
view as to
the function
of Reproduc-
tion.

lective character, and for this end we need a judicious return to the ideas as to the influence of the nervous system, which, though deficient in clearness, were sound, and which were too blindly rejected during the recent period of anarchy. If, as there is no reason to doubt, the state of the mother's brain affects the constitution of the fœtus, then the whole environment, physical and social, during pregnancy, plays a greater part than in the lower races in the production of each child of Humanity.

The physical function of woman becomes then a collective one, social in its origin and its accomplishment, social also in its result. On this view, and it is one even now susceptible of demonstration, woman's high place in the family is placed on a solid foundation. But to give definiteness to our conception of the independence of woman, I think it right to place here a daring hypothesis, possibly destined to become a reality in the course of our advance, though at what time, or even in what manner, is not for me to enquire.

The Hypothesis. The reproductive function exclusively female.

If in human reproduction the man contributes merely a stimulus, one that is but an incidental accompaniment of the real office of his generative system, then it is conceivable that we might substitute for this stimulus one or more which should be at women's free disposal. The non-existence of such a power in the animal races nearest to man, is no sufficient reason for refusing it to man as the most eminent race and the most susceptible of modification. In man the privilege would be in accordance with other peculiarities of the same function, with menstruation for instance, which is a decided advance on the rudimentary form of it found among the higher animals, an advance due to our civilised condition.

I need not dwell further upon this hypothesis, the sole object of which is to implant a presentiment, as it were, of the degree in which woman, even in her physical functions, may become independent of men. In social statics, an hypothesis of a less warrantable kind enabled me, without objection from any quarter, to establish on a surer basis the true theory of property. I hope therefore that the indication above given will shortly prevail over a repugnance which is without rational foundation, and will tend to strengthen a theory of equal importance. Supposing the independence of woman ever to attain this limit, as a consequence of the sum of human progress, moral,

intellectual, and even physical, then her action on society would be increased in an eminent measure. We should then no longer hesitate between the coarse view now prevalent and the noble doctrine to which Positivism gives its systematic form. The highest species of production would no longer be at the mercy of a capricious and unruly instinct, the proper restraint of which has hitherto been the chief stumbling-block in the way of human discipline. The function and all the responsibilities it involves would then be vested, as it should be, in its highest organs, in those who alone can overcome the weakness of impulse—and the object of the transfer would be the accomplishment of all attainable ameliorations.

Be this as it may, it is to be remembered that the part assigned in the sociocratic institutions to women is independent of this hypothetical improvement. On this point I need not enter into details, I may rely on the three preceding volumes, and in especial on the General View. Shortly to state it: the just independence of the sex may be regarded as resting upon two conditions in close connection with one another: the exemption of all women from work away from home, and their voluntary and complete renunciation of wealth. For women suffer more from the aspirations of ambition than they do from the pressure of poverty. Priestesses of Humanity in the family circle, born to mitigate by affection the rule, the necessary rule, of strength, women should shrink from any participation in power as in its very nature degrading.

Conditions
of woman's
independ-
ence.

Support and encouragement to this deepest conviction will be naturally found in the common education, placed under the presidency of women, when they have learnt to appreciate it, may have themselves received it. Its training will put them on their guard most particularly against the instigations of vanity, less dangerous, it is true, but more irresistible to women than those of pride. Brought into close contact with the whole range of real knowledge, they will but the more keenly feel the value of affection and the justice of its claim to superiority over thought, the true function of which is simply to be the systematic guide of action. In this way, women's aptitude for synthesis, hitherto wholly uncultivated, will receive due cultivation, not such cultivation, however, as to interfere with her mission, but one calculated to give a firm cohesion to her superiority in sympathy.

Result of
Education
on Woman.

Value of the
encyclopæ-
dic training
for her.

By her constant preference of feeling, woman is naturally exposed to mistakes which might be prejudicial to her intellectual and practical growth, if the increase of her influence were not preceded by an improvement in her education. More truly synthetical than man as being more sympathetic, she is still less systematic than he is, be it as a result of her mental constitution, or most especially of her absorption in affection, affection ever aiming at the immediate attainment of some particular object. There is no other corrective for this defect but an encyclopædic education, and if uncorrected, it compromises the efficiency of women in the Positive society. A sound apprehension of the order of things would lead them to see how important submission is to dignity. Although confined on good grounds to domestic life, women should so far understand public life as to be able to direct the power exercised by the heart so as to qualify it for its high destiny. Positive education, whilst it deprecates the exaggeration of feeling, is also calculated to correct the deficiencies in women in regard to character. For in this, as in intelligence, their shortcomings are traceable rather to the system under which they live than to their natural constitution, and may be obviated so far as not to hamper an existence, the true purpose of which is as little action as it is speculation.

Woman
offers less
difficulty
than the
active class.

The above remarks suffice for the present as to the regeneration of woman in the sociocratic state. Consolidating, nay, even calling into greater activity her spontaneity, the Positive religion will enable the sex to attain the coherent existence in which as yet it is deficient. This new position, which will as a whole realise the highest aspirations of the Middle Ages, will meet with but little opposition from women when once they have grasped its idea; they will not be daunted by the conditions of intellectual and moral capacity which it exacts from them. In fact, errors traceable to feeling have this advantage over the errors traceable to intellect and activity, that, once recognised, our feelings are interested in the correction of them, as in all cases destructive of the object those feelings cannot but propose to themselves. The grand difficulty in the path of the Positive religion once overcome, the difficulty, that is, of forming the Priesthood of Humanity, the effort needed to regenerate women will be less than that required to regenerate the patriciate or even the proletariat.

This judgment induces the next step, the explanation of the constitution of the spiritual power of Sociocracy, the natural connecting link between the two sexes. The Spiritual Power.

It was reserved for Positivism to complete what had been left inchoate by Catholicism, viz., the decisive separation of the theoretic from the active power; on this point I need not here enter into further explanation. It is the less obligatory to return on ideas which found their proper place in the second volume and were completed in the third, in that the two conditions of the independence of the priesthood are similar to those, recalled above, which apply to women. These two kindred elements of the moderating power differ, in regard to independence, only in the mode of their support. Women, the source of the spontaneous impulse, are maintained by their families; the priesthood, the organ of systematic influence, is maintained by the state, or rather by the race, and this holds good even when such maintenance depends on the voluntary contributions of individuals. As the priesthood, however, necessarily takes part in public life, more precautions are required in its case than in the case of women, as regards the second and more personal condition of independence; the aim being to get rid of the tendencies to pride which are more fatal to its usefulness than those of vanity. The priesthood, not content with renouncing wealth, must give all its services whatsoever gratuitously, for, as they lead to no destruction of materials, they exclude the idea of wages, the invariable object of which is to replace the materials of labour. Conditions of its independence.

The proper character of the priesthood is naturally and distinctly seen if we compare it generally with that of women. Both elements of the spiritual power are in sympathy and in synthesis superior to the active world which they are to discipline, and they differ from one another solely by the different proportion in which they respectively possess these qualities, sympathy being the more feminine attribute, synthesis the more priestly. Their difference in this respect corresponds, intellectually, to a difference in their respective cultivation of induction and deduction, a difference which modifies the power of expression which they have in common; morally, to the predominance respectively of attachment or benevolence; both being equally prone, though in a distinct form, to veneration. We may even complete the parallel and extend it to the character properly so called, since Character of the Priesthood shown by comparing it with Woman.

courage and firmness should be most prominent in the priest, prudence in the woman. This comparison between the nature and position of the two moderating elements, represents the improvement of either, as mainly consisting in the careful cultivation in itself of the special qualities of the other, by the due discharge of its peculiar function. A consequence of this is the natural affinity, an affinity ever on the increase, between the priesthood and women. It finds at length its recognition in Positivism, for, no longer tolerating the fatal anomaly of Catholicism, Positivism binds marriage upon the priests of Humanity, so to offer the best type of our nature, by a noble combination of private with public life.

The great
function of
the Priest-
hood, E du-
cation.

This previous condition fulfilled, the life of the priest will give ample scope for his power of synthesis so as to make it react on the developement of his sympathies, just as, inversely, sympathy leads woman to synthesis. The chief function of the priest of Humanity is education, the encyclopædic education which is needed to complete the training given in the family: the object being to allow the formation of a sound public opinion, calculated to consolidate the consultative influence of the priesthood throughout our life. Now education, as the primary function of the spiritual power, in regard to which it admits no competition, requires and fosters the systematic predominance of the synthetical spirit, left to its spontaneous growth in women. Better than aught else, this spirit tests the value of the various theories, which are necessarily idle speculations if not conducive to this end. To correct the habits formed by the long process of elaborating the objective basis required by the Positive religion, all we need is, to limit scientific training to such knowledge of the order of things as is indispensable for wise action. This limitation will flow naturally from the completeness of intellectual range characteristic of our public education, from which all specialisation must be banished, allowing for such developments as the ulterior needs of practical life require. Coming after the education of the affections, the education of the intellect, always, it must be remembered, given under the superintendence of women, will never encourage the intellect to rebel against the heart, a result generally traceable to excess of detail in our speculations.

Trained to comprehensiveness by their chief office, the priests of Humanity will carry the same habit of mind into the

scientific labours to which it may give occasion. Their other and complementary duties in reference to practical life will be an additional check upon, or a remedy for, an excess on the side of abstraction. Still, as their action on society requires not merely intellectual capacity, but intellectual capacity combined with rare excellence of heart and character, we must provide for the exceptional cases where the combination is imperfect, and where yet it is desirable not to hinder the intellectual developement. In such anomalous cases, less frequent than is thought at present, Sociocracy relegates to the class of pensioners of the priesthood those who, from deficiency in point of energy or tenderness, are only fit for science. As for the special investigations which may for a time require the concentrated attention of true priests, they may be provided for by appropriate dispensations, without in any case impairing the legitimate supremacy of the disposition to synthesis and sympathy, which is the invariable characteristic of those who direct the relative religion.

To the impulse derived from women, and to its own social destination, we may add, as a protection to the Positive priesthood against degenerating from excess of abstraction, the fusion, which is an imperative necessity, of philosophy with poetry. If not combined in close alliance, they are a constant source of grave disturbance in the sociocratic order, as science and art, naturally rivals, claim on equivalent grounds the spiritual direction. Their rivalry is prevented if the priesthood absorbs both capacities in the complete comprehensiveness which is its note, in both its forms—spontaneous and systematic. The distinct advancement of either science or art will not call for more than exceptional efforts, as above stated, when the Positive religion shall have really closed the transitional period, increasingly revolutionary in its character, which lies between us and the Theocracy, the single instance hitherto of a normal society. In the doctrine the office of the priesthood is mainly scientific; in the worship it becomes mainly artistic; in the regime there is equal scope for both powers, for the theoretic in preaching and consecration, for the poetic in consultation and discipline. Art first shook off the yoke of Theocracy, as interfering with any decided growth; science could not but follow its example, to gain power to construct the objective basis of the final religion. All sound philosophy, however, with a presentiment of the

The fusion of philosophy and poetry will aid in preserving the true priestly character.

subjective character of the true synthesis, kept constantly before it as its aim a return, under proper conditions, to the plenary sacerdotal organisation, whenever the twofold effort of art and of science should have laid a sufficient basis for its definitive shape.

The Priest-
hood will
resume the
medical
office.

Philosophical or poetical,—it is indifferent which term we use,—to complete its legitimate attributions, the Positive priesthood must absorb all the other functions, which, as they directly regard man, are in their nature indivisible. Such is pre-eminently the medical—the provisional isolation of which has gradually led to a state of mental and moral degeneration urgently calling for its reincorporation with the priestly office. A portentous venality, combined with irrational speciality, leads in medicine to a blind ignoring of the indivisibility of human nature in the individual as in society. But by virtue of its encyclopædic training, the Positive priesthood will resume the medical office as the inseparable complement of its principal function, a function which connects it with human existence under all its aspects whatsoever. Two special precautions, however, are necessary in reference to this complement, or the dignity of the priesthood might be lowered by mere manual and cruel duties. The surgical department, reduced to its original subaltern position, must be handed over to those best qualified for it, must belong, that is, to the surgical instrument makers, when qualified by an encyclopædic education to avail themselves of the special opportunities afforded by their profession. So again, post-mortem examinations will be limited to the functionary who, in the name of Humanity, performs the terrible duty of executing murderers; their bodies will be sufficient for the real needs of science in its renovated state.

An universal
language.

This outline of the constitution of the priesthood would be incomplete unless I pointed out the solution, the natural solution, of a serious difficulty; the difficulty, viz., consequent on the necessity of the extension of the Positive religion to all portions of the Earth. Evidently, its universal adoption depends on the existence of a common language, as is explained in the fourth chapter of the second volume. Its formation occupied the leading thinkers, dating from the period at which the Western revolution evoked strongly marked aspirations for a definitive reorganisation. But the metaphysical spirit led to the mistake of not seeing that such a construction must be spontaneous, its only possible basis

being its elaboration by the people, so that it can only be the result of the unanimous adoption of an existing language. Of the various languages of the West, that must be the best adapted for universal acceptance which has been most cultivated for poetry and music, as soon as appropriate modifications shall have qualified it systematically for its position. Sprung, as it is, from the improvement, in the natural course of things, of the language spoken by the noblest precursors of the definitive social order, it is the best fitted to bind worthily the future to the past. Shaped by the most peaceful and most artistic of European nations, the only one clear of any share in colonisation, it will meet the fewest obstacles to its free adoption everywhere, an adoption which will be secured by the priesthood of Positivism, consecrating it to the worship of Humanity.

Italian

To see the full force of these remarks we must wait for their expansion in the subsequent chapters, but they are sufficient in this place to give a distinct idea of the constitution of the priesthood as a whole. It remains to offer their equivalent as regards industrial life, and I begin with the patriciate, the power which is to direct the advance of society in this respect.

Fractional
class.

The patriciate, as the centre of action and nutrition, is the special basis of the State, or City, as the woman is of the Family, the priesthood of the Church. Peculiar to the intermediate association, the patriciate can find its discipline nowhere else but in the persistent influence brought to bear upon it by the two others, the influence of love by the closest form, the influence of faith by the largest, so that its regeneration must be subsequent to theirs. The responsibilities inseparable from its position distract it from affection; its proper concentration on the present makes it neglect the cultivation of the intellect. It needs then the influence of women to lead it back constantly towards the true source of unity; the influence of the priest to remind it that solidarity is secondary to continuity; that in its care for existing interests it must not neglect those of the future. On the other hand, it is no less necessary for the harmony of Sociocracy that its industrial chiefs should exercise an influence over its moral and intellectual organs. The intellect and the emotions would otherwise infallibly be led astray into idle enquiries or mystical exaggerations, as their nature prompts them to one or the other. Give a collective character to human industry, and its habitual predominance, so

(1) Patri-
ciate the
basis of the
City.

far from impeding the moral and intellectual progress of the race, is on the contrary the indispensable condition of its coherence and completeness.

The Patri-
ciate the
seat of Hu-
man Will.

Sufficient for this reaction. On the assumption of it I have now to explain the prerogative by which, from the abstract point of view, I defined the patriciate, when I said that the will, a feature peculiar to objective life, and in which alone that life finds its condensed expression, resides properly in the patriciate.

Nothing can show more clearly in what way this directing power contributes to the true unity of man, which finds its natural presentation in the will as the point of convergence for the impulses of affection, the deliberations of the intellect, and the virtues of the character. Although the convergence be of rare attainment, the necessary condition of its rise and duration is the ascendancy of a concentrated power, the only means of preventing or repressing the divergences attendant on our complex nature. It is on this point that the Great Being most needs the aid of its true servants to remedy the grand defect of its constitution, the composite and subjective constitution, which is the source of tendencies, nay, even of designs, but never of will. The dead, as a corporate existence, exercise a direct control over the thoughts and feelings of the living, whereas Humanity can only impel us to will through the agency of the laws, of her own creation or of nature's, which she gradually establishes. These laws, however, cannot go beyond the giving a general impulse. They cannot inspire us with the steady and definite resolution requisite for the details of action in particular circumstances. It is the will which is in immediate connection with action, and it is in the will that lies the leading difference between the objective and the subjective life.

Will requires
power to
give it effect.

But to will with effect, the primary requisite is power. Hence effective will is confined to the patricians, as a rule, as the indispensable condensers of the material forces of society, the immediate end of which is the developement of man's activity. Their great duty is to subordinate their particular decisions to the general laws,* laws free from caprice, which the Great Being imposes on its collective servants. Wealth leads to the non-recognition or contempt of this universal obligation, but not the less does it lie under it, and sooner or later the

aberrations it occasions are corrected by it, so that they do not interfere with its essential object. Will is, primarily, peculiar to the collective life of man, whence it extends to his individual life, from the essential interdependence of the two. In fact men are, in large majority, naturally irresolute, and would remain so were it not for the injunctions of authority, which, with a definiteness lacking elsewhere as a rule, supplement by a natural process the decrees of destiny. Provided that it be ennobled by love, and obedience to man meets this condition better than obedience to the external order, submission promotes individual happiness in as great a degree as it does the well-being of society.

The will, as the characteristic function of the patriciate, requires in the first place certain material conditions, the principal one being the concentration of wealth. The natural tendency of industrial life is, it is true, towards this concentration, but there are certain leading imperfections in this form of existence for which man's providence can and should provide remedies, and the remedies are twofold. In the first place, the manhood of the race will give a systematic form to the tendencies of its childhood, and will judiciously encourage the practice of gifts, gifts both from the state and from individuals, as a means of creating patricians fully inclined to accept the discipline of the sociocratic order. Secondly, the law which makes wealth depend for its efficiency on its concentration implies that each patrician, whether created as above, or born so, extends his sphere of action till it be commensurate with the responsibilities proportionate to his capital. This lessens the cost of administration, but it does more, and the great reason for the condition is, that we multiply the securities, so much needed, for the right use of wealth, in its distribution no less than in its production.

Necessity of
concentration
of
wealth in-
ferred.

This last result, however, depends more on internal than on external conditions, and the former are most susceptible of modification. The most important point is the emotional part of our nature, in regard to which we must remember, that the personal instincts alone are habitually able to inspire the will with sufficient energy to direct firstly our collective, then our individual existence. It is on this ground that the Positive religion sanctions in the patrician, whilst it disciplines, pride, as the foundation of an authority indispensable to society, whereas

Internal
conditions.

in all other classes pride is misplaced or childish. A competent priesthood will find it the easier to put aside the jealous objections of empiricism, from the circumstance that the patricians, as the ministers of the Great Being, whilst subject to the fatalities of our cerebral organisation, display, as a rule, a less ignoble egoism than that of the objectors. From avarice their wealth protects them; they ennoble labour by their free choice of it as their profession; and that choice is determined by the highest of our personal instincts—the instincts most closely allied to those of sympathy, and most open to social influences. Still, allowing for these natural dispositions, the spiritual power will have to exert itself constantly to modify by faith and love the energetic will required of the patriciate by its mission, with the view of bringing it into as close a connection as possible with the benevolent instincts. The regeneration indicated finds direct support in the concentration of wealth, such concentration strengthening the consciousness of the sway of Humanity, and so evoking generosity of feeling as a consequence of generality in thought and act.

The patrician hierarchy.

Thus we introduce regularity into the phenomenon, so deserving our admiration, of the constant reproduction, with increase, of the perishable portion of human capital. Yet to ensure a right appreciation of this general result of human providence in its material aspect, I have to show in what way the several constituents of the patrician hierarchy contribute to it.

The constituent elements of the moderating power are each of them by their nature indivisible; as appears from the uniformity of the action of women; from the concentration which characterises that of the priesthood; for any division weakens it by interfering with synthesis. The patriciate, on the contrary, the directing power, is divisible, and must be so, from the speciality inherent in its object. All spiritual authority necessarily originates in a single brain, and radiates thence gradually in every direction whatsoever; that it requires a plurality of interpreters is due solely to its wide sphere of action; in itself it remains homogeneous. Practical power, on the other hand, admits of concentration only in a very limited degree; so limited that each department of industry, looked at as a whole, requires many chiefs, each independent one of the other, each providing for the wants of a

small population. Neglecting this secondary division, due to our weakness as individuals, what we have to attend to here is the main division of the patriciate, based on the differences in its industrial action.

The division consists in distinguishing three essential classes, according as industry, becoming more and more condensed, produces, manufactures, or transports the objects that supply our wants. Hence, as a consequence, the patrician hierarchy, in natural correspondence with the universal principle of Positive classification, the principle of increase in generality and decrease in independence. So viewed, to concentrate the hierarchy in one single chief becomes evidently impossible, not merely for our planet as a whole, but even for each independent state, as no single man could be competent simultaneously to direct its agriculture, its manufactures, and its commerce. Nevertheless the organisation of industry would still be impracticable, were it not that the progress of the most concentrated of its forms, commerce, has thrown up a still more condensed form, which connects with all the other forms by the circulation of values and the developement of credit. This supreme degree of industrial abstraction leads to the creation of a patriciate on which naturally devolves the leading influence in the city, and the further function of bringing into active concert all the various states.

Three classes
of patricians
(1) Agricultural.
(2) Manufacturing.
(3) Commercial.

Bankers.

And yet the Bank, however legitimate its superiority when compared with commerce, manufactures, and agriculture, can offer no discipline for each several population, much less a rallying point for the different populations. But though in no sense a substitute for the continuous interference of the two elements of the spiritual power, its ascendancy smooths the way for their influence upon the directing patriciate, by concentrating such influence on its highest branch. In fact the encyclopædic education will lead habitually to close relations between the priesthood and the bankers, by virtue of the generality which characterises their operations, so that the banking class will be the civic organ for inaugurating the more important connections of science with industry.

After this examination of the patriciate, we may complete our conspectus of the Sociocracy in the concrete by that of its fourth indispensable constituent. Though it have the most of a collective character, it connects directly with the first, and

The Proletariat.

yet that first has the most of an individual character ; for the proletaries do not, any more than women, form a class, properly so-called. The proletariat is to be regarded as the general *milieu* from out of which the two special powers take their rise, and which should control the action of those powers, because it constitutes the object of that action.

Its homogeneity.

The real character of the popular constituent is best seen in its inherent homogeneity, which it maintains under the continuous pressure of influences in the contrary direction. The hierarchy gradually established in the patriciate does not apply to the proletariat, and this in spite of the subordination of workmen to capitalists, which has been on the increase ever since the close of the Middle Ages. Difference of employments, nay, even national differences, are lost in the community of position and object. The similarity becomes more easy to appreciate if placed in contrast with the habitual tendencies to rivalry of the industrial chiefs. The only point where it fails is in the division which exists between the agricultural labourers and those of the towns. Now the separation between these two depends not so much on difference of work as on the moral and intellectual inferiority of the rural population. This transitory consequence of the inequality in their advance will disappear under a common education, and when it disappears all proletaries, in town or country, will awake to a sense of their intrinsic uniformity, which has an immediate bearing on the success to which they are entitled in realising their common aspirations.

In the proletariat are developed the general features of Humanity.

These considerations may show us that the mass of the people really has no peculiar features, but offers us only the general characteristics of Humanity, masked in its different chiefs by their respective functions. The peculiar office of the proletariat lends itself best to the rise of a community of feeling in regard to the harmony of the state, or of the world ; given such social arrangements as shall allow it the proper leisure requisite for it to avail itself of the advantages of its position—the advantages of its disengagement in heart and intellect. Owing to the simple character of their special work, proletaries are the least synthetic of the constituent elements of Sociocracy, whilst their poverty is a hindrance to their being as sympathetic as their chiefs may be. For this reason there will always be a disposition in the proletariat to protest against the

classification by offices here given, and to prefer the classification of individuals by personal merit, independently of social position. Herein lies the main source of the attributes which characterise, and of the dangers which attach to, the influence of the people, an influence which is equally adapted to regulate or to disturb the common harmony, according to the direction it takes.

It should be a leading aim in the institutions of Sociocracy to give a systematic direction to the power of number—a power not unfrequently an element of temporary disturbance, but on which it devolves to give completeness, by its constant intervention, to the social order, the true foundations of which are wealth and wisdom. Such a change in the action of number depends rather on the people itself than on the influence of its circumstances. The first requisite is, that the people of its own impulse renounce the use of force, in all cases confining its just resistance to this or that abuse of authority, temporal or spiritual, to the refusal to cooperate or to the withholding its assent, the sole form of contest admissible in the Sociocracy. In the second place, the people must so far shake off class selfishness as not to look upon itself as the essential object of the whole social economy. The Positive religion will make the people feel that, unworthy parasites excepted, all men are practically fellow-labourers in a continuous work, a work never having for its object any one group, however large, but always concerning the whole of mankind. At bottom, the existing generation labours for that part of the subjective population which is to be, as the part which has been, laboured for it. Continuity, by the systematic teaching of the priesthood, once recognised as superior to solidarity, the proletariat will, of its own impulse, support the priesthood by virtue of the tendency of its form of activity to abstraction and unselfishness, bearing, as it does mainly, on the future of the race.

Means for
a systematic
direction of
the power of
number.

A further and last requisite for the personal regeneration of the proletariat must be a firmer control over their self-regarding instincts, a greater cultivation of their social. In regard to the former, the main effort will concern the love of gain, to which their position offers a constant stimulus, while it as naturally protects them against pride and vanity, the faults of their leaders, whether practical or theoretical. Once protected as a body from the pressure of want, they will feel

The proletariate must
restrain its
personal
instincts.

the contradiction involved in the outcry against the selfishness and idleness of the rich, whilst the poor make it the final end and aim of their own exertions to reach the same ignoble state. Guided by the priesthood, the proletaries will stigmatise any tendency to leave the class as a slur upon the dignity of the popular function, and as fatal to the just aspirations of the people, those who desert it invariably betraying it. In the second place, the plebeians—better placed for the attainment of domestic happiness than the patricians and the priests—whilst they cultivate attachment, will add to it veneration for all their leaders, even in the midst of civil or religious disputes. Their position as inferiors may seem to deny them the exercise of benevolence, for benevolence implies protection; yet in reality there is ample scope for it, as it is the Proletariate which presides over the relations of man with the animals. The developement of the life of sympathy, in regard to these two instincts, will, more easily with the proletariate than elsewhere, be carried on under the constant influence of women, the best types of the sex being found in its ranks.

External
conditions.

These personal requirements met, those of its position in the Sociocracy—the external conditions of its well-being—will be satisfied by the due performance on the part of the priesthood and the patriciate of the conditions which depend on them. These concern first education, next labour, as indicated in the General View and to be completely explained in the present volume. Destined for the proletaries above all, the encyclopædic instruction will enable them at once to give greater value to their own more special action, by virtue of the several connections which exist between industry and science, and at the same time to render more effective their general supervision by appealing to the common doctrine. As for labour, its normal conditions have been adequately stated in the second volume, allowing for the further explanations to be given in the fourth chapter of the present volume. At present I need only add that the guarantees of labour are not limited to the securing the labourer against want, but extend to the moral and intellectual elevation of the proletariate, the object being to allow the universal attainment of family life, in the name equally of order and of progress. The several conditions required for this purpose will be satisfied when, as a consequence of the voluntary acceptance of the sedentary form of human activity, the

quiet of industrial communities will no longer be disturbed by a nomad labouring class, an evidence at once of the neglect of the superiors, of the degradation of the inferiors. The above remarks, however, show that, to attain its complete form, the sociocratic constitution of the proletariat must await the advent of a patriciate worthy of the name, though the regeneration of the plebeians must precede and even prepare the way for that of the patricians.

If we combine our observations, they give a sufficient picture of the Sociocracy in the concrete to support the statement, that the Positive religion in its abstract form is competent to regulate human life in all its parts, through its great fundamental theory, the theory of the Great Being. In this way the constitution of Sociocracy is the continuous developement of the sacred formula of Positivism, which consequently identifies private with public life. By the laws of her being, woman gives the impulse, acted on by which the patriciate becomes the organ of order, the proletariat the organ of progress, the priesthood systematically combining order with progress.

Conclusion.

On the general basis here laid, and in accordance with the original plan, the second chapter is devoted to an exposition in detail of the worship which has to govern our affective life by forming the regular connection between the objective and subjective stages of our existence.

CHAPTER II.

GENERAL VIEW OF THE AFFECTIVE LIFE,

or,

DEFINITIVE SYSTEMATISATION OF THE POSITIVE SYSTEM OF WORSHIP.

The Worship
precedes the
Dogma and
the Regime.

THE nature and object of this chapter will be set in a clear light by the introductory remarks elicited by its heading, in that it places, in the system of the Positive religion, the worship not merely before the regime but before the doctrine. This unusual arrangement is a modification of the order adopted in the second volume in the General Theory of Religion (Vol. II. pp. 17-20). It requires then a special justification. For this, I may confine myself to the simple enunciation of the considerations which suggested it to me. The statement of them will, I hope, show the change to be quite legitimate, and the propriety of it characteristic of the true religion.

Reasons for
the previous
arrange-
ment.

From an excess of deference for my Catholic predecessors, I was led originally to place the doctrine before the worship, without asking myself the question: Was this arrangement in as full accordance with the genius of the new synthesis as it was with that of the older? An over-estimate of the importance of logical sequence induced me subsequently to adhere to it, in order that the worship might rest on a scientific basis. But the practical application of the original arrangement has gradually convinced me that it was defective synthetically.

Reasons
against it.

In the first place, it is at issue with the fundamental formula of Positivism, in which love precedes order, as order precedes progress; and love is the domain of the worship, order that of the doctrine, progress of the life. In the second place, it is contradicted by the general theory of human nature, which puts feeling above intelligence and activity, the two indispensable servants of feeling. Lastly, it is at variance with the regular course of Positive education, in which the succession is: the education of the feelings, the education of the intellect, and the education of our active powers.

This threefold discrepancy is a sufficient justification of the new arrangement, implicitly announced in the last chapter, when I placed art above science. All who can appreciate the natural pre-eminence of questions of order, will be at once conscious of the importance attaching to this inversion of the previous arrangement, condensing as it does the general contrast between Theologism and Positivism. But, to clear up the point, I must first enter on a direct investigation of the grounds of the original arrangement.

The discrepancy justifies the change.

The strongest was the fictitious character of the provisional religion, when worship was paid to imaginary beings, and therefore must have the doctrines to rest upon as the sole source of our knowledge of those beings. This indispensable prerequisite, never systematised in Polytheism, was reduced to a system under its Monotheistic concentration. But in both stages a custom of universal adoption heralded the ultimate predominance of the worship, for it was the worship which habitually gave its designation to the whole religious system.

This first arrangement, then, is to be viewed as a temporary inversion of the normal order, though the adoption of the latter was impossible till such time as our adoration should be paid to a being by its nature within the cognisance of ^{man}. It is true that, as yet, the education of our feelings does not propose the knowledge of Humanity as its aim, but the last chapter has so far stated the whole Positive doctrine as to warrant our proceeding to expound the worship without any violation of rational method.

The previous arrangement temporary.

The worship is the best expression of the state of complete synthesis, the state in which all our knowledge, scientific and practical, finds its condensation in Morals. The grand object of religion being to teach us to live for others, it must essentially consist in regulating the direct cultivation of our sympathetic instincts. In fact such would be its sole function, were it not that our physical wants necessitate the addition both of the doctrine and the regime, so by man's own exertions to give an altruistic character to the natural egoism of his incessant activity.

The Worship the expression of the synthetical state.

To complete the justification of the order ultimately adopted, it is necessary to give greater precision to the above explanation of the provisional arrangement, by presenting it as simply coeval with Theologism, properly so called, having no

antecedent in Fetichism. In point of fact, religion in Fetichism was worship, and nothing more. It was so absolutely spontaneous that its dogmatic element was a mere matter of intuition; and its regime was limited to the exercise of our sympathies, such was the then rudimentary condition of human activity. Consequently the definitive order adopted by the Positive religion is but the systematisation of the instinctive practice of the first childhood of the race, through the final removal of an anomaly peculiar to its second childhood—and in an eminent degree harmonising with its adolescence.

Again the
affinity be-
tween
Fetichism
and
Positivism.

This fresh contact between the two extreme syntheses which are ultimately destined to coalesce, is possible, from the fact that in both alike the objects of worship are actual beings, and come within our immediate cognisance. There is this difference, that, in the primæval state, adoration was objective and simple, in the normal state it is subjective and complex; but it is a difference which will not affect the character of spontaneity common to the two, when Positive education shall have become sufficiently general. The Positivist worships results, the Fetichist worships materials; but both alike invoke the protection of the same supreme power, only their conceptions of that power are distinct, yet not irreconcilable.

Superior
synthetic
power of the
Religion of
Humanity.

The two forms, then, the instinctive and systematic, under which the religion of Humanity successively presents itself, alike disclaim the inversion, necessitated provisionally by the intermediate synthesis, but disappearing forever in the ultimate combination of the extremes. In both forms there is a natural correlation between the worship and the life, whereas Theologism, even as Polytheism, could never bring the two into satisfactory agreement. The definitive order of the three parts of religion furnishes a decisive proof of the superiority of Positivism in point of synthesis, and justifies the normal condensation of the law of human progress when we state it as an increasing tendency to unity.

Religion is
Worship.

In accordance with this indispensable introduction, I have now to treat of religion as consisting in the worship; and in fact the worship would suffice for our discipline, could our external circumstances become such as to allow it. The hypothesis can never be in the full sense realised, but the aggregate progress of mankind is bringing us constantly nearer to it, by constantly lessening the relative importance of material

wants, this change being a consequence of the accumulations due to our foresight, and the increase of power they give us.

Still, in assigning the worship its legitimate rank, we must duly take into account its necessary connection with the doctrine and the life, both at all times indispensable, though in a decreasing ratio, to its fulfilment of its moral aim. The agreement of the three is sufficiently indicated in the Positivist formula, if we take its three terms as answering to the three divisions of time. For love, the immediate source of the worship, in the main has reference to the future; order, the intellectual province of the doctrine, is derived principally from the past; progress, the practical object of the life, stands in closer relation with the present. Now, it is the future which becomes, and rightly, the more prominent consideration in proportion as man's action becomes more collective in its character. During the initiation of the race, man constantly laboured for his successors, in the Family originally, then in the State. It remains for him, in the period of maturity, to guide this instinct systematically, and make it subserve the interests of Posterity in the widest sense.

The paramount importance attached to the future is adequate as the distinctive feature of the normal state of Humanity, pointing as it does to deliberate action, and deliberate action implies constant prevision. And yet, at first sight, such a view, whilst ulteriorly pointing to the supremacy of the worship, would seem to make it intellectually dependent on the doctrine, as necessary for the interpretation of the past, on which rests our conception of the future. The apparent contradiction disappears if we distinguish between the analytical and synthetical arrangements, both of which are admissible for the universal doctrine.

Prominence of the future a characteristic of the normal state.

In fact, it is on the synthetical form that the worship must rest; it is this which it idealises, and by idealising develops. So little is the analytical a prerequisite, that the worship is a necessary condition of its right formation. Its actual importance is solely an empirical result of the objective character of the scientific process required as a preparation for the Positive method. In his adult period, man will correct the habits provisionally formed, and satisfy reason and feeling alike, by constantly subordinating analysis to synthesis. The two forms of the doctrinal system will then, each in accordance with its

The two arrangements of the doctrine.

nature, subserve, the one the worship, the other the regime. This allotment of their provinces answers to the distinction between the subjective creation and the objective appreciation of the central dogma, or Humanity. For this dogma remains one and indivisible so long as it is the immediate basis of morality; its division is allowable only when it is looked at as the condensation—a condensation imperatively required—of the whole order of the world.

The explanation shows that the only plausible reasons for maintaining the older arrangement of the three parts of religion are based on a mistake, viz., on the confusion of the doctrine, which is the foundation of the religion, with the system of dogmas properly so called. This latter is really nothing but a systematisation of an analytical kind, necessary for our action, but by the nature of the case, secondary to the synthetical construction of which the worship is the natural expression, and therefore it is with the worship that the rational study of Positive unity must begin. However normal this course may be, it would yet have been impossible to take it, had we not made it our object in the last chapter to establish directly the fundamental theory of the Great Being.

If the objection to placing the Worship first were valid, it would have to be placed after the Regime.

To place in stronger relief the unsoundness of the reasons for upholding the present position of the worship after the dogma, it must be added that, allowing them to be valid, they would lead to its being placed after the regime, as there must be a general conception of the regime or the worship would be a failure. The truth is, the worship can idealise the two other parts of the religion when yet undeveloped analytically; all that is required is, a clear synthetical conception of them, such a conception as may guide us in their definitive systematisation. All the scientific notions, cosmological, biological, and, above all, sociological, requisite for the theory of the Great Being, have been firmly established in the three preceding volumes on the basis of science formed into a complete whole. This enabled me, at the opening of the present volume, to proceed at once to the construction of the theory itself, a construction which involves the conjoint establishment of the three divisions of religion, with a view to their ulterior separation, under proper conditions, for the purposes of study. Such separate consideration of them is the condition of any satisfactory systematisation of the doctrine and the regime, the objective

analysis giving completeness to the subjective synthesis by which alone it could be guided. The outline already given qualifies us however for now proceeding directly to the construction of the worship, as the principal portion of the religion, the portion in which the idea and the feeling of unity find their best expression. At no distant period Positivism will correct in all the provisional habits which are the result of the existing condition of things, with its proud sense of revolution, and its consequent stimulation of the reason of the individual to construct a universal synthesis independently of all collective influences.

*The preliminary explanation here ended leads me to examine, in the first place, the destination of the Positive cultus; secondly, its nature in the general; before I give its direct exposition in detail, which must be the great object of the chapter.

(1) Destination, and
(2) Nature
of the Worship.

We adore Humanity in order to serve her better by the aid of fuller knowledge; worship then cannot but modify, under all its aspects, the existence which, as a whole, is represented in the constitution of the Great Being. But the normal preference of the worship to the two other constituents of the universal religion rests on this ground mainly, that it has for its principal domain the direct and persistent encouragement of our instincts of sympathy, the sole source of the Positive unity. Once grasp this idea of Sociolatriy, and we are qualified to appreciate its influence on thought and even on action.

The sympathetic instincts constitute its chief domain.

The Positive worship depends for its efficacy entirely on the fundamental law by which the continuous improvement of man's faculties is the result of their judicious exercise. In the adoration of the Great Being these faculties find a simultaneous exercise, as it always expresses our emotions in an idealised form. Practically, the idealisation of our altruistic instincts consists more especially in their purification from their ordinary admixture of egoism. So purified, they become in the fullest sense communicable, and the communication requires the combined and persistent exertion of our intellectual and active powers. It does not, that is, call into play merely the function of language, but also contemplation, abstract or concrete, nay even meditation, deductive no less than inductive meditation. As, for expression, when perfect, all the muscles of outward action are brought into use, it follows that communication makes a demand on the whole active life, whether we consider

Worship the exercise of all man's faculties.

it in its instruments, the muscles, or in its organs in the brain. Even when the outward manifestation is limited to the voice, without the aid of either gestures or attitudes, no part of our whole active system escapes its influence, from the close connection which allows each several part to substitute its cerebral influence for that of the other parts.

The synthetic idealisation of our existence.

It is in this way that the worship becomes the synthetic idealisation of the life which it is its function to perfect. It consecrates all the parts of that life, by their direct cooperation in the adoration of the Great Being; but it does more, it assigns them all their proper rank, by vindicating the constant pre-eminence of feeling over intellect, of intellect over activity. The power to do this is seen, it is true, in a rudimentary form in the provisional religion, but it is the peculiar property of the definitive cultus, a property derived from its unselfishness no less than from its reality. For the synthesis based on imagination never gave a sanction to the benevolent instincts, nay it even denied their existence when it was condensed into Monotheism, and consequently the worship, in Theology, could but indirectly cultivate them. Their direct cultivation, on the contrary, becomes the leading object of Sociolatriy, from the purely sympathetic character of the object of its worship; and the result is, that in the Positive system of cultus we have the best source of the just ascendancy of altruism over egoism.

Comparison of expression and action.

To complete our view, it is desirable to place in direct juxtaposition expression and action, the object of the comparison being to obviate any charge of mysticism or quietism. The exaggeration of feeling which leads to the neglect of works, in favour of the exclusive cultivation of the inward dispositions, could have no serious importance except in the theological period, and even there it was due rather to hypocrisy than to error, as is seen by its not arising till the decline of the system. If the sincere culture of sympathy, even when indirect, was calculated to be a preservative against this excess, it is one which will easily be removed by the direct cultivation of benevolence, resulting from the whole system of adoration.

Action.

Over and above the particular results which are the proper aim of action, action has more power than expression to excite altruism through the medium of the brain, inasmuch as it leads to an exertion requiring greater effort. It follows that nothing will ever equal the practice, even with intermissions, still more

the habitual practice, of good works as a means of cultivating our sympathetic instincts. Expression has however several natural advantages over action, and therefore, weaker though it be than action, it will always remain indispensable to the full developement of our emotional nature.

As expression depends on ourselves exclusively, whilst action Expression. is dependent on the external world, action is intermittent, expression alone can be permanent under one or other of its various forms. Again, action is not only less at our command than expression, but is often of a more mixed character. In the first place it almost invariably demands efforts of the intellect or of the body, and these cannot but impair its results in point of sympathy. But in action we have, above all, the complication habitually arising of selfish motives mingling with our benevolent impulses. The only case in which we avoid these two disturbing forces is when the brain devotes all its powers to perfect our unity through the direct expression of love, with no external aim in particular.

A cultus of this kind has to discipline our action and therefore can never lead us to despise it. For it fosters the affections which urge us to the direct pursuit of the good. If our devotions seemed to lead to inertness, such a degradation would necessarily imply a want of sincerity.

If we analyse the moral influence of Positive worship with reference to the distinction between the three altruistic instincts, we find that it is greatest as concerns the instinct which by its organ and its function is in closest connection with the two others. The exercise of the affections which is the direct result of adoration more particularly concerns veneration, not merely veneration for the Great Being, but for its worthy representatives, as is indicated by the prevailing attitude. Now the instinct of veneration is the one in most constant use as the normal basis of true discipline, and at the same time it has the least strongly marked character as being nearly independent of the influences of the selfish instincts. Be it remembered however that it cannot act without stimulating by its action benevolence and attachment, between which it is the connecting link both statically and dynamically. Language bears special witness to this connection in the admirable expression *piété* (*pietas*), a term primarily implying respect, but, by a natural extension, embracing all the sympathetic instincts. Again, the two other

Mora influence of the Positive Worship (1) on Altruism.

altruistic feelings receive direct encouragement from an adoration which has gratitude and love for its invariable basis. Benevolence, strictly so called, implies, it is true, protection, yet it is specially called into play in the Positive worship, most particularly towards the Great Being, not merely through imitation of that highest type, but also as a consequence of the nature of Humanity, who can never dispense with the aid of her servants.

(3) *Egoism.*

Sociolatriy is by its very conception emancipated from the interested motives which were paramount in the worship of Theologism, nay even of Fetichism; yet it grants the self regarding instincts the culture they require for their due cooperation in the practical conduct of life. In the first place, it stamps them with its direct sanction as the permanent basis of the conservation of the individual, and the primary source of the action of society. Secondly, their relations severally with the social instincts procure them in the Positive worship an indirect stimulus in constant dependence on their influence on our sympathies, and therefore not liable to abuse. This combination of sanction and discipline is especially applicable in the case of the higher personal instincts, pride and vanity, as more amenable to social influences. But it applies also to all the other personal motors, not excepting the instinct of destruction, each and all admitting an altruistic direction.

Intellectual
influence of
Sociolatriy.

The proper province of Sociolatriy is our emotional life, and it is to this that this chapter as a whole is devoted; so that having sufficiently explained its influence on that life in the general, I must now explain its power in reference to intellect, first in the domain of art, then in that of science.

Art.

The true definition of the two terms, art and worship, is sufficient to show the inseparable connection between them, a connection recognised as a matter of experience by Theologism, but which it devolves on Positivism to adopt and expand on rational grounds, whilst it accepts the spontaneous character it wears in Fetichism. In art and worship equally, improvement is ever the direct end of all our efforts. In the worship it is always moral progress, and therefore the worship alone can withdraw art from its natural predilection for physical beauty, the beauty most easy to represent as it is most easy to feel. Sociolatriy, by displaying the charm inherent in the altruistic affections, throws open to poetry its noblest field, one which

under the egoistic synthesis was necessarily relegated to a subordinate place. Besides this general affinity between art and the worship of Humanity, that worship lends a special sanction to the three modes or degrees of all art of whatever kind, imitation, idealisation, expression. For it imitates the highest type, and yet ever idealises it in its expression of the emotions that type inspires. Conversely, as each act of worship of the Great Being, indirect or direct, is by the nature of the case a work of art, art in its turn is seen to be an essential complement of the worship of Humanity, into which it is once and for ever incorporated.

This incorporation, by relieving art from the degrading anarchy which was the result of its throwing off the yoke of Theocracy, is as calculated to develop as to discipline and ennoble it. The absorption of the poetical into the sacerdotal function, in conformity at once with our instinct and reason, will always obviate the lowering tendency inherent in the exclusive devotion of any life to expression. When the language of Dante and Ariosto shall have become the universal language, Italian. having previously been the sacred language, it will have acquired one by one the additional excellences ~~it~~ it needs to qualify it as the fit organ of the greater poetic achievements reserved for the ripe age of human genius. But the use of that language will not be limited to such exceptional efforts confined to the more eminent members of the priesthood; it will be the language used by all worshippers of the Great Being in their daily expressions of their emotions, both in private and in public. Its musical capacity will lead as a natural result to its adoption as the regular transition from the fundamental art to the highest of the more special arts which are the complement of poetry, and which in Positive education will become familiar to all as a means of perfecting our whole worship. Whilst, however, vocal expression assumes more and more prominence it must not do so to the detriment of the plastic art, the language of form, less sympathetic it may be under any of its three forms, but more synthetic, as the eye is more synthetic than the ear. Each of the three, and painting more than any, independently of its own peculiar destination, will bring its valuable contribution to the Positive culture, and will be placed within the reach of all by the normal education.

Taken together, these hints are sufficient to express the

Theory or
Science.

influence of Sociolatriy upon art, reserving further details for the remainder of the chapter. Its influence on theory calls for fuller explanation, for, whereas the worship absorbs art, science can only be absorbed in the doctrine.

This influence con-
sidered with
reference to
Method and
Doctrine.
Method.

For a right estimate of the influence in question we must apportion it between the method and the doctrine, the two being too often confounded, even by philosophers.

From the logical point of view, the worship exercises a greater influence than art, in the proper sense of the term, though art again is superior to science, as science hitherto has been almost limited to the use of signs, whereas poetry combines them with images. In science, the two are found in combination only in Mathematics, and even there their combination is not anterior to the remodelling of that domain by Descartes. But, although it is a combination which art cannot avoid employing largely, its true origin is to be found in the worship, where signs without images can never meet the demands of free expression. The spontaneous result of Fetichism, the object of special attention on the part of Theologism, it is in Positivism more than elsewhere that the alliance of the two finds its proper place, as the principal objects of Positivist adoration are in the fullest sense subjective. Still, logically, the superiority of the worship of Humanity lies in its power, a power exclusively its own, to perfect the combination of signs with images by subordinating it to the feelings. Theologism, it is true, and above all monotheistic Theologism, had naturally initiated this ultimate convergence of all the general appliances which could facilitate our mental efforts, but it could directly bring to bear in those efforts only those affections which are least calculated to assist thought. It is by reducing to system, and giving effect to, the instinctive sanction by Fetichism of our sympathetic instincts, that Positivism alone organises the true logic, in regard to which the worship will always be of more value than the doctrine, by virtue of its offering a better coordination of its three constituent elements.

Doctrine.

If from the method we turn to the doctrine, the worship cannot retain this superiority, for the distinct progress of the doctrine must depend on the dogmatic system properly so-called. And yet even here the efficacy, as an intellectual stimulus, of worship—and this is true in the highest degree of Positive

worship—cannot but be recognised by all but those who confuse information with intelligence. In fact the worship alone places before us in a thoroughly synthetic form the general body of doctrine, a result which flows directly from the fundamental theory of the Great Being. Sociolatriy is the medium by which Morals transmits that theory to Sociology, as a general basis for the analytical investigation which is to furnish the guidance of Sociocracy, the aim being to make religion a reality. But over and above this most comprehensive object, the influence of worship on theory is exerted in a more peculiar sense with reference to the highest portion of the scientific domain. The initial conception of moral laws, and even intellectual laws, practically could not but originate in the impulse given by woman, and in the inspiration of the poet, the natural point of junction for the two being the worship; for science was reserved the discovery of physical laws following in the wake of action. Now the capacity of the worship in this respect cannot but be drawn out by Positivism, more real as it is and more unselfish than Theologism, since in the elaboration of the sociolatrinal system it is urgent to keep continually in sight its relations to the feelings and the intellect.

Treating as sufficient this examination in the general of the efficacy of the Positive worship, first as regards the feelings then as regards the intellect, I have to complete the process by extending it to the activity.

*Influence of
the Worship
on Activity.*

Although in this last case it is naturally less efficacious than in the two other, yet it requires a distinct consideration in this place. Attaining supremacy solely in the sphere of feeling, the influence of the worship leaves the developement of the intelligence to the dogma in especial, whilst that of the activity is reserved for the regime. Practical life, however, no less than the speculative existence, feels the advantage of the training given by Sociolatriy, fuller discipline being the condition of progress in both.

Human action, even when collective, springing originally from personal impulses, requires a constant process of purification, and nothing but the worship can give this. The pride of the practician is a less obstacle than the vanity of the theorician to the due recognition of this want. Although Theologism on empirical grounds met it in some imperfect degree, its systematic satisfaction devolves upon Positivism as the only religion

*Action re-
quires puri-
fication, and
gets it from
the Worship.*

founded on the true knowledge of human nature. Not to mention that the worship of Humanity concentrates all our practical faculties on the noble object from which the natural preponderance of egoism always tends to divert them, it gives a distinct stimulus to each of those faculties by constant exercise. It is the highest in particular that feels this influence most, since adoration without perseverance either never attains, or loses its moral effect; long attention being required for the original production, as for the continuance, of such effect. The influence of the worship extends to courage also, nay even to prudence, as may be seen if we consider the energy and circumspection often required for private no less than for public effusion. The faithful interpreter of all the relations of man, language has, since the Middle Ages, borne witness to this triple influence of the worship, for it applies the name religious *practices* to our habits of worship, as the exertions which that worship requires, by their greater persistence, though inferior in intensity, constitute a good preparation for active life.

The Worship universal, but systematic only in reference to the more leading phases of human existence.

As the combined result of the three estimates just given, we recognise the peculiar competence of Sociology to deal with each several part of the life which it idealises, and by idealising disciplines. So the domain of the Positive worship is seen to be all-comprehensive, as comprehensive as that of the religion of which it is the expression and developement; whereas the dogma, on the other hand, and the regime, though not without a general influence, are more limited in their functions. If we complement the Positive by the Fetichist spirit, the various scenes of our individual or our social life admit of effusions or consecrations of never-failing value, as the growth of feeling depends more on inward culture than on its external results. But as a systematic institution, public and private worship can only take account of the more important phases and steps of life. The secondary incidents, the occasional events, for these we cannot provide; in regard to them the priesthood must leave it to the true believers themselves to apply by themselves the rules of Sociolatriy. In these less important cases, the fundamental formula of Positivism is a sufficient guide, and the act of worship might often be limited simply to the proper enunciation of that formula. But as an improvement on this mode of expression, signs susceptible of universal adoption may be introduced, and these I have now to point out, proving

thereby that, even in such a secondary detail, the Positive is superior to the theological system of worship, to which latter, however, we are indebted for the happy thought of this custom.

The Positivist formula is by its nature an adequate expression at all times of the constitution of man, but to make the full use of this its power, it is wise, generally, to enunciate it, and whilst doing so, to touch in succession the principal organs assigned by our theory of the brain to the three constituent elements of the formula. Those of love and order are completely contiguous, love finding its best representative in benevolence strictly so called, order depending in the main on deductive meditation. The organ of progress, in closest connection with firmness, comes after them on the median line, but with the organ of veneration between it and them, a position involving no confusion in our religious feelings, so intimate is the relation of these several attributes. Hence we draw the Positivist symbol, more rational at once and more efficacious than those of the various Monotheisms, as being a better substitute for the recitation of the formula which it condenses. Even this symbol admits of reduction to the mere enunciation of the three numbers (10, 14, 18) which mark the rank of the organs in question, for in the cerebral hierarchy function is indicated by position. Lastly, the Positivist formula admits of another and numerical symbolic statement, one resting on the properties of the three sacred numbers, whether ordinal or cardinal. In fact we learn from the last volume (III. p. 129) that the first, as the symbol of synthesis, represents also sympathy; that the second stands for order, in the distinct sense of arrangement, which is invariably binary; whilst the third, inseparable from the idea of evolution, naturally expresses progress.

Though what has been said is sufficient as determining the scope and object of the worship of Humanity, I must not pass to the exposition of Sociolatriy, without first stating generally the theory of the subjective life, as it is to it that the Positive adoration most especially looks.

The first point is to get a clear conception of this life by comparing it with the objective, its basis. The fusion of the two can only apply to results, never to faculties, so that the most objective of the three constituent elements of our individual being cannot share in the subjective prolongation of existence, whereas the other two can, and that in the fullest

Sacred sign.

General theory of the subjective life.

Comparison of it with the objective.

sense. For action, properly so called, has as its great object the modification of the world without, and therefore can in no sense form a part of our being when it has ceased to be in direct contact with that world. Intellect and emotion, on the other hand, concern exclusively the world within; their results therefore may pass into another brain, so as to be fused with the results attained by that other brain itself, supposing the two beings to be in sufficient harmony. The fruits however of this internal combination, its intellectual or moral influences, be they what they may, can appear only in the person who is the seat of this fresh combination; so that, in eliminating action from our subjective life, we include under the term that form of action which supplies the means of expression. Still the value of the incorporation as an influence on the brain is not limited to its more immediate domain, the provinces of feeling and thought; indirectly and by its connection with the two others, it should also affect the active faculties. Such a combination must always be binary, but it may be repeated; there may, that is, be a succession of combinations with many different beings, all in their subjective life contributing to guide the objective life of their common organ or representative.

Assimilation
of other
existences.

It is in this way that the souls of many come to take up their abode in one brain, by a natural process, supposing its power of sympathy adequately supported by the spirit of synthesis. And the convergence of the many may at one and the same time inspire with life not one brain only, but all which satisfactorily fulfil these two conditions of subjective assimilation. Nor does the fusion interfere with our distinguishing the individual contributions, by the aid of their peculiar influence, though the difficulties attaching to the process must at times leave the conclusion doubtful.

Such are the two phenomena—identification of many with one, and conservation of the many in the one—which constitute the highest privilege of Humanity. The individual brain assimilates the feelings and conceptions of all its peers, in a truer sense than the body assimilates the different materials of its food. On the other hand, he who has left great results acquires in others a subjective immortality, so that the work of his life is perpetuated and even extended.

The will of
the beings
incorporated

The suppression of action, and limitation of the combination to feelings and thoughts, involves as a consequence the suppres-

sion of the will in the beings incorporated, and confines it exclusively to the being which incorporates—which offers them an abode for their indirect existence. For direct action with a special purpose demands unity of decision, to whatever extent we multiply, and it is often to an extent which defies analysis, the motives of each design. During his life, in the ordinary sense, each servant of Humanity is the instrument of the providence of Humanity, without detriment to his individuality, of which will is the invariable condensation.

necessarily
extin-
guished.

•If we turn our attention to the beings incorporated, this subjective identification with another requires the removal of every element of divergence, the conservation of assimilable qualities exclusively. Thus the process in all cases subjects, as its natural result, the being incorporated to idealisation; an idealisation which, almost incompatible with the objective state, owing to its attendant imperfections, is ordinarily not attainable in a sufficient degree till after death. Poetry anticipated philosophy in pointing out this condition: witness the beautiful fiction which represents it as the condition of regeneration that we drink first of the river of oblivion, then of the river which restores only the memory of good. As a consequence of this purification, the union in the subjective state gains in intimacy and continuity. Supposing the incorporated soul to exert an adequate influence for good on the brain in which it lives again, it shares in the immortality that brain obtains. Thus, by a series of resurrections, subjective immortality, though never immortality in an absolute sense, has yet no other limit than the limit assigned to the existence of the Great Being by the laws of the order of which it is the condensed expression. The increase of number, be it of the minds united in one brain, or be it of the brains in which they are united, is no obstacle to the immortality being shared and extended without impairment of its value, as it presupposes the abnegation of self and the implicit devotion of ourselves to the service of Humanity.

The others
who are as-
similated.

The series of indications here given, as to the nature and destination of the subjective existence, would be incomplete without a notice of its three modes or degrees. The first relates to the minds personally known to him who continues their existence in his brain. In the second the union is simply one of results, without any personal contact with the authors of those results. The third calls into existence—subjective

Three de-
grees of
subjective
existence.



existence—beings who are yet unborn. Such is the normal ascending scale of subjectivity demanded by our co-existent relations with the present, the past, and the future, when Humanity, as a conception and as a feeling, attains the proportions which shall meet the requirements of her reasonable service. Although the subjective or indirect mode of existence be also less vivid and less definite than the direct, yet it is consistent with reality in such a degree as to be exempt from any admixture of caprice, and so is qualified to produce the intellectual and moral effects which are in accordance with its object as an institution.

Laws of the
subjective
life.

Guided by this series of indications, I have to conclude the explanation of the subjective life by determining its peculiar laws.

It is exempt
from physical,
dependent on in-
tellectual
and moral,
laws.

These laws are a direct result of the relation of dependence in which the subjective necessarily stands towards the objective existence. As this latter is in subjection to the whole order of things, the former is indirectly under the control of that order. But, for a correct estimate of its dominion over the subjective life, we must distinguish between the laws of man's world and those of the outer world. The indirect or subjective existence is free from all control of physical laws—the laws of life no less than those of matter—whilst it remains in complete subjection to the intellectual and moral order, which consequently stands out in stronger relief therein. Its emancipation from the laws of the outer world applies even to Mathematics, the most general rules of which, even the laws of space and time, would be often found irreconcilable with the subjective state. The full extent of this independence is reached when the representatives of all countries and of all ages take up their abode simultaneously in one and the same brain. Most universal of all are the laws of number, and yet from them too the subjective existence is free, for one and the same mind may be assimilated by several brains at once, and each of them may reproduce it in different forms.

No disturb-
ance of the
arrange-
ment.

Still, in the midst of all these changes, order, properly so called, that is to say, the arrangement, always remains undisturbed. We never place before, that which comes after, or the converse, neither in space nor even in time. All subjective changes, with no exception for cases of disease, are then, as are all objective changes, a mere question of degree, in obedience

to the general law in regard to modifications, a law indispensable to the completeness of the dogmatic system of Positivism.

In order to realise more fully the intrinsic independence of the subjective state, as far as physical laws are concerned, let us consider it in reference specially to the laws of life, which, as being nearer to Humanity than those of matter, might be expected to have a more durable existence. Although the being incorporated is freed from the influences of its own proper body by its residence in another brain, it appears subjected to the bodily influences to which that brain is subject. The apparent contradiction disappears if we call to mind that the identification and conservation we are speaking of have nothing to do with functions, but only with their products imparted to others. It follows that, whatever the modifications, even of a morbid kind, introduced by the reaction of the body into the operations of the brain, the results so transmitted are not affected by them any more than are the results of external impressions. Without independence to this extent, it is impossible to understand the continuity of the brain's action, the fundamental phenomenon of our existence, which no perturbations can interrupt, not even the perturbation of delirium, as a temporary or permanent state, the delirium of sleep or of madness.

Independence of vital influences.

So we may recognise the high superiority of the subjective state, which is the realisation, on an ampler scale and with greater purity, of the dream of Theology—souls without bodies. In it the dignity of the human order passes out of dispute, since in it we find the noblest functions persisting in complete independence of the laws of the outer world, he only in whom they gain a new life being under their sway. Homer, Aristotle, Dante, Descartes, &c., will thus live again for all time wherever there is a brain capable of incorporating them, and the results they then produce will not unfrequently be superior to those they produced when alive.

Superiority of the subjective state.

Such is the fundamental mode in which the dead more and more control the living by importing the fixity, which is the note of their existence, as a check upon the mutability inseparable from actual life. As order and progress alike demand the combination, which is ever on the increase in point of completeness, it is important to see that it depends mainly

The fusion of the ideal with the living more affective than intellectual.

upon feeling, even when apparently limited to the intelligence. For our instincts of sympathy contribute more towards its production than our powers of synthesis, as is seen in the education of the individual, where trust is sufficient for the imparting most of the more important acquisitions, language being the only mental faculty called into exercise. When so imparted, they demand, unquestionably, if they are to bear fruit, intellectual efforts on the part of the brain which receives the communication. But so entirely is the effect of the transmitted ideas independent of the source from which they come, that those of which we know not the proof often inspire greater confidence than the belief resulting from demonstration. On this point we may be content with appealing to the doctrine of the double movement of the earth, as showing that the principal influences of an opinion are not seen in its originators, nor even in the brains which admitted it from conviction without persuasion. Although the explanation is necessary in regard to the intellect, it would be superfluous in reference to feeling, and it is this which naturally holds the first place in the combination due to affection, where the fusion is often carried to the point of leading men, nay even societies of men, to exertion,* from their devotion to the type they have assimilated.

The preceding explanation is, in and by itself, a verification of the superiority of the worship in point of synthesis; as in the worship the fundamental dogma of the religion is always taken in its unity, and consequently the most thorough and best directed study of it is naturally encouraged by its systematic adoration.

How far is
the subjective
life independent of
physical
laws.

One last explanation, or the theory might render us liable to the error of exaggerating the independence of the subjective life as regards physical laws. The soul, when absorbed by another, shakes off its dependence on the external order, but that order still affects the image of the being to which the soul belonged. And though the evocation of that image is never absolutely necessary for the securing the intellectual and even moral benefits of the combination, such evocation heightens the beneficial action of the fusion on the brain, which is, without it, limited to the use of signs. Adoration should be as concrete as possible, in order that it may be in the truest sense synthetical. Therefore it is of importance to introduce images

into it, and in introducing them we respect all the physical conditions which are calculated to give them distinctness and vividness. We may forgive poetry, especially ancient poetry, for asserting its independence by disregarding without any necessity the laws of matter and even of life. There may be occasions in which, in the normal state, we may properly claim the same power; but it inculcates, in regard to the external order, a degree of respect in our conception of it which was not required during the initiation of the race, when the economy of nature was essentially unknown.

*This supplementary explanation leads to a statement of the idealisation in which the subjective state is, as it were, condensed. The process consists especially in eliminating defects, not in adding excellences. Our artificial order becomes thus, in obedience to the Positive rule, simply a judicious prolongation of the natural order. Our instinct leads us, in idealising any eminent exemplar whom we assimilate, to free him from the external laws to which he was subject whilst alive. If we would perfect the type, then, we must clear away the several imperfections, moral, intellectual, or even bodily, which obscure his leading characteristics, respecting, however, all the conditions of his real subjective existence. Nevertheless such idealisation by subtraction is not inconsistent with a rare admission of addition; we may add some attributes, especially external attributes, provided that in all cases they be secondary and probable. The judicious combination of the two modes allows the introduction of transfers, which enable the heart and intellect to attain a better conception of the being we assimilate, by supposing events to have happened which never did happen, although it was quite reasonable that they should have happened.

The idealisation required.

On the basis of this construction of the theory of the subjective life, I have now to enter on the direct exposition which forms the main object of this chapter. But at this point, where I enter on the full exposition of the Positive Cultus, I feel a special want, which prompts me to glorify the angelic being whose inspiration presided over the various steps of its creation. Nine years of uninterrupted adoration—of an adoration which became purely subjective after one year of chaste initiation—have brought with them in their natural course the conceptions which I am now to reduce to system, in such a way as to furnish at once an

Direct exposition of the Worship. Tribute to (l'otilde de Vaux.

evidence of the value, the intellectual and moral value, of a noble identification.

Subdivisions
of the Wor-
ship, Per-
sonal, Do-
mestic, Pub-
lic.

The worship must be subdivided first into public and private—public if paid directly to the Great Being; private if paid to our highest personification of that Being; the mode in which we perform this pious duty, whether as individuals or as societies, not affecting the division. Secondly, private worship naturally subdivides into personal and domestic, the divisions of private life. The result is a sociolatrical series or progression, in which each individual soul successively connects itself with the Family, the Country, and Humanity, with a view to a regular cultivation of those dispositions from which we derive a stronger love for, and comprehension of, the Great Being, both with the object of better service. Nothing but such an initiation can give a charm and even a sanctity to all the acts of man, tracing, as it does everywhere, the supreme existence, when once the Positive spirit has attained its due completeness by its fusion with that of Fetichism. But this extension of the sphere of religion—its spontaneous extension so as to embrace all the actions of life, our daily avocations not less than more occasional events, and that in a degree never attained by any of the provisional forms of worship—does not take shape in any particular institutions, except for such events as are to a certain extent in connection with the regular epochs of our human life.

Personal
Worship,
Adoration of
Woman.

The immediate basis of Sociolatrý, personal worship, is characterised above all by the heartfelt adoration of the affective sex, on the ground of the inherent capacity of every true woman to be a representative of Humanity. As composite, the highest form of existence can hardly be appreciated unless personified. All its true servants are, in their several degrees, each by virtue of his leading attribute, capable of representing it. But as sympathy is the great source of unity, and sympathy is strongest in woman, woman must be the best personification of a being, the foundation of whose existence, as a whole, is love. Woman, the spontaneous embodiment of the Family idea, alone can worthily represent any collective existence; the instinct of the race made her the emblem of the Country before as yet she had gained the estimation which should qualify her for the representative of Humanity.

The Mother.

Here, then, we have the private source at which each

servant of the Great Being must habitually renew his vigour, the better to fit himself for his social function. The cares of daily life, be it one of study or of action, necessitate frequent recurrence to the ideal life arising out of the worship of Humanity in this concrete form, under pain of sacrificing the soundest foundation of duty and of happiness. This want, by its nature, requires for its due satisfaction a type chosen from the family; allowing for exceptional cases in which, from the family not supplying such type, we are obliged to seek elsewhere a fit representative of the Great Being. Now, in the normal order, we have not this difficulty in choice, as it offers each one a centre for all his affections in her who is necessarily, for each of us, the first embodiment of Humanity. In defiance of the efforts of Theologism, particularly in its monotheistic stage, to turn from its natural course the initiation of mankind, the Fetichist spirit, which characterises childhood, always directed the earliest worship towards the Mother. Positivism sanctions and develops this instinctive tendency, and looks to it for the primary basis on which it rears the systematic worship of Humanity. Thus it is in the order of nature that the mother, as a rule, should take the place of our highest patroness by the continuation of her two offices of protectress and example—a combination which in French is happily indicated in the equivocal term *patronne*.

The mother, however, the paramount image of Humanity, is not, if she stand alone, sufficient as the habitual representative of the Great Being. For she appeals directly only to veneration, and she expresses only our relations with the past. To represent the future and the present, the mother, as the primary object of our worship, must have two adjuncts, both equally taken from the family—the wife and the daughter; the wife with the special object of cultivating attachment; the daughter for the culture of benevolence. Personal worship thus embodies and consecrates the three instincts which constitute altruism; the economy of the family; and the whole range of social relations—our relations to superiors, equals, and inferiors. To secure, however, the desired consistency and definiteness for this triple representation of the Great Being, the mother's image must always be the predominant one. The supremacy thus necessarily assigned her shows that in the subjective union, even in its simplest and most perfect form, there exists,

The Wife
and Daughter.

equally as in other unions, the need, common to association in all its forms, of a hierarchical arrangement. So complemented, the patronage of the mother is equally appropriate for either sex, on the condition that each borrow from the other the two supplementary types; the object being a more perfect cultivation of tenderness in men, of energy in women, to remedy the peculiar deficiencies of each sex.

The normal state of these three types.

The process of the above construction leads me to explain what is normally the state of each of the three types at the period when the worship has attained its complete proportions; this, as follows from the preceding remarks, will usually not be till the age of full maturity (æt. 42). By that time the mother is generally removed by death; the daughter is alive, her type therefore is objective; the wife may be equally either one or the other. Now, far from weakening the effect of private worship upon the brain, this natural mixture of relations strengthens it; the subjective element purifying, the objective vivifying it.

Provision for exceptional cases. The Sister.

In exceptional cases, in the first place, the family offers, by its very composition, the means of compensating the particular failure of one or other of the three general types. For the personal worship, as normally constituted, leaves out the sister; the want of definiteness and fixity in her position in general not qualifying her to take the place of any of the three more natural patrons. But this very ambiguity usually allows the sister, the least distinct of the feminine types, to be, as the case may require, associated with each of the three others in order to strengthen their influence without dividing the affection. It follows that she may, in exceptional cases of deficiency in the mother, the wife, or the daughter, make good that deficiency, as equally qualified to take the place of either. Even with this substitution, however, we could not meet all the anomalies that will occur, even after the complete cessation of anarchy in the West. There will be extreme cases in which we shall be driven inevitably to seek outside the family for all the types essential to our personal worship, if we have a soul equal to the right construction of a subjective family. A type of each may be found among the protectors, companions, or dependents, whether spiritual or temporal, who habitually group themselves around each of the three normal patrons, and by whom those patrons are linked, through a series of steps, to the whole social economy.

In this system of personal adoration neither the past nor even the future, but especially the past, are as fully represented as is compatible with the nature of the worship, and as is required by its object. As a first contribution to its subjective completion, we systematically adopt, and carry to a further perfection, the plan judiciously introduced by Catholicism as to baptismal names, which it wisely turned to useful purpose by consecrating them to the special honour of the highest types it could. The patronage thus initiated by the priesthood of the Middle Ages is yet, in its full power, adapted exclusively to Sociolatriy, for Sociolatriy alone allows its extension to all our progenitors. In the sex which has to act and think, each true believer is thus provided from the hour of his birth with two eminent types; one chosen from the theoretical, the other from the practical order; these he coordinates and completes by himself, choosing a third at the time when his vocation becomes sufficiently clear. For the sex in which feeling is predominant, its holy uniformity of vocation allows us to confine ourselves always to the patroness chosen by the mother under the sanction of the priesthood.

Deficiency as
to the Past.
Names.

In reference to the future, it is less necessary to extend the range of our personal worship; and after the first generation it would seem inevitably to merge in the public worship, which alone appears to be competent to embrace all our successors. Yet it would leave a serious void in the system of Sociolatriy, if its most individual form were without any appropriate connection with the second or future element of the subjective portion of Humanity. To supply this is the last step and must be the natural consequence of giving its full efficacy to the patronage of the past, the fundamental element of the conception.

Deficiency as
to the Fu-
ture.

Granting that we are so raised by our personal worship as to be worthy servants of the Great Being, the immortality we shall deserve will extend to the great saints by whose aid we have deserved it. They will be consequently incorporated in the noblest constituent of the future generations, and will receive the daily homage of their best members. Now, such a prospect allows us, even now, a personal sympathy with all our successors, on whom it thus devolves to continue our own most inward worship. The greater our sense of its beneficial power over us, the more we must desire that it survive us, the more affection we must feel for those who shall prolong its existence.

Our immor-
tality ex-
tends to the
types
through
whose aid it
has been
deserved.

The legitimate hope of such prolongation must be our special encouragement to the service of posterity, as it is from posterity that we expect a reward, the purer as it is not paid to ourselves immediately, but to the beings through whom we deserve it.

This uni-
versally ap-
plicable.

At the present day, such a reward would be judged the exclusive appanage of exceptional merit, no religion but the Positive being able, by systematic appeal to social gratitude, to extend its due influence. But when the habits sprung from a selfish worship shall have been overcome by the habits and feelings formed by Sociolatriy, all true servants of Humanity will be warranted in aspiring to this legitimate return, by which the grateful recognition of their services goes back to the main source of their own glory. The humblest citizen will be conscious that he can give his patrons a degree of immortality corresponding to his own merits, a degree summarily expressed at times by the fusion of names.

The immor-
tality of
women.

As the last aid to our full appreciation of this indispensable addition to the personal worship, we must not forget that woman is an essential constituent of the fundamental patronage. More keenly alive to the charm of self-sacrifice, woman feels less than man the want of subjective immortality. It would even seem that it is essentially denied her, in consequence of her exclusion normally from public life, the principal source of all immediate claims to honour. But even granting women to be wholly insensible individually to the attraction of a noble eternity, their instinct of sympathy should make them wish their moral providence carried on and not confined to those who are its direct objects. Each woman, then, will look beyond the immediate return for her holy services, and cherish the additional hope of an indefinite extension of those services. This is the normal form of woman's indirect participation in the immortality due to the services, whether of the theoretician or practician, in which she cannot take a direct part. It is to the affective sex that the Great Being entrusts its most important and most difficult function, the function of forming all its servants. Each woman will ultimately be judged by her work; she will share the immortality accorded it by the future generations, who will know how to distinguish the merit of the training amidst the imperfections of the result.

Our patrons
guardian
angels, or
household
gods.

Such is the normal basis in Sociolatriy of private worship, the adoration, viz., of our own personal patrons, our guardian

angels or household gods; either term may be used, according as we compare them with one or other of their prototypes. Although the more modern term is destined to prevail at the present day, the earlier will ultimately be most generally adopted, as it answers better the nature of the institution as a Positive institution. For the guardian angels of Catholicism were but a feeble substitute for the household gods of Fetichism, and by Fetichism handed down to Polytheism; gods who stood in a more direct and individual relation to their worshipper, gods, therefore exercising a stronger influence, nay one which appealed more sensibly to the feelings. Admitting this superiority, we must remember, that the transition from the objective to the subjective effected by Catholicism was an unconscious preparation for the definitive form of personal worship. Still more capital, however, was the precedent set by Islam when it introduced the idea of the homogeneity, in suitable degree, of the worshipper and the worshipped. Mohammed left, it is true, no formal command on this point, but his august example, as one of the most eminent organs of Humanity, will smooth the way for the universal adoption of the Positive form. All the types he chose were women; he chose them within the family; and he chose them, some from the living, others from the dead; all this conspires to place him, though a noble exception, in as full accordance with our definitive systematisation of personal worship, as the similar instances in chivalry, where they are the natural result of that system.

Catholic and Mohammedan precedents.

I have now to complete the exposition of the personal worship by an explanation of the whole system of daily exercises, which alone can make it really efficacious. Prayer is the proper term for all of them; restricting this word, which admits of no substitute, to the noble sense which it came more and more to bear for worshippers of deep feeling, even under the selfish influences of Theology. So restricted, it always stands for a commemoration followed by effusion.

DAILY PRAYER.

Definition of prayer.

In private worship these two essential constituents of Positive prayer take, almost in equal degree, a concrete character, as directed to an individual object, that object being especially the principal patron, the better to concentrate our emotions. Although the phase of prayer which calls for exertion on our part, has a more immediately decisive influence than that in which we are, as it were, passive, this latter is habitually the

Divisions of the morning prayer.

basis of the former, which would otherwise be inevitably deficient in depth. Hence, in the principal daily prayer, the effusion is only half the length of the commemoration. But then we divide the act of commemoration into two equal parts : the first, proper to the day of the week, as recalling the associations of that day ; the second, common to all the days, in order to bring before us the whole of our social relations reviewed in their true order of succession. Though it thus embraces a larger field, the latter part need not be longer than the former, as in it we use mainly signs, in the other mainly images. Thus, two stages of contemplation, one more vivid, the second more comprehensive, precede and prepare effusion ; this, invariably synthetical in character, is directed to the general object of our personal worship. Such is the normal distribution of private prayer into three phases of equal length, which together constitute a progressive action of the brain, in which images, signs, and feelings prevail in succession, the result of the whole being the subjective evocation, which shows that the act of adoration has attained its end.

Degree of
subjectivity
in prayer.

The image evoked,—the triumph of private prayer,—never can equal, in clearness or in vividness, the impressions of sense. But as this ideal limit of subjectivity is reached, at times passed, under the excitement of disease, so in health we may come more and more near to it, in proportion as by our assiduous practice of daily prayer we increase its power over our brain. Nobler natures may thus procure themselves satisfactions unknown to those who leave their hearts uncultivated, nay even to those who address their homage to beings of a different nature from themselves.

Oral prayer.

To give additional energy to our daily exercises, it is a great point to introduce a judicious combination of the most sympathetic with the most synthetic of our senses, calling in sounds to help forms. Though oral prayer seems confined to social worship, there has always been a sense that the practice tends to perfect solitary adoration, often spoken of as invocation. In any case, however, it suits better with the effusion than the commemoration, the first phase of which, in particular, should be sparing in its use of it.

Daily Prayer
a work of
art.

It follows from the indications given, when taken in connection, that the daily prayer of Positivists is a work of art ; each worshipper having to compose his own prayer, as he alone can

judge what combination of sounds and forms will give the true expression of his feelings. This spontaneous combination of the two modes of artistic utterance gains in efficiency if, undeterred by groundless scruples, we bring in the Fetichist to perfect the Positive spirit, and give life quite naturally to all such objects as are really connected with our worship. It is indispensable, in all cases, that our prayers should be original compositions, but we may embellish them by a judicious recourse to the poetical accumulations of Humanity. Provided that the general forms we there find correspond adequately to our individual feelings, their use in moderation should give increased power to our emotions, active or passive equally, thus placed under the sanction of a great poet, and besides in sympathy, by the power of imagination, with all whom he has influenced. The aid from this source will receive an addition from the completeness esthetically of Positive education, which will qualify us, in subordination to poetry, to employ its two most close allies, when singing and drawing shall have become as familiar as speech and writing. Their great use in the worship will be to compensate the inevitable uniformity of each prayer; for once formed it should in substance remain the same, so as to gain the ease of expression which habit gives; allowing for the rare introduction of improvements when a want has been long felt. The only variation admissible being the developement, either by song or drawing, of the forms consecrated by use, the two special arts will give this greater completeness and life, if, at the time, they involve no effort.

As we have more than one daily prayer, the first point is to recognise the superior importance normally attaching to the morning prayer, devoting as it does the first hour of each day to place the whole day under the protection of the best representatives of Humanity. It is in this first prayer that we make the largest use of all secondary means to perfect each of the three phases of our personal worship. At the approach of sleep, an appropriate prayer, of half the length, protects the harmony of the brain from disturbance during the night. Lastly, about noon, for the shortest of our daily prayers, we interrupt our studies, or our business, in order to recall, by an exertion of feeling, the great primary object of our life which our work tends to put out of sight. Such are the three daily prayers of the true Positivist, and he should be able to graduate duly

Number and
duration of
daily
prayers.

commemoration and effusion, as he should be able to avail himself in judicious proportion of subsidiary resources, without there being any necessity for detailed explanation on such easy points.

Weekly and
annual wor-
ship.

But these daily exercises, which should have as their central object the chief patroness, are incomplete without a weekly prayer, where the mother's presidency, with the two other essential types as her assessors, allows us to give suitable expression to the respect we owe as individuals to all whom we associate with them. The numerical properties which led the instinct of the race to institute this subjective period, the week, will introduce it into private worship, though in itself more adapted to the public services. On some of these weekly services each one will lay greater stress than on others, and so form for his own use annual festivals, thus completing his personal worship by bringing it into regular relation with the year, the second objective element in the division of time. As a rule, it were waste of labour to institute monthly festivals, as the universal adoption of the Positivist calendar, to be explained later, will bring the dates of the week and the month, the two periods of man's institution, into harmony. In the private, as in the public worship, there are in the normal state only three degrees: daily, weekly, and yearly prayers in the private; weekly, monthly, and yearly services in the public worship.

Uniform in-
troduction
for the sake
of conti-
nuity.

To ensure continuity in Sociolatriy, in our chief daily prayer we must habitually take precautions to guard against the difference arising from its having a different beginning for each day of the week. We avoid this break by adopting an uniform introduction, consisting of a short invocation, in which the principal part is assigned to one of the subordinate associations connected with the previous day. Supposing that day to have left practically only one memory, we shall soon learn to draw the others from the subjective impressions to which the habit of worship will of itself give rise; its more marked influences becoming events to us personally.

Vision sus-
pended.

In the second place, the power we have of suspending sight at will enables us to give to the images we evoke an increase of vividness unattainable by the impressions of hearing. It is wiser however not to close our eyes in order to secure a clearer internal vision by the exclusion of external objects, if there happens to be sufficient obscurity already. For the effort

required for such isolation diverts a portion of our brain power, whilst that required for the contemplation of external objects is an aid in the internal act of evocation, as it places us in a situation more nearly resembling that in which we received the original impression.

Nor must we omit—and this applies to all forms admissible in personal worship—a precaution suggested by its concrete nature, and as a consequence of the fact that the predominant image, the image of the mother, is usually subjective, as are also most of the others. Removed as she and they are from life, we should not shrink in each case from habitually calling up before us the circumstances of their death. The picture of their last moments should duly enter into our worship of them, the better to represent the natural commencement of the subjective immortality which, under their assistance, we hope to deserve as they have deserved.

The contemplation of the death of those we evoke.

With these subsidiary remarks, we leave as complete the explanation of the personal worship, the main source of whatever value attaches to the two other constituents of Sociolatry. The explanation enables us to appreciate more fully the general power recognised above as inherent in the Positive worship, to promote the continuous amelioration of all the three parts of our nature.

Influence of the private cultus •

Considered as a whole, private worship familiarises us with the process of idealising human existence, for it daily brings before us our normal condition: the intelligence and the activity voluntarily submitting to the control of feeling. Not paid directly to the Great Being, it yet constantly recalls it, for each patron whom we invoke has no claim to our homage but such as is grounded on his qualification to be a representative of Humanity.

as a whole.

The highest value of this worship has regard to our moral advance, whether as concerns the growth of each of our sympathetic instincts in particular, or the general result of the three in their right combination. It draws its inspiration from attachment, and it develops benevolence, as we, the living, become protectors of our patrons who are no longer so. But above all it cultivates veneration by our worship of them, and veneration is the most important of the three social instincts, and the most difficult to stimulate, from the absence of any direct connection with the personal instincts; it has an indi-

Moral influence.

rect connection with the two instincts of personal improvement, those of construction and destruction. Thus it is that we best realise the value of voluntary submission, which we find to be the habitual source of the truest satisfactions. As we subordinate in our personal worship more and more the subjective to the objective, in order to facilitate the evocation of the object of our love, it leads us to see that progress, as dependent on our own effort, always consists in the development of natural order.

Intellectual
influence.

The influence of the worship on the intellect is incontestable as regards art, each separate act requiring an effort of spontaneous idealisation, and the result being a poetical utterance aided by sound and form. This brings before us affection, as evidently the true source of artistic power, by virtue of the reciprocal action, developed with such a charm in the worship, between the improvement in the pictures we form and the expansion of our feelings. But the influence of private worship as regards science, though less evident at the present day, yet admits of equivalent results, in method especially, but also in doctrine. It makes us feel deeply, how necessary is the aid of affection in the operations of the intellect, in meditation no less than in contemplation, as in both equally it guides us in the combination of images with signs. At the same time it brings into evidence the principal laws of feeling and thought, which it also shows to be in constant dependence on our bodily constitution, a frequent source of disturbance to us in prayer as it is also the source of assistance; and, as it is the one or the other, it gives us a means of estimating the state of our health.

Influence on
action.

In regard to action, the personal worship tends to direct it to the most important phenomena and those most easily modified, without in any way concealing their unavoidable dependence on the more simple. It calls into exercise, for its own ends, our three practical virtues, and besides this it gives a general stimulus to their growth, as a consequence of the natural influences of prayer. The wish solemnly expressed that we may grow in courage, prudence, or perseverance, tends of itself to make us do so, were it only by the acknowledgment of our actual deficiencies. Solitary prayer does not, it is true, offer as powerful a stimulus as social prayer, but it is better adapted to make us feel the importance of consecrating all our

active powers to the service of altruism. Its tendency is to represent true morality as active rather than passive, disciplining our selfish instincts rather through the cultivation of our instincts of sympathy than by any direct compression.

So far for the basis of Sociolâtry, the private worship; there follows the exposition of its second element. This, at first sight, would seem to be distinguished from the two others solely in so far as the Family completes concrete adoration, or initiates abstract effusion, the former of which has its proper place in the private, the latter in the public worship. Its difference from the two in these respects calls for no peculiar institutions, but it does require fresh prayers adapted to the use of the Family, the simplest form of human society. Concrete worship takes in the Family a collective and more comprehensive character, more particularly as regards the past; for the father of the Family invokes, as household gods, the chief ancestors of the Family; and such subjective invocation, with the aid of art, ought to rekindle the sense of fellowship. The priestly function vested in the mother within her proper sanctuary,—the home,—by her position, is a step towards the public worship of the Great Being, whom she represents in the Family by abstract prayers, to a judicious form of which I have directed attention already in the general preface of this work.

Domestic
Worship.
Respective
functions of
the Head of
the Family
and of the
Mother.

But over and above these, the two habitual ceremonies of domestic worship, the intermediate element of Sociolâtry admits of an organisation, with quite distinct institutions, on the principle of the systematic consecration of the several phases of domestic life. In the private worship each one places himself under the patronage of the Family, whether subjective or objective. The next step is for the Family, as an unit, to receive from the priesthood, as a religious privilege, the protection of the Country. As the final step, in the public worship the State itself invokes the supremacy of Humanity. Such is the normal progression in which the Great Being sanctifies, in succession, the three indispensable stages of its continuous service, personal, domestic, and civic, by placing each under the protection of the next above it.

Domestic
worship con-
secrates the
various
phases of
family life.

There never has been wanting the consciousness that it is necessary, for the due sanction and regulation of private life, to bring it under the natural influence of public life, as the only mode of checking caprice, and ensuring stability. But the

Previous
confusion of
the temporal
and spiritual
powers.

Family being the basis of all other associations must, as such, come under the conjoint influence of the Church and of the State, respectively represented by the Priesthood and the Patriciate. Previous to the separation of the two powers, its relation to both involved no difficulty, whether the ascendancy in society was vested in the priests or in the patricians. It was only however by virtue of their priestly character that the patricians held such ascendancy, as is indicated most clearly in the celebration of marriages, seeing that all authority in society has a theocratic origin. In accordance with both these antecedents, as soon as in Western Monotheism the two powers became separate, it was on the priesthood exclusively that it devolved to place the Family under the regular action of social influences. During the decline of Catholicism this privilege of the priesthood was more and more looked upon as an usurpation upon the civil authority, to which ultimately the ecclesiastical succumbed in the three principal events of private life, birth, marriage, and death. Nevertheless the ascendancy of the civil power would still seem provisional, as connected with the revolutionary tendency to the absorption by the temporal power of the spiritual function.

Positivism
rectifies this
error.

Positivism alone is able to introduce the normal condition of things in this respect by giving systematic expression to the ultimate division of the two powers, both of which equally, each in its own way, have to regulate the domestic relations. As every important phase of private life has a direct connection with civil order, it is for the patriciate to prescribe, in reference to it, such legal conditions as are requisite to ensure harmony in action. But again, as the Family is in connection with the Church, it is for the priesthood to develop this connection, and with this object to maintain the due supremacy in the Family of the moral regulations called for by the religious consecration of the domestic relations. Higher in their nature, more difficult, and at the same time not so absolutely indispensable, the conditions prescribed by the priesthood lie entirely within the domain of conscience, supported by opinion, but rejecting all command. On the contrary, civil obligations, as more necessary, and of a less delicate nature, can never be optional. The several epochs, then, of domestic life demand a twofold discipline, the second of the two presupposing the first, the one civil, and alone legally indispensable; and if men brave

opinion, the only one to which they need submit; the other religious, never to rest on anything but free acceptance. This latter discipline is found necessary to give their full moral character to our relations; but, more than this, it is the sole condition of securing for the decisions of a purely local power the universal influence without which the tie formed would be deficient in binding force.

Thus obligation and liberty have each their legitimate sphere, and solely by virtue of the determination of that sphere is the worship of Humanity enabled to exert its full power to regulate the Family, by securing its due submission to conditions which, unless freely accepted, would be oppressive. The better to ensure this optional character, the priesthood will apply to the patriciate for the institutions required for the twofold discipline, hitherto limited to the case of marriages, births, and deaths. Without these general remarks, by way of preamble, it would not be possible rightly to appreciate the consecration by religion of the several phases of domestic life, and this is the only point I have to explain at present.

The Priesthood must secure freedom.

From this point of view, life in its entirety stands before us as a series of preparations, with the ultimate object of incorporating us into the Great Being, when our service has been worthily paid. Hence the institution of a system of nine social sacraments, by which Positive religion sanctifies all the great epochs of private life, by bringing each in its turn into a distinct connection with public life. The nine are, in their natural order: 1st, *presentation*; 2nd, *initiation*; 3rd, *admission*; 4th, *destination*; 5th, *marriage*; 6th, *maturity*; 7th, *retirement*; 8th, *transformation*; 9th, *incorporation*, implying a previous judgment.

The nine Sacraments.

But the function of woman is so uniform and so persistent, that in her case we dispense with the sacrament which precedes marriage and the two which follow it.

Women dispense with the fourth, sixth, and seventh.

Previous to any explanation, I should state that the more important of these sacraments have already been administered, within the very limited circle within which as yet Positivism has, in a certain degree, overcome the habits of earlier beliefs and revolutionary tendencies.

The Sacraments already administered.

Yet, however limited, such experience is an evidence that the time has come for a religious reconstruction, the more so if we take into account, that the results obtained were originally

obtained by a purely oral exposition. In one sad case of death, we can even show a full adherence to the vow of eternal widowhood, the characteristic feature of Positivist marriage: a young mother so married (hers was the first instance) remains in consequence, to use her own noble language, a daughter of Humanity.

(1) Presentation.

The first sacrament is the solemn presentation by the family to the priesthood of the child it devotes to the everlasting service of the Great Being. Sanctioning the judicious improvement introduced by Catholicism, the Positive religion requires, as the condition of acceptance of the future servant, that a second couple offer itself to complete the guarantees for his due training, physical, intellectual, and moral. The joint action of the natural and artificial protectors is indicated by the fact that each couple shares in the selection of the two patrons, the one theoretical, the other practical, chosen, under the sanction of the priesthood, from the public representatives of Humanity in the past.

So long as war was the great form of human activity, the newborn were often rejected, as not properly qualified to take their part in war. But modern civilisation finds a use for all organisations, and therefore the sacrament of presentation will never be refused, with exceptions so rare as to need no provision. Delay of this first sacrament would then only be admissible when the parents, artificial and natural, did not offer the proper guarantees.

The ceremonial of Presentation.

This inauguration of a new life is a direct recognition of the principle of Sociocracy; since in it, there is vested in the two families by the priest, as the interpreter of the Great Being, an august office on behalf of the new child of Humanity. The ceremony consists chiefly in a full setting forth of the instructions which the discharge of the function in its completeness requires, its free acceptance being an admission on the part of the parents that private life is in the normal conception subordinate to public. To render more complete the guarantee of society, the priest presents the child to the witnesses, and receives from them a written engagement that, in the event of failure of its proper protectors, they will supply their place.

(2) Initiation.

In the second sacrament, the child, at the age of fourteen, enters on its initiation into public life, by passing from its

education by its mother to the instruction of the priest. On this occasion it receives the counsels of religion in reference to the whole course of its scientific novitiate, the object being to avert the great danger of these seven years, in which the intellect tends to rise in revolt against the heart. If the maternal education has been unsuccessful in training the affections, initiation should be put off; an absolute refusal, however, being given only in the extremely rare cases of radical incompetence for scientific culture.

In the third sacrament, admission, at the age of twenty-one, on the due fulfilment of his course of intellectual training, the child of Humanity receives from the priesthood authorisation to serve freely the Great Being; from which hitherto he has received all, giving nothing in return. Since the fall of Polytheism no religious ceremony has consecrated this social installation of the individual, owing to the particular incompetence of Monotheism, especially Western Monotheism, in regard to public life. Positivism in this sacrament will complete the regulations of the state as to majority by the addition of moral and intellectual conditions, conditions not to be imposed by law, but without which there would be no solid ground for the confidence which should be given those who are to take part as freemen in the general action of society. (iii) Admission.

Admission in this general form is sufficient for the woman, but seven years later the man receives in the fourth sacrament the investiture by religion in his own peculiar function. Not till that time can we be sure that there is a real vocation for the career of the theorician, a point on which there is generally a mistake at the close of the course of abstract studies. Mistake is not so easy in regard to a practical career, yet the one finally adopted is often not that chosen by the father, and to which, as so chosen, apprenticeship was served during the encyclopædic training. The Positive education, while it discourages capricious changes, will facilitate such as are desirable, for it will qualify the proletary and even the patrician to turn with greater ease to another branch of industry. Through a series of free trials, then, the young servant of Humanity must form his distinct choice during the seven years which follow his general instruction. This introductory process will be normally sufficient; but, notwithstanding, the Positive social order will occasionally offer instances of change of career, particularly (iv) Destination.

amongst the proletaries. This fourth sacrament, then, or destination, is the only sacrament which, in exceptional cases, may be given more than once, although its administration is of itself a preservative against the mistaken wish to quit one's class.

The rudiment of this sacrament may be traced to Theologism, nay even to astrolatrical Fetichism. But, except in the Theocracy, and this is peculiarly true of Catholicism, it was confined to the highest public functions, the ordination of priests and the coronation of kings. As it is incumbent on Sociocracy to fulfil all its theocratic antecedents by giving them a systematic expression, it gives the sanction of religion to all professions indiscriminately; each thus taking the social character which will render it amenable to moral control in its exercise, whatever be the mode adopted for recompensing its services.

This sacrament gives the priesthood the opportunity of marking the close of education, in the special sense of the word, by a solemn appreciation of the duties of the several careers. The servant of Humanity is thus qualified to take his full share in social life by the foundation of a new family.

(v) Marriage.

For such is the object of the fifth and most important sacrament, the exact age for receiving which must remain undetermined; only the lower limit may be fixed, twenty-eight for the man, and twenty-one for the woman. Nor must it be without weighty reasons that the priesthood permit marriage beyond thirty-five in the one case and twenty-eight in the other.

Monogamy
the principal
result of
Western
civilisation.

The reader is already familiar with the Positive theory of this fundamental bond, by his acquaintance with the General View, and the explanations incident to the second volume, explanations to be further developed in the course of the present volume. It is known, that the religion of Humanity looks on the establishment of monogamy as the grand result of the transition of the Western world from Theocracy to Sociocracy. In the thirty centuries of that transition this capital institution has approached by degrees its full completeness; it attains it in the Positivist regeneration, for that leads to the voluntary acceptance of eternal widowhood without which polygamy still continues in a subjective form. •

Interval be-
tween civil
and religious
marriage

This final and indispensable modification of marriage, the natural expression in brief of its true theory, offers a general guidance in relation to the fifth sacrament. That the promise

may be well and maturely weighed, it has been already found by experience in the new church, that it must not be accepted till three months after the civil ceremony which allows the married pair complete intimacy. A month before that civil ceremony, a solemn engagement is taken by the betrothed parties to observe chastity during the three months that precede the religious marriage. Without this trial neither party could sufficiently ensure his own resolution nor rely on that of the other. The conclusive test of this novitiate forms a fitting introduction to married life, as in it the two are seen, whilst legally free, not using their freedom, but preparing for subjective marriage by enjoying in its full purity the union of soul with soul.

Led consequently to look upon mutual improvement as the true aim of marriage, on the procreation of children as only a secondary object, they are allowed, in the name of Humanity, to sign, in conjunction with all the witnesses to the ceremony, the sacred engagement of an eternal union. The obligation thus voluntarily contracted will, in the face of such guarantees, be as a rule irrevocable; yet there may be exceptional cases, and in such the High Priest of Humanity, and he alone, after special enquiry, may grant a dispensation. A decision to this effect by the Pontiff is the more grave as it involves the affixing a stigma on the memory of one of the two parties; except the survivor feel unbound by a vow, taken, and shown to have been taken under a hasty impulse, a case hardly supposable with the precautions taken. In the normal case, the promise of eternal widowhood is to be solemnly renewed six months after the expiration of the year of mourning, after which no dispensation can be allowed. But even then the engagement must keep its purely religious character; no legal prescription must degrade it; however strong the pressure of public opinion may become, the patriciate will not yield the point, and in its resistance it will be supported by the urgent representations of the priesthood.

The vow of
eternal
widowhood,
Dispensa-
tions.

When duly trained for complete citizenship by married life, the servant of Humanity, at the age of forty-two, receives the sixth sacrament, which marks his attainment of his full maturity as a man and as a citizen. The true function of woman requires no introductory step: it begins with her life; it develops constantly as that life develops; nay it even gains in efficiency after that life has ended. Men, on the contrary, have to act

(vi) Matu-
rity.

and think, and need therefore a long and complicated preparation to fit them fully for their normal function. The period of its active discharge is generally but half as long as that of preparation. This sixth sacrament is the solemn inauguration of that period; more than any other it admits of adjournment or even refusal; whilst but rarely may we anticipate, in any considerable degree, its proper date.

In conferring this sacrament, one peculiar to Positivism, the priest warns the servant of Humanity that, whilst previous errors have been reparable, such faults as he may now commit will be decisive as to his incorporation into the Great Being. In it the citizen sees the public announcement of his capacity to discharge in full a function, to the lower degrees of which he was hitherto confined. And, however uniform the career of the priesthood, such is the training it requires, that the full priestly office may not be conferred at an earlier age than that appointed for civil offices.

(vii) Retirement.

Through this sacrament we pass to the seventh, in which the practical servant of Humanity, at the age of sixty-three, enters on a wise retirement from active life; retaining, however, a consultative influence, by virtue of which he is distinctly constituted a legitimate auxiliary of a priesthood, traceable in its earliest form to the elders. He ends his active career by the proclamation, in the face of Humanity, of his final choice of his successor, a choice submitted seven years before to public opinion for acceptance or rejection. The office of the priest, unlike that of women, requires preparation, but it approaches closely that of women in duration; so that the seventh sacrament is confined to practical men, the theoreticians of course limiting themselves to those duties for which they continue well qualified.

(viii) Trans-formation.

The eighth sacrament is the substitute Positivism offers for the inhuman ceremony in which Catholicism, forgetful of its aim, but true to its doctrine, made the breaking of all human ties the indispensable condition of an eternity as selfish as it is chimerical. The priesthood of Humanity associates the regret of his fellow-citizens with the tears of his family, and represents to the dying man the existence on which he is entering, as the completion after death of the services by which in life he has deserved such reward. Whilst bound not to forestall the ulterior judgment, the priesthood will, as a rule, hold out the

hope that that judgment will be favourable, on condition of sincere repentance, and, where possible, reparation.

Seven years after the latest consecration of the living, a consecration of the dead perfects the series of objective preparations, and proclaims, before an appropriate bier, the solemn incorporation of its occupant into the Great Being. Such an interval combines maturity of judgment on the part of the priesthood with the preservation of the various documents it requires for its judgment. To bring public opinion to bear more satisfactorily, a provisional decision is given in the fourth year, a decision susceptible of revision and preparatory of the final and irreversible sentence.

(ix) Incorporation.

Such is the last sacrament, by which Sociocracy, brought into direct connection with Theocracy, completes the process of consecrating all the marked epochs of man's mortal life by incorporating it with the eternal life of Humanity. The ceremony of the final judgment consists principally in the solemn transfer of the noble remains to the sacred grove which should surround each temple of Humanity. This act initiates a definitive cultus of the man and of the citizen, paid at the sacred tomb, which is adorned with an inscription, a bust, or a statue, according to the degree of honour accorded. An adverse sentence, as a rule, is simply negative; it treats, that is, as final, the civil burial with which the priesthood is never concerned. In cases where strong reprobation is deserved, the body of the condemned is borne in a fitting manner to the waste ground allotted to the rejected, there to lie with those who have been publicly executed, with suicides and with duellists, though not, as they are, subject to anatomical examination.

Taken as a whole, the preceding exposition, in which it has been impossible to explain the worship without anticipating upon the regime, manifests the inherent competence of Sociolatriy to deal with domestic life, all its phases finding their appropriate regulation in the nine sacraments. The consecration of that life, if it is to be complete, must embrace the modifications which, if not universal, are yet so frequent as to call for the sanction of the priesthood. Such a modification will be, in particular, Adoption, an institution to be largely developed in the Positive state; its religious ceremonial to be connected, as the case may require, either with the sacrament

Special modifications of domestic relations, e.g. adoption.

of presentation, or it may be, with those of destination and retirement.

Wherein lies
the power of
these sacra-
ments.

In estimating the power of these various ceremonies, we see that it depends throughout on the habitual practice of personal worship, whether prior in order of time or coexistent; in default of such habit the priesthood would be unable by the sacraments to excite any but mere transient emotions. But they who, by the habit of daily prayer, are ever ready to feel and to understand the Great Being, will receive deep impressions from these consecrations, sanctifying as they do in combination the life of each, as connecting it by gradual steps with Humanity. Their interdependence is calculated to secure easy access for the influence of each, as each resumes its predecessors, nay even heralds its successors, so as to be a conclusive evidence of adhesion to the true religion.

The Series
Personal,
Domestic,
Public
Worship.

The family worship rests on the personal, and is a preparation for the public, by its introducing, in an elementary form, the abstraction and the publicity which are the characteristics of public worship. To give an ideal embodiment of Sociology and still more of Sociocracy, such is the aim of our system of Sociolatriy, and its power to attain it is seen on a comparison of its three general forms or stages. For the first, purely statical, represents order; the second, mainly dynamical, represents progress; the last, both statical and dynamical, is the expression of the combination of order and progress.

Public Wor-
ship.

Previous to entering on public worship, the direct worship, that is, of Humanity, I must explain the calendar it requires. Its introduction gives systematic form to a construction begun during Fetichism, and by the necessity of the case preserving its empirical character till the advent of Positivism.

The Calen-
dar. What
a date is.

To date, is to distinguish each day by the place it holds in the whole period elapsed since the beginning of the era chosen. If stated directly and simply, it would involve too large numbers, even as regards the duration of the life of the individual, much more in reference to that of the society. For dates then we must, as in abstract numeration, adopt an indirect and compound system by grouping the days, not however exceeding three orders of groups, or we necessarily get confused.

The Week

Of these periods, or groups of days, which are at once of man's

institution and natural, it is the smallest alone which hitherto has gained unanimous acceptance by virtue of the subjective properties of the number seven, pointed out in the last volume. Positivism explains the attributes of the week, and by so doing places on rational grounds an institution instinctively adopted, which goes back to Fetichism, even in its nomad stage. But Positivism, whilst referring to the week its whole system of public worship, sanctions and regulates the combination of the week with larger periods, for otherwise the date would still require too high numbers. As far as possible, it connects these periods with the week, in order to facilitate numerical comparisons, and most of all with the view of introducing the greatest possible concordance into our religious solemnities. The two conditions are met by a judicious combination of the month and the year, the two periods in common use, regard being had to their true nature; the month being subjective, the year objective.

Vol. III.
p. 120.

The Month
and the
Year.

All divergences relating to the calendar are to be looked upon as traceable, above all, to a want of the due recognition of this inherent difference of the two periods. It was from not being awake to it that our Fetichist ancestors, when arranging their calendar, had recourse to the external world for the two higher periods, guided by the apparent movements of the moon and sun. The first naturally was in the ascendant during the nomad period; that of the sun during astrolatry, properly so called, at which time the priesthood made a first attempt at its calculation. But the numerical discrepancy between the two movements soon became evident, and compelled the abandonment of an objective agreement, and the acquiescence in a subjective connection. Such a connection might assume one or other of two forms, each excluding the other, according as one or other period became artificial, though the lunar period was never artificial enough. Hence the two forms of the calendar, the lunar and the solar; in which at one time the year is made to depend on the month, at another the month on the year. Whichever form was adopted, the ground of connection was always essentially the worship, and the worship, since the period of astrolatry, was indissolubly connected with the week.

Lunar and
Solar years.

It is on the same ground that Positivism rests its definitive arrangement, by at once ratifying the unanimous preference of the western world for the solar calendar, as the direct combina-

Positivism
adopts the
solar year.

tion of the two simultaneous movements of the Earth. Theocracy laid the basis of their general agreement by its institution of mean time; an arrangement completed, during the Western transition, by the intercalation of leap year, first by Julius Caesar, subsequently by Gregory XI. The Positive religion adopts without hesitation this slight alteration of the two natural periods, and its consequence, their perfect agreement; and devotes it to the evidencing the fundamental subordination of the subjective to the objective, a subordination which is the basis of the whole belief of mankind in its final form. In the solar year thus constituted by the Western world, the festivals of Humanity recur with the recurrence of the leading phenomena, the cosmological in the first place, and then the biological phenomena, characteristic of the planetary milieu which Humanity respects whilst she improves it. Our various ancestors having thus coordinated the two natural periods, the day and the year, it remains for us to perfect the calendar as an institution by bringing into satisfactory agreement the two periods of man's creation which connect them.

Division of
the year
into thirteen
months of
four weeks
or twenty-
eight days.

All relation to the moon being set aside, and the month becoming as subjective as the week, we soon come to see that it is necessary to make the month invariably four weeks exactly, which leads to the division of the year into thirteen months. The complementary day with which, on this system, each year ends, will have no weekly or monthly designation, any more than will the additional day which follows it in leap years. Their names will be derived solely from the festivals appointed for them, and in this way we secure the continuity of the Positivist calendar, all its months beginning with a Monday and ending with a Sunday. We may add that it keeps the present beginning of the Western year, so placed as to represent a renovation, since with it the days begin to lengthen in the Northern or principal hemisphere of the Earth. Be they what they may, however, it is not the practical advantages of this ultimate modification of the calendar, so much as the requirements of the worship, which will ensure its acceptance.

Reasons for
the change.

Private worship alone would justify the modification, in order to avoid the painful uncertainty to which our affectionate memories are often exposed from the existing discrepancy between the two artificial dates. Though domestic worship less

urgently demands the agreement of the two, it has its fitness here also, as by its help alone we can sufficiently recall the nine ceremonies always appointed for the Thursday. It is, however, above all, the whole system of public festivals which places beyond dispute the necessity of the leading innovation, the division, that is, of the year into thirteen months.

No other number in fact can satisfy the several demands of the abstract cultus, in which we have to celebrate, first, the fundamental nature of the Great Being; then the stages of its necessarily gradual formation; lastly, its existence in the normal state. From the first point of view, the month with which the year opens must be devoted to the synthetical worship of Humanity, resting on the due subordination of its several nuclei to its sempiternal whole. But this direct commemoration of the great public bond of unity requires, to complete it, the particular consecration of each of the private ties on which it rests. Now they are five in number: marriage; the paternal; filial; fraternal; and domestic relations; ranked on the principle of decrease of intimacy and increase of generality, each has one of the five succeeding months devoted to it. The statical portion of the worship thus fully allowed for, the dynamical portion takes three more months, devoted severally to the three grand phases of the preparation of the race: Fetichist; Polytheist; and lastly Monotheist. On this statical and dynamical foundation, the four last months give ample scope for the direct adoration of the true providence in its various forms: moral; intellectual; material; and general; vested respectively in women, the priesthood, the patriciate, and the proletariat. Thus the thirteen months of the Positivist year are found indispensable to Sociolatriy, if it is adequately to idealise Sociology and Sociocracy.

In the calendar of Humanity, in this its final form, two secondary questions for the present must remain unsettled. The first is that of the Positive era, for which we cannot in anywise adopt that introduced by the monotheistic transition, Islamic or Catholic. Naturally the Positive era must have reference to the triumph of the true religion, the date of which must be as yet uncertain. The second point is the impossibility of adhering in our definitive systematisation of the calendar to the present heterogeneous nomenclature of the months; not to speak of the confusion resulting from the difference in this

Apportionment of the thirteen months.

The Positive Era not fixed, nor again the names of the months.

respect of the different calendars. Yet we cannot at the present day decide whether the new names will be taken from the subjects to which they are consecrated, or from the order of succession, the fortunate circumstance that the two grounds coincide leaving the question undecided.

Idealisation
of the days
of the week.

To complete this theory of the Positivist calendar, I must indicate the ultimate form of the idealisation of the several days of the week. In the first place, it is drawn from their existing names, which we ought carefully to retain, as they recall the whole education of the race, instituted as they were by Fetichism, sanctioned by Polytheism, and adopted by Monotheism. Their adaptation to this end is the more valuable, as it arises from their representing in succession the various heavenly bodies which are in real connection with man's planet, for all essential purposes independent of all the others.

Concrete
nomenclature
of the
week.

The agreement of Positivism with earlier systems on this point—its agreement, historically and dogmatically—in thorough conformity with the whole conception of the week as a subjective institution, is yet of too abstract a character not to require a concrete addition, such addition to be derived from the transition of the West from Theocracy to Sociocracy. The addition consists in this, that whilst we adhere to the actual names as precious, we consecrate the seven days of the week to the memory of the seven principal organs of that transition: Homer, Aristotle, Cæsar, St. Paul, Charlemagne, Dante, and Descartes. This series of names adequately represents the whole of this capital evolution; an evolution peculiar, it is true, to the West, but deserving to be had in familiar remembrance in all ages and countries as having been the indispensable condition of the final regeneration. The introduction of these names is a compensation for the inevitable imperfection of the abstract worship as regards the concrete commemoration of the past, the three months reserved for the past being insufficient for such commemoration. Their adoption will be the easier as it merely requires the definitive transfer to the days of the week of the highest monthly types of the provisional calendar, to be explained in the chapter which treats of the last period of the transition.

Abstract
nomenclature.

Once more, the week admits of an abstract nomenclature, as we may dedicate the seven days to the seven fundamental sciences: Mathematics, Astronomy, Physics, Chemistry, Bio-

logy, Sociology, and Morals. This second method is not incompatible with the former; is in harmony with the spirit of our public worship; and will familiarise us with the encyclopædic hierarchy and the relative conception of the world in which we live. It is a consequence of the concurrence of the two forms that the festival at the end of each week will be marked by its consecration at once to the highest science and to the immediate precursor of the final religion.

Thus in the calendar of Humanity we have two artificial periods, in subordination the one to the other; the two occupying an intermediate position between two other periods of natural origin and brought into sufficient agreement; the object of the whole system being to make the succession of time an expression of all the relations of man with his fellows or with the external world. As for groups of years, it is enough if we recall the systematic adoption, indicated in the last chapter, of the old relation between the century and the generation. When, in consequence of the duration of the Great Being, higher unities are required, it will be easy for the priesthood to form them.

Groups of
years.

The theory of the calendar is a preliminary to our more direct examination of the public worship, such worship really being the developement of the system of abstract adoration in which the whole Positivist calendar issues. Were it not for the fear of excess in the number of festivals, we might decompose Sociolatriy to the extent of festivals for each day and yet leave unimpaired the homogeneity of the presentation. Respecting the limits, however, imposed by the exigencies of daily life, we must here devote our attention to the four festivals of each month, always fixed for the Sunday.

Direct treat-
ment of
Public Wor-
ship.

Our descendants will begin the year with the most august of all its solemnities, the festival in the immediate honour of the Great Being, whose children and servants they will acknowledge themselves. The nature of that Being, at once composite and subjective; its existence based upon love; its submission to an order which it improves; all these conceptions will receive an artistic expression in this initial festival, on which all will dutifully renew their devotion of themselves to the work of regeneration. This synthetical inauguration, wherein care will be taken to pay fitting honour to the animal races which are man's auxiliaries, will have its full signification

The Festival
of Humanity
and those of
the first
month.

drawn out by more special festivals, in commemoration of the different degrees or forms peculiar to human association, on the four Sundays of the first month. The first will glorify the union of the race, built on the foundation of a demonstrable faith; the only faith that is in the full sense of the term religious, but which is the outcome of a preparation to which all the fictitious beliefs of Humanity have contributed. The second Sunday commemorates the largest form of partial associations, a form which in the main has become a thing of the past, but of which a visible trace survives in the language common to several populations once subject to one government. On the third Sunday, the festival of the Country honours the political tie in its most perfect form, with a view to foster the feelings of affection between fellow-citizens which will then be deeply felt, as the nations will be reduced within moderate limits. Finally, on the last day of the month of Humanity, we pay homage to the primary form in which Families unite, the Township, the closest union of man for practical purposes, so happily expressed by the French word *commune*.

Festivals of
the second
month.
Marriage.

During the second month, the month in which will be concentrated the fifth sacrament, Marriage, the several forms of the conjugal union will receive honour. The first Sunday will be devoted to Marriage in its complete form, showing how greatly the harmony of the married couple is confirmed and increased by their concert in the due discharge of the holy function vested in them as regards the child of Humanity. It is, however, the second festival of the month that will represent in its truest character the conjugal union, by its recognition of the superior perfection of chaste marriage; where the union is the union of the heart only, procreation being formally reserved for those best qualified for it. We have in the last masterpiece of the great Corneille the anticipation of such an union; and it will lose the anomalous character now attaching to it, when Positive education has told sufficiently on the two sexes, without waiting for the realisation of the hypothesis of the last chapter, by which propagation is limited to the woman. The third Sunday will be devoted to a form of marriage which will be a rare exception; the form in which imperfect agreement is all that is attainable, by virtue of a deficient parity, a disparity naturally of age rather than of rank, never of wealth, as is evident, since dowries are abolished.

Closing the marriage month by a ceremony in special honour of the subjective union, consequent on the law of widowhood, it will be shown how indispensable is the perpetuity of the marriage bond to the sincere worship of the Great Being, a Being composed mainly of the dead. If incapable of living an ideal life in communion with the highest object of our love, we are by such incapacity disqualified for feeling, nay even for understanding, the past which has preceded us—the future which is to succeed us.

• One and the same explanation may here suffice for the three next months, as there is a natural agreement in regard to the relations to which they are respectively devoted: the Parental, Filial, and Fraternal relations. I limit myself then to the analysis in detail of the first case, the most important and the most strongly marked of the three; urging the reader to adapt to the fourth and fifth months the subdivisions of the third. On the first Sunday, we deal with the paternal relation in its complete and natural form, its only really normal form, the form in which the affection given to the son has its root in the tenderness felt for the mother, such an indirect origin being necessitated by the weakness of the paternal instinct in men. On the second Sunday, we honour the voluntary and yet complete tie formed by a judicious adoption, even where the person adopted is an adult perfectly unconnected with the family. The institution of adoption, emanating from Fetichism, was transformed by the Theocrats, but it is only Positivism to which it is fully suited; Sociocracy will spread a deep sense of its value, without waiting for human procreation to become independent of the father. On the third Sunday, we celebrate the incomplete, yet voluntary paternity due to spiritual connection; this too waits for its full developement in the system in which everyone will be for seven years under the guidance of one and the same priest of Humanity. The analogous temporal connection cannot be as complete; still it deserves commemoration on the last Sunday of the month, when, under both its aspects, will be shown the value of a relation which will be more common and more permanent in the sociocratic regime, by virtue of a degree of liberty which was incompatible with the Theocracy.

• To the domestic relation, or that of master and servant, is devoted the whole of the sixth month, and hereby the worship

The third,
fourth, and
fifth months.
Parental,
Filial, and
Fraternal
Relations.

The sixth
month.
Domesticity.

of Humanity will place in its true light this institution : an institution which, meant to perfect the family by binding it to society, could not be on its right footing whilst slavery persisted. Since the establishment of personal freedom it has ~~been impossible~~, owing to the anarchy of the West, to estimate aright this indispensable link between man and man ; the great misconceiving it in their pride ; the inferiors in their insubordination. But when all life is viewed as an honourable service, it will be but natural to respect the families which offer, as their best contribution to the conservation and advancement of Humanity, their voluntary services in aid of her individual interpreters or ministers. On the first Sunday of the sixth month, we shall honour domestic service in its permanent and complete form, in which it more particularly applies to patricians, but never on conditions incompatible with the indulgence of conjugal and maternal affection, and to be given only when an improvement in habits, feelings, and position shall forbid service where it is undeserved. Such a voluntary fusion of two families will often be so complete, that the priesthood, when proclaiming the glorification after death of one of the two, will give the other a share in its consecrated tomb—in order that both together may receive the homage of their respective descendants and even of their fellow-citizens. The peculiar services of clerks call forth less self-devotion, as is indicated by their separate dwellings, yet when permanent it is a relation to be commemorated on the second Sunday in this month ; the other two weeks of which will distinguish in like manner the temporary service of pages and apprentices. By its comprehension of these last, Sociolatriy will show the universal applicability of a position which has been, dating from the Middle Ages, connected with the training of the individual, even in the case of patricians, and has been at all times calculated to develope, on both sides, the three social instincts.

The following quarter offers dynamical festivals. Additional Thursday commemorations.

Thus, in the first six months, the public worship of Humanity expresses in an ideal form the fundamental nature of the Great Being under all its essential aspects ; it devotes the three months which follow to the commemoration of the principal phases of its necessarily gradual evolution. The festivals, hitherto statical in character, now become dynamical, but not therefore less abstract ; for were they otherwise, not to speak of the impairment of harmony in the system, so short a

period would not afford scope for the adequate glorification of the past. Still, the better to fulfil this condition, it is desirable during these three months, as a preparation for the abstract ceremony of the Sunday, to fix a concrete one on the Thursday, in honour of the highest representative of the period under consideration.

This commemoration as a whole would appear most appropriate to the opening period of our maturity, to recall it to the sense of continuity which has been more and more falling into abeyance, especially in the West since the advent of Monotheism. And yet the most distant future will never, nor in any place, cease to commemorate the indispensable initiation of the race, limited though it was in its later stages to the nations on which devolved the task of shaping the whole social economy. Not only will the training of the individual in all cases repeat the leading features of the preparation; but the heart and the intellect will agree in honouring the first life of the Great Being, the perfectibility of its nature ever reminding us of a beginning which is a title to glory.

The commemoration as suitable for the future as for the present.

No period of man's existence on earth but must find its place in the worship, and yet the historical division of that worship will never receive any considerable addition; hence even now we may give it its definitive form. For, the normal state once fully established, its onward movement, continuous though gradual, will necessarily escape the marked changes of the preparatory period. The stronger the stimulus given by this dynamical period to the instincts of progress, the more complete also must be its control of those instincts, by implanting the conviction, that the anarchical advance of our educational age subsides, in the normal state, into the developement of order with the aim of consolidating it.

This historical part of the cultus definitive; no great addition being possible.

The limits then of the historical portion of Sociolatriy are irremovably fixed, and I have now to explain in detail its three constituents.

The definitive fusion of the Fetichist in the Positive spirit does not supersede the necessity of an historical commemoration of the infancy of Humanity. In fact, the absorption of Fetichism is limited to its principles, and does not extend to its institutions, which perished utterly with the state of things to which they were adapted. Regarding Fetichism as sponta-

The seventh month.
Fetichism.

neous Positivism in its earliest stage, the systematic worship of Humanity devotes to it the whole of the seventh month.

Spontaneous
Fetichism.

(1) Nomad.

The nomad period was longer in duration than any other, and laid the main foundations of all human education; this we must not forget; yet as by the nature of the case the documents relating to it are inadequate, we only give the first week to its distinct commemoration. The object of the Sunday's ceremonial will be, to produce a just sense of the benefits, transient or permanent, conferred on the race by this initial period; a period with which we shall always feel a sympathy, as recalling our natural fondness for the wandering life of the hunter and the shepherd. The Sunday, however, were incomplete without the preparatory festival on the Thursday, devoted to the capital fact of man's alliance with the sociable animals, special honour being paid to the association, in succession, of the dog, the horse, and the ox—the three types round which the rest may be grouped.

(2) Seden-
tary.

During the second week, we commemorate the irrevocable adoption of the sedentary state, the state, that is, which was indispensably requisite as the condition of all ulterior advance, intellectual and even moral advance, quite as much as material. The ceremony of the Thursday is a special homage to Fire, the institution on which depended primarily our progress in all three respects; language perpetuates the memory of its introduction by borrowing from it the words which in ordinary use are characteristic of existence and religion, *Foyer* and *Fête*. Then on the Sunday, agricultural life, the common basis of industry and of commerce, has its ideal presentation, greatest stress being laid on the charm of its earliest spontaneous beginnings, its poetical and moral attraction, where the milieu was favourable to a prolongation of the Fetichist state.

Systematic
Fetichism.

(1) Sacer-
dotal.

The second half of the month must be given to systematic Fetichism, of which Astrolatry is the characteristic, and the origin of which is in the sedentary life, for that gave rise to the priesthood as a developement of the earlier institution, the elders. Though this period was naturally less durable than its predecessor, its commemoration deserves an equal space, owing to its being the indispensable source of Theologism, under the military form as well as under the sacerdotal. When it glorifies the results of Astrolatry, Sociolatry will not fail freely to express the lasting regret due to the violent extinction of the

great, if primitive, astrolatrical societies in Malayia and America. The third Thursday of the month of Fetichism will prepare the way for the commemoration of its systematic form by a festival in memory of the worship of the sun, such a festival as may appeal to the heart in favour of the deep reasonableness of that worship, purely instinctive though it was. So prepared, the ceremony of the Sunday will be the abstract glorification of the astrolatrical state, the true source of the polytheistic Theocracy; which lasted even throughout Monotheism, down to the rise of the doctrine of the earth's movement, the immediate basis of Positivism. This first historical month closes with the commemoration of military Astrolatry, which, when it found a milieu suitable to it, was the preliminary of the system of conquest peculiar to Polytheism. On the Thursday previous to its commemoration, a special festival is allotted to the introduction of iron, the large use of which was originally for military purposes, but which was ultimately destined to play the leading part in our industrial progress.

The Sun.

(2) Military.

Iron.

All the main aspects of its preparatory period thus recognised, the way is clear for the commemoration of the second childhood of the race, the period of Polytheism and War; and to this the eighth month is devoted; setting apart the first Sunday for the veneration of Theocracy, to which we ascribe the most decisive influence in our initiation. The preceding Thursday commemorates more particularly the institution of Caste, the general basis of the theocratic system, and destined, notwithstanding constant modifications, to be the essential guarantee of order until the advent of the definitive Sociocracy. The caste system will be an object of just sympathy with our most remote posterity, a sympathy finding vent in the recognition of the affinities due to similarity of profession, though no longer needing the corroboration of hereditary transmission.

The eighth month.

Polytheism.

(1) Theocracy.

Caste.

Its due honour paid to conservative Polytheism, in the second week, we begin, on the Thursday, the commemoration of intellectual Polytheism, with the festival of its three highest artistic organs: Homer, Æschylus, and Phidias. From this introduction we pass, on the Sunday, to the abstract glorification of its whole poetic movement, which, breaking the yoke of Theocracy, then become retrograde, worthily inaugurated the Western transition, not without a presentiment, even at that period, of Sociocracy. As a preparation for the celebration of

(11) Intellectual Polytheism.

(a) Æsthetic.

(b) Scientific.

the strictly intellectual advance, the following Thursday is the festival of its seven principal representatives; first its philosophical types: Thales, Pythagoras, and Aristotle; then its scientific: Hippocrates, Archimedes, Apollonius, Hipparchus. The Sunday will then suffice for our abstract idealisation of the intellectual construction, which, though provisional or introductory, was yet in the strictest sense decisive; for the genius of the West made it the inauguration of the systematic scientific creation, needed as the preamble of the Religion of Humanity. But on the morrow, we must place an extraordinary festival in honour of the battle of Salamis, and Themistocles as its personal representative, with Alexander to complete the conception; thus satisfying the full claims of intellectual Polytheism by celebrating the struggle which it could not avoid, and preparing the way for the glorification of social Polytheism. We enter on this, the following Thursday, with the festival of the three great types of the military society: Scipio, Cæsar, and Trajan, worthy to be the precursors of Sociocracy by virtue of the high value they set upon peace. This enables us to consider the last Sunday as sufficient for the abstract commemoration of the Roman system of incorporation, the system under which the noblest of our ancestors prepared the way for the direct introduction of the normal order, by their preference of action to speculation, of public to private life.

(III) Social
or Military
Polytheism.

The ninth
month.

Monotheism.
(I) Theocratic
or Judicial.

The proper object of the ninth month is the glorification of the adolescence of Humanity; yet it must begin by honouring the peculiar form of Monotheism which arose as an offshoot of the true Theocracy; and that because in the East no less than in the West it has been intimately connected with Monotheism in its typical form. As a preliminary to its idealisation, the first Thursday is a festival in honour of its highest types: Abraham, Moses, and Solomon, the only personal representatives of the theocratic state in the imperfect presentation of it consequent on the monotheistic alloy; for their noble abnegation of self allows no pure theocratic types. On the following Sunday, the worshippers of the Great Being will, to the end of time, recognise with sympathy the services of the devoted Jews, not unprepared, as a natural result of their dispersion, for the acceptance of the religion of Humanity, as alone able to honour and raise their race, by making reparation for the stigmas fixed on it by ingratitude.

(II) Catholic.
No.

For the adequate idealisation of Monotheism in its defen-

sive period, the entire second week is not more than is required, the six days of concrete festivals being allotted to its highest individual organs: St. Paul, Charlemagne, Alfred, Hildebrand, Godfrey, and lastly St. Bernard, its most perfect type. This last festival leads, on the morrow, to an exceptional one, embodying in an individual type the systematic glorification of the Middle Ages, without detriment to its abstract character, by concentrating it on the gentle worship which was the condensed expression of Catholicism and Chivalry. Accustomed, as a result of their whole education, to venerate the Virgin as the spontaneous emblem of Humanity, the servants of Humanity will, by this concentration, be enabled to feel more deeply the emotional period of the Western transition.

The Virgin.

The indispensable preparation of the universal Religion, if honoured duly, requires that the following week be set apart for a fitting commemoration of Islamic Monotheism, the only possible precursor of Positivism in the East. The Thursday therefore is the festival of Mohammed, the incomparable founder of Islam; who felt, in a higher degree than all other reformers, the provisional character and the limited adaptation of the religious construction by which he trained noble nations for the final state. For the Sunday is appointed the abstract commemoration of Islam; the setting forth the intellectual and moral benefits inherent in the monotheistic fusion of the temporal and spiritual powers; benefits not lost by the temporary delay that fusion at first enforced upon the Orientals. To complete the picture of the filiation, an extraordinary festival on the Monday commemorates the battle of Lepanto, the last glorious effort of the military instinct, the true complement of Salamis. When the descendants of the Mussulmans and the descendants of the Catholics shall be united by the Positive religion, it is the Mussulman, rather than the Catholic, that will attach most value to the day which marked the close of his military career and inaugurated his industrial existence.

(iii) Mohammedan.

Lepanto.

Finally, the last week of the three months devoted to history must commemorate the Western revolution in its entirety: the period, that is, in which political anarchy contributed to the elaboration, in both the spiritual and temporal order, of the immediate elements of the definitive system. To admit of a satisfactory abstract idealisation, on the Sunday, of the movement, as at once organic and critical, the first requisite is, that

(iv) Metaphysical.

the Thursday be devoted to the most complete representative of that movement, the incomparable Frederic. But this capital commemoration, in which we have a foreshadowing of the great crisis, must be preceded by the glorification in succession of the two types of the intellectual movement of modern times, Dante and Descartes.

The thirty-three festivals of the historical months.

Such is the ideal presentation in Sociolatriy, as each year returns, of the whole initiation of the race, in a combined series of twenty-one concrete, and twelve abstract, festivals, during the three historical months. The vast picture, the artistic expression of the third volume of this work, will be at all times quite within the comprehension of all who have duly undergone the encyclopædic instruction, and listened consequently to the exposition of the philosophy of history. The inevitable inequality of the division of the thirty-three dynamical festivals between the several phases of the past on which we rest, is no element of discordance, where the conspectus is one in which the room given to each phase depends not on the length of its duration, but on the amount of movement. Thus, although the glorification of the theocratic period is limited to two festivals, the very condensation is a new homage to the profound stability of the only complete order attainable during the whole earlier life of the race. So, too, when we limit to two festivals the idealisation of Rome, we do but give relief to the admirable homogeneity which is stamped on the most decisive of the three phases of the Western transition. Prior to the universal adoption of the Positive worship and the Positive education, the system of festivals here given will be sufficient to make ready for the Religion of Humanity all who assist at them, as well as the young children of true believers. Nay, its power in this respect will naturally manifest itself so soon as Sociolatriy shall be inaugurated in Paris, for thither as to the world's capital will come from all parts all who thirst after religious culture, so to secure expansion, deliberately, for their instinct of continuity.

The combination of Fetichism and Positivism.

Examine the conspectus, and we find the definitive combination of Fetichism and Positivism solemnly ratified. For the infancy of mankind has as many festivals as the whole of its childhood, though Fetichism could leave no individual name connected with it. Its concrete festivals have a character, from the dogmatical not less than the historical point

of view, adapted to show how entirely the primeval adoration of the external world was in instinctive conformity with the ultimate tendencies of Humanity.

I have now to explain in what way the public worship, having honoured the fundamental nature of the Great Being, and exalted its indispensable initiation, idealises its providence in its normal form during the last third of the Positivist year. As in the first half, so here again, all the festivals, even the subordinate ones, have in the main a statical character, the dynamical being limited to the intermediate three months. Throughout the whole, however, there is an element of historical feeling mingling with the dogmatic idealisation, so as never to leave us without a sense of the series of preparatory efforts required for the establishment of each social bond, and for the continuous advance towards perfection of each function of society.

The last
four months.

The tenth month exalts the moral providence of the Great Being, naturally entrusted to the affective sex. In this month all the conceptions imparted by our education as to the paramount importance of feeling find their legitimate ideal expression. At the same time, the public worship gives a direct sanction to the system of private worship, which supplies its indispensable basis. For each true believer can in the public worship make special application to the divinities of his home of the abstract and general worship of woman, in her fourfold capacity of mother, wife, daughter, and sister, as honoured in succession on the four Sundays of this month. No subsidiary festival is required; so rational is the worship, that it is sufficient to revive in the minds of all a deep sense of the ever-increasing benefits due to the sex in which affection predominates, and of the unremitting duties which this estimate imposes upon man. The function of women is fortunately so homogeneous, that every true woman will be sufficiently honoured by the honour paid to her sex collectively, whilst to men are left the personal distinctions required by their moral imperfection. Still, there will be no objection, the normal state once fully established, to the clergy devoting the Thursdays of this month to types of women of acknowledged eminence, not merely of local, but even of universal eminence, and that without having recourse to the exceptional cases originating in public life.

The tenth
month.
Women, the
moral Providence.

The eleventh month.
The Priesthood. The intellectual Providence.
(i) Incomplete.

In the eleventh month, set apart for the intellectual Providence of Humanity, we begin its glorification from the lowest stage; we begin, that is, by honouring it in its incomplete form, as it is seen in the man of science or the artist, disqualified for the priesthood by their deficiency in tenderness or energy. Such cases, hitherto the rule, will become, it is true, in Sociocracy as exceptional, or even more exceptional, than under the Theocracy; still, at all times they will be frequent enough to deserve a separate consecration, one honouring them, but marking at the same time their imperfection. This homage to the pensioners of the priesthood is paid on the first Sunday; on the second, a public recognition will do honour to the preparatory degree, by which the theorician, whose sacerdotal vocation has been recognised, aspires to membership in the Positive clergy.

(ii) Preparatory.
The Aspirant.

Festivals of Art and Science.

With regard to these two preliminary modes, it will be well, as a compensation for the discredit attaching to their imperfection, to institute on the two first Thursdays in the month two accessory festivals, one in honour of art, the second in honour of science.

(iii) Definitive.
(a) Secondary. The Vicar.

The third week introduces us to the priesthood in its definitive form, when we honour its secondary degree, the Vicariate, in which the clerk shares in the intellectual functions—teaching and preaching—but is not admitted as yet to the social functions of consecration or consultation. Vicars are, as such, irrevocably members of the priesthood; but there is an indistinctness of character attaching to them, which makes any additional festival unnecessary, allowing for individual distinctions possibly called for by the developement of the universal religion. So ushered in, the direct glorification of the full Priesthood occupies the last Sunday of the month, the inherent homogeneity of the priestly functions rendering unnecessary any distinctions between the priests, even as regards the High Priesthood. Only on the preceding Thursday, there should be a festival in special honour of Old Men, the natural precursors, and ultimately the regular assistants of the priesthood.

(b) The Priest.

The twelfth month.
The Patriarchate. The Material Providence.
(i) Bank.

During the twelfth month* in the Sociolatrinal system, we honour the Patriarchate in its four general divisions as the organ of the material providence of Humanity. These festivals, as a whole, ought to give artistic expression to the feelings of

veneration and of devotion, of veneration in the inferiors, devotion in the superiors; the feelings cultivated in each respectively by education and by action. The constituents of the temporal power are ranked on the principle of decreasing generality, and increasing independence; and the worship will assert the higher dignity of the banking element, which, as the great condenser of wealth, is at once less easy to understand aright, and more exposed to envy. With the exception of this highest Patriciate, from which is drawn the governing Triumvirate, each of the three essential classes, by virtue of the difference of their functions, admits of distinctions which would seem to justify subordinate festivals in numbers sufficient to occupy all the days of each week. But not to mention the industrial inconveniences of such increase, it would not be without moral danger, as giving scope for rivalries amongst the superiors, an evil ever at the door; and as occasioning amongst the inferiors contentions at variance with the homogeneous character of the proletariat. The additional festivals apparently required for the due honour of commerce, manufactures, and, above all, of agriculture, may find satisfactory substitutes in the solemn processions which will close the weekly ceremonies. When some considerable time has elapsed after the establishment of the normal state, the Thursdays may be set apart for the public commemoration of the types which deserve an individual honour, such distinction being most commonly national, now and then, however, recognised throughout the world.

(ii) Com-
merce.
(iii) Manu-
factures.
(iv) Agri-
culture.

There is, however, a distinct festival required, if we study the patrician month as a whole; a festival in honour of the protectorate voluntarily assumed by the nobler industrial chiefs, under a special vow, either at the opening of their industrial career or after its close. As their prototypes the Knights of military chivalry, these Knights of industrial chivalry have for their function the prevention or the remedying of the oppression to which poverty is always exposed in women, priests, and proletaries, and they collectively deserve honour, an honour quite unconnected with their industrial capacity. Fixed for the first Thursday of the month, the festival of the Knights is an assertion of the general obligation on the strong to devote themselves to the service of the weak, and the more special tendency inherent in the highest class of patricians to recognise this as the legitimate function

The first
Thursday of
the month.
Festival of
the Knights.

of great wealth, a function which cannot but render its concentration more easy to justify.

The thirteenth month.
The Proletariate.
The general Providence.

The final step in the ideal presentation of the general Sociocratic constitution is the devoting the last month of the Positivist year to the honour of the Proletariate, the body in which we see, by the necessity of the case, the homogeneous and complementary organ of Human providence. Its natural tendency to exercise a constant control over the more special powers will be so drawn out by the identity of education, that varieties of industrial employment, a consideration of minor importance yet to be taken into account, will never be able to impair its unity. The distinction between the four festivals of the month depends not on difference of occupations, but on the mode or degree in which the character of the class is represented.

(1) Complete form or active Proletariate.

Festival of Inventors.

Hence the first Sunday honours the Proletariate in its complete form, the form in which industrial activity is found in natural conjunction, not merely with the moral developement of the citizen or the head of the family, but with the culture of the intellect,—its scientific, and even its esthetic culture. This, the leading ceremony of the month, to stand in its true light, requires, on the preceding Thursday, an introductory festival in honour of Discoverers and Inventors in general; Gutenberg, Columbus, Vaucanson, Watt, and Montgolfier, being taken as special types—types sufficiently diversified to represent the class. In taking them all from the first stage of existence of the Great Being, we imply that the second stage admits of no such personal distinctions. This second life has to regulate—this is its great task—the powers which the first threw up; and therefore it is the social function of the Proletariate, rather than its industrial service, to which attention must be given; not but that there will be a continuous advance in this latter, though less and less importance will attach to such advance. The aspirations of the proletaries after personal distinction will for the most part have their source in public life, depending on their right interference as indispensable auxiliaries and legitimate controllers of the two special powers. The preparatory festival must however make it clear that it is as proletaries that the discoverers are honoured, even when they seem to be of the Patriciate. It is indeed of real importance that when in the worship we give the regime

its ideal expression, we make administrative capacity the characteristic of the patricians, whilst we represent industrial discoveries as reserved for the plebeians, recognising at the same time the diminishing importance in the regime of such discoveries.

To complete the public commemoration of the Proletariate in its completest form, the second Sunday of the popular month must be set apart for the honour of the proletary women. In Positive society all women will become strictly proletaries, as voluntarily renouncing all inheritance; still the holy uniformity of their great fundamental function will leave room for the modifications due to position. Again, notwithstanding the identity of education, so adapted is the situation of the Proletariate to develop the leading attributes of women as to call for this special festival which, at a later period, may be prefaced by a commemoration of individual types.

(ii) The affective Proletariate.

On the third Sunday, we enter on the commemoration of the Proletariate in its less complete form, as we then honour the dutiful acceptance of their existence as plebeians by those members of the class in whom the industrial function suffers from tendencies to intellectual action which find but imperfect scope. It is true that the Priesthood even more than the Patriciate must be recruited mainly from the Proletariate, still its necessarily limited numbers will not allow, in the majority of cases, full satisfaction of the aspirations aroused by the education. Whilst kept in due subordination to practical duties, such aspirations give rise in the body of the people to an unfortunate but honourable class, a class which, over and above the honour paid to it collectively, may admit of personal distinctions, by contributing to perfect the social action of the Proletariate.

(iii) The contemplative Proletariate.

Carry out to the full the above case, and we are led to end the thirteenth month by honouring the life of the proletary when it takes an essentially passive character. This modification may be due either to the predominance in excess of intellectual aspirations, or to a situation adverse to the developement of the particular talent of the individual. On the one or the other ground equally, Mendicinity, even when it is the life of the individual, deserves a distinct festival in a worship which claims to idealise all actual forms of life, and which therefore may not neglect an inevitable result of the

(iv) The passive Proletariate.

Mendicinity.

sum of imperfections to which Humanity is liable. In the Middle Ages, Mendicity received its due tribute of honour, for the Priesthood, in its wisdom, knew how to ratify the instinctive verdict of mankind; *à fortiori* must it receive it in Sociolatriy, as a more sympathetic and more truly synthetical system. The anarchical repugnance to accept this conclusion shown by metaphysical empiricism, is but an evidence of an erroneous estimate of the social function of the Proletariate. Separate the function of the citizen from that of the artisan, and we shall at once feel that, in spite of their coexistence as a rule, the first may deserve honour when the second is entirely in abeyance. Nay, we may consider this festival as already initiated by the admirable idealisation which is the salient feature in one of the numerous masterpieces of the greatest poetical genius of this exceptional century.

Walter
Scott.

The Thurs-
day before,
St. Francis
of Assisi.

Nor are we limited to this anticipation of a poet's instinct, the more conclusive, it must be allowed, as originating in a milieu of industrial egoism and Protestantism, for the past offers us a direct and collective type of Mendicity in the remarkable institution of the Mendicant orders. The admirable founder of that institution must have a special glorification, on the Thursday before the abstract commemoration of the passive element of the Proletariate—the complementary element of which he will ever be the patron Saint, as the characteristic representative, under the form adapted to the thirteenth century, of its social action. From the historical point of view, this festival gives us indirectly an opportunity of honouring as it deserves—and it is the only one which throughout was honourable—the effort to arrest the irrevocable decay of Catholicism, an effort however destined, such were the conditions, to failure.

Festival of
All the Dead.

The Positivist year ends with consecrating its complementary day to all the dead, the rulers of the living with an indispensable and inevitable sway. This concluding festival recalls the similar institution of Catholicism, and in doing so evidences the superiority of the Positivist systematisation as alone able to make the commemoration completely universal in its comprehension. Connected by feeling with the ceremony of the eve, it forms a natural introduction to the festival beyond compare, which on the morrow must open the new year by the direct idealisation of the love of Humanity.

Finally, the system of Sociolatriy fills up its last void, by placing at the end of each bissextile year a festival in honour collectively of the women who have as individuals attained holiness. The affective sex, it is true, neither allows nor requires individual distinctions, save such as arise from its efficient discharge of its domestic duty, yet the tendency of the encyclopædic education is to increase the number of exceptions even in the sphere of action, still more in that of thought. There would be incompleteness, then, in the public worship of Humanity, did it not remind us, by a supplementary festival every four years, of her highest representatives, some of whom will attain an individual glorification.

Leap Year.
Festival of
Holy Women.

Such are the eighty-one solemn festivals, secondary or principal, which constitute the worship annually paid to the Great Being by its servants assembled in its temples. Well calculated to compensate the effort of abstraction required in the direct worship of Humanity, such public assemblies cannot but increase the moral effect of the worship by kindling the natural sympathies of the worshippers, each looking on the body of his fellow-worshippers as representing the supreme existence. The influence, however, of such collective worship would be but weak, appealing rather to our sense of beauty than to our affections, were there not the habit of solitary private prayer. Not to dwell on the fact that the personal worship is by its nature the basis of the two others, it alone is in the fullest sense free—a circumstance which must largely increase its natural power. Although the Priesthood may dissuade the Patriciate from compelling, in any degree, attendance on religious worship, it cannot prevent public opinion from blaming those who abstain from the social sacraments or the public festivals. We must not then, in the splendour of these last, lose the sense of the superior value of daily prayer, in which each believer becomes his own priest, and labours in freedom for his own moral improvement, through the veneration he pays in secret to the representatives of the Great Being within his family circle. Conversely, however, we must not lose sight of the fact, that it is only by regular participation in the collective services that we can secure our private worship against a danger to which it is exposed, of evoking tendencies to mysticism, and even selfishness, tendencies which would direct to the part the worship due to the whole.

The eighty-one Festivals. Their relation to the private Worship.

To facilitate the comprehension of the general arrangement of the public worship, I have given it in a summary form in the subjoined table (*Table A*), where the words in italics and in parentheses indicate the subordinate festivals. This series of solemnities honouring every aspect of human life, cannot but have a powerful attraction for minds capable of grasping the conception in its fullness. The test, however, of their having had a deep moral effect, will be if each leaves on those who have assisted at it a feeling of regret that a year must pass before it returns, rather than a desire for the next in order, from a craving for fresh artistic emotions.

Temples and
the artistic
adjuncts.

In completion of the exposition of Sociolatriy two subsidiary explanations must be placed here; their earlier introduction would have been an interruption. The first concerns the edifices devoted to the Positive worship; the second the artistic aids it requires.

The Temples
of Human-
ity.

In the 'General View,' the symbolical representation of Humanity by sculpture and by painting is adequately set forth. Its architectural expression it is not possible at present to determine with equal clearness, be it because of the slower growth of the architectural conceptions proper, or that they depend on a much larger cooperation for their execution. Positivism is so real, and the times are so ripe for it, that suitable temples will rise more quickly than did the churches of Catholicism, for Catholicism was in open opposition with the world it came to modify. Still at the outset, the worship of Humanity in the West must be carried on in the buildings consecrated to the public worship of her immediate predecessor. They will be more easily adapted to Sociolatriy than the temples of Polytheism could be to Monotheism. For the instruction and preaching introduced by Monotheism required a different form of building from that which sufficed for the earlier ceremonies, which were mainly in the open air. Positivism, then, need not introduce such sweeping changes in religious architecture as Catholicism was obliged to do; still its festivals, from their referring to the external world as well as to the world of man, will require alterations not to be specified at present.

Situation of
the Temples.

Yet one point I may even now determine, the regular position, viz., of the Positivist temple—nay, even the general features of its internal arrangements—both the one and the

other being implied in the nature and object of the worship of Humanity. As it is the dead who deserve to live that are the chief constituents of the Great Being, so its public worship must be performed in the midst of the tombs of the more eminent dead, each tomb surrounded by a consecrated grove, the scene of the homage paid by their family and their fellow-citizens. In the second place, the universal religion will adopt and extend one of the best inspirations of Islam; it will direct the long axis of the temple and the sacred wood towards the metropolis of the race, which, as the result of the whole past, is, for a long time, fixed at Paris. This touching convergence, a convergence which the Kebla of the Mussulman applies to all the attitudes of worship and to the body after death, will naturally be similarly extended in the only worship which admits of entire unanimity. Later in origin and more social in character than the faith of the West, the Eastern faith was naturally a better manifestation of the direct aspirations after true universality.

As for the internal arrangement of the temples of Positivism, two directions only can be given at present. In the first place, the choir, where stands the pulpit with the statue of Humanity over it, must be able to hold a seventh of the audience, in order that the interpreter of the Great Being may be surrounded by the eminent women who are its best representatives. Secondly, each of the seven side chapels will contain the bust of one of the thirteen principal organs of the education of the race, in the midst of the busts of his four greatest subordinates, the fourteenth chapel being reserved for the group of representative women.

Interior of
the Temples.

The foregoing exposition shows the boundless field opened by the Positive worship to art, not merely to the fundamental art, poetry, but to the subsidiary arts of sound and form. So extensive is the field, that at first sight it would seem to require a special class; the objection is, that such a class, however subordinate, would trench on the dignity of the Priesthood, and might compromise its unity. But if we emancipate ourselves from the peculiar habits of the West, we shall be led to acknowledge that all the needs of Sociolatriy may be met, without devoting any one to the exclusive and constant exercise of the faculties of expression; for when made paramount they are no less degrading to the individual than

Artistic
adjuncts.

pernicious to society. For the Priesthood may produce all the compositions, poetical, musical, or even plastic, required for the worship, by granting partial and temporary dispensations to the priests qualified for the particular work required, just as in the case of scientific labours. As for the social execution of the dramatic or musical portions of the public festivals, the completeness in point of art of the common education will so qualify every believer to take his part in it, that the concert of all the worshippers will ensure an effectual expression of the emotions beyond what was attainable in the Middle Ages. •

The chapter justifies the postponement of the doctrine.

This chapter, viewed as a whole, ratifies, as a natural result, the systematic anticipations of the introduction as to the definitive arrangement of the three constituent parts of Positive religion. We can now see that the preeminence of the worship over the doctrine is completely in conformity with the nature of Positivism, and secures its attainment of its objects. Throughout the exposition here ended, there has been no want felt of the analytical order which we must adopt in the next chapter, in examining the doctrinal basis of the system, the synthetic conception of which suffices in Sociolatriy.

But the worship must be supported by the doctrine and regime.

Were it not that Humanity is so situated, physically, as to require the constant exertion of intelligence and activity, the direct cultivation, in the worship, of our altruistic instincts would enable them to triumph over the egoistic, in spite of the greater inherent strength of the latter. But the worship which was enough, while the second stage of human existence had not as yet called into activity our intellectual and practical powers, needs in our maturer period the aid of the doctrine and regime, to protect our moral nature against the disturbing influences attendant on our advance in thought and action. Hence the necessity that now lies upon me to explain how, on the basis of the ideal presented by Sociolatriy, sociological thought and sociocratic action ultimately harmonise, in the service of our moral advance, these irremovable conditions, by stamping a collective character on an evolution which in its earliest stages was individual.

TABLE A.
CONSPECTUS OF SOCIOLOGY,
OR
SOCIAL WORSHIP.

**Love as the Principle; Order as the Basis;
Progress as the End.** | **Live for Others. (The Family, Country,
Humanity.)**

Embracing in a series of Eighty-one Annual Festivals the Worship of Humanity under all its aspects.

THE FUNDAMENTAL SOCIAL RELATIONS.	1st Month.— HUMANITY	New Year's Day { Synthetical Festival of the Great Being. Weekly Festivals of the Social Union..... { religious. historical. national. municipal.	
	2nd Month.— MARRIAGE	{ complete, chaste, unequal, subjective.	
	3rd Month.— The PATERNAL RELATION	{ complete { natural. artificial. incomplete { spiritual. temporal.	
	4th Month.— The FILIAL RELATION	Same subdivisions.	
	5th Month.— The FRATERNAL RELATION	Same subdivisions.	
PREPARATORY STATES.	6th Month.— THE RELATION OF MASTER AND SERVANT..	{ permanent..... { complete. incomplete. temporary..... Same subdivision.	
	7th Month.— FETICHISM	{ spontaneous { nomad (Festival of the Animals.) sedentary (Festival of Fire.) systematic..... { sacerdotal (Festival of the Sun.) military (Festival of Iron.) conservative..... (Festival of Castes.) intellectual (St. { esoteric (Homer, Eschylus, Phidias.) lams)..... { scientific and philo- (Thales, Pythagoras, Aristotle, sophic Hippocrates, Archimedes, Apollonius, Hipparchus.) social (Scipio, Cæsar, Trajan.) theocratic (Abraham, Moses, Solomon.) catholic (St. Paul.) (Charlemagne.) (Alfred.) (Hildebrand.) (Godfrey of Bouillon.) (St. Bernard.) (Mahomet.) (Dante.) (Descartes.) (Frederic II.)	
	8th Month.— POLYTHEISM		
	9th Month.— MONOTHEISM		
	10th Month.— WOMEN	{ mother. wife. daughter. sister.	
	11th Month.— The PRIESTHOOD Intellectual Providence.	{ incomplete (Festival of Art.) preparatory (Festival of Science.) definitive { secondary. principal (Festival of Old Men.) (Festival of the Knights.)	
	12th Month.— The PATRIOTATE Material Providence.	{ banking. commerce. manufactures. agriculture.	
	13th Month.— The PROLETARIATE.... General Providence.	{ active..... { affective. • contemplative. • passive (St. Francis of Assisi.)	
	NORMAL FUNCTIONS.	COMPLEMENTARY DAY..... Festival of ALL THE DEAD.	
		The additional Day in LEAP YEARS General Festival of HOLY WOMEN.	
Paris, Saturday, 7 Archimedes, 66 (1 April, 1854).			
AUGUSTE COMTE (10 Rue Monsieur-le-Prince.)			

CHAPTER III.

GENERAL VIEW OF THE INTELLECTUAL EXISTENCE OF MAN, RESTING
ON THE RELATIVE CONCEPTION OF THE ORDER OF THE WORLD; •

OR,

DEFINITIVE SYSTEMATISATION OF THE POSITIVE DOCTRINE.

The intellect
must be ex-
ercised
under the
impulse of
feeling.

To subordinate egoism to altruism—such is in its integrity the problem for man to solve, and its solution is seen on inspection to depend principally on the right use of the intelligence. His activity is in all cases neutral, does not distinguish, that is, between good and evil; has no aim beyond itself; and as such may be led to prefer the service of our social feelings as offering a wider field than the personal. The intellect has less energy, and would willingly limit itself to the efforts imposed on it by our personal wants; it shrinks from the greater exertion demanded by the service of society. Yet this social destination alone can satisfy its aspirations, by consecrating it as the minister of order, towards which its bent carries it. Such consecration, however, is powerless to overcome the natural torpor of the intellect, unless feeling have previously drawn out the craving for unity. It is on this ground that the love of the beautiful must guide us in our search after the true, quite as much as in our attainment of the good. The ideal rests ever upon the real, but does not therefore require an analytical knowledge of the real; the synthetical conception is sufficient.

Disposition
with which
we enter on
the study of
the doctrine.

Such is normally the position of the intellect when approaching the study of the doctrine under the impulse derived from the worship. The regular developement of the emotional nature has cultivated the taste for, and the instinct of, order, by making us feel its power to confirm love by submission; submission alone being able to preserve love from the mutability consequent on the multiplicity of impressions. That this state of mind prevail,—this should be the result of the arrangement I have definitively adopted for the three parts of the Positive

religion. For it is a state which represents the still stronger tendency in the same direction which will be the natural outcome of the ordinary course of the common education, its scientific portion not beginning till after the previous training of the feelings, nay, even of the imagination, derived from the family life. The young disciple will have already received two of the social sacraments, and often gazed with admiration upon the public festivals; above all, however, by the habit of private prayer he will have attained the frame of mind requisite for the right reception of his abstract education. Thus taught by personal experience the importance of the order which he has prescribed for himself voluntarily, he is subsequently led by the same to respect, nay, even to love the laws which are beyond his control, be they the laws of external nature or of man's institution. Preserved from the impulses of selfishness by having his wants supplied by the providence of others, he is so placed as to be able directly to appreciate the value of the sympathetic instincts, and to feel deeply their natural connection with the habits of synthesis.

Thus in the normal state, the study of the dogmatic system will always be entered on in the state of heart and intellect most favourable to its producing its full results. The efforts now required to place the student at the true point of view intellectually will be then superfluous; he will have reached it in the natural course of things. The power of the brain may then be brought to bear at once on the study of the objective analysis, the object of which is to develope and consolidate the subjective synthesis which flows from the fundamental principle and is embodied in the worship. Without fear of any misdirection, the doctrine will always be studied with reference to its two objects: the perfecting the worship; the introducing the regime. It will be felt that the great aim of our intellectual existence is the establishment of a more and more complete unity, for the individual as for the society, and the means, the strengthening the sympathetic instincts, which are the source of unity, by the synthetical conceptions which are its basis.

To form a better idea of the true destination of the doctrine, we must begin by supposing a sudden interruption of the order of the world, so far at least as we can do so without absurdity. The hypothesis may take regular shape by availing ourselves

The Dogma to be studied in order to complete the Worship and prepare the Regime.

Hypothesis as to the order of the world. Suppose it to remain.

of the ordinary distinction of moral, intellectual, and physical laws, the conceptions of which come spontaneously and in succession, not simultaneously. So necessary are the moral laws to the action of the brain that we could not possibly conceive of it without them, from our not finding in it any fixed tendencies. The hypothesis of the suspension of the intellectual laws is easier, considering their tardy recognition and its imperfect amount as yet, even as regards the higher order of minds. Nevertheless, it is especially the physical laws that admit with ease of the hypothesis in question, for the subjective state and the imagination of the poet both frequently emancipate themselves from their yoke.

Even limited to the physical laws the hypothesis is contradictory.

Even within these limits, however, the fiction involves a contradiction, as soon as we recognise the dependence of the human order on that of the world without. For the most individual and most complex phenomena cannot be conceived of as under law if the most general and most simple are supposed exempt. But this very contradiction would suffice to show how intimate is the connection of order, even physical order, with man's whole existence. We must remember that the hypothesis suggested has no scientific purpose; it is simply offered as a logical artifice, with the view of showing more clearly that the doctrine is a necessary element in the constitution of the unity, the foundation of which is the worship. To serve this purpose, it is enough that, whatever their mutual interdependence, the different classes of laws be radically distinct; that they are so, is indicated by the long intervals which separate their several recognitions.

Various stages of the hypothesis.

The hypothesis may have its usefulness enhanced, by considering in succession the degrees of extension it admits, according as we imagine the order of things more or less completely suspended. Reduce it within the narrowest possible limits, confine the order, that is, to the moral laws exclusively, unity could never come into being, and still more, could not persist, if there were allowed even a low degree of energy to the personal instincts. For the unstable character attaching to our thoughts and positions would preclude the feelings from acquiring any consistency, so that we should swing to and fro indefinitely under the impulse of vague sympathies. Nor would our state be very different, if the laws of the intellect were supposed to complete the moral laws without the resumption

of its sway by the order of external nature. There would then be still an uncertainty in the world outside the brain sufficient to forbid man's attaining harmony; since in the designs suggested by the heart to the intellect there would be no steadiness from the impossibility of carrying them into execution; they would but increase our sense of impotence. Again, limit the suspension of law to the order of inorganic nature, so that the organic world, equally with man's world, were supposed subject to law; still there would be a deficiency of harmony, though the uncertainty would be lessened. The hypothesis in this last form is at once easier to grasp, and more conclusive than in its other two forms, and we may perfect it by the further supposition that our environment were such as to free us from the need of any continuous exertion; still even then we feel that unity would remain precarious at least, if not impossible.

Not to dwell longer on considerations of this nature, it is essential here to recognise that the intellect and the feelings must act in concert if we would establish and maintain a state of synthesis, although such state in the main has its source in the instincts of sympathy. Our purest affections could not ensure harmony were we not under compulsion to submit to an order independent of us, and independent even as regards the phenomena of our own being. But it is in the predominance of the heart over the intellect that lies the essential source of our unity, as it compels us to fulfil the intellectual conditions of that unity, and disposes us to love a necessity which makes us better.

The heart and intellect must act in concert for synthesis.

Thus the worship, by its cultivation of love, gives its sanction to the doctrine, without reference to the requirements of action as the indispensable condition of our unity, whether as individuals or societies. It is not solely to modify the order of the world that we are bound to know it; the chief reason why we study it is that we may submit to it properly, in accordance with the fundamental theory of unity summed up in the word religion, the construction of which points to the without as consolidating the within. The laws most open to modification are the laws which make us most feel that such modifications, far from setting us free, do but in reality bind us with stronger bonds, in such a way as to bring out at once, and strengthen our unity. In the normal state love is our guide to faith; we begin, therefore, by reverencing and

So the worship gives its sanction to the dogmatic system.

cherishing these bonds of our own institution, with their constant tendency to secure the victory of our higher instincts, and we soon learn to look with similar feelings on such necessities as are inevitable. The opposite course may become necessary in times of anarchy, but is less noble, and also harder; for submission then appears oppressive in its character, and, as such, we are inclined to restrict rather than enlarge its sphere.

The heart
rules, the
intellect
advises.

It is the heart, then, that must ever rule, though the intellect alone can indicate in the relations of things those which are available. But the sway of feeling can never be hostile to the intelligence; on the contrary, it gives it a sanction unattainable under the regime of pure abstraction. For as it bases unity on the subordination of egoism to altruism, the Positive religion sanctifies in the name of the Great Being the thoughts as well as the actions, which, even indirectly, are of a nature to support or develop the instincts of sympathy.

Discipline of
the intellect.

But its sanction is never without the accompaniment of a wholesome discipline, a discipline without which the mind would shake off its torpor only to follow its natural bent towards idle speculations. Its preference for them, on the plea of their greater dignity, is invariably traceable to its weakness, whether it be that it cannot continue its researches without losing sight of its true aim, or that it recoils from the more important questions as the harder. Such misdirection requires for its due control the combination of all the peculiar appliances of Positivism: the inseparable connection of the cultivation of science with the priestly office; the encyclopædic character of our ordinary speculations; unceasing watchfulness on the part of the public.

Precautions
always re-
quired
against the
encroach-
ments of the
intellect.

Such are the appropriate considerations which the prevailing disorder of our time compels me to recall in detail; my object being, that the study of the doctrine may be entered upon and pursued in a proper spirit, in spite of the weakness of our intellect, which leads it to lose sight of the end in the means. Such is our feebleness, that it will always necessitate constant precaution to prevent our intelligence from playing false to the Great Being, by devoting itself to the service of egoism rather than of altruism. There was no real danger in this tendency prior to the developement of our speculative

powers ; but it is the leading difficulty in the discipline of man, now that the intellect is being constantly appealed to, whether for action or for regulation. But if the difficulty is in a high sense peculiar to the Positive state, that state has more resources for meeting it, than were available under the conditions of the theological order, when the intelligence found it easy to gain a sanction for any deviation. The first foundation for the discipline of the intellect was laid when we placed Morals at the head of the encyclopædic hierarchy ; its final completeness is given it by placing the doctrine below the worship. When the intellect shall be thus consecrated to the service of the heart, we shall be justified in considering the problem of man's existence as solved, so far as it can be solved. In fact, no serious difficulty can then arise as to the proper direction of human activity ; errors in regard to it being principally due to the intellect's proving false to the feelings.

Yet however legitimate this discipline, however urgent the need of it at the present time, we must still admit that its introduction, to be opportune, must coincide in point of time with the state of things which makes it practicable. During the whole of the first period of human existence, when the object was to call into action all our powers, without any possibility of duly regulating them, the Positive spirit naturally exercised itself on all the theories for which it was competent, with a preference of the easier to the more important. Apart from the fact that it was beyond its power at that time to devote its energies to the construction of a Synthesis, the nature of which and the source of which were equally unknown, the premature concentration on such an object would have been an obstacle to its developing its powers of abstraction by exerting them on subjects of logical rather than scientific value. The genius of speculative research was unchecked save by the influence of the discipline of Theology, a discipline for repression rather than guidance, and from its disparate nature at all times unable to reach it in the required degree. Science, however, in its onward course, empirical and dispersive though it has been, has gradually, under the strengthening impulse of Humanity, grasped more important and more difficult questions. This of itself constitutes an advance towards an efficient discipline, one which it can the less reject, as itself furnishes the intellectual basis for it. The distinct existence of that basis

Such discipline hinder-
to inopportune.

dates from the time when the Positive spirit took definitive possession of its chief province by the foundation of Sociology, soon followed by the systematic construction of the Religion of Humanity.

The discipline of science in relation to the will.

To complete our conception of the share taken by the doctrinal system in the establishment of our normal unity, we must consider the discipline to which it is ultimately subjected as having for its chief object to regulate the wills, in order to direct the actions, of men. We then see that such an object requires the persistent consensus of the three parts of the true religion, its emotional, its intellectual, and its active elements. It requires, first of all, the development by the worship of our sympathetic instincts, as being the principal source of unity. But it implies, in the next place, the removal, by the doctrine, of our natural indecision in conduct, furnishing as the doctrine does, from without, reasons for action free from all alloy of caprice. The discipline suggested by love thus placed on a sure foundation of faith, the regime gives it completeness and strength by fostering a form of activity leading, as a necessary consequence, to the reaction of the whole on each part, a reaction which is at once a guidance and a check. Thus each in its due degree, feeling, reason, and opinion, take part in the spiritual government of man; the temporal government being its indispensable supplement and concerned solely with the outward act, with no direct power to modify the will. The acknowledgement that the temporal power is indispensably needed to secure society from the more signal mistakes, makes us feel how important it is that the intellect, which supplies the grounds of our determinations, should be in unceasing unison with the affections from which they spring.

Public opinion.

The first point, then, is for the heart to govern the intellect, in order that the two, by their agreement, may discipline public opinion, which issues in a moral force calculated to improve our individual impulses. Public opinion as the general complement of the spirituality of Positivism, presupposes above all suitable feelings, and these easily attain power with the poorest order of minds as regards the conduct of others. But the term ought of itself to remind us that it is a force which also requires community of thought, as a basis for our judgment in each case. Where there is not such community, from divergence or from misdirection, the best sentiments fail to guide aright our

conduct, as individuals or as societies. Now the agreement of opinions in question remains incomplete and precarious, so long as the preconceptions of the public spring from views which are essentially subjective, not being able as yet to rest on an objective conception of the whole order of things.

Viewed in this light, science acquires a sacredness hitherto unattainable, for it places on a firm footing, at one and the same time, true liberty and true morality. Both in strict relation with the habitual predominance of good impulses, they rest primarily upon love. But love would not be able to uphold them against the disturbing influences of daily life, were it not for the submission which it breathes into us as towards the order which is beyond our control, and the great laws of which alone can secure the victory of altruism by compressing egoism. The doctrinal system of Positivism may seem to chain us to external necessities, but in reality it procures us the only possible liberty, nay, the only liberty desirable, by its elimination of the element of caprice, ever favourable to the worse instincts. Theologism, especially monotheistic Theologism, gave ascendancy to a defective type by subjecting the real world to wills, which from their very nature could not but be capricious. Positivism must correct these anarchical habits; it must complete and systematise the instinctive suggestions of Fetichism in reference to an all-embracing Destiny, which, in its original conception absolute, ultimately takes a relative character. Subject to modifiable laws, we are in the truest sense free and moral beings, for their sway is always an aid towards the triumph of our higher propensities.

Hence a higher sacredness for science.

Even whilst limited to the understanding of the inorganic world, the original domain of science, it already exerts this holy influence, the first beginning of which we trace to the study of phenomena which are absolutely beyond our interference. They compel submission, and the submission they determine represses our self-regarding instincts, the natural source of all rebellion, and develops the altruistic instinct which of the three is the most in requisition and the least accessible. This moral influence—a spontaneous growth in Fetichism, especially astrolatrical Fetichism—is organised systematically in the Positive state, for we then are no longer obliged to attribute life to the heavenly bodies, that so we may respect an order of things which is the basis of the existence of the

Even the lower sciences have a moral reaction.

Great Being. But our resignation, in the earliest stage purely passive, before long is ennobled, by virtue of the activity suggested by the regularity of the order, regularity being always in proportion to simplicity. We transform our subjection, we make it the source of constant advance throughout the whole range of our life—physical, intellectual, and even moral—for we make it dependent on this unchangeable type, into accord with which in particular we bring the institution of time.

But this reaction most felt in the higher domains where the phenomena are most modifiable.

Still the theoretic, no less than the practical, power, must find its chief sphere in the phenomena most open to modifications, these being at once the most important and where the order of nature is most imperfect. Since our attainment of sufficient knowledge of the law of those phenomena to warrant rational prevision, we feel how greatly their study, in a positive spirit, may perfect human discipline, by its direct control over the internal sources of unity. It is in the continuous amelioration of the most imperfect, and yet the most important, order, that man's intelligence finds its best field both for theory and practice, such is the surpassing difficulty of the inquiries and so much greater room is there for modifications. But the consecration^o of the Positive spirit to this object necessarily implies its discipline, as diverting it from cultivating the inferior branches of study in a degree unwarranted by their legitimate destination. Thus it is, that reason, the immediate function of which is to judge everything but itself, finds an indirect control in the being devoted, above all, to consolidate and foster our emotional nature, without being thereby debarred from proceeding steadily in its advance towards the more complex phenomena. Thus we get rid of the main difficulty which attaches to the problem of Positive unity; founded upon the predominance of the heart, it seems to involve a pressure on the intellect, whilst unable to dispense with its cooperation. On the contrary, it is obvious that in the maturity of the Great Being the intellect of man enters into possession of the domain hitherto reserved for the supremacy of God, without neglecting such logical or scientific preparatory training as the cultivation of its new domain requires.

Relation of the dogma to the worship most insisted on here.

This indispensable introduction justifies us in considering the final systematisation of the Positive doctrine as having reached the point at which it is easy to preserve it from the

misleading analytical inquiries which were naturally thrown up by the preparatory period of scientific training. Such aberrations would tend to recur, unless the discipline of religion were continually turning us from them, as no partial synthesis, however vast its scale, is adequate or even possible; and therefore I was obliged to begin by insisting on the general connection between the doctrine and the two constituents of the religion between which it is definitively placed. True, it is in the next chapter that its relation to the regime must be more fully explained, but it has been sufficiently stated in the present for us never to lose sight of so clearly defined a destination, no further explanation of which in detail is needed. It being satisfactorily established that we must know the order we would modify, the main point was to estimate the importance of its study from another and less recognised point of view, when, that is, we solely aim at a wise acceptance. The twofold object must always assign its legitimate limits to our study of the several theories, necessarily a waste of time when carried farther than is required to guide our submission or our action. But both grounds naturally coincide so far as regards the highest sphere of our intellectual exertion, for it is the happy peculiarity of that sphere that in it the theory is inseparable from the application.

For the construction of the dogmatic system of Positivism it is required to determine, first, its general nature; secondly, its universal principles; lastly, its normal arrangement.

From the first point of view, it must be borne in mind that all real investigations can attain their true object, solely on the condition of being abstract in character; of being directed, that is, to the coordination of events independently of beings. To guide us in our obedience or in our intervention, the laws of nature must wear a form of complete generality, for such generality is the only possible basis of rational prevision, unattainable in concrete instances. We sway to and fro, in conduct so long as we have not established rules without exception; and this implies that for the study of beings we have substituted that of events. Phenomena to be manifested must be attached to matter; substances are cognisable only through their properties. The twofold connection does not prevent the process of abstraction from habitually distinguishing events from beings, looking now to the attributes many bodies

General
nature of
the doctrine.
Science
must be
abstract.

possess in common, now to the sum of the qualities which constitute any given existence. To an analysis of this kind may be traced the origin of science, when towards the close of the first period of childhood, the childhood of the individual or of the society, abstract contemplation begins to prevail over the concrete. Till then, reason had not power to aid the feelings; not offering the fixity of conception which is the source of previsions qualified to guide us in action or in submission, as they remove the indecision to which we are naturally liable in all our resolutions.

Relation of
theory and
practice.

This first fundamental step in advance is to be regarded as establishing the true distinction, and at the same time the true agreement, between theory and practice. The generality characteristic of theory, the speciality characteristic of practice, are owing to the fact that theory is abstract, practice concrete; for theory relates to events, action deals with beings. But the contrast between the two is no obstacle to their concert, as our action upon bodies aims solely at modifying their phenomena, the exclusive object of interest, whether for speculative or practical purposes. Abstract laws are, then, the common province of science and art—science applying them to the discipline of our intellect—art to the regulation of our activity. No serious inconvenience arises from ignorance of the concrete laws, for it does not prevent our giving both to our practical and intellectual life a sufficiently rational character, by the aid of such general indications as the simpler cases afford to guide us in the more complex. It might seem that action requires a fuller knowledge than does submission; but all the more essential conceptions, by the nature of the case, are available both for action and submission; as the basis of our conduct throughout is the invariability of the order of nature. In fact, such modifications as it admits solely affect the phenomena in degree, and therefore in effecting them we may find satisfactory guidance in an empirical estimate of the limits within which variation is allowable in each actual case, without requiring a concrete science which is beyond our reach.

Abstraction
sanctioned,
but with
precautions.

However dangerous then for the heart, and even for the intellect, abstraction must receive a definitive sanction as indispensable to the systematic service of Humanity. The absorption, of withering tendency, to which it invariably leads,—the chimerical judgments which are its frequent attendant—

both these results should but awaken us to the importance of restricting intellectual cultivation within its due limits, instead of looking upon it as the ideal of human perfection. It must be remembered also that its general disadvantages are remedied, as far as possible, by the encyclopædic character of Positive speculation, inseparably connected with the sacerdotal office. For abstraction decreases as independence and simplicity decrease, with this result, that theory is brought nearer to practice in proportion as our conceptions become objectively less general, subjectively more general. When once abstraction has reached the phase in which all the aspects of science converge, it necessarily ends, in order that there may be scope for the intellectual efforts which are in direct connection with practical objects. During its provisional government, it tends to engender overweening claims, as it gives free course to the deductive faculty. There was a danger in this, so long as the cultivation of science retained its partial character; but the danger disappears in the encyclopædic regime, for that represents the perfection of deduction as due principally to the absence of complexity in the lower departments, without any diminution in the growth of power when the field for its exercise rises in dignity.

Our normal state is as yet so poorly outlined, that abstraction in the Positive sense, however evident the need of it in natural philosophy, has not been organised except for mathematical speculations. Everywhere else, signs without images are as a rule our only aid in abstract meditation. The institution however of subjective media, mentioned in the first chapter of the present volume, has for its object, as it extends, to furnish us with appropriate means for representing all events whatsoever, apart from the beings in which they are seen. Although Theologism had its origin in abstract contemplation, the means it offered were throughout limited to the search after causes, with no power to directly promote the study of laws, not even if we make it include entities as well as Gods. Speculation in Positivism will not have its full aids until, by the institution of subjective milieus, images are brought into habitual combination with signs, so as to allow a permanent influence to the emotions.

•The abstract character of the doctrinal system of Positivism thus established, I proceed to examine the hierarchy which

Aids for abstraction in the subjective media.

The universal principles on

which the
doctrine
rests.

constitutes it, not however without first determining the universal principles which are the foundation of the whole.

First philo-
sophy.

These principles, dimly anticipated, or rather desired, by Bacon, under the vague name of *Philosophia Prima*, form three groups of general laws: one group objective and subjective in an equal degree; the second essentially subjective; the third mainly objective.

First group
of three
laws.

I form the first group by combining two scientific laws, naturally in close interdependence, with a logical law, which must precede, though apparently dependent on them. •

Law I.
The simplest
hypothesis.

This law consists, and there can be no more fundamental principle, in the injunction in all cases to form the simplest hypothesis consistent with the whole of the facts to be represented. This, the sole basis of true rationality,—may be considered indifferently as objective or subjective, since it immediately controls the subordination of the subjective to the objective, as it satisfies at once our inclination and our duty. But in our use of it we must never forget that it is applicable to our affections; this definitive addition to its hitherto exclusively intellectual form was insisted on in the last volume. Complication being as pernicious to the intellect and to the heart when due to the feelings, as when due to the thoughts, we must clear our hypothesis from ill-will, not less than from other superfluities. If the latter, or intellectual, simplification is a direct aid to the process of thought, the former or moral simplification assists it indirectly; improving as it does the unavoidable participation of moral impulses in intellectual action, such impulses exerting a more disturbing, although intenser influence, when it is egoism, and not altruism, that takes the lead. Nor is the importance of this emotional complement less as regards the external object of our intellectual exertion, any excess of subjectivity interfering with the clearness of our vision equally, whether it be traceable to the heart or to the intellect. Thus conceived, the precept systematises at once the constitution of the Positive logic and its development, for it introduces the combination of feelings with images and signs as an aid to, and even a regulation of, the intelligence. •

Law II.
Invariability
of laws.

The second principle, generally considered of superior importance to the first, is the invariability of all laws whatsoever which govern phenomena and consequently beings, though

it is only in regard to phenomena, or in the abstract order, that they are cognisable. This dogma is regarded as purely objective in character, yet it is no longer incumbent on me to demonstrate its subjectivity, really less disputable than its objectivity. For the latter character must always rest entirely on the inductions of experience, irresistible as the conclusion may be, nay has long been, at any rate as regards the lower sciences, whereas the subjectivity has a natural basis of theoretic grounds. We can demonstrate the necessity there is to establish laws as a guide to conduct, but experience alone teaches us that those laws represent the order of the world, to the degree in which we require to know it. The conviction that they do so is, at bottom, direct and instinctive only in reference to man's world; when we go lower it is solely as the result of a long investigation, called for chiefly by our practical wants. The degree of certainty we attain can never be entirely satisfactory; such as it is, however, it is indispensable for the creation of the doctrinal system of Positivism, which, without it, might gratify the mind, but be no reflection of the external world. We see, then, why the second principle of the normal Positive doctrine is as inferior to the first in dignity as in usefulness; method, from every point of view, having a higher value than doctrine, as the will is of higher value than the act.

The object of the third principle is to complete the second, all modifications whatsoever of the order of the world being by it limited to the greater or less intensity of the phenomena, with no alteration in their arrangement. It follows from the explanations of the preceding volume, that this law of modifiability must be kept distinct from that of invariability, for this last might be confined to maintaining invariability of nature in events, whilst admitting change in their order of succession. Inasmuch as, so conceived, the second principle would lose its main value, by the conception we give sufficient prominence to the independence as well as the utility of the third. In theory, the law reacts in the direction of reducing all real questions to questions of quantity; a transformation, however, only possible in any high degree in regard to the lower phenomena. In practice, the law leads to the subordination, on rational grounds, of action to contemplation, for it limits our intervention, even our subjective intervention, to a change of degree, leaving the order undisturbed.

Law III.
Modifi-
cability.

The distinctness of these laws renders an absolute synthesis impossible.

The second group.

Such is the first group of universal laws, as closely connected with the mental process as with the external objects of our speculations. Already, even at this early stage, it is evident that their number is sufficient to preclude all hope of constructing an absolute synthesis, either from an objective or subjective stand-point, since although convergent, they remain quite distinct. The second group, directly concerned with the intellect, subdivides into two groups; each comprising three laws, the one regarding the intelligence from the statical, the other from the dynamical point of view. The sphere of these six new laws would seem narrower than that of their three predecessors, but it is really as extensive. For by their regulation of the reason, in itself and in its exercise, they regulate implicitly the objects on which that reason is exercised, and which, but for it, would remain unknown.

(a) Statical subdivision.
Law 1 (IV.) subordination of the subjective to the objective.

Law 2 (V.) Relation of the image to the impression.

Law 3 (VI.)

In the statical group, the fundamental law, established by Aristotle, developed by Leibnitz, and completed by Kant, is the subordination of all subjective constructions to objective materials. This principle however is inadequate to express the state of reason, since it is equally applicable to insanity, whether transient or permanent. Hence for the right statical constitution of the understanding, we require a second law, a law which represents the internal images as less vivid and less distinct than the external impressions. Were it not for this comparative weakness, which ceases under mental alienation, the without never could regulate the within, though it might continue to afford it nourishment and even stimulation. Even this complementary law, however, would be insufficient to place our understanding in its normal condition, were all the co-existent images, as is the case in incipient madness, whilst weaker than the external impressions, equal in power among themselves. A third law, then, is required, and it lays down the necessity of one image predominating over all that are simultaneously evoked by the excitement of the brain. Thus complete, the statical theory of the understanding will never require any additional laws, since the within is no longer able to disturb the sway of the without.

(b) Dynamical subdivision.

As for the dynamical theory of the understanding, that has been satisfactorily laid down in the preceding volume by the establishment of the three fundamental laws of human evolution, as well individual as collective. The three preside, each in its

due place, over the contemporaneous movements of the intelligence, the activity, and the feeling of man. The first law consists in the succession of the three states, fictitious, abstract, and positive, through which every understanding passes in all its conceptions without exception, but with a velocity proportioned to the generality of the particular phenomena in question. The second is a recognition of an analogous progression in human activity, which in its first stage is Conquest, then Defence; lastly Industry. The third law shows that man's social nature follows the same course; that it finds satisfaction, first, in the Family, then in the State, lastly in the Race, in conformity with the peculiar nature of each of the three sympathetic instincts. These two last laws have no immediate connection with the intelligence, but are not the less indispensable to any clear conception of its movements. For they preside over the necessary and persistent relations which exist between our scientific conceptions and our practical operations on the one hand, our moral impulses on the other, the former being the object, the latter the source of the said conceptions.

Law 1 (VII.) of Intellectual progress.

Law 2 (VIII.) of Material progress.

Law 3 (IX.) of Moral progress.

In accordance with this threefold progression, the second group of universal laws is perfectly harmonious. Its first half, in fact, makes order consist in the establishment of unity, whilst its second reduces progress to the developement of the unity established. So becoming at one and the same time more synthetical, more synergical, and more sympathetic, human nature tends towards its systematic constitution, consequent on the growing ascendancy of altruism over egoism.

Harmony of the second group.

I must now complete the whole formed by the universal laws, by the consideration of the third group, where objectivity prevails. This group, as the last, is composed of six laws; as the last also, it subdivides into two equal series; adopting a distinction which accords with a difference in their nature, and which is most strongly marked in reference to their acceptance. For the first series, more objective in character, was originally limited to mathematical phenomena, without waiting for the systematic construction of Positivism, though they aided in its preparation, and derived from it exclusively their claim to real universality. The other series, on the contrary, has too large an admixture of subjectivity to gain acceptance, so long as Positivism had not yet embraced its

Third group, objective.

highest domain, although faint germs of its laws are naturally traceable during the period of preparation. The distinction is one which tends to disappear in the normal state. Nevertheless even then it will always retain a certain importance, from the analogy which cannot but exist between the initiation of the individual and the preparation of the race.

First sub-group, a generalisation of the laws of motion.

Law 1 (X.) of persistence.

Law 2 (XI.) of compatible action.

Law 3 (XII.) of mutual action.

Originally discovered by the geometricians, at a time when the scientific spirit had already lost its old philosophical character and had not yet acquired its new, the first series of objective laws has never hitherto been at all adequately understood. For it is the outcome of a systematic generalisation of the three laws which are thought to be applicable only to motion, in the common sense, as an attribute of matter, and the Positive conception of which is materially obscured by the metaphysical alloy due to academic anarchy. The first law, in harmony equally with the dogma of invariability and with our need of permanence, is this: every state, statical or dynamical, has an inherent tendency to continue as it is without change, resisting all disturbance from without. In the second law, motion becomes compatible with existence by virtue of the power resident in every system to maintain its constitution, whether in exercise or at rest, when its constituent parts are subject to simultaneous changes, on the condition that the changes affect all parts in a perfectly equal degree. Lastly, the third law governs all reciprocal influences, as it proclaims the necessity of the equivalence of reaction and action, if the degree of each is measured in accordance with the peculiar nature of each contact. It is not difficult to see that the special laws enunciated respectively by Kepler, Galileo, and Newton, or rather Huyghens, in order to form a basis for the theory of mechanics, are the scientific germs of these philosophical theorems, which are applicable to all phenomena without exception. But we also see that for their systematic expression, the first step to which was taken in the *Philosophie Positive*, it was indispensably necessary that the Positive spirit should have risen by successive stages to the complete generality which it requires for its mission.

Second sub-group.
Law 1 (XIII.)
Conversion of existence into motion.

The second series of objective laws connects with the first through the medium of a law which, as they were, is traceable to a mathematical germ, although the origin in its case is not so distinctly seen. It is the law by which in all cases we make

the theory of motion subordinate to the theory of existence, by looking upon all progress as the developement of the particular order in question, the conditions of such order, whatever they may be, regulating the changes which together make up the evolution. In the hands of the geometers, this law is limited to the reduction of questions of motion to questions of equilibrium; its generalisation was possible only in Positivism, when I traced it in social phenomena, in which it finds its chief destination. Still its origin in Mathematics deserves a lasting remembrance, as it allows us, over and above any historical considerations, to form a dogmatic connection with the last law of the first series, a connection indicated by the original confusion of the two. This relation, binding as it does more closely together the two halves of the third group, will be at all times kept in mind by the terms appropriated to the law under consideration, the objective character of which should thus stand out more fully.

On examining the next law, we come upon a close connection between this third group and its predecessor, as the second halves of either seem indistinguishable. For it is the fundamental law of Positive classification, the invariable principle of which is the increase or decrease of generality—equally, whether subjective or objective. Now this principle fuses with the law of the three states, and is indispensable as its complement when applied to the arrangement of our conceptions without taking account of the existences of which they are the conceptions. That the two were introduced simultaneously in the small work which forms the basis of all my subsequent writings—this fact alone would suffice to establish their connection, a connection familiar to Western thinkers, owing to the progress of Positivism. But so regarded, the penultimate law of the third group would substantially belong to the second group, whereas it not them, in our social objective character of phenomena, and even to applied, it subordinates nobleness to force, by showing that higher phenomena in every case depend on the coarser attributes, the sway of these last being recognised as inevitable but not allowed to become oppressive, the regularity of its action being accepted as a compensation for its inferiority in dignity.

Law 2
(XIV.) Classification.

Appendix to
Vol. IV.
part 3.

Law 3 (XV.)
of con-
tinuity; the
subordina-
tion of the
mean terms
to the ex-
tremes.

I complete the last group of universal laws by the law which represents the intermediate state as in all cases subordinate to the extremes which it brings into connection. I have so frequently applied this law in the volumes of this work, as to make it unnecessary for me to dwell on it here. The great Buffon seems to me to have had a glimpse of it, but I think that I am as fully warranted ultimately in claiming it for myself, as I am in claiming the great majority of the fourteen previous laws, all more or less conjectures of my various predecessors, yet all peculiar to my systematisation. The appearance of subjectivity attaching to this law, due especially to its finding its application in logic rather than in science, must not throw into the shade its objective character. For it proclaims the interdependence of the objects studied quite as forcibly as it does the connection of their studies.

Such are the
fifteen uni-
versal laws,
closely con-
nected, un-
changeable
in order, and
amply suffi-
cient for all
sound specu-
lation; the
'Prima
Philosophia'
of Bacon.

We have thus the ultimate basis of the dogmatic system of Positivism in the combination of fifteen laws of universal applicability, forming three natural groups: the first of three laws; the two others each of six, each also subdividing into two equal series. The various connections above indicated suffice to show the perfect interdependence of the whole so formed, although the number of such connections will be largely increased when we come to use it. Without insisting on this at present, I must call attention to the definitive nature of the arrangement of these fifteen laws, definitive by the nature of the case, no one of them being transposable without a violation of the rational order. As for their completeness as a whole, this follows from their giving us even now the means of satisfactorily regulating all healthy investigation. We may regard, then, as realised the noble aspiration of Bacon, the construction of a first, a prime philosophy, qualified to direct us in all our scientific meditations, nay even to aid us in the exercise of our practical reason.

The First
Philosophy
brought to
bear in the
formation of
the hierar-
chy of the
sciences.
Relation of
this hierar-
chy to the
synthetic
and analytic
dogmatic
systems.

The power of this philosophy as an instrument of systematic thought, will become palpable by the construction of the Positive hierarchy of phenomena and conceptions, on the basis of a relative view of the whole order of the world.

This hierarchy, the grand result of the course of objective investigation which prepared the way for the ultimate synthesis, has for its legitimate object the completion of the synthetic, the direction of the analytic, constitution of the Positive doctrine.

The synthetic form, the direct offspring of the fundamental theory of the Great Being, finds its complete ideal expression in the worship, and condenses all the various theories in Morals, for in Morals we study human nature for the government of human life. All our real speculations, the most abstract and the most simple not excepted, necessarily converge towards this human domain, for indirectly they help us to the knowledge of man under his lower aspects, on which the nobler are dependent. Strictly speaking, there is no phenomenon within our cognisance which is not in the truest sense human, and that not merely because it is man who takes cognisance of it, but also from the purely objective point of view, man summarising in himself all the laws of the world, as the ancients rightly felt. Yet each class of attributes must be studied with reference to the simplest cases; that is, in beings where it exists, if not isolated, at any rate freed from all complication with the higher attributes, which we eliminate provisionally by abstraction, the better to understand their foundations. Thus beginning with the simplest phenomena, we gradually increase the complication of our enquiries by the introduction in succession of higher properties, so training ourselves by a course of decreasing abstraction for the normal state of the scientific reason. *When we have reached it, we enter on the regime of complete synthesis, the regime in which man, viewed directly as indivisible by nature, is the constant object of all theories calculated to make him more fit for the service of the Great Being. Abstraction thus loses its scientific preeminence and retains solely its logical utility; we habitually concentrate all our efforts on the most important problems, recurring to the lower only to meet the wants, in particular respects, of the higher domain.

The synthetic constitution.

All phenomena human.

Our intellectual life, however, as here sketched, will always require a training of the individual analogous in kind to the initiation of the race; a training in which objective analysis provides us with the necessary basis of the subjective synthesis which, in the normal state, is to be paramount. In the second place, the direct cultivation of the higher domain will often call for new researches, logical or scientific, in the various inferior sciences. Now the training and the researches equally must be guided by the Positive hierarchy which is a consequence of the threefold system of universal laws above given. That hierarchy realises the confused wish of Bacon as to the construction of a

An individual preparation needed to attain this synthesis. The study of the higher sciences will call for new researches in the lower. In both cases the hierarchy useful.

scala intellectus, having for its object the enabling us to pass, in both directions, without a breach of continuity from any one class of researches to any other. This encyclopædic scale, instituted in my philosophy, and become an integral part, by constant use, of the present work, requires no further explanation here except as to its immediate connection with the subjective synthesis.

Scientific
appreciation
of the Posi-
tive scale.

The conception of the hierarchy of the sciences from this point of view implies, at the outset, the admission, that the systematic study of man is logically and scientifically subordinate to that of Humanity, the latter alone unveiling to us the real laws of the intelligence and activity. Paramount as the theory of our emotional nature, studied in itself, must ultimately be, without this preliminary step it would have no consistence. Morals thus objectively made dependent on Sociology, the next step is easy and similar; objectively Sociology becomes dependent on Biology, as our cerebral existence evidently rests on our purely bodily life. These two steps carry us on to the conception of Chemistry as the normal basis of Biology, since we allow that vitality depends on the general laws of the combination of matter. Chemistry again in its turn is objectively subordinate to Physics, by virtue of the influence which the universal properties of matter must always exercise on the specific qualities of the different substances. Similarly Physics become subordinate to Astronomy when we recognise the fact that the existence of our terrestrial environment is carried on in perpetual subjection to the conditions of our planet as one of the heavenly bodies. Lastly, Astronomy is subordinated to Mathematics by virtue of the evident dependence of the geometrical and mechanical phenomena of the heavens on the universal laws of number, extension, and motion.

Logical ap-
preciation of
Positive
Scale.

When it has reached this term, the subjective arrangement of the objective hierarchy is complete, by its termination in the one science which has no other below it, and which therefore can be the direct object of study on the basis of certain spontaneous inductions independent of all deduction. Although the encyclopædic series is here rested solely on the ground of scientific relations, yet, as at the outset, the ground so taken always coincides with its logical appreciation. For although the Positive method is necessarily uniform, nevertheless, it is only in the simplest branches of study that its deductive capacity

can find its proper developement. Its inductive properties must come into view subsequently, as in due and gradual course more complicated phenomena introduce observation in Astronomy, experiment in Physics and Chemistry, comparison in Biology, filiation in Sociology. When induction has thus complemented deduction, the final science brings the two into their normal and direct combination by its construction of the subjective method, properly speaking peculiar to Morals.

Such, under its two aspects, is the connection by virtue of which this supreme science organises, one after the other, all the Positive sciences, the culture of which henceforth will be controlled by the inseparable relations which exist between them and the science of man. Morals, as the synthetical terminus of the whole scientific construction, is as superior to its various preliminaries in rationality as it is in utility, since the phenomena which are its proper subject matter necessarily influence us in our examination of all the rest. At first, it is true, they must be kept out of view, but as our speculations are not in the fullest sense real till this temporary abstraction has ceased, we must not continue it longer than is necessary.

Supremacy
of Morals.

To appreciate at its just value the hierarchy above given, it is necessary to recognise its competence to guide us in the subdivision of each special science no less than in the coordination of the whole body of distinct sciences. The same principle of the interdependence and simplification of studies by virtue of the degree of generality in the phenomena, will give us in all cases our subdivisions of each of the seven fundamental sciences, provided that we attain sufficient precision in our classification. It follows, from the necessarily homogeneous character of these several subdivisions, that in combination they perfect our scientific scale, in relation to its most important attribute, by developing its continuity. In this way thought may habitually pass from the lowest mathematical speculations to the sublimest moral conceptions, or *vice versâ*, by a series of intermediate steps so easy as to require no effort to a well-trained mind. To whatever degree we specialise our enquiry, the unity of human science remains intact, the student never losing sight of the two or three consecutive subdivisions which connect each particular branch of science with the general hierarchy.

The hierar-
chy valuable
within the
sphere of
each special
science.

Again, the full appreciation of this Positive *scala intellectûs* as a logical and scientific institution, involves our looking on it

The concrete
hierarchy;
the hierar-

chy, that it,
applied to
Beings.

as equally adapted to represent the interdependence of beings or existences as that of phenomena and speculations. Under its concrete aspect, when viewed as a whole, it forms a series of states which rise in dignity in a direct ratio with their complication, each resting upon its predecessor. The result is the relative conception of the order of the world, an order necessarily distributed into seven categories, superimposed one on the other in such a way that each modifies that which precedes, and commands that which succeeds. This series of modifying and commanding influences issues in presenting man as the true condenser and spontaneous regulator of the social, vital, and inorganic milieu, in dependence on which he developes. But his personal action, as it has for its object the modification for the better of destiny by will, is efficient and noble only on this condition: that it be freely devoted to the constant service of the Great Being, the being of which the individual is the indivisible element and the necessary product. When his activity thus takes its normal direction, man is continually improving the order to which he is subject, by strengthening the reaction of its vital influences on its material, availing himself, for this purpose, of the ever-growing cooperation of all his voluntary associates. We thus see how our relative conception of the economy of the world, by using, both in theory and practice, the Positive hierarchy, is able, in an equal degree, to give systematic expression to the dignity of the individual, and his devotion to society.

Here again
the hierar-
chical prin-
ciple valua-
ble for sub-
division.

To this concrete application of the encyclopædic scale I must extend the observation above explained when treating of the abstract hierarchy, the object of which was to introduce into it greater continuity. The classification on the principle of increase of complication and decrease of generality, is as applicable in the subdivision of the hierarchy of beings as in that of attributes, so as to connect, by sufficiently easy steps, all the intermediate terms whatsoever. Its power in this respect is most sensible in regard to the higher beings, in Biology, that is, first, and then in Sociology, whilst it is in the lower domain that the abstract subdivision finds its most appropriate sphere. Thus we form, in as full développement as our enquiries can possibly require, a general scale of co-existent beings, and as the completion of such scale, a series of states offered to our view by the only being capable of continuous advance. So

constituted, the Positive hierarchy becomes the condensation of all real sciences, and the basis of all practical conceptions, as it brings the classification of the arts into coincidence with that of the sciences.

The conclusion here reached is the last step in our explanation of the construction of the doctrinal system, which from the synthetical point of view is now complete. Before, however, I enter on its analytical constitution, it is important to throw out into relief the threefold preamble just accomplished by affixing to it a name adapted to remind us of it as a whole. For this we may use the expression *First Philosophy*, limited by me above to the system of the fifteen universal laws, so giving definiteness to the vague design of Bacon, after making his aspiration a reality. Since this system of laws is but the intermediate and principal portion of the basic introduction to the definitive co-ordination of the Positive doctrine, the denomination which I originally reserved for it, being practically at liberty, may be applied to the whole introduction. All that is requisite is to treat it as inseparable from the institution of abstraction on which it rests as its basis, and from the hierarchical construction for which it gives the basis. Thus viewed, the First Philosophy forms a distinct and definite whole, a whole which gives systematic form to the subjective synthesis idealised in the worship, and which must be our guide in our objective analysis, to enable us to develop the Positive doctrine on a scale answering to its destination. I shall bring out the importance of this First Philosophy in the following chapter, by making it the object of a special study at the outset of our encyclopædic education, where it is our only direct safeguard against degeneration into scholastic puerilities.

There is and can be but one synthetical arrangement of the Positive dogma, for such arrangement treats the several sciences as branches of moral science, without giving beforehand any specific division, but leaving the way open for all suitable subdivisions. The contrary is true of the analytical arrangement; it admits of several distinct forms, according to the degree of connection we introduce between the different terms of the encyclopædic hierarchy. From the objective point of view, it is not possible to fix the number of the sciences, since the generalisation of thought is as appropriate for theory, as the specialisation of action is requisite for practice. In reality the name attached

The First
Philosophy
in its full
sense.

Analytical
form of the
dogma ad-
mits of
several ar-
rangements.

to each science merely indicates the group of investigations generally acknowledged to have a certain unity, and this may vary at different times and for different minds. From the subjective point of view, the division of the sciences is equally fluctuating, as when so considered it marks the several resting places of the intelligence in its encyclopædic course, and that course may always be continuous whatever the number of its stages.

Seven
analytical
arrange-
ments.

Be this as it may, the seven sciences which we established as the result of the preparatory evolution of the race, will not need, as a rule, subdivision, when the human mind has attained greater power of synthesis, allowing always for educational requirements. At the same time the number is one that will always lend itself to the establishment of a satisfactory continuity. But their hierarchical combination, with the object of bringing objective analysis into closer relations with subjective synthesis,—this admits of many different forms. Of all the forms possible in the abstract, I select for present treatment those only which have a real utility both for theory and practice. The selection gives the seven analytical arrangements of the Positive sciences, which I proceed to explain, one after the other, in the order in which they are derived from the synthetical arrangement above examined.

Two Bi-
nary.

(a) Dogma-
tic, Cosmo-
logy, Socio-
logy.
(b) Histori-
cal.
Natu-) Phi-
ral,) loso-
Moral) phy.

One and the same subdivision of the synthetical arrangement gives two binary arrangements, the one more objective and dogmatical, the other more subjective and historical. The first sanctions the most marked distinction admissible throughout the whole range of real investigations, the distinction, that is, between the domain of the inorganic world and the system of the organic, in other words between the study of the earth and the study of man, Cosmology and Sociology. In the second we break up the one great whole by separating the external or physical order from the human or moral order; hence the division of the general term philosophy into natural and moral. Thus the two binary arrangements of the doctrinal system of Positivism differ only as to Biology, Biology standing in the one case as the introduction to Sociology, in the other as the complement of Cosmology. This last conception best represents the natural course of scientific education, the other is the most appropriate for our ultimate studies, as manifesting the impracticability of an objective synthesis. If we look to practical

results, the two modes have distinct yet equivalent merits. We find that the historical arrangement fixes attention especially on the highest kind of progress, by marking off into a separate class the most modifiable phenomena, those in which invariability was but of late recognition. The dogmatical arrangement on the other hand expresses the systematisation of the activity of the Great Being, which consists in bringing all vital power whatever to bear on the modification of the world of pure matter.

• This last dualism would seem as valuable as the other, yet it is the other, as more easily divisible, to which we have recourse for our ternary arrangements, from which we likewise draw the succeeding ones. Subdivide the external order or the human order, and the result is two ternary arrangements, each endowed with important properties. The first best gratifies the craving for continuity, as viewing the order of the world in reference to the normal series—material, vital, and human. The second is more favourable to the dignity of our studies and practical exertions; in it the Positive hierarchy is formed by the subordination of physical to intellectual and both to moral laws. This last mode represents the theory of the brain and the economy of Sociocracy, whereas the other is the systematic expression of the abstract evolution and the concrete series of existences.

Two Ternary.

- a { 1. Material order.
2. Vital order.
3. Human order.
- b { 1. Physical laws.
2. Intellectual laws.
3. Moral laws.

As the two are of equal importance, it will be often advisable to combine them, and form a quaternary arrangement by a subdivision of the human order or of the physical laws. This mode was adopted in the second volume, and makes Positive philosophy consist in the normal hierarchy of Cosmology, Biology, Sociology, and Morals. It enables us to state clearly the main series of the introductory sciences, whilst not concealing the science which is their ulterior object.

Two Quaternary.

- a { 1. Cosmology.
2. Biology.
3. Sociology.
4. Morals.

A second quaternary arrangement may be formed by the combination of each term of the encyclopædic scale with its successor, so that we rise to Morals by a progression formed of three couples, inferior, middle, and superior. This mode was introduced in my *discourse upon the Positive spirit*, and represents the closest degree of connection which exists between the several branches of science, since each of the preliminary sciences is more nearly connected with the one that precedes it than with the one that follows it, as is shown by the order of their genesis.

b { The three couples with Morals as their crown.

Prefixed to *Astronomie Populaire*.

One Quinary.

1. Mathematics.
2. Physics.
3. Biology.
4. Sociology.
5. Morals.

Only one quinary arrangement is admissible, drawn from the first quaternary arrangement by breaking up its first term, on the basis of the distinction between Mathematics and Physics as a whole. Although this mode, which is at once historical and dogmatical, is less convenient for our ultimate investigations than for systematic education, it has this advantage, that it begins the encyclopædic series with that branch of study which is directly accessible. At this point, however, our objective analysis immediately tends to full completeness; to return, that is, by virtue of the twofold subdivision of physics to the primary arrangement of the scale, the only one admitting of satisfactory continuity.

Such, amid the possible analytical arrangements, are the seven by which we bridge over the space between the complete developement of the encyclopædic series, and the systematic unity which it is the object of that series to promote or to prepare. Apply them and compare them, and we shall feel more fully the value of the subjective synthesis, which alone combines in itself all the several excellences of the various stages of the objective analysis. The comparison will at the same time evidence the main advantages of the Positive scale, which, in a more or less developed form, suffices for all our intellectual wants.

Rest of the chapter less general, elaborating the hierarchy of the seven sciences.

To complete the systematisation of the doctrine, the remainder of the chapter must be devoted to less general considerations, to such an elaboration of the basic hierarchy of the sciences as may make it an adequate expression of the order of the world. Each of the seven sciences which it establishes, will always form a distinct branch of human study, an object for the speculative and practical reason of man, first during the period of education, and subsequently even during the whole course of the normal existence. The maintenance of the distinction between the sciences is the condition on which the objective analysis secures for the subjective synthesis its requisite clearness and coherence. But as these distinct sciences always tend to divert attention from the general unity, it is important to reduce them within the narrowest possible limits, according to the rule laid down in the first volume of this work. All I have to do here is to explain the agreement which necessarily exists between this law of restriction and all the grounds on which properly and persistently eliminate all idle speculations.

Our aims in studying the order of the world are a noble submission to, and a wise modification of, that order; we must therefore examine, singly and by itself, each of its independent phases, the phases which, following one another in regular succession, result in a relative, to the exclusion of any absolute, conception of the whole. Nor is such a separation indispensable merely to satisfy our unintermitting need of speculation and of action, it is the sole condition of our attaining an adequate conviction of the great primary principle of invariability. For that principle will never admit of deductive demonstration, inasmuch as by its nature it is itself the common basis of all Positive deductions. It will always rest on convictions of an essentially inductive character, convictions therefore to be formed separately for each distinct class of irreducible phenomena. Allow its full power to philosophic analogy, and yet the whole course of our scientific initiation shows that human reason persists in not recognising the universal applicability of the Positive principle, so long as it has not in detail been applied to each and all of the natural categories. Scientific prejudices notwithstanding, it is possible, and that without inconsistency, to consider phenomena as generally and in large majority subject to immutable laws, whilst one exceptional class is left alone under the dominion of arbitrary wills. This is a state of mind which is not removed by virtue of the real connection which exists between the different laws, for such connection is traceable only when the several laws have been separately recognised; its removal can only be the result of a direct and special extension of the Positive principle to each distinct province of the domain of science.

It is concrete knowledge alone that admits of a really deductive demonstration of the principle of invariability, nay, without deduction we were here powerless to conceive it as applicable, for we shall never know the greater part of the laws proper to complex events. But as these depend of necessity upon the simple phenomena, we are warranted in looking on them as being, equally with those simple phenomena, subject to the Positive principle, although the difficulty of the inductions and deductions is so great, that we cannot in regard to them carry it out in detail. From this point of view the word *chance* no longer stands for the empire of caprice; it comes to be simply the general designation for the laws which we do not

Each essential step in the universal order must be separately studied. Invariability of laws an inductive principle.

How invariability is made completely general.

Chance and

Destiny.

know,—*destiny* being the term which sums up the laws we do know. The distinction is one which requires appropriate names, since our ignorance of relations is equivalent to their non-existence, as equally in either case we can form no prevision with a view to action. Still, philosophically considered, this mental attitude, though never to cease, is no obstacle to the complete generalisation of the Positive principle when once verified in detail in all the separate classes of irreducible phenomena.

However necessary, the study of the seven sciences has its dangers.

These dangers, how averted.

(1) During the period of Education.

(2) During active life.

Nothing, then, can ever supersede the necessity for the individual to acquire successively, as the race has acquired, the knowledge of each of the seven phases which meet him in the relative conception of the order of the world. It is only by the aid of this series that the fundamental invariability can attain the degree of coherence and precision required to give it its full value for the intelligence, its full influence on the moral nature. But the course is one which risks the narrowing of the intellect, and the withering of the heart, as it diverts us from our true object, synthesis, by concentrating our powers on analysis. The risk is the greater as the larger portion of the noviciate of seven years is taken up by natural philosophy, the two last years only being devoted to the human order. The normal state however offers on this head satisfactory safeguards, safeguards both of instinct and of reason, as well during the period of education as throughout our whole subsequent life.

Our abstract training does not begin till after the development of the affections under the mother's watchful eye and with an admixture of esthetic culture. The first step in it is the study, above explained, of the First Philosophy, with its systematic preference and inculcation of the spirit of synthesis and of a social purpose. Throughout the course of scientific education, the influence of the worship, public and private, tends to prevent or to remedy deterioration from excess of intellectual culture. This threefold guarantee ought to suffice for the period of education in the strict sense; as the natural dominion of feeling is not as yet disturbed by the cares of life. With regard to adult life the remedy, even with the theoretic class, lies in the persistent recognition of a paramount social purpose. Absorption in science will be looked upon as exclusively confined to the childhood of the individual, or the race, and held unworthy of human reason in its maturity. The

care of the priesthood and the vigilance of the public will save those, in whom inferiority of intellect is combined with poverty of feeling, from an aberration inconceivable in superior natures.

Without this system of safeguards, it were impossible for the servants of the Great Being to pass with success through the full scientific preparation requisite for the Positive state. Throughout the initiation of the race, man found in his absolute beliefs a natural means of meeting his permanent need of some independent and superior power to which his existence is subordinated. But the new Synthesis, a relative, not absolute synthesis, can meet this want only by implanting a deep sense of the order of the world, the comprehension of which is, if traced to its root, based on experience, and only rises into unassailable conviction after a halt of sufficient length before each distinct group of phenomena to be comprehended. In fact, the fundamental dogma of Humanity even when set forth at large in the worship can give full expression only to moral laws; is inadequate to present intellectual, and *à fortiori*, physical, laws. It follows that these two become the principal object of the abstract scientific initiation, which will lead us, step by step, to conceive of the Great Being as the indispensable condensation of the order in which it holds the highest place.

Intellectual
and Physical
laws the
chief object
of our ab-
stract initia-
tion.

But, however necessary the preparation may be; notwithstanding the precautions calculated to guard us against its abuse; such is the weakness of our intelligence that we shall ever be liable to neglect the end in our attention to the means, from our inability to keep the combination of the two sufficiently in mind. The danger is the more urgent, that abstract thought, though after a certain training easier than concrete, is less in unison with our nature and exacts greater efforts, whilst demanding more complete isolation. Therefore it is that it is absolutely necessary to restrict, within the narrowest possible bounds, the natural prevalence of scientific concentration during the age of preparation, and later, to limit analytical work to the episodic efforts required to meet the wants of synthesis. Far from any exceptional indulgence to the priesthood on this point, it is for the priesthood especially, as alone unremittingly concentrated on the sum of human wants, to assert for all, and for its own members before all, the paramount importance

Study of
each science
limited by
the require-
ments of the
next above
it, in order
to avoid ex-
cess of devo-
tion to
science.

of religious discipline. It attains this end by limiting the separate and special cultivation of each preliminary science, not excepting Sociology, to what is required for the systematic treatment of the succeeding science, in order to rise or to return, as soon as possible, to the ultimate science—to Morals.

Such study
sufficient for
human life.
Incidental
researches
allowed for.

In accordance with this rule, the relative conception of the order of the world is drawn out, step by step, as fully as its true destination enjoins. For, granting each category so studied as to enable us to enter on the rational study of the next, that portion of the economy of nature with which it deals, is, by virtue of this result, sufficiently known. In this series of preparations, our sole aim should be, so to grasp the whole of the destinies which rule us, as to be able to appreciate the connection, both general and special, of our existence with the system of the world which it is their commission from the Great Being constantly to amend. Now, the condition here stated is met, when the dogma of Humanity, which feeling and the worship present to us at first as isolated, becomes the rational condensation of the whole economy of nature, as the result of our gradual ascent from the lowest phenomena towards the noblest. If carried further, the cultivation of the intellect inevitably becomes a mere idle amusement, and is exposed to indefinite divergence, giving room for an insurrection of objective analysis against the subjective synthesis which it ought to promote. But the state of pure speculation is blameable only when it becomes persistent, as it is under the dispersive regime of the Western transition. Religious discipline will always sanction the incidental enquiries called for in particular cases by the ever present demands of universal advance, moral, intellectual, or physical.

Tendency
hitherto to
accept such
imitation.

In introducing this system of intellectual cultivation, Positive religion is really only giving regular expression to the tendencies which the reason of man always instinctively obeyed, when as yet the education of its powers was incomplete. Whilst the lower sciences were being elaborated, the more eminent men of science always felt that, normally, the moral domain was supreme, though its systematic study was as yet premature. From a dim but strong instinct, the speculations most remote from man were pursued as a preparation for the doctrines and the methods adapted to the highest branch of knowledge, the study of which led often to admirable unsuccessful attempts.

This accounts for the non-discovery of the more important conceptions, even in the lowest pair of sciences, prior to the time when the wants of society demanded their definitive elaboration, a point I distinctly proved in the preceding volume with regard to the earth's motion. So also we explain the continuous decrease in the length of the several encyclopædic phases, in proportion as they approach their terminus, man; and this notwithstanding that, at that point, the domain of speculation becomes larger and more difficult. Thus the limitation of each phase to what is required for the introduction of its successor, is as thoroughly in conformity with experience as with reason acting on the inspiration of feeling. The temporary prevalence of academic divergences was due solely to our modern anarchy, committing as it did the cultivation of the lower sciences to men incompetent to work out the higher subjects.

Thus, the discipline of science which Positivism establishes, is simply the systematisation of the instinct which guided all true thinkers more and more during the thirty centuries of the Western transition. But such is the difficulty attendant on this systematisation, that it seems at first sight to be a circle without issue. For the rule which limits the proper culture of each science to the degree required for the rational study of the next in succession, must wait for its full efficacy till the completion of the encyclopædic course, as then only is it possible to construct the ultimate science, the science from which all discipline must emanate. Now, on the other hand, this last and decisive step is beyond the competence of minds swayed by the habits of divergence instilled by the special cultivation of the preliminary sciences. The only possible escape from these conflicting difficulties was the reaction in favour of synthesis, which sprang from the social convulsion in which Positivism originated. It was but natural then, that the new philosophy and the religion of Humanity should take their rise in France, as the central seat, by virtue of the whole of the past, of the ultimate crisis. From their not feeling this connection, most of those who at the present day recognise the intellectual benefits of Positivism, are guilty of grave inconsistency in blaming me for making it inseparable from its social mission, to which alone its advent is attributable.

The relation in which the sciences thus normally stand to one another is the indispensable condition of their being

Positivism
systematises
this instinct.
Difficulty of
the task. >

Constant
tendency to
specialism.

tion both
among
theoricians
and practi-
cians.

brought under discipline, nor will it ever cease to corroborate and extend that discipline. The reasonableness of the rule is indisputable; yet as mediocrity of intellect will always be the prevailing type in the theoretical class, there will ever be an instinctive leaning to the specialisation of science, in order to avoid the efforts imposed by synthetical meditation. The danger of this tendency is the greater from its being in unison with the habits universally formed by practical life. In assuming the industrial form, action loses the synthetical character which it had in the military period. Industrial life confines our conceptions of a whole to operations on a very limited scale; any really general views are the exclusive appurtenance of the priesthood; a circumstance, however, not without its advantages, as it offers the best security for the normal separation of the two powers. But the reception, by all without exception, of the encyclopædic education,—this will act as a counterbalance to industrial specialisation, and check the divergent tendencies of commonplace theoricians. All comprehensiveness in thought is, as generosity of feelings, a pleasure even to those who are aware that it is beyond them.

Synthetic
discipline
may be
made to pre-
vail by in-
voking Hu-
manity.

It will always be possible then to secure the acceptance of discipline by synthesis as against the disposition to analysis, by appealing, in the name of the Great Being, to the moral and social reasons for its original institution. But, although in principle it seems solely a question of doctrine, all the constituents of the Positive state will combine to develop it and to strengthen it. The worship will lead us to it by its evocation of our sympathies; and the regime will give it a stronger hold as a result of the system of precautions to be explained in the following chapter.

The philoso-
phical treatise
neces-
sary to in-
augurate
this disci-
pline.

The inauguration of this discipline necessitates some encyclopædic efforts, efforts, be it remembered, of permanent utility for the education which is to be universal. They must consist in the production of types of the true intellectual state; in the construction, that is, for each distinct branch of real speculation, of a philosophical treatise, presenting its particular science reduced to its normal limits, and duly incorporated into the religion of Humanity. Vast and difficult as such a construction may appear, it may be condensed into seven volumes, the books in habitual use by the priesthood and the public.

Seven in
number.

My career is too far advanced for me to be able to execute

in all its completeness this capital elaboration of the doctrinal system of Positivism; I must limit myself to giving a clear idea of it. The two preceding volumes have done the work adequately, so far as regards the last of the preliminary sciences, for they are a systematic exposition of Sociology, on the basis laid in the *Philosophie*. Of the three works which are to follow the present, two are meant to be analogous constructions for the two extreme sciences of the Positive series, and will systematise, the first, Mathematics; the second, Morals. The renovation of the intermediate sciences, by a synthetical treatment, has been satisfactorily explained in the first volume of this work, more particularly as regards Biology. Enough then if I now give a sketch of the *aperçus* or the summaries, corresponding to this systematic comprehension of the whole range of the intellect, adopting the encyclopædic order.

In Cosmology—more than elsewhere—it is important to inaugurate the subjective synthesis, as it is in Cosmology that objective analysis has most consistency, nay most dignity. When we enter on the study of vital phenomena, the indivisibility which is the normal characteristic of all real investigations, so forces itself upon the attention that, in spite of the existing anarchy, the most ordinary thinkers are found always open to systematic suggestions. For in Biology we are too near the terminus of speculation, man, to ignore or despise the true aim of Positive theories, each problem soon tending to evidence the irrationality of all conceptions from which this aim is eliminated. Whereas the domain of inorganic matter may be kept so perfectly distinct as a study, that sound speculations could be entered upon and accepted within its limits, whilst in all the other departments of human thought, the fictions of Theology maintained undisputed empire. Man is, it is true, by his constitution, subject to all the laws, without exception, of the material world, but the search after these laws has no immediate reference to man; it is always confined to some part or other of his environment. Over and above our need of the knowledge of this milieu, if success is to be attained in cosmological researches, it is requisite that we pursue them in regard to the simpler cases, even when the results have reference exclusively to the more complex. Further, the study of matter is favourable to dispersion, as dealing with an existence without unity, in a milieu which as a whole is beyond our grasp.

The Sociological treatise furnished by vols. II. and III.

Three new treatises announced, one on Mathematics, one on Morals, the third reserved.

Cosmology in especial requires the Subjective Synthesis, as the contrary tendency is so natural.

Futility of an objective synthesis sufficiently recognised to allow the human point of view to prevail.

This is the explanation of the great persistence of the analytical regime in the study of the material world, even with eminent thinkers who would never have endured it in other branches of enquiry. And the same result would recur in the study, if, from inattention on the part of the priesthood and the public, it were ever again to be exclusively pursued. Events in which man is directly a simple spectator, will always offer scope for the aberrations of theoreticians, alarmed at the continuity of exertion demanded by the subjection of all phenomena to the subjective method. The futility of an objective synthesis is however by this time so freely admitted, that true thinkers may accept, in Cosmology, the human point of view as paramount, as alone adapted to connect everything. The divergence natural to this department of science has gone so far, since the old discipline succumbed to the anarchy of scientific academies, that its need of coordination, nay even of elimination, becomes undeniable. Appealing nobly to moral and social considerations, the priesthood of Positivism will find it no difficult task to secure general respect and love for the only system capable of protecting the feeble powers of our intelligence from being wasted on puerile investigations. All that is required is that the rationality, as well as the dignity, of our abstract enquiries, be always vindicated, as a result of the definitive fusion of science in religion.

The attainment of this result is the great aim of the several works above mentioned, and the accomplishment of which is in the main reserved for my successors. Taking the most critical for myself, I hope soon to show to what an extent mathematical science, grown almost out of our grasp as a whole, gains in coherence and dignity, under the synthetical discipline instituted by the Positive religion. For the present, I must limit myself to some hints bearing on this typical result, whilst I explain the plan and the general spirit of my next treatise.

The Mathematical Synthesis, in one volume.

A single volume will suffice for this work; originally I thought it would require two, an abstract and a concrete volume, when I announced it in 1842 at the end of my Philosophy, and even when I repeated the promise in 1851 in the general preface of the present work. So decided a condensation will scarcely surprise those who can appreciate the synthetical determination indicated at the opening of the construction I am now ending—the determination to make the modern

calculus a component part of general geometry. By carrying out this project, the new volume, which I hope to publish before the end of 1856, will definitively systematise the philosophy of Mathematics. Between a religious introduction and a synthetical conclusion, seven chapters will put into their proper shape the calculus, arithmetical and algebraic; preliminary geometry; algebraic geometry; differential geometry; integral geometry; and general mechanics. The title of this forthcoming work, 'System of Positive Logic,' or 'Treatise of Mathematical Philosophy,' is in itself sufficient to express its chief object, which I proceed summarily to explain.

Published
in November,
1856.

Component
parts of the
work.

That object is a deduction from the natural combination of two aphorisms, both indisputable: the study of methods is inseparable from that of the doctrines; all important observations must be shown to hold in the simplest cases. Combine these two principles and the practical inference is that the general laws of the reasoning process are best traced in the abstract study of the form of existence common to all objects equally—the form in which existence is reduced to its simplest attributes, number, extension, motion. Although this systematic delimitation of the province of Mathematics is exclusively due to Positivism, yet the confusion indicated by its plural name has never concealed the fact, that the initial science alone is sufficiently simple in character to be suited to the exposition of these laws.

Object of
this Treatise
to exhibit
the general
laws of
reasoning.

Vol. 1,
p. 468.

It would seem, however, that by thus simplifying in the highest degree the speculations of Positive Mathematics, we preclude ourselves from finding in them well-marked types of all the processes of logic, several of which seem exclusively reserved for the higher studies. Alarm may be felt, lest the field of Mathematics be sufficient only as regards deduction and coordination, the two processes spontaneously developed in Mathematics, with a perfection thought to be unattainable elsewhere. Induction and generalisation—these, it would appear, can be satisfactorily appreciated only in the departments in which their several forms successively had their origin. But, in establishing the normal state, we must not rest in the blind repetition of the course followed during the preparatory period. Those on whom the Great Being devolves the task of transmitting to all its servants the general results of the intellectual developement of the race, must more and more emancipate themselves from the obligations which were binding during the

The higher
logical pro-
cesses
though not
derived from
Mathema-
tics may be
illustrated
by them.

original movement. There is coming forward an increasing difference between the dogmatic exposition and the historical creation, as human thought becomes more synthetical; as has long been traceable in mathematical teaching, notwithstanding its extreme imperfection. Whilst bound ever to respect the natural correspondence between the education of the individual and the evolution of the race, the intrinsic uniformity of the Positive method enables us to introduce its leading artifices in simpler sciences than those which originally gave them birth.

All the logical processes found in Mathematics.

In a special treatise, 'Analytical Geometry,' I have already shown that it is possible in Mathematics to teach that branch of inductive logic which seems most peculiar to biology, viz., the comparative method and the theory of taxonomy. Its two capital forms, the formation of natural groups, and even the institution of hierarchical series, are perfectly available for the normal classification of surfaces from the point of view of their generation. Although the simplicity of this particular case naturally disqualified it at first for spontaneously exhibiting these general processes, it constitutes a strong ground for choosing it as the proper place for their systematic investigation. The capabilities of Mathematics are, it is to be noticed, recognised as regards the less eminent forms of inductive logic, observation, and even experiment; which find large scope in Mathematics, in spite of the tendency of geometers to look on their science as purely deductive. Lastly, the most exalted processes, historical filiation and the subjective method, may fitly, by virtue of their evidently universal applicability, be introduced into the science of Mathematics, and the use of them there is decisive of the matter in hand.

The Logic of Signs and the Logic of Images, both well developed in Mathematics.

Admit these capacities, however, and yet they seem inadequate to show the logical completeness of Mathematics, if we confront them with the systematisation of Positive logic foreshadowed in the first volume of the present work. For, if not confining ourselves to the special processes of induction or deduction, we press beyond to the general means we use for contemplation and meditation, the most instinctive, the most ancient, and the most powerful of those means seems to have no place in Mathematics. Mathematical speculation is, more than any other, adapted to display the logical power of signs, and signs are the chief resource to which the prejudices of pedants would reduce us in reasoning. Simultaneously with signs, in the

very first beginnings of Mathematics, the use of images is spontaneously introduced. After a long separate existence—signs prevailing in the calculus, images in geometry—the final and irrevocable combination of these two resources was effected by Descartes in his capital reform of mathematical science. It is the only branch in which the combination has as yet been effected. But it is an inadequate expression of the real system of Positive logic, and must remain so till the influence of feeling give completeness to the fusion.

The Logic of Feeling requisite.

The revolution effected in Mathematics by the most important of my precursors, carries with it, then, for me, an obligation to base the regeneration of science on the power of affection as an intellectual instrument. The combination thus formed of signs, images, and feelings, must, if it is to be definitive, be worked out in regard to the simplest sphere of science, and the one farthest removed from man. In no other way can the pure reason be raised to the level of practical reason, for the latter has always been able without effort to avail itself of the above combination in its concrete researches. When this has been done, we shall have removed the great danger of abstraction, and be able to use freely its inherent powers for our generalisations and coordinations, without imperilling the natural alliance of synthesis and sympathy. Such a regeneration is destined to be at once the consequence and the condition of the definitive fusion of science in religion.

Comte's task to accomplish this.

Prior to the publication of my forthcoming work, it is impossible to judge a reform so opposed to the actual tendencies of scientific men, nay, even of the general public. But minds suitably disposed may even now forecast its practicability, guided by the convergence of the observations on this head which have found their place in the several volumes of the present work. In especial, it should be evidenced by a judicious combination between the ultimate fusion of Fetichism in Positivism and the moral reaction of mathematical studies.

The task accomplished in the 'Synthese Subjektive,' vol. i.

How accomplished.

Whatever dryness it is sought to retain in Mathematics—the necessary commencement of rational Positivity—no efforts can prevent a healthy mind from drawing from them deep and salutary emotions, as it submits to the influence on its affections of a demonstrated order. The efficacy of the irresistible convictions thus formed, their efficacy in raising and purifying our

(1) Moral reactions of mathematical studies.

inclinations, must come to be indisputable even without personal experience, for anyone who feels how great need we have to subject ourselves to external laws. Of the three species of natural laws, physical, intellectual, and moral, the second are so suited to the sphere of Mathematics that it is looked on as not able to admit others. This is an unwarrantable exaggeration, which disappears when we trace to Mathematics, on the one hand, the origin of physical laws, especially in mechanics, or even in geometry; and when, on the other hand, we see that the laws of the intellect are only unveiled in the speculations of Sociology. Still, after correcting this scientific prejudice, we cannot but be struck with the inherent aptitude of Mathematics to verify and give a true conception of intellectual order. If so, we feel that they have a corresponding aptitude to manifest, and even enlarge the sphere of moral laws, so natural is the connection of these last with intellectual laws. This, then, is the conception we should form of the true aim of mathematical education, as furnishing a complete basis for the systematisation of Positivism, a basis for the doctrine no less than for the method.

(2) Fusion of
Fetichism
and Posi-
tivism and
its results on
Mathema-
tics.

Human reason in its maturity will adopt Fetichity as the complement of Positivity, and by so doing will open the field of mathematical speculation to the familiar influence of the emotions, inadmissible at an earlier stage of its culture, as it was necessary to avoid the risk, the imminent risk, of pernicious illusions. The simple fact that Positivism radically precludes all objective error as to causes, allows us without scruple to enlarge the sphere of subjective vitality, which we instinctively attribute to all beings of whatever kind. Far from checking this propensity, Positivism sanctions and gives it a systematic direction, as a powerful aid not merely in language and art, but also in thought, especially in abstract thought, where it lends the image the support of feeling. Emancipated from the prejudices of science, the Positivist will be more fetichist than the Fetichist, for he will extend to phenomena the tendency which the Fetichist confined to bodies. Enough if the emotions we imagine have in all cases a real resting-place, it is indifferent whether it be abstract or concrete; the essential is that they be not attributed to fictitious beings. On this single condition, Positive reason is guaranteed against a relapse into Theology, and so is free to act on a tendency as favourable to

the intellect as it is to the heart. And the regime here indicated is peculiarly adapted to Mathematics, for it is in this department that the institution of subjective milieus has its origin, by availing ourselves of which we shall be able to advance abstraction, by endowing with life curves, and even equations.

Subjective
media.

We have a foreshadowing of this ultimate condition of the earliest and best cultivated of human speculations in the growing tendency of the most eminent mathematicians to combine the cultivation of Mathematics with their meditations on higher subjects. In defiance of modern anarchy, Descartes and Leibnitz made it their aim at one and the same time to advance Mathematics and to regenerate Philosophy. Their worthy successor, Lagrange, would have prolonged this noble spectacle, the scale of which was always being enlarged from Thales to Pascal, had he not confined his high systematic genius within the limits of Mathematics, in the midst of a demolition in which it was not for him to take part. And although such co-existence cannot take the place of a combination, it heralds it and prepares it, by showing us the highest minds, and such minds are always favourable to scientific unity, engaged in cultivating simultaneously the two extremes of the domain of speculation. It cannot be that this tendency should disappear at the very time appointed for its systematisation; so I have ground for the hope that my synthesis of Mathematics will be rejected only by the geometricians, or rather the algebraists, from their incapacity to rise above the existing academical regime.

This final
state of
Mathematics
heralded by
the practice
of the higher
minds who
have culti-
vated them
simulta-
neously with
the superior
sciences.

Unheeding their futile opposition, I will remove its only plausible ground by the rejection *in toto* of their troublesome claim to the intellectual presidency. Since their triumph over the physicians, they invoke, utterly without justification, in support of this noxious domination, the principle, in itself indisputable, of generality. Previous to the advent of Positivism there was no refuting the academical sophisms from the inability to distinguish the two forms, objective and subjective, which the rule may wear, and which make it issue in opposite modes of discipline. But since the second volume of this work, this capital distinction has been too fully and clearly stated for me to dread any involuntary mistakes on that point. The properties common to many beings do not, by virtue of their

The princi-
ple of sub-
jective gene-
rality will
annul their
opposition.

being common, present difficulties in point of abstraction ; on the contrary, the study of them is made easier by this community, as it is an evidence of their simplicity. It is only when abstraction has to deal with very complicated notions, as in the higher sciences, that by the nature of the case it increases the difficulty and the merit of our inductions, and still more of our deductions, though the objects which form their sphere be fewer in number. So, it is generality in the subjective sense that justly claims the intellectual presidency, for it is competent to raise in Morals, in Sociology, and even in Biology, systematic constructions, in utility, in difficulty, and even in perfection, surpassing those of Mathematics.

The simplicity of Mathematics adapts them for the systematisation of Positive Logic.

But the incorporation of science with religion, by ensuring the prevalence of encyclopædic culture, puts an end once for all to discussions which depended for their importance on the regime of specialism. It is exclusively by virtue of their greater simplicity that the domain of Mathematics offers the best field for the developement of Positive logic in its final systematic form. When cultivated in this spirit, there can be no revival of the unreasonable claim to precedence on the part of a science which, by its very nature, is confined to the most elementary subjects of human contemplation.

In their true place they will gain in dignity, as the source of improvement in the art of thinking.

When restricted to its true object, a logical rather than a scientific one, this fundamental branch of science acquires a dignity which it could not have whilst vainly claiming supremacy. Its capacity for systematising true logic will be shown more fully by our drawing from it a general improvement of the art of thinking. This conclusive result of the treatise under consideration will be explained in detail in its synthetic conclusion ; for the present I only anticipate so far as to give an idea of the nature of the progress contemplated.

Syn. Subj.
p. 755.

A species of universal Algebra.

It consists in the creation of a species of universal Algebra, calculated to facilitate thought, whatever be the subject on which thought is exercised, in as great a degree as ordinary algebra facilitates our meditations upon quantity. Without here explaining this new algorithm, I simply announce that it will condense alphabetic writing, as its predecessor condensed hieroglyphical writing. So that the writing of Sociocracy will thus receive an improvement, the equivalent to that which the Theocracy introduced in its writing. By such a creation alone will systematic Positivity be able to offer, as it comes to

embrace all departments of thought, resources no less perfect than when confined to the simplest speculations. Then, and then only, will human language be constituted in its normal plenitude, for then only will the signs which are the best medium for communication have become the best medium for mental labour.

Human language completed.

In this way, the logic of Mathematics, made synthetical by the introduction of feeling, will in its turn react upon the general advance of abstract reason. From the scientific point of view, the definitive systematisation of the first step in the abstract encyclopædia, carries with it results of equal importance, as it gives us an elementary general conception of the whole order of things, moral, intellectual, and physical. This triple system of laws will consequently find recognition, not merely as regards the study of motion, but also in that of extension, and even of number, on the ground of the necessary relation between the object and the subject, a relation more appreciable in the more simple abstraction. The earliest phase of our initiation in science will thus elicit from the doctrine a moral influence of a kind to complete that derived from the worship, more particularly from the personal worship. In fact the worship develops the fundamental instinct of veneration, by its accustoming us to be fond of order: of order imposed by will; of order of our own institution; of order enforced by external necessity. Now the synthesis of Mathematics should exercise an equivalent influence, with the terms of the progression inverted. Although this reversed course is less pure and less noble, it forms irresistible convictions, which tend to consolidate the discipline arising from the worship, as they bring with them a profound sense of the value of this threefold submission, which thenceforth is as precious in the eye of reason as of feeling.

Scientific influence of Mathematics when thus renovated.

The proximate publication of the work, the character of which I have been explaining, left it still incumbent on me to point out here the nature and the object of the first of the seven volumes, constituting the '*Abstract Encyclopædia*,' which is to condense the definitive system of the Positive doctrine. The foundation once duly laid by the execution of this volume, it will be impossible any longer to dispute the feasibility of reducing the normal exposition of true science to seven volumes, each volume devoted to one of the seven sciences of the ency-

One volume sufficient for the Mathematical Synthesis.

clopsædic hierarchy, each also composed of seven chapters. On comparing the volume on Mathematics with the mathematical phase of Positive education, as laid down in the plan given in the 'General View,' there may seem reason to fear that so short a book will be insufficient for such a science. For each chapter of the mathematical synthesis offers, on an average, a condensation three times as great as that effected in the other volumes. But, besides that the science, owing to its greater simplicity, admits of more concentration in its written exposition, though its oral teaching must be much fuller; two other reasons combine to explain this exceptional condensation. Easier, older, and more independent, the speculations of Mathematics have naturally been more exposed to idle digressions, so as to require expurgation on a vaster scale. As the end they have in view is to developé method rather than science, their culture demands more time and even effort than any other, but this is no reason why their systematic exposition in writing should occupy more space.

This realised
by few till
the task is
accom-
plished.

Be this as it may, it is only synthetical thinkers duly trained, and such at the present day are extremely rare, who will consider practicable so great a condensation, previous to my effecting it. But this first step once taken, it will no longer be possible to reject the concentration of science requisite if feeling is to preponderate, activity to have free play. Hence naturally, I attached peculiar importance to this explanation, as in no other way could I make it clear, to what an extent the admirable wish of Diderot comes to be, after the lapse of a century, attainable in a satisfactory degree, nay even in a degree beyond the hopes originally entertained.

Condensa-
tion of Cos-
mology.

Such remarks as I have to offer on the rest of Cosmology may be more brief. For Biology, though in the first volume I treated it in some detail, so as to prepare the way for its definitive systematisation, it still requires as much explanation as the whole of the inorganic sciences together. But in this place, it is Morals to which the fullest developement must be given, as soon as I have pointed out the form which Sociology will definitively take by the condensation of the present treatise.

Second
Volume.
Astronomy.

Of the seven fundamental sciences, Astronomy is actually nearest its final state, so as to require merely coordination and some elimination, for which the way has been prepared by my first volume. My treatise on Astronomy, published in 1844, the

result of a course of philosophical and popular teaching continued during seventeen years, completes my justification for not insisting at present on the second phase of the abstract encyclopædia. These two preparatory steps should suffice to enable the reader to grasp the plan of the second volume of the doctrinal system of Positivism. Its seven chapters will organise preliminary astronomy; the statics of celestial geometry; the laws which sum up its dynamics; the application of those laws for legitimate prevision; the fundamental law of celestial mechanics; the reaction of that law on the statics of the science; and its dynamical development. All I have to add here is, some hints with the aim of completing my earlier judgment as to the constitution, the subjective and relative constitution, proper for the study of the Earth—its geometrical and mechanical study.

Such complementary observations can have no place in the seven chapters of the volume on Astronomy, those chapters having already their definite object marked out as a result of the work above alluded to, which cannot, however, be a substitute for them. But the second volume of the abstract encyclopædia must, as its predecessor and those which follow, open with a religious introduction, and be summed up in a synthetical conclusion. The introduction is meant to set forth the general constitution of the science treated, and its normal relations with its predecessor. In the conclusion, we estimate its chief results, and its value as a preparatory step to the next phase of the encyclopædic construction. Now it is in reference solely to this preamble and this summary, both, though in a different way, relating to the whole of the science under review, that the astronomical volume of the second philosophy can here admit some complementary *aperçus*.

Confined to the most intellectual of our senses, the study of the heavens creates the best type of observation, which is too simple in Mathematics, too complex everywhere else, for us to systematise it as satisfactorily as in the second phase of the encyclopædia. The same unavoidable limitation makes it the destiny of Astronomy to furnish us spontaneously our model, when we would construct hypotheses of a really Positive character, hypotheses, that is to say, always admitting of verification. Again, no other science can so thoroughly regulate the extent to be allotted to its predecessor, for nowhere else is the connection between two sciences so perfect. These, its various

The astronomical volume, as the others, will have a religious introduction and a synthetical conclusion.

Logical aspects of Astronomy. It offers the best type of observation, the best model for hypotheses. It limits its predecessor most satisfactorily.

logical advantages, do not however here require any new explanations. Conversely to Mathematics, Astronomy, our second abstract science, has a scientific rather than a logical object: so that it is from the point of view of the doctrine in particular that I must now complete its examination.

Scientific aspects of Astronomy. It presents us with Mathematical existence uncomplicated.

Although in Astronomy, as in Mathematics, existence in the widest sense is reduced to its lowest attributes, in Astronomy the laws of those attributes produce a more irresistible conviction of the fundamental order. The previous study of these attributes, as much a question of touch as of sight, was better adapted to show their universality, but it did so by compelling us to set aside the properties which co-exist with them in such bodies as are entirely within our reach. Now in consequence of this abstraction we were unable adequately to appreciate numerical, geometrical, and mechanical order, as the indispensable basis of the higher economy. Existence, in the mathematical sense, must be seen realised in bodies capable of offering us no other form of it, if its laws are to serve as the direct foundation of the whole of the second philosophy. Such is the privilege in regard to synthesis of Astronomy, it affords us the advantages of the concrete point of view in our study of the most eminent types of material existence, whilst it keeps the abstract character required for scientific generality, as we only know of these beings under this one aspect. So that in it numerical, geometrical, and mechanical existence is no longer confined to the subjective milieu created by the instinct of the race to facilitate especially the conception by all of such existence. When made the object of direct study in the case of the heavenly masses which govern the Earth's motions, it traces in them an order of the more capital importance in that it is entirely beyond the reach of human interference.

Relativity marked in Astronomy. It shows that a subjective unity is alone possible. Its bounds the Solar system.

We are thus led to see that mathematical existence is the normal foundation of all other existence, as we cannot withdraw ourselves from the dominion of the bodies which present it isolated, and in which it implies attributes which we shall never be able to appreciate. The character of relativity which attaches to all real enquiries can never be so strongly stamped on any other science, as it is on the science which would escape us were we to lose the only sense qualified to create it, or were the bodies it studies and their milieu destitute of the properties it requires for its creation. Since the acceptance of

the earth's motion, Astronomy, more than any other science, enforces the conviction that a subjective unity is the only one within our reach, for any real astronomical knowledge is limited to the planetary domain of the Great Being. Were it not for this centre, the study of the heavens would become as incoherent as it would be idle, by tending towards the absolute, though with evidently less hope in this particular case than elsewhere. In its own nature indefinite, Astronomy can be defined only by affecting it to the knowledge of man's planet, and the heavenly bodies in connection with it; a restriction which implies the earth's motion. But by the fact of this connection the earth's motion is of such importance to relative philosophy, that in its maturity human reason requires no demonstration of its existence. It was really accepted without demonstration, since its acceptance, preceding the conclusive evidence for it, took place at the time when the advent of the Positive state gave a seasonable opportunity for a change which had been in preparation from the very earliest beginning of science.

Whilst, however, we study the heavens in order to know the earth, astronomical science must have granted it the whole field required for the relative conception of the fundamental order. Taking no account of the stars external to the solar system, we study amongst those which compose it only such as can really influence the earth. Those then, which as visible to the naked eye, were at all times observed, should constitute the real domain of Astronomy; for the others, as too small or too distant, are necessarily alien to us. The field thus marked out, is, it should be remembered, sufficient for our practical wants; nay less would suffice, the two bodies, viz., in direct connection with the earth, the one as centre, the other as its satellite. Nevertheless, the philosophical aims of the science require an habitual attention to the old planets, and their study finds a consecration in the institution of the week, an institution adopted into the Positive worship. Their aggregate is needed to give us a sufficient number of worlds to examine, as was admirably shown by Fontenelle. If we excluded them, our conception of the order which is a fate to us must be deficient in relativity.

The planets which influence the Earth taken into account.

The same train of philosophical reasoning, if produced, sanctions the study of the satellites and even of comets, although

if we regard simply our wants, either intellectual or practical, we might entirely eliminate both these appendices. On the condition of its constant subordination to the subjective construction, the cultivation of the two branches in moderation will give greater completeness, from the logical as well as the scientific point of view, to our study of the celestial order, as a result of a systematic comparison of the three general cases in which we trace that order. Nothing but this comparative study can impress the fact that the regularity of the heavenly order is due solely to its simplicity; as soon as the influences become complicated, the economy of the heavens tends to less regularity, than do the institutions created by the foresight of man.

The fusion
of Fetichism
and Positiv-
ism easy in
Astronomy.

Psalm xix. 1.

Having carried even into the domain of Mathematics the definitive fusion of Fetichism with Positivism, so the better to effect the combination in logic of feelings, images, and signs; an analogous transformation requires no effort in Astronomy. It was by the spectacle of the heavens really that Fetichism survived through the theological era, and reached its incorporation with Positivism. The ancient verse, my definitive rendering of which raised such bitter feeling towards me, could only have come from One who was a stranger to Astronomy. In fact, the admiration really inspired by the contemplation of the heavens is paid directly to the bodies, the regular movements of which we watch. It is an ungrateful as well as a blind disposition—the child of fictitious and temporary beliefs—which alone diverts us from so natural a movement, by representing to us these immense beings as purely passive under wills external to them, and eternally impenetrable. But the definitive systematisation revives the normal attitude towards them, which has been swerved from during the Western transition, or rather during the last phase of that transition. If the heavens should above all recall to the Positivist the Great Being which revealed their laws and conformed to those laws its own providential arrangements, they may also inspire him, and that in a higher degree than the Fetichists, with the involuntary gratitude which corresponds to our appreciation of the universal order, an appreciation especially resting on experience.

We may,
with due
precautions,

The doctrine can never on this point run counter to the disposition sanctioned by the worship, and to be confirmed by

the life, as it should never lose an opportunity of enforcing the importance of assisting, even by artificial means, the growth of our sympathies. Putting aside the prejudices of science, we admit the impossibility of demonstrating the non-existence of the Gods to whose will Astrolatry looked as the continuous source of the celestial order. Since we have suppressed the idea of cause, the introduction of personal wills into science would tend to disturb the study of laws, to which it served of old as a preparation. But there is no reason why we should not persist in our natural dispositions, and use these wills as a logical instrument to facilitate our speculations in Astronomy by the due introduction of the emotions. In this way the intellect concurs with the heart in justifying the sanction definitively given by Sociolatry to Idolatry, in direct contradiction with the empirical conclusions of Theology, Metaphysics, nay even of Science. If, even in Mathematics, we ought to animate space in order to think the better by loving more, *a fortiori* is such a method appropriate in Astronomy, where it has been usual strongly to recommend feelings of a disturbing character. By the adoption of this method, the state of synthesis and sympathy become so entirely spontaneous as no longer to require a subjective milieu, our feelings may be directly referred to the objects of our contemplation.

animate the
heavenly
bodies.

In Astronomy in its subjective form, the last point is to explain what is the true function of celestial mechanics. Abandoning the irrational hopes entertained by mathematicians in their pride on the original discovery of the fundamental law of this branch, we recognise that Astronomy will always remain essentially a geometrical study; we have not the power, nor do we need it, to reduce everything in it to system. The laws of Kepler would always suffice for reasonable provisions, if the six elements of every elliptical movement were in each case adapted anew to the case. Although the theory of the perturbations in these elements must render easier their periodical determination, it can never dispense with the labour of a distinct working out of the problem. In celestial mechanics, then, it is the philosophical object that will remain predominant, be it the perfecting of the astronomical synthesis, be it the better connection of that synthesis with those which precede or follow it, by simplifying and adding force to our conception of the order of external destiny.

The normal
destination
of celestial
Mechanics
is philoso-
phical.

Vols. iii. and
iv. of the
Abstract
Encyclopæ-
dia, treating
Physics and
Chemistry,
reserved for
Comte's suc-
cessors.

Such are the indications, logical and scientific, which I was bound to place here in order to complete my earlier treatment of the second step in the abstract encyclopædia. The primary pair of cosmological sciences thus adequately organised, I need not linger on the couple which forms the transition from the lower objects of contemplation to the higher domain. For in the first volume of this work, the systematisation of Physics and Chemistry has been set forth as far as is possible in the present state of the Positive reconstruction, whilst at the same time the conditions yet to be met are pointed out. In accordance with the fifteenth law of the First Philosophy, the intermediate couple is the least near its regeneration, to effect which will need the concurrence of the two others. I must leave, then, to my successors, the definitive execution of the third and fourth volumes of the Second Philosophy, simply pointing out the seven chapters into which each is to be divided.

The third
volume.
Physics.

For Physics, the religious introduction will explain the purely subjective unity attainable in the case of a science, the branches of which must always be objectively independent, notwithstanding that they subserve in common the study of the general constitution of inorganic matter as existing on the earth. The order of the seven chapters and their contents will be next determined by the senses to which they relate, ranked by their increasing speciality, a principle of arrangement which is in conformity with the gradual transition between Astronomy and Chemistry. Barology comes first, then the study of Gustation in the abstract, when founded; then Thermology, followed by the theory of Smell, Optics, Acoustics, and Electrology.

The fourth
volume.
Chemistry.

As for Chemistry, it is a science which admits of a more satisfactory coordination; since, being of narrower extent, it is susceptible of a definition in the fullest sense synthetical, a definition already given in my fundamental work. The introduction will first set forth the science as a whole, and it will then be possible to effect its definitive systematisation in the seven chapters of the volume devoted to it, assuming that sufficient preparation has been made by the elaboration indicated in the first volume of the present work. The seven chapters will organise the study of the elements; the chemical examination of the earth's environment; the theory of the simplest compounds; the theory of the second and most im-

Phil. Pos. iii.
p. 19, 1st ed.

portant degree of composition; the general laws of combination; the examination of the third degree; lastly, the complement relating to substances of unstable composition.

It is in this intermediate couple that the institution of subjective milieus, systematised by Positivism on the basis of its rudimentary form in Mathematics, will most fully display its efficiency as an intellectual instrument, not that it may not be extended also to the province of life. So adapted is it to geometry and even to mechanics, that its peculiar mode in those studies came in spontaneously, neither the scientific education of the individual or the race permitting us to trace the formation in the brain of the idea of space. It is in the physico-chemical domain, however, that the institution finds its widest field in consequence of the greater variety of the phenomena there observed, each class of which requires a milieu suited to its abstract study, a milieu but imperfectly indicated by the original type.

Theory of
subjective
Milieus
most effective
in this
intermediate
couple.

Having thus set forth sufficiently the definitive systematisation of the existence common to all bodies, in its three stages, mathematical, physical, and chemical, I must now enter on the special sphere of unity, and so on Biology as a preparation for it.

Biology-.

In my first volume I worked out the systematic study of vitality more fully than any other part of natural philosophy. I carried its organisation so far as to give separately each of the forty lessons, which, in the general plan of Positive education, are devoted to Biology. Notwithstanding this, the fifth volume of the abstract encyclopædia must here receive fuller explanations than any of its predecessors, in order to give its true character to a systematisation of equal difficulty and urgency by drawing out into special prominence the necessary connection of Biology with the religion of Humanity. The slight attention gained, these three years past, by the capital conceptions I put forward on the immediate reconstruction of Biology, is but one more proof how impossible it is to give any science its systematic form, if we isolate it from the whole of the doctrine. Never would the theory of life be disengaged from the analytical regime which is destroying it, were not a social impulse to secure its due submission to the discipline of synthesis.

The fifth
volume of
the Abstract
Encyclopæ-
dia.
Biology-

Referring to the treatment of Biology in my first volume,

Elimination
from Biology
of two sub-
jects: the
theory of
Unity, and
the Cerebral
Synthesis.

I am bound in the first place to point out a definitive elimination which will place it in a better light. The systematisation of Biology stood there between two expositions essentially alien to the fifth encyclopædic phase, but for which I could not then find another place and yet which I needed for the exposition of Sociology. Both really concern the ultimate science, the one for the theory of unity, the other for the synthesis of the cerebral functions.

With this
elimination
the extent
of Biology
not dispropor-
tioned to
that of Cos-
mology.

Assume these two episodes transferred to their proper place, and it will be seen that in the Introductory Principles, Biology is not treated on a scale disproportioned to that of Cosmology. If this is allowed, a few systematic considerations are all that is needed here to complete the work then done, and their aim will be to mark more strongly the dependence subjectively of the vital order on the human order. We cannot do this better than by stating the object and the connection of the seven chapters into which the fifth volume of the Second Philosophy is to be divided.

The Intro-
duction to
the fifth
volume.

In its religious introduction, the first point will be to show the greatness of the step taken by the intellect, when it passes from the inorganic world to the world of life. So disconnected is mere material existence that the corpuscular theory is necessary to determine in Cosmology what is the proper field of abstraction, abstraction there always relating to molecules even whilst studying masses. In Biology, on the contrary, we enter the domain of unity, the unity of simple nutrition in the first place, then the unity of action and sensation, in the case of beings, whose characteristic is a permanent consensus, which allows analysis only as the preparation for synthesis. A law, as indisputable as it is inexplicable, connects, in all cases without exception, this contrast between independence and concert with the opposition between fixity of composition and renewal of the material substance. Thus is established the great primary dualism of relative philosophy; the preparation for which is the dualism introduced by the absolute philosophy, when it separated, as early as the Fetichist period, the external order from the human. This instinctive division, which drew no distinction between vitality and materiality, was destined under Theologism, concentrated as it was on Humanity, to serve as guide to Positive science in its gradual ascent; from its first step in Mathematics to its final terminus in Morals. By giving over to Positive

science the province of life, it impelled it towards the study of man, only separate from that of life when we take into account the succession of the several degrees of unity.

In this way, the religious introduction of the biological volume makes us feel the strictly preparatory object of the science, a point more appreciable the nearer we get to the goal of our theoretic efforts, which alone allows a true synthesis, all partial syntheses being futile. As preparatory, the study of life in the strict sense tends to be limited to the preamble required for the systematic appreciation of Humanity. All the great problems as to Unity can be stated only in an inchoate form in Biology, as their solution depends above all on the functions of the brain, the essential sources of the consensus, which is but imperfectly perceptible till we reach the ultimate domain, or Morals.

Biology is but the preamble to the study of Humanity. Hence its limits.

We are thus led to condense Biology in seven chapters, the two first of which organise its statical basis, anatomical in the first place, then taxonomical; the others being all devoted to its dynamical portion. The biotomical chapter gives, in a systematic form and in succession, the three normal stages of statical analysis; it treats, that is, of the elements, tissues, and organs, thus completing duly the fundamental conception of Bichat. Leaving molecular questions to Cosmology, Biology must yet begin with the study of the elements, in order to gain a right understanding of the harmony between the solids and the fluids, since the fluids can contain nothing but the rudiments of the solids.

The seven chapters of the biological volume. Chaps. I. & II. Statical. I. Anatomy.

The second chapter arranges the hierarchy of life with the view of linking Vegetality, properly so called, to Humanity, through the series of degrees admissible for Animality. Scientifically viewed, the scale so formed gives at once the succession of independent barriers which separate man from the inorganic world, and the series of intermedia which transmit to us the action of that world. Logically viewed, it throws light upon the analysis of life by fixing all its modes in beings which present them isolated from the higher degrees, and it allows biological synthesis to follow throughout the series the modifications of the unity originally expressed in man as its supreme type. These two uses of the scale of life admit, nay, demand a subjective conception of that scale, in which we put aside on system unpropitious cases, whilst we introduce such imaginary organisms as

Chap. II. Taxonomy.

may facilitate our transitions and our comparisons. This done, the vital series becomes unassailable, and connects equally with the progression traced in the material order and the evolution of man, whilst it secures the continuity of the Second Philosophy in obedience to the law of classification which it derives from the First.

**Dynamical
Biology.**
Chaps. III.
IV.
Laws of
vegetal and
animal life.

With this preparation, dynamical Biology is condensed in five chapters, in which animality is distinguished from vegetality, in accordance with the mode of alimentation, for in animal life the materials of nutrition must be elaborated in lower organisms if they are to be adapted to the higher. The third chapter of the fifth volume of the abstract encyclopædia must be devoted, then, to the three fundamental laws of vegetative or organic life, to the study, that is, of renewal, of developement, and lastly of reproduction. The next chapter proceeds from this point to an equivalent treatment of animal life, by examining in succession the laws of exercise, habit, and improvement.

Chap. V.
Law of hereditary transmission.

The complement of these two groups of vital laws must be given by their connection, the proper subject of the fifth chapter, where the seventh law, the special law of hereditary transmission, combines the functions of nutrition which are unintermittent with the functions of activity which are intermittent. We are thus enabled in the sixth chapter to examine directly the relations which necessarily exist between the organism and its environment, which relations are the permanent sources of the modifications of either. As the result of this, the whole preparatory process issues, in the seventh chapter, in the general study of vital modificability, and we base this study on the third law of the First Philosophy, the law which connects all variations whatever, even the variations of disease, with the normal state.

Chap. VI.
Relations between the organism and the environment.

Chap. VII.
Vital modificability.

Synthetic conclusion of the fifth volume.

Logical appreciation of the treatise on Biology.

This construction of the abstract theory of life is summarised in the synthetic conclusion of the volume, which states the grand results of the biological treatise, and forms the direct introduction to the Sociological volume. Under its logical aspect, Biology, as the highest portion of natural philosophy, gives completeness to the relativity originated by the lowest portion, and developed in the intermediate sciences, the ultimate object being to form the basis for moral philosophy. Summed up in the movement of the earth and the gravitation of the planetary system, the astronomical synthesis is a preparation for the rela-

tive conception of human existence, by revealing the relative character of our conception of the environment to which we are subject. But the systematisation of Biology extends the same process to the constitution of our bodies, on which rests our cerebral life. As a consequence, the science of Sociology is enabled to effect the decisive révolution in the human understanding, by its direct proof that all opinions whatever are relative, by virtue of the laws of their movement. It is, however, solely from this final branch of study that we get the power of understanding why the change was so long in coming, why it was destined to await the close of our initiation, though the foundation for it had been laid from the very first beginnings of the scientific developement. If on the one hand, the conception of the earth's motion was early accepted; on the other, the spontaneous comparison of the various degrees of animal existence was at all times sufficient to establish the relative character of our biological conceptions whenever the time should be ripe for its acceptance.

Under its scientific aspect, the treatise on life develops and consolidates our primary conception of the order of the world, connecting as it does the intellectual and moral order with the material, by laws whose sway is a matter of direct consciousness. The study of these laws prepares the way for the systematic conception of a destiny admitting modifications, a conception which is the leading characteristic of the Positive dogma. For in Biology the phenomena become so complex, as to evidence the possibility of modifying, no less than the impossibility of withdrawing ourselves from, the natural order. Its imperfection is more sensible, its instability more marked, and both tend to inspire a deeper sense of the dignity of our nature and the true purpose of our existence. Even Cosmology excludes the idea of absolute security, by its unbroken prospect of material catastrophes, either celestial or terrestrial, catastrophes against which we cannot provide. But Biology widens and completes our sense of insecurity, by making us aware how precarious is the individual existence, which is the foundation of the whole social economy. We are thus compelled to connect ourselves more closely with the Great Being, whose service gives scope for the feelings which give our life a nobility and even a consistency, which rise above all the fatalities of the inorganic or vital order.

Scientific
appreciation.

Preparation
for the treatise
on Sociology in
the synthetical
conclusion.

Coming now to the logical and scientific preparation for the sociological volume, the synthetical conclusion of the biological construction effects it directly by its outline of the study of the brain, and of the theory of unity, guided thereto by investigation of the lower animals. But this twofold introduction becomes negative rather than positive, when we suppress the notions derivable from the higher science, although the placing them in biology may have its advantages in teaching, if it be in subordination to the succeeding phase of abstract education. The great object in so placing them must be to show the inevitable impotence of the treatise on life, as regards such speculations; they have their fundamental type in the sacred science, profane science serving as a preparation, and as a preparation only. Biology represents each animal species as a Great Being which has aborted, the cause of its failure lying rather in its circumstances than in itself, and by this presentation it establishes the law which reserves to the preponderating race the developement of collective existence, the sole source of real unity. Historically derived from the sacred science, dogmatically the conception may be transferred to take its place at the head of profane science, in order that the preparation for the former may end in the demonstration of the insufficiency of the latter.

Complementary
remarks.

To give completeness to the new views here advanced on the final systematisation of Biology, I must give those which, at each stage of the process of revision, I have been obliged to put aside in order not to interrupt the general succession of ideas.

Additions to
the first
chapter.
The Law of
ternary progression.

In the first chapter, there must be added, first, the application to the anatomical series of the law of ternary progression, nay even to the coordination of the elements of the organism. The subjective organisation of Biology—such is the only security against the uncertainty which results, in reference to the general divisions of statical analysis, from distinctions or connections alike arbitrary. If we rightly conceive the object of the progression—and it is rightly conceived as essentially logical—we determine its limits by the consideration of the scientific wants it has to satisfy. In that case we keep only the three terms above mentioned, the true conception of which is in reality due to Bichat, for he it was who established the middle term, by virtue of which the two others, at all times instinctively recog-

nised, are at length accepted on system. In like manner we must determine the anatomical *elements*, by looking on them as destined to represent the harmony which is indispensable between the solids and the fluids of the body, provided always that we first separate the *elements* from the *products*, with which they were often confounded. This destination involves our looking on the blood as containing all the rudiments of the tissues, and, consequently, of the organs. Now, the tissues are necessarily three in number, in order to allow the life of nutrition, muscular action, and nervous excitability, and they are three by virtue of the structure, cellular, fibrous, or tubular, adapted for the discharge of these functions respectively.

As for the second chapter, all I have to do is to explain the feasibility of condensing therein a study to which academical routine devotes several volumes. Such condensation would still be impossible, or would be found unsatisfactory, had we not already, at the very commencement of the Second Philosophy, created the general theory of Positive classifications, in accordance with the principle laid down in the First Philosophy. But with these antecedents, we may reduce the taxonomical chapter of the treatise on life, almost entirely to the construction, a subjective rather than objective construction, of the scale of organic beings, and that contracted within the limits appropriate to its legitimate destination.

The second chapter.
The organic series. Its contraction.

The third chapter is calculated to place in a clear light the true nature of the systematisation of Biology, by the way in which it establishes the theory of vegetal life. If it were our object to systematise Biology, from an objective point of view, it must be reduced to this its first province, the only one admitting an exact demarcation as regards the higher science between which and Cosmology it is the link. Since the abstract study of vegetal life is undertaken only with a view to animal life, this usage adopted by common consent foreshadows the ultimate triumph of the subjective synthesis, which can have no other source but the primary type of unity.

The third chapter.
The mode of instituting the theory of vegetal life.

The conclusion here reached, a conclusion at once logical and scientific, gains its full force in the fourth chapter, where the special study of the life of relation never lets us forget the conviction to what a degree biological reasoning remains irrational when it is isolated from its true human application. It makes vain efforts to establish the consensus of the muscular and

The fourth chapter.
Biology irrational if we do not keep to the human point of view.

nervous functions, so long as it misconceives the functions of the brain, which alone bring the others into combination. Now, the study of these higher or cerebral phenomena, though we may enter on it in a certain imperfect degree in regard to the lower animals, can be pursued fully only in man, and man is inseparable from Humanity.

The fifth
chapter.

The like remark is applicable to the fifth chapter, as it forms the only possible connection, biologically, between the two preceding chapters. But whilst it evidences the insufficiency of this direct connection, at the same time it evidences its importance and its reality. Although the seventh law of vitality, logically speaking, may be deduced from the others, whereas they are irreducible, it is wise to distinguish it from them, be it to use it as a bond of union for them, or be it above all to keep in sight its own particular object, at once a theoretical and practical object.

The sixth
chapter.
Subjectivity
of organic
media.

For the sixth chapter, I have nothing to add at present, save a particular recommendation, in working out the theory of organic milieus, to adhere to the subjective point of view; on that theory depend the principal problems of life, and it will be characteristic of the efficiency of the synthetical method. ♣

The seventh
chapter.
Aptitude for
modification
confined to
assimilable
substances.

So again for the seventh chapter at first, since the theory of vital modificability exists as yet only in its general principle, an immediate outcome of the First Philosophy. But it needs a complement here, in the law which applies to all modifying influences whatsoever, provided always that they be distinguished from foreign bodies. The law consists in limiting an aptitude for modifying to such substances as are assimilable, regarding each as an irritant or a calmative, when the dose exceeds or falls short of the point at which it is an article of food. This law completes the theory of modificability, which ought not to be confined to the organism modified, but should include the modifying milieu. Its application in science is to establish, between therapeutics and hygienics, a subordination analogous to that which the principle of Broussais established between pathology and physiology. I have not here to bring out its utility; in practice, it eliminates specifics, and offers a satisfactory substitute for them. If we inquire into its origin as a part of the system dynamically, it is traceable to the connection between nutrition and action,

a connection, the statical equivalent of which is the connection between the vessels and the nerves.

Besides these special additions to the several chapters of the treatise on life, I have one last remark to add here, a remark applicable throughout the whole of Biology. It bears on the discipline, established in my theory of the Great Being, of the anatomical examination of the human body. Confined to functionaries on whom devolves a terrible office, it must never soil the dignity of the priesthood, be what they may the seductions of science, which are always kept in check by the antipathy of the public, not to speak of the distaste of individual priests. Apart from all moral grounds, the restriction is one which far from hampering thought in Biology, stimulates it to a systematic action; since it tends to ensure the fuller ascendancy of the subjective method, the most fruitful source of high conceptions. An examination which would degrade the priesthood is no degradation to functionaries who would welcome such means of bestowing their official leisure, whilst all abuse is precluded by the fact that opportunities cannot be multiplied by any act of theirs. To such an extent can reasoning take the place of observation, that most anatomical laws can be deduced from physiological conceptions with as much ease as was the duality of the cerebral organs, indicated by the fact of double vision, and by our instinct of symmetry. As salutary for the intellect as for the heart, the discipline of synthesis will make us shrink from the abuse of substituting animals for men, the priesthood of Sociocracy more even than the priesthood of Theocracy being disposed to insist upon the constant respect of our auxiliaries.

Dissection, even of animals, forbidden the priest.

Such are the several additions required to complete the indications of my first volume as to the definitive systematisation of Biology. By combining the two with the third volume of my Philosophy, it will be possible to undertake the construction of the treatise on life, so soon as the more important deficiencies yet existing shall have been supplied. The execution of the fifth volume of the Second Philosophy being reserved for one of my successors, its plans required even now some definitive indications, which will dispense with my recurring to the subject.

The additions combined with the previous work alone sufficient for the biological volume, when certain gaps have been filled.

•Before I proceed further with the synthetical construction of the seven treatises which are to fix the analytical form of

The division between the five first and

the two last volumes of the abstract encyclopædia; between natural and moral philosophy; between profane and sacred science.

the Positive doctrine, I must dwell on the marked distinction which, without destroying the connection of the whole, will always make itself felt between the five first and the two last. The historical division of the Second Philosophy into natural and moral, is one the utility of which is not confined to the initiation in science, either of the individual or of the race. As the motives which led to its adoption as a natural result still operate, we see that it is destined ultimately to become equally for theoreticians and practitioners the binary arrangement of the doctrine most in use. The one with which I above confronted it is objectively more rational, for it rests upon more marked distinctions and more close connections; but subjectively it is less rational, so as to offer us less aid in our synthetical meditations. We must, then, look upon the chief binary intellectual division as a definitive outcome of the distinction, at first spontaneously adopted, then systematically, between the human order and the external order, two branches of study which are to be compared under the expressive names of sacred and profane science. In the normal state, whilst due attention will be paid to the inevitable contrast between the organism and the environment, the great use of that distinction will be to bring out more clearly the relativity of all our conceptions, and the futility of all objective syntheses. These two results once become familiar to all, the historical dualism will prevail over the dogmatical.

The two binary divisions compared.

Compare the two under their logical aspect, and we see that the first is better adapted than the second to subordinate objective analysis to subjective synthesis. For the second seems to hand over to analysis a domain in which analysis must ever preponderate, as disconnected existences are in question; whilst the former terminates the system of dispersion by a rudimentary introduction of unity. Although the organic scale, by its want of continuity, tends to give a sanction to the dominion of analysis, we have a legitimate resource for anticipating or remedying this downward tendency in the subjective aim of our biological studies, directed as they invariably are to an indivisible problem. The dogmatical combination could be preferred to the historical only if analysis were destined to be finally the general characteristic of the Second Philosophy. But as, on the contrary, that philosophy is in its ultimate form to be synthetical, the historical dualism, as a better preparation for it, is theoretically preferable. Its practical superio-

ity cannot be doubted, admirably adapted as it is, to represent, in its best form, the contrast between the two social powers. To guide the reaction of the organic on the inorganic world in its full extent, man must rank his auxiliar animals amongst the beings to be modified; so that the external order and the human order are the respective departments of the Patriciate and of the Priesthood.

This definitive comparison of the two binary arrangements, both equally normal, allowable for the Positive dogma, may be summarised by an examination of the extreme limits assignable to the institution of subjective milieus, the scientific object of which is to facilitate abstractions. Though the institution is more available in Cosmology than in Biology, speculation in the latter becoming less abstract; still it ought to be of use in perfecting the general study of life, and that by enabling us to form a clearer idea of the typical organisms. In Astronomy it helps us to realise the movements without the bodies; *à fortiori* in Biology it can assist our comparisons, too often partial and as such, in default of images, limited to the help of signs. But in social and moral investigations, the institution loses at once its aptitude and its destination, as does analysis which it assists; for at this point abstraction is nearing its end, owing to the coincidence of the object and the subject. The scientific value, then, of subjective milieus, as well as their æsthetic power, extends as far as the limits of the domain of profane science, neither the one nor the other can ever have place in the domain of sacred science.

The two considered with reference to subjective media.

It remains to complete the construction of the Second Philosophy by the exposition of its two last portions; the irrevocable disjunction of which expresses in brief the chief superiority of my present work over my Philosophy. Though moral science is more especially the object we have in view, we must first touch on Sociology, to which will be devoted the sixth volume of the abstract encyclopædia. But by virtue of the work done in the present treatise, the definitive systematisation of Sociology may be practically reduced to the combination in a single volume of the two in which I have shaped the statics and dynamics of the social science.

Separation of Sociology and Morals. Sociology the subject of the sixth volume.

So condensed, and the condensation is one attended with only minor difficulties, the sociological volume of the Second Philosophy will consist of seven coordinate chapters, standing,

Religious introduction and synthetical conclusion of the

volume on
Sociology.

as in every other case, between the religious introduction and the synthetical conclusion. The introduction will delineate the general arrangement of the sixth encyclopædic phase and its dependence on the preceding one; the conclusion will give its principal results and its function as regards its successor. These two explanations are in Sociology more urgently needed, and more difficult than in the previous sciences, as in approaching our goal we are tempted to hurry over the intermediate steps. When Biology had been created in a certain sense, the attempt was made to found Morals without having formed Sociology, and there will always be a tendency in the individual to repeat in his educational period this natural but over hasty process of the evolution of the race. The decisive point in my career was the construction of the social science, and there will never be a time when it will not be essential to give the reasons for its intercalation, though the explanation no longer involves the efforts and the fullness which it required of me. After having studied first the milieu, then the body, we must enter on the systematic study of the soul, by unveiling the laws, statical or dynamical, of the intelligence and activity of man, as verified in the collective existence of man, which has direct relation to the Great Being. Its examination leads us to complete sacred science by studying the true unity in order to develop and consolidate the real Providence by regulating the emotions, the thoughts, and the acts of its voluntary servants.

The seven
chapters of
the Socio-
logical
volume.

The seven chapters of the sociological volume are devoted to establishing the statical theories of property, the family, language, and society; then to the dynamical theories of Fetichism, Theocracy, and the threefold transition which completed the education of the race by the developement of its powers. The plan is, as we see, a condensation of the results of the present work, with the introduction of no absolutely new conception, but separating off Morals, the existence of which as a distinct science began in the course of my construction, and so could not have its proper influence upon it. As for the study of the normal state in itself, that is reserved for the last of the sciences, the science of which Sociology is the immediate precursor. But the imperative necessity for this distribution of parts must never throw into the shade the strong affinity for one another of the two halves of sacred science, as compared with the different parts of profane science. To make it more evident, we

may make a third quaternary arrangement of the system of Positive doctrine, we might, that is, separate this highest from the two lower pairs of sciences by intercalating Biology, as the science in which the profane and the sacred effect a junction.

All the rest of the present chapter relates exclusively to the final science, the science to which all our theories whatsoever normally converge, and from which as from a common source, spring all our conceptions of action. Up to this point all investigation, not excepting Sociology, preserved its abstract and introductory character, as a consequence of the interval, one, it is true, constantly lessening, between the subject and the object. But in *Morals* the full coincidence of the two ushers in the definitive state of human reason; for in *Morals* the development of objective analysis results in the complete establishment of the subjective synthesis. In a word, in *Morals* the doctrine unites with the worship in order to systematise the regime. It is in *Morals* that is effected the general transition from the life of thought to the life of action. Nevertheless, the seventh volume of the *Second Philosophy* must still retain the speculative character which has pervaded the whole scheme, the better to mark that it terminates in a synthesis. Such explanations, then, as I here give, must bear solely on the theory of *Morals*, that is to say, on the direct study of man, reserving for the following chapter their application to practical *Morals*, the aim of which is to regulate human life.

But the treatise on the supreme science promised above, will not carry the division between the theory and practice of *Morals* farther than to make it distinguish between the two volumes of which it will consist, in agreement with its double title: 'System of Positive *Morals*,' or 'Treatise of Universal Education.' It was under this second title that I naturally announced it in 1842, at the end of my *Philosophy*, in which I had not yet separated *Morals* from Sociology. Since the decisive and irrevocable separation of the two has been effected, I have felt more and more that the direct study of the art which is emphatically human, must have a special antecedent in the construction of the science which is peculiarly human, the science which previously had not attained distinct existence. This is why, instead of the one volume originally promised, the work will be in two, dealing respectively with theoretic and practical *Morals*, as the term, *Morals*, by a happy ambi-

The rest of the chapter devoted to *Morals*.

The seventh volume of the *Abstract Encyclopædia*.

The system of Positive *Morals*, or *Treatise on universal Education*, will be in two volumes, the first being the seventh volume of the *abstract Encyclopædia*.

guity lends itself to such treatment, and serves as a representative for our whole synthesis. In the present place, the indications I offer must bear solely on the first volume, the seventh and last volume of the Second Philosophy, as it constructs the synthetical science, on the bases supplied by the hierarchy of the analytical sciences.

The religious introduction of the volume.

The religious introduction of this final treatise will be directed, as in the other cases, to tracing the general plan of the volume, and its proper dependence on the phase next below it in the encyclopædic construction. The difference lies in the greater importance and the greater difficulty of these two explanations, owing to the closer affinity evidently existing between the two elements of the sacred domain, however necessary it may be on systematic grounds to separate them. Consequently, it will be requisite to insist on this point of their distinction, a distinction no less indispensable to theory than to practice, for it is solely in virtue of it that the analytical construction can have a synthetic conclusion, as it allies the doctrine with the worship in order to organise the regime.

Supremacy of Morals to be asserted. (a) Logically.

Distinct prominence must be given to the superiority of moral science, its logical and scientific superiority, as compared with all the others, which are but its necessary preparations. Thus only do we grasp in its entire range the Positive method, after having appreciated in Mathematics, deduction; in Astronomy, observation; in Physics, experiment; in Chemistry, nomenclature; in Biology, comparison; in Sociology, filiation. In point of fact, the subjective method, the appanage of Morals, is a seventh step, on which all the others depend for the regulation they cannot get elsewhere, a power derived from the entire coincidence of the object with the subject, whereas hitherto the two were always apart, though tending more and more to union.

(b) Scientifically.

This coincidence again is the source of the superiority of moral science in point of doctrine, which in no other science can attain complete rationality. As the human point of view is commingled, as a subjective element, with all the aspects of science, their preliminary study can give but incomplete notions, waiting for a systematisation derivable only from the knowledge of man. Recognising this as necessary, still the introduction formed by the other sciences is none the less objectively indispensable to the regular elaboration of the system, in obedience

to the fundamental law which throughout subjects the highest phenomena to the most elementary.

Subjective superiority, objective dependence,—such is the relation between any two consecutive degrees of the encyclopædic scale, but in no case is it so applicable as in the two last. The goal being neared, we are in their case more alive to the defective rationality of the preparatory sciences, notwithstanding the greater difficulty of establishing the just distinction between the two. Profane science having in its own way given us an elementary knowledge of the milieu, and that of the body as its complement; sacred science enters on the systematic study of the soul, by analysing our collective existence, first from the statical, then from the dynamical point of view. But, though indispensable as a preliminary, this process is only a last preparation, the incompleteness of which we cannot but allow. We feel in regard to it that, as the intellect and activity are studied by themselves apart from the emotional nature, we are left to judge results alone, their origin and their purpose being questions for the following science. If, in the present work, the false position in which the mind is thus placed is not obvious, it is due solely to this, that the elaboration of *Morals* is therein, by a spontaneous process, blended inseparably with the construction of *Sociology*. Similarly, in my ‘*Philosophy*,’ I was enabled provisionally to shirk the obligation to create social statics prior to attacking social dynamics, by attending incidentally to existence, as occasion offered, in the course of the study of movement.

The double relation—subjective and objective—most manifest in the two highest sciences.

Without any illusion as to the character and object of the twofold mission devolving on me, as the result of the whole antecedent evolution of the race, I have always been aware that the full execution of the final construction would belong to my successors. What was reserved for me was to lay its immediate basis, and to characterise its spirit after having conceived its plan. In a word it was for me to institute the Positive religion, it was not for me to constitute it. Superior as is my religious construction in point of system to my philosophical creation, the present work cannot achieve the complete rationality which was ever my aspiration. For the normal distinction between *Sociology* and *Morals*, which is capital as regards the synthesis, arose whilst I was effecting a construction over which it ought to have presided. The atti-

Comte's own share in the work of final systematisation.

tude required for the creation of a strictly dogmatic system could be finally taken only in this fourth volume as a result of the whole series of preparatory labours; labours I venture to say, as much needed for the public as for myself. What I have to do at present then is to complete my exposition of the true character of a definitive systematisation, in which, at the actual stage of my career, the normal execution of two works only falls to me, the two extremes of the Second Philosophy; between them my successors will intercalate five indispensable treatises.

The seven chapters of the treatise on Morals.

Enough having been said on the introduction of the last volume of the abstract encyclopædia, I must examine, in more detail than in the case of the others, its seven chapters.

The three first chapters.

I shall devote the three first to establishing systematically the general doctrines which form the immediate basis of moral science as a whole. The first chapter will state the Positive theory of human nature, under the guidance of my subjective conception of the consensus of the brain. On the basis thus laid, the second chapter will construct the theory of the Great Being, the Being in which alone we can trace on a decisive scale the developement of this consensus. Then it will be possible in the third chapter, without any preliminaries, to establish the definitive theory of true unity, as its nature and origin have been already determined. Evidently then the present work contains all the great primary principles of the one announced, not however in such a form as to dispense with their synthetical elaboration.

The four remaining chapters.

In the other four chapters of this last volume, the immediate object is the construction of the indivisible science of man, by laying down the real laws of human existence in its normal form, with full recognition of the external necessities to which man is subject. The fourth chapter will deal with the body, the study of which in Biology could only be preliminary, even as regards the lower animals, from want of the notions relating to the brain which are indispensable to a right conception of its consensus. After this, the direct and special object of the three last chapters will be the study of the soul; in them we shall lay down the general laws of human existence as a synthesis of the affections in the first place; then of the intelligence; lastly of activity.

Detailed explanation of the fourth

In regard to the work in question, which alone will give the full conception of the Second Philosophy as a system, I

am bound to explain more particularly the character and object of the middle chapter, that in which we effect once for all the normal fusion of the profane with the sacred domain. The right understanding of this chapter is more calculated than anything else to set in a clear light the ultimate unity of the Positive doctrine, all the several elements of which will thus be shown to cooperate in the direct solution of the most important problem in the science of man. The aim of this decisive chapter is mainly this: to delineate the consensus, the indispensable consensus between our bodily existence and our cerebral life, the end in view being the perfecting the one and the other by the aid of their mutual influence.

chapter.
The doctrine
of vital
harmony.

The principal point in the work under consideration is to give completeness and system to my subjective theory of the brain, proceeding on the logical and scientific bases laid down in the first volume of the present treatise. To do this I must first deal with the external functions of the central apparatus, particularly with the part it plays in sensation, on which point my original remarks are not sufficiently clear. As with the organs of the soul, so I must determine by the subjective method the number and position of the cerebral ganglia which preside over the relations of the organism with the milieu, so far as it is the source of impressions.

The main
point to
systematise
the subjective
theory
of the brain.

This inquiry involves, as a preliminary, the enumeration of the senses, properly so-called. Now the ultimate conclusion which I feel bound to adopt is, that there are eight really distinct senses, one general, the sense of touch, and seven special: the muscular sense, the sense of taste, the sense of heat, the sense of smell, the sense of hearing, of sight, and of electricity. I rank the seven following Gall and Blainville, on the principle of increase in speciality, in harmony with that of the phenomena to which they correspond, and measured by the succession of their appearance in the animal series. The first and last alone require any special explanation. For the first, I adopt substantially the opinion of Blainville, who distinguished it from the general sense of pressure and assigned to it the direct appreciation of muscular efforts and of the fatigue consequent on them. As for the last, its feeble habitual developement in man must not prevent our recognising its distinct existence, in some animals very strongly marked, and more or less common to all the vertebrata. For each of the eight senses we must

Determina-
tion of the
number of
the senses.
They are
eight.

admit separate nerves, nerves not so easily traceable, but quite as independent, as those of sight and hearing ; unless we do so, the functions which the nerves subserve would remain as indistinct as they would be if we had only the lower organisms to draw inferences from.

A cerebral ganglion admitted for each sense.

The same reasoning leads us to admit for each sense, the necessary existence of a cerebral ganglion, in which the nervous apparatus terminates, equally when it has a circumscribed sphere of action, as when it extends to the whole of the integument, internal or external. Since contemplation takes place equally though the senses involved differ, its organ must be distinct from theirs. Nevertheless these latter must be nearer the speculative region of the brain than the two other regions, with which they have no direct relation. Neither, again, have they with the organs of meditation, so that their position is necessarily under the organ of contemplation, so to avoid any disturbance of the operations of the intellect by lying athwart their organs. But as it is the knowledge of phenomena rather than of beings that the senses give us, their analytical character requires a position adjacent to that of abstract contemplation. This decision finds support in the obligation to place them on the median line, in order that the symmetrical impressions may be in sufficient agreement. As for the site of each of the eight sensitive ganglia in particular, all I can do at present is to give an idea, taking the easier cases, of a complementary explanation which has its proper place in the promised work.

The ganglia of touch, mmsculat-ion, sight, and hearing.

Looking at the pre-eminent importance and the greater diffusion of the sense of touch, always common to both the external and internal integument, its ganglion must be nearest the organ of contemplation, thus better informed of the general state of the envelope, mucous membrane or skin. The ganglion of musculation marches with the active region of the brain, in order that its impressions may affect in an equal degree the three portions of the apparatus which regulates movement, excited, controlled, or sustained. On a comparison of the senses of sight and hearing, the one more intellectual, the other more social, we see that the respective ganglia of the two must be placed, that of sight nearer the faculty of synthesis, that of hearing nearer the instinct of sympathy.

The motor functions. Innervation.

As for the other division of the external functions of the brain, our remarks for the present may be less detailed. To

avoid all exaggeration on this point, we must consider it the function of innervation to stimulate contractions which the muscular fibre can effect of itself, and which are effected in the animals which are without nerves. The close solidarity which characterises the motor apparatus, the various parts of which can supply the place of one another reciprocally, does not require, and does not even allow of, any special ganglion, but does demand a direct relation with the active region of the brain. To afford such connection is the great function of the spinal cord, which also affords a rallying point for the impressions of touch. The only serious modification of this connection is due to the distinctions relating to the will, which condenses the whole cerebral existence. But the division of movements into involuntary and voluntary resolves itself into this, that we substitute intermittent for continuous action. This done, and putting aside spontaneous contractions, we recognise that innervation is always voluntary in its origin, though it may become involuntary in its results by long habit.

Spinal cord.

After this introduction with its two divisions, the chapter under consideration has for its main subject the relations of the principal region of the brain with the body. The system of these relations will constitute the theory, a theory in outline so adequately sketched by Cabanis, of the general connection of the physical and moral nature of man. But to constitute it we must begin by drawing a fundamental distinction between the two simultaneous influences constantly exerted by the body upon the brain, through the blood-vessels or the nerves, the two bonds of union between the life of nutrition and the life of relation. Common to all the regions of the brain and indispensable for all, the action of the blood which oppresses or stimulates according to the mode and degree of its supply, only so far concerns the affective apparatus more than the others, in that this portion of the brain predominates by itself and has connections with the other parts. Over and above this general influence, the centre of the brain has a particular connection with the body through the special nerves of nutrition. These nerves perform for nutrition, though with less energy, a service in the way of perfecting it, analogous to that which the nerves of motion perform for the muscular functions. More necessary the higher the organism, the relation between the viscera of organic life and the brain, a relation which equally, whether

The relation of the principal region of the brain to the body.

active or passive, is unconscious, is concentrated by means of a triple series of ganglionic communications, which serve the further purpose of increasing the solidarity of the motor organs and even of the organs of tact.

Intimate
connection
of the ves-
sels and
nerves in the
higher or-
ganisms.

Such are the two sources, the one general, the other special, of the relation between man's physical and moral nature. They come into direct combination by virtue of the close connection, peculiar to the higher organisms, between the vessels and nerves, which everywhere mutually aid one another, for nutrition and for stimulation. But the doctrine of vital harmony, to be sufficiently precise, demands more detail on the mutual relation between the organic life and the cerebral existence.

Further
specification
of the rela-
tion between
the vegetal
life and the
brain.

In the first volume of this work, I limited the relation to the affective region of the brain, since for the two other regions we can admit a direct connection solely with the outer world, for movements or impressions. By a further application of the same principle the relation is restricted to the self-regarding instincts, the only instincts which are concerned with the within; so that the organs of sympathy are connected with the life of nutrition only by virtue of their special relations with the egoistic propensities. But with them we must also exclude the two noblest personal affections, vanity and pride, as being directed on the without equally with the social affections, though with a different object. As a last application of the same principle, we eliminate, as not within the scope of this particular relation, the two instincts of improvement, destructive or constructive, for they are in as close connection with the environment, as the active region of the brain which they command. This suite of restrictions leads ultimately to the limitation of the special relations between the body and the brain to the three instincts of conservation.

Limitation
to the three
instincts of
conserva-
tion.

Distinction
between the
three cases.

But again, in regard to these three, a broad distinction must be drawn, founded on the nature and function of the several organs. In all the higher animals, the two instincts that relate to the preservation of the species may be set aside, almost as completely as those which directly bear on this external world. They have no immediate connection but with their respective viscera, the one as regards the germs, the other as concerns the offspring. There is a difference in this respect between the sexes, especially in the human species, the sexual instinct being more developed in man, the maternal in woman.

For the due appreciation of this difference, I must intimate that the organic viscera which correspond to these two instincts, over and above their direct and special action on the brain, affect it indirectly through the blood it receives. In fact the fluids they secrete are always susceptible of reabsorption into the system when they are not discharged. The reaction of these fluids, the more normal the higher the organism, is to stimulate or calm, according as it proceeds from the fertilising or the alimentary liquid.

• It follows that we must restrict the special relations between the life of the body and the life of the brain to the correlation between the nutritive apparatus and the instinct of self-preservation, both in their own way bound up with the whole economy of which they are parts. Paramount and unintermitting however as this connection is, it must never put out of sight those which are due to fecundation or lactation. Finally, if we would systematise the vital harmony, we must ever combine these special ties with the general tie furnished by the blood.

The nutritive apparatus directly connected only with the instinct of nutrition. But we must not forget the other connections.

In this combination we see the nature and the difficulty of the theory to be explained in the fourth chapter of the seventh volume, which deals directly with all the relations whatsoever of man's physical with his moral constitution. The three influences just indicated suffice to explain all the normal interactions, and even those originating in disease, whether mental or bodily; and as a consequence, medicine re-enters, on system, the domain of sacred science. To show more clearly that this capital property resides in the three, it will not be out of place to instance it in the case of Dreams, where the two distinct investigations of disturbance and agreement are found in spontaneous combination.

Together, three in number, they suffice to explain the reactions of the physical and moral constitution of man.

When constructing social dynamics, I lamented the disuse imposed by Monotheism on the polytheistic inquiries into this important phenomenon, and I anticipated the systematic resumption of such inquiries in the ultimate state of human reason. We have now reached the point at which we can understand the Positive grounds for such resumption, to be given at length in the promised work. By the aid of the three influences above mentioned, we can appreciate the direct, nay even the indirect, modifications of our internal life, whether bodily or cerebral, due to the suspension of all relations with the exter-

The Positive theory of Dreams.

Sleep.

nal world. This implies, however, that, realising the wish of Cabanis, we have previously formed sounder views of sleep than those which as yet prevail. According to my theory of the brain, sleep never has the character of a purely passive state, the affective life persisting during sleep quite as much as the vegetal. Neither the one nor the other objects of direct cognisance, they produce appreciable results by modifying the intelligence and even the activity, more profoundly even than when their influence is complicated with that of environment. Adopting this principle, the sacred science will be enabled to reduce to system the subjective interpretation of Dreams, to the point of directing their course by means of suitable impressions, derived from the brain or the body.

Connection
of the vital
harmony
with the
feminine
Utopia.

To complete the exposition of the theory of vital harmony, I have to point out its legitimate connection with the bold hypothesis I ventured, in the last chapter, on the limitation to women of the function of reproduction.

The nervous
and vascu-
lar systems
more de-
veloped in
woman.
She is the
best type of
the relations
between the
brain and
body.

The higher the organism, the more extensive naturally become the inter-reactions of the physical and moral constitution, and this as a consequence of the relations between the three kinds of nerves and the vessels assuming greater importance as compared with the purely vegetative functions. Now, in this respect, woman is superior to man, by virtue of a more complete developement of the nervous and vascular systems. Woman is naturally qualified to be the highest type of the mutual influence of the cerebral and bodily life. This superiority in organisation has been aided, and that increasingly, by the social position of woman, for by it she has been, step by step, set free from the pressure of active life, and made more and more amenable to the influence of the emotions, especially of the sympathetic emotions. When the Positive reorganisation of opinions and manners shall have given women the first place in the Sociocracy, their share in reproduction will be largely increased, as a result of their increasing accessibility to the combined influences of continuity.

Utopia of
the Virgin-
Mother.

If so, the Utopia of the Virgin Mother will become, for the purer and nobler women, an ideal limit, well adapted to stand as the concise expression of human progress, carried to the point of systematising and so ennobling procreation. This adaptation of the theory will always be independent of its realisation in practice, provided only that it be looked upon as realisable,

by virtue of the power over its own organisation, even its physical organisation, possessed by the species most susceptible of modification, a power of which as yet we have only witnessed the faint beginnings. As success must depend principally on the general developement of the relations between soul and body, the persistent effort to solve the problem will place on a sound footing the systematic study of the vital consensus, as it will supply at once the noblest end and the best instruments.

Summary as these remarks must necessarily be, they seem to me to define with sufficient clearness the character and object of the most critical chapter in the whole of my elaboration of moral science. In reference to the treatise in which the Second Philosophy receives its complete and systematic form, all that remains is to explain its synthetical conclusion, which will be the general summary of the abstract, and the immediate source of the concrete, encyclopædia.

The synthetical conclusion of the volume on Morals.

In natural correspondence with the introduction already examined, the conclusion will give prominent expression to the capital renovation of profane science, due to its amalgamation with the sacred science. From the logical point of view, the continuous application of the subjective method will by this time have evidenced its intrinsic superiority to the objective in all its forms. Whilst the supreme science offers the only possible connection of the six preliminary sciences, its method alone can systematise deduction and the five modes of induction which answer to these sciences. Suppress this two-fold service, and analysis could never have issued in synthesis, where the doctrine allies itself with the worship with a view to the regime. And it is in this synthesis only that we can fully appreciate the intellectual efficacy of feeling, the sole possible source of any systematic construction. In principle, we had an indication of its power in this respect in the peculiar prerogative of feeling in regard to the continuity of our cerebral life, which it alone upholds during sleep and in spite of disease. But for this, its general influence, to exhibit the true logic, it is requisite that moral science give prominence in particular to the combination of feelings with images and signs, the combination which is destined to regenerate even Mathematics, as I explained at the outset.

The regeneration of profane science. (a) Logically.

This grand result of intellectual progress finds direct expression in the systematic incorporation of Fetichism with

This result expressed in the incorpo-

ration of
Fetichism.

Positivism. Originating in feeling and sanctioned for the purposes of art, the fusion of the two is no less applicable in science, as aiding it to perfect the lower speculations by assimilating them to the higher. In the maturity of human reason, the Positivist hands over to the Fetichist spirit the whole domain of profane science, reserving to itself that of sacred science, once the property of Theologism, which finally disappears.

(b) Scientifically.

From the point of view of science, **Morals**, as the supreme science, establishes for all the other sciences a discipline they cannot reject, a discipline as useful for guidance as for control, in which the intellect and the heart concur. Previously, even when best directed, the intellect could only attain an unsatisfactory rationality, for its investigations, if they had a basis, wanted an aim, in the absence of the persistent subordination of analysis to synthesis. On reaching **Morals**, reason may congratulate itself on having duly undergone this series of preparatory efforts, as necessary for its systematisation in its normal state on the basis of the instinctive suggestions of feeling. The several theories, hitherto provisional and precarious, now appear in their true character, as necessary elements of a science which is inherently indivisible, a science in which theory is in direct contact with practice. Never treated as purely arbitrary, the divisions of the sciences assume in **Morals** the character of artifices invented to facilitate a study which must long be abstract, previous to acquiring the concrete character which is the result of an entire coincidence of subject and object. Rejecting idle enquiries, the great problems come forward, problems which previously escaped the intellect, for this reason, that whilst compelled to select its true sphere from an immense multitude of questions open to it, it had no principle to guide it in its choice. The nobler theories, no longer hampered by the suggestions of empiricism, become the object of systematic attention, in proportion as the direct study of the soul demands a larger knowledge of the Great Being which it is to serve, of the body on which it depends, or of the environment to which it is subject.

Morals derive discipline from within.

The discipline seems to fail in the case of the science to which we owe it, and yet which is exposed to an inroad of misdirected enquiries, if studied in too abstract a spirit. But the same principle suffices for its regulation by virtue of the direct

correlation which exists in Morals alone between theory and practice. The study which, as its direct teaching, asserts the supremacy of feeling can never lead us to ignore the truth, that feeling, as the general motor power of human existence, finds a better encouragement in its exertion, whether that exertion take the shape of action or be limited to an artistic form, than in any scientific grasp of its own peculiar laws. So we find the fundamental law by which the degree of cultivation of each science depends on the requirements of the science next above it, embracing even the last science, where we have the completion of the abstract, with a view to the formation of the concrete, encyclopædia. To suit the formula of the law to this extension, all we have to do is, if theoreticians, to give the term science as large a comprehension as practitioners do; the instinct of synthesis in practitioners including in science all the precepts of human wisdom, whether practical or theoretic.

The conception of the Universal order becomes full and definitive only in Morals, for it is there that the laws of the lower phenomena are brought into systematic connection with those of the higher, as a result of the perfect completeness of the methods and doctrines. Condensed in Man, according to the admirable anticipation of Antiquity, the whole order at length combines coherence and dignity. Its greater relative perfection in regard to the lower phenomena is attributed justly to their greater simplicity. We feel that the model which they unconsciously furnish, ought to be, and may be, exceeded by the systematic exertion of the true Providence. In fact, the existence of man will surpass in regularity the order of the heavens, for in this latter the perturbations take the first place as soon as there is any complication of the forces at work. But, whilst it puts out to the full this superiority, the Great Being will never cease to reverence the type which was the natural guide of its infancy. The fusion of Fetichism in Positivism will enable man at all times to evince his just gratitude towards the order to which he is subject.

By their combination with the laws of Morals, the sole immediate objects of consciousness, a combination effected through the medium of the laws of the intellect, laws implied throughout, if not expressed, physical laws become rational in a degree which they could not by themselves attain. The last of the sciences should consolidate as well as complete the order which

In Morals alone does the conception of the Universal order become decisive and complete.

Physical laws gain in rationality when combined with Moral laws.

began with the first by giving its full effect to this interdependence, a point hitherto unnoticed, which establishes a mutuality between the several demonstrations of the invariability of nature. Notwithstanding this, from the independence, as between themselves, of the laws of Physics, there will always attach a certain empirical character to the order to which they belong, though its simplicity made it originally the type of regularity. But by the absorption of Fetichism by Positivism we are enabled to systematise the solidarity above indicated, as we thereby assimilate the external to the human order, thus made the subjective source of the universal synthesis. Retaining for Fetichism its old domain, nay enlarging it so as to include abstract contemplation, Positivity commits to it the function of giving the indispensable consecration to the economy in which we live, and in which without such consecration our gratitude could be paid only to beings whose existence is a chimera.

**THE THIRD
PHILOSOPHY.**

Next point,
the connection
of the
Concrete
with the
Abstract
Encyclopædia.

The synthetical conclusion of the last volume of the Second Philosophy thus adequately treated, the scientific encyclopædia has been duly set forth. In no better way could I present it as a whole than by naming separately each of the seven treatises which, in hierarchical succession, are to constitute it, the two extremes alone being reserved for me to execute. But the full inauguration of the definitive systematisation of Positive doctrine requires me to terminate this chapter by pointing out the normal affiliation of the concrete, to the abstract, encyclopædia.

The idea of
such a complement
traceable in
the previous
programme
in connection
with the
second
volume of
the treatise
on Morals.

The first trace of this complementary work may be found in the treatise of which I have just sketched the plan. For it is to consist—by the engagement above taken—of two volumes, and as yet I have only spoken of the first. There was no need to give any particular attention to the second, sufficiently explained in the ‘General View,’ and as a result of the whole of the present chapter, not to speak of the opening of the next. But this second volume, as the last of the treatise which concludes the abstract encyclopædia, connects it naturally with the concrete, as it is the passage from the theory to the practice of Morals. Education is in fact the first of the arts, the only art which is entirely in the full sense of the term general, the art which perfects action by improving the agent.

Education
the first of
the Arts.

Then come
the special
arts which

Availing ourselves of the transition education offers, a transition as spontaneous as it is systematic, we must now bring

before our minds, as a direct object, the arrangement of the concrete encyclopædia, as it regards the whole system of the special arts, no longer the arts which concern man, but those which deal exclusively with the external world. Their need of coordination made itself deeply felt during the last phase of the modern revolution, as a result of the near approach of the Positive state under the impulse given by Descartes, most powerfully seconded by Diderot. But attempts of a necessarily empirical character only served to point out, in a confused way, the end to be aimed at, with no other definite results save an useless accumulation of technical treatises. As every art ought to be learnt solely by judicious practice, these books, calculated to disturb rather than regulate our advance in skill, are of no value except from the historical point of view, so far, that is, as they looked to science, as a whole, to supply an addition, the nature of which had been hitherto misapprehended. And yet, the necessity to abstract in order to generalise, and the impossibility of discovering the laws of concrete phenomena, even when we combine dogmatism with empiricism, seem to preclude the real systematisation of the industrial arts.

require co-ordination.

The fact is, they do not admit of coordination in detail, for multiply precepts as we might they would never meet the variety of individual cases. But man's action upon the world as a whole, can be, and ought to be, systematised on the basis of the systematisation of his scientific conception of that world. This is the proper object of a work which I projected at the very beginning of my career, promised afresh at the close of my Philosophy, and a second time at the opening of this work. Its execution will be my last effort of construction; its specific title will be: *System of Positive Industry*, or, *Treatise of the aggregate influence of Humanity upon her Planet*. Here I must content myself with an outline of this work, the indispensable complement of the normal synthesis, and I adopt the same method as in the previous treatises.

They admit of no co-ordination in detail.

System of Positive Industry.

It will have, as all the others have, a religious introduction setting forth the constant dependence of the concrete on the abstract encyclopædia, setting forth also the synthetical character of the volume, a volume in which all the theories of science must constantly converge. As, however, it is the external order which is exclusively the province of industry, the human order can have no place in the volume, except as being

necessarily the source of systematic modifications. The two first chapters will have, then, to organise this general relation, the first explaining the spiritual, the second the temporal economy of Positive industry. On the basis of the two, the five following chapters will deal respectively with mathematical action ; astronomical action ; physical action ; chemical action ; and biological action, the action of animals as well as that of plants. The work will thus develop the homogeneity shown by the First Philosophy inevitably to exist between the classification of the arts and that of the sciences, allowing for the fact that the first is limited to the profane, the second embraces also the sacred sciences. To aid us in this construction, the institution of subjective milieus must once more be made to do service as an instrument of teaching, to give life and definiteness to our practical conceptions, the sphere of which is identical with its own. This done, the synthetical conclusion of the concrete volume will confirm the religious impression created by its introduction, by noting strongly the inadequacy, nay even the danger, of this outward art if it forget its subordination to the art which concerns man.

Object of
this Third
Philosophy.

Thus arises a Third Philosophy, and its object is to complete the Second, in its turn the offspring of the First. Devoting a volume to the First, the systematisation of the Positive doctrine may ultimately be condensed in ten volumes, volumes embodying the essence of human knowledge, practical or scientific, allowing for special developements, oral rather than written.

Full concep-
tion of the

The whole chapter issues in a conception of the Positive Philosophy, of greater completeness and higher unity than could have been hoped for. By virtue of the three degrees of generality which it brings into combination, the development of this conception forms the gradual transition from the sphere of feeling to that of activity, in accordance with the true mission of the intellect. Such a result is corroborative of my synthetical decision, definitely to subordinate the doctrine to the worship, the better to institute the regime, the systematisation of which is my next task.

CHAPTER IV.

GENERAL VIEW OF MAN'S ACTIVE EXISTENCE,

OR

DEFINITIVE SYSTEMATISATION OF THE POSITIVE LIFE.

IN instituting the Positive Religion, the great difficulty consists in reconciling sympathy and synthesis, severally cultivated in the worship and in the doctrine. The normal combination of the two is the grand object of the life, which is dependent in equal degree on the one and the other. It is in this way that the three elements of the true religion contribute to the foundation of Positive unity, by the simultaneous systematisation of love, faith, and action, the triple basis of real virtue.

The object of the regime to combine sympathy with synthesis.

Were it not for the exigencies of our physical condition, the worship would suffice to regulate our existence, an existence devoted exclusively, as it would then be, to affection, which the worship fosters. Speculation, as a part of our life, would be confined to the moral laws which the worship reveals, our action to the esthetic exercises in which it is our guide. The stimulus of necessity removed, egoism would be sufficiently repressed, so great is the all-pervading charm of altruism. Even the instinct of domination would need no discipline, for it depends for growth on the promptings of cupidity, in the inferiors at least, if not in the governors. Under these conditions, sympathy would lead directly to the establishment of unity, asking for no synthesis beyond that which would be the natural offspring of the unbroken supremacy of feeling over intelligence and activity.

Had we no bodily wants, the Worship would suffice for Unity.

As it is, our bodily wants necessitate a more complex religion, as they give rise to a form of existence which, first from the practical, then from the theoretic aspect, does not easily harmonise with our moral existence. The ever present obligation to modify an unpropitious milieu developes an activity which in its initial form is egoistic. The intellect thus driven to the study of the environment has a tendency to

Our bodily wants necessitate a more complex religion.

forget that its normal attitude is one of subordination to the heart.

Still, even under these conditions, sympathetic unity attainable..

This same existence, however, at a certain stage of its growth has the power of reproducing unity, relative unity, when the doctrine and the regime are so far developed as to accord with the worship. Our study of the laws of Physics leads us to the admission of the laws of the intellect, the link between them and the moral laws. Our conception of the universal order, originally limited to the moral laws, becomes in this way complete and systematic, with the effect of subordinating intellect to feeling. In like manner, man's active life requires for its full developement a collective advance, which of itself cultivates altruism. This moral reaction of his activity at first affects veneration only, as the basis of discipline, but it includes subsequently the two other social instincts, in proportion as the efforts of the individual are found to conduce to the welfare of the state, nay even of the race. Thus ultimately the doctrine and the regime converge to the worship, the result being a more complex, but also a more highly developed unity, than one which should rest simply on feeling. The stability of this unity is ensured by its affording a legitimate occupation to the powers which have a tendency to disturb it, and it employs them by devoting them to its own consolidation.

The regime more influential than the doctrine in maintaining unity.

In the installation and maintenance of this normal state, the share of the regime is to be held greater than that of the doctrine, considering its more natural and more complete affinity with the worship. For the isolation requisite for the cultivation of science has a tendency to make us despise, or at any rate neglect, our moral life. Nor is it any security against this error, that the intellect is occupied in synthetical investigations, and that with a directly social aim. Action, on the contrary, by its nature, predisposes us to sympathy, as it never lets us lose sight of the necessity of others' cooperation. Practical life stimulates this moral influence, even when analysis becomes the prevailing characteristic of its course, by the ultimate predominance of the industrial life.

Hence the doctrine must be subordinated to the regime.

Taking into account this difference in their influence on feeling as the principle of unity, the doctrine must hold a subordinate position in relation to the regime, as it does in relation to the worship, though in order of time the systematisation of our intellectual must precede that of our active life, as it is to

guide the latter. The most important part of the Western transition—the Roman—made contemplation the handmaid of action. Although later the monotheistic synthesis impaired this relation, the practical instinct of man has upheld it, and that avowedly in the interest of feeling, as the common superior alike of intellect and activity. Retrograde as are the tendencies of modern anarchy, the whole of human existence has so fostered the previous disposition as to make it easy for the Positive religion to secure the recognition of action as the principal minister of affection. In the normal state, it is only in the developement of our esthetic faculties that the intellect takes precedence of action, and for them we should interrupt at regular intervals the ordinary course of practical life. If, on the one hand, the doctrine completes the worship by connecting the human with the external order, on the other it prepares the way for the regime by systematising man's submission to, and interference with, the world without. The object thus assigned it regulates the developement of the intellect, guarding it against the misdirection to which, if left to itself, it is liable, and concentrating it on the great problems.

Action then becomes the best guarantee of unity, if once developed on such a scale as to combine faith and love. Maugre their natural affinity, sympathy and synthesis tend to diverge, if sympathy degenerate into mystical affections, synthesis into speculation for speculation's sake. Such degeneration, such divergence, find in the influence of action their only permanent prevention or remedy. It must be remembered, however, that if action is thus to regulate and combine love and faith, it can only do so when it takes a collective character, no other being compatible with the predominance of the heart and the free growth of the intellect. Now, the essential feature in the ultimate regeneration is the promotion and consolidation of this transformation of activity, as a consequence of the whole of the gradual preparation made during the first life of Humanity. Thus the solution of the human problem is drawn from the working out in full of the very conditions in which the problem has its origin. To demonstrate this is the main object of the present chapter, which is more than any other adapted to delineate the genuine system of the Positive religion.

Whilst it is the active class that must be most affected by the systematisation of the regime, whilst it depends for its attainment principally upon women, to inaugurate it and

Action the
best guaran-
tee of unity.

The theo-
retical
power must
systematise
the regime.

Hence the
Priesthood
must be
dwelt on.

uphold it belongs exclusively to the spiritual power. It is on this ground that, before proceeding farther, I must here explain in detail the constitution of the Positive priesthood, and even state its fundamental function in reference to the common education. These two points determined, we then form a direct estimate of the definitive systematisation of human life, in relation successively to the Individual, the Family, and the State.

So intimate is the correlation between the constitution of the priesthood and the system of education, that any clear definition of the former is not possible, so long as the latter remains undetermined. But in the 'General View' the education has already been explained, so that I may here proceed to examine the former question in which are necessarily implicated all parts of the regime.

Two preliminary
cautions,
one as to the
numbers
given, the
second as to
the assumption
made.

First, however, there are two cautions to be given, applicable equally to the other sections of this chapter and even of the next. The first relates to the numbers which I have thought it right to introduce in order to give precision to our conceptions, though any exact determination is as yet unattainable. When the necessary data are obtained, it will be easy, on the principles here stated, to effect the requisite corrections in my primary estimates. In the second place, in my exposition of the life, just as in those of the doctrine and of the worship, I have to keep in view the Positive state in its normal plenitude; I assume it, that is, established throughout the world. It belongs to the next chapter, the determination of the general course of its advent to full power; the question is as much out of place here as it would have been in social statics. For clearness' sake, however, my detailed statements will bear exclusively on the West, in the full sense of the term, including therein its colonial settlements; this gives a total population of one hundred and forty millions, and to this population the regeneration will at first be confined. We must multiply the numbers given by seven, when we take the whole race into account (its amount at present is quintuple), allowing for the normal increase of the nations which at present are below the western rate (sixty inhabitants to the square kilometre).

Constitution
of the Priest-
hood.
Its numbers
limited.

In order to consolidate the separation of the two powers, the general basis of the Positive regime, it is essential to limit the numbers of the contemplative class as far as is consistent with its full functions. Without this reduction, it would be im-

possible to secure the rare combination of intellectual and moral qualities, required for the priesthood of Humanity, the extent of which must be determined with especial reference to the encyclopædic instruction which completes and systematises Positive education. I have already stated that this instruction will occupy seven years, during which each pupil remains throughout under the same teacher, teaching, be it added, both sexes, though in separate classes.

Each Positive school, then, will require seven priests, and in addition three vicars, in order that the philosophical presbytery may suffice for the demands of the worship; of preaching; and of consultation, on moral, intellectual, or even physical questions. The scheme already referred to binds each professor, as a rule, to two lectures only in each week during ten months of the Positivist year, besides a month of examination. Every school is annexed to the temple of the district, as is the presbytery, the residence of the ten members of the sacerdotal college and of their families, with the senior member for president, and with a separation of residence for the vicars from the priests.

Require-
ments of
each Posi-
tive School.

On these data, it seems to me that the spiritual wants of the West may be duly met by a corporation of twenty thousand philosophers, of whom France would have the fourth. This rate is equivalent to having a temple for every ten thousand families, each family consisting of seven members, in agreement with a law to be explained later. Positive religion by its nature admits of this great reduction of the contemplative class, though its duties are more extensive than those of the analogous class under any Theologism. Always demonstrable and never ambiguous, its precepts will but seldom require explanation from the priests, remembering the universal diffusion of systematic instruction, which will often enable women and the elders to supply the place of the priest in counsel. With a view to their more entire concentration on the duties of teaching and worship, the philosophical class will be freed from all material cares, each temple being placed under the protection of the nearest banker, on whom it devolves to maintain the fabric and the priests.

Twenty
thousand
required for
the West.
The temples,
one for ten
thousand
families.

The Positivist clergy must be recruited from all classes, by conferring, at the age of twenty-eight, the provisional degree of aspirant on anyone who is thought qualified for the priesthood, on a judgment of his scientific noviciate, and of the subsequent

Mode of re-
cruitment of
the Posi-
tivist clergy.

period of unfettered action. Equally unfettered is the period of training for the priestly office, under the moral and intellectual surveillance of the senior member of the nearest college; a yearly stipend of one hundred and twenty pounds being allowed, but not beyond the age of thirty-five at the farthest, that being the normal age for the vicariate. It is with this office that begin the functions and obligations of the priesthood, restricted, however, to education and purely private consultations. From the vicars are chosen at the age of forty-two the priests of Humanity, the sole possessors of the full spiritual power, under the control of the high priest. Although each priest has first been vicar, nay even aspirant, in exceptional cases the supreme head of the Positivist clergy may confer the vicariate, nay even the priesthood, on any whom he may deem to fulfil the essential conditions, without requiring the regular course. Over and above the intellectual and moral tests, marriage, at any rate in the subjective form of the institution, is binding upon all priests, that they may be under the full influence of affection; they also renounce all property by inheritance, the better to ensure the complete abandonment of all idea of temporal greatness. An official residence being provided, for their subsistence the vicar and the priest depend on a yearly stipend of two hundred and forty pounds for the vicar, four hundred and eighty for the priest, plus their expenses for visitations and journeys.

Artistic and
scientific
pensioners.

Not included in the priesthood, but within the limits of the contemplative class, a suitable existence must be offered to those who, by the peculiarity of their constitution, are in heart and character below the level of their intellect. These pensioners, artists or savans, without any restriction as to number, receive annually, according to each case, the stipends of the aspirant, the vicar, or the priest. Moreover, the central priesthood provides for the expenses their works involve, in order that they may freely develop the incomplete powers they have, without obtaining the consideration which is due to the spiritual power.

The High
Priest of
Humanity.

The whole spiritual hierarchy is immediately and uninterruptingly under the influence of the High Priest of Humanity; he names, transfers, suspends, and even discards, on his sole responsibility, any of its members. Normally the residence of the pontiff must be Paris, as the metropolis of the West, but

never with any share in the government of the holy city. But, in order to ensure the noble simplicity demanded by such a supremacy, his annual income is only fivefold that of the ordinary priests, exclusive of the expenses incident to the administration of the central budget.

The vastness of his office makes it necessary for the Pontiff of the West to call habitually to his aid seven national superiors, each with a salary the half of his, over and above his necessary expenses. Four are allotted, one to each province, to Italy, Spain, Great Britain, and Germany, which will always remain distinct by their history, if not in language, after the normal disgregation of the actual nationalities. The three others are reserved for the colonial settlements of the West, no assistant being named for France, to which the High-Priest, as in direct contact, can pay sufficient attention.

His seven
assistants.

But the number will naturally be increased in proportion as the Positive religion advances towards its normal state of universality. This eminent branch of the priesthood will, then, furnish forty-nine members when mankind is completely regenerated. Besides their ordinary duty, on them it will devolve, on the death or retirement of the Pontiff, to influence or correct the choice he will have freely made of his successor, with regard to whom they will consult, if need be, the whole of the senior members of the colleges within their respective jurisdiction.

The number
ultimately
forty nine.

As for the dress of the priesthood, in public or private, imitating the judicious reserve of the founders of Catholicism and Islam, I prefer to adjourn a determination which if it is to be effective, must be completely spontaneous. We may be confident, however, that, from the definiteness of Positivism as compared with any form of Theologism, the appropriate modifications in dress will be of more rapid introduction. The form of its clothing will remind people, that the priesthood, by its true position intermediate between the sexes, has more affinity with the female sex; and the colour will show that it speaks in the name of the past, in the interest of the future. Whilst disorganising costume, the anarchy of modern times has instinctively respected the distinction of the sexes, and therein lies the germ of discipline for the less strongly marked cases. The reorganisation of costume should naturally begin with the clergy, as, in its social character, more homogeneous and better defined than the patriciate or the proletariat.

The dress of
the Priest.

Spiritual
concentra-
tion.

It is in virtue of its eminently synthetical nature that the spiritual power allows, nay, even requires the plenitude of centralisation just described. Since the priestly function is essentially one and the same for all priests, it might, as in the beginning, so for ever, be discharged by one single person, provided that he could make himself felt everywhere. The plurality of organs in the spirituality being, if closely examined, solely to compensate the deficiency due to the vast extension of the service, they should be in such subordination to their head that their class image forth the unity entrusted to his charge. He is the priesthood, and, at need, could change all its members, leaving the spiritual organism intact. The Papacy, at all times hampered by the college of cardinals, and often liable to Councils, was never able to attain the ascendancy which will be allowed the Pontificate of Humanity, as a natural consequence of the ripeness of things for the separation of the two powers.

The depend-
ence and as-
cendancy of
the Priest-
hood.

In order to consolidate the concentration which is natural to the sociocratic clergy, the individuality of its members, whilst more strongly marked than that in the theocratic priesthood, must be limited to the requirements of personal dignity, of fair emulation, and above all of a just responsibility. Renouncing power in every shape, renouncing even wealth, the priests of Humanity are not exposed to the great causes of disagreement. Their function is to direct opinion; they therefore shun command, the better to give effect to the powers of conviction and persuasion. Devoting himself to the supreme interpreter of the Great Being, each priest feels that he shares in the most extensive power, a power before which all temporal greatness sinks into the shade, for that is the attribute of the class which bends the wills of men without regulating them. The modest income on which the priests depend for subsistence is always subject to the will of the very chiefs whom they have to discipline, and whose capricious action will often leave them no resource but the voluntary contributions of sincere believers. Nothing, however, can deprive the Positive clergy of its incomparable privilege, that of representing to the actual generation the two subjective portions of Humanity. The noble contrast the priesthood thus presents between dependence and ascendancy is most pronounced in the case of the High-Priest, for he, a simple citizen of the metropolis of man, with a salary

inferior to the income of the poorest banker, yet exercises by free assent an universal influence.

With the object of completing the purifying process begun in the renunciation of all inheritance, it is essential that the priests of Humanity forego any profit to themselves derivable from their labours. All intellectual services should be public and gratuitous. It is incumbent on the contemplative class to offer the others the constant example of a wise moderation in the use of speech, writing, and above all of the press, so greatly abused during the period of anarchy. The greater part of the ideas of everyday application are to be transmitted by tradition, by practice and in silence, books being reserved for the communication of any real advance in our abstract and general conceptions. Still, all allowance made for its habitual duties, the priesthood of Sociocracy will unavoidably write more than the clergy of the Theocracy. But the cost of printing the works thus produced is met by the pontifical treasury; their distribution being left to the authors, whose name is to be given in all cases, and who are under a solemn obligation never to sell them. The promise to this effect, exacted from the priest at his consecration, and renewed on each publication, is so essential to the dignity of the clergy, that the High-Priest will revoke the priest who shall have thrice broken it, accepting him however as a pensioner, if he has sufficient intellectual value.

No profit to be derived by the Priests from their writing labours.

The rule must apply further to all their teaching, be it in order to prevent the degradation of the theoretic class, be it in order to save the children of the wealthy from private instruction, which a foolish pride leads the rich to substitute for public. The public teaching ought always to suffice, allowing for the explanation which, exceptionally, each priest will give gratuitously to the pupils he shall judge worthy of special attention. Private teaching, fallen into the hands of theorists who have failed of admission into the priesthood, even as pensioners, will be so discredited as to be no disturbance of the systematic instruction.

Nor from their teaching.

It is the more important to secure this result, as we have no other protection for the official teaching under a regime which will always keep spiritual discipline clear of all oppressive temporal action. Whilst the state furnishes the priesthood the means for giving instruction to the full extent to all, it must

Teaching outside the priesthood not to be forbidden.

abstain from throwing difficulties in the way either of individuals or societies if they wish to enter into legitimate competition with the public schools. Persistent however as must be our respect for liberty in teaching, such liberty will exist in principle rather than in practice, unless the regular teaching become altogether degenerate, a condition of things which the spiritual head of Humanity may guard against or remedy by remodelling at need his whole clergy.

Such are the introductory observations I was bound to offer here on the special constitution of the Positive priesthood. They will be complemented in the natural course of things as I explain its regular intervention throughout the regime. But without this introduction to the whole, the several particulars could not have the requisite precision and clearness.

Educational
Function of
the Priest-
hood.

The next point to examine is the principal function of the Positivist clergy, and for this I delineate the education which it reduces to a system. The essential outlines of this exposition were given in the 'General View,' so that all that is here required is to complete, coordinate, and above all to summarise it, with such minor corrections as have been from time to time, not unnaturally, suggested by the course of the present work.

The object
of the Posi-
tive Educa-
tion.

Positive education founds the true unity, by teaching us to live for others. Its aim being to fit us for the unintermitting service of Humanity, it remains above all moral, even when most intellectual in character. Based on the innate existence of the sympathetic instincts, it subjects to them the personal instincts, during the period of life in which the natural predominance of these latter is very largely kept in check, owing to the providential interposition which frees us from the necessity of acting.

Complete
preparatory
period,
twenty-eight
years.

This educational preparation, continuing till twenty-one, is divided into two parts, the one private, the other public, the point of separation being the age of puberty—at fourteen. The first part has for its object the cultivation of the affections, the second that of faith; the first under the superintendence of the mother, the second under that of the priest; the two together issue in a period of free action during a complementary period of seven years. Twenty-eight years, then, are allotted to the training of the individual, and the beginning, two principal phases, and close, are distinctly marked in the four first sacra-

ments, in which the child of the Great Being gradually passes into the servant.

That servant is by marriage directly consecrated to social existence; and then enters on a last period of fourteen years, during which the exercise of his activity as a citizen is needed to complete his preparatory life. As, however, both this last and even the preceding phase are periods of full liberty, I would not include them under education properly so called, as that always implies a state of tutelage. An additional reason for excluding them is their being confined to the active sex, whereas the first half of our preparatory life is common to both sexes. It is the combination of these two characteristics, universality and minority, that must fix the sense of an ill-defined term, which in its widest acceptation may embrace the whole of our objective life, considered as a course of preparation for our subjective existence. In this last sense its use is proper only in the work already promised; there *education* will be the name for every preparation under the guidance, first, of the Family, then, of the Country, lastly, of Humanity.

Education proper limited to twenty-one years. Wider sense of the term.

Restricting the term here to its more usual acceptation, I have, in the first place, to explain the private phase of Education. The second definition divides it into two equal portions; the one essentially affective; the second that in which begins the cultivation of the intellect, under the direction of the mother, through esthetic studies. Hence the subdivision of the whole of education, properly so called, into three septennial periods, the distinction between which, clearly indicated in all the Western languages, is most strongly marked in Spanish, in the names *Nino*, *Muchacho*, and *Mozo*, with their derivatives.

The private period of Education proper.

The first of these periods must be held the most decisive, since then it is that the mother's discipline lays so firm a foundation of morality that the rest of life is seldom able to affect it. Then it is that, sheltered from the egoism of action, the three sympathetic instincts grow beyond recall, more particularly veneration, but also benevolence, for which, even in this dependent state, there is a sufficient sphere. From the moment of birth, all worship during this period is condensed in the adoration of the mother, the only Providence which infancy can or ought to recognise. The consciousness of the Great Being, however, comes instinctively as soon as language begins, for its transmission by the mother is an indication of its social origin,

The first septennial period the most decisive. Moral training. Worship of the Mother.

an indication speedily confirmed by the whole of the child's relations with others. The distinction between the mother and Humanity does not interfere with the unity of the child's worship, for the mother even at this early age becomes the personification of Humanity, in which at that time the Country is lost.

Intelligence
trained.

Although the education of the infant is almost exclusively moral, the intelligence is awakened by the observation of beings, guided by a purely Fetichist synthesis, all interference with which must be carefully avoided. Under the influence of this synthesis, as emotional as it is intellectual, the first beginnings of the true logic are traceable in the combination of feelings with images, soon aided by signs. Thus is attained in its simplest form cerebral unity, wherein activity, with no outward object to secure, subserves the intelligence to express emotions.

The second
period from
seven to
fourteen.
Training
Esthetic.

This form persists during the second period of childhood, but with a tendency then to the more complex unity required in real life, because the child is now in contact with others outside the Family, the only collective being originally within its cognizance. This enlarged contact is a consequence in especial of its esthetic studies, then entered upon on the basis of the images derived from the first period. Although these studies in the main should be left to the child itself, the mother's care prepares the way for the normal discipline, by instituting the practice of exercises in poetry, in music, and in drawing, even prior to reading and writing. When, by the acquisition of these last, full communication is established, the child enters at once on the knowledge of the Great Being, through admiration of its master works, in spite of the diversity of languages, ancient or modern. From familiarity with this difference, there dawns the idea of Country in the widest sense, hitherto undistinguished from Humanity, but henceforward characterised by language, even when the difference has become purely a matter of history, in consequence of the universal adoption finally of the Positive language. Indeed, in the normal state, the study by all of the seven languages which presided over the three grand phases of the Western transition must never be suppressed. Apart from the imperishable monuments which are their consecration, their spontaneous concurrence will always remain indispensable to the complete creation of the language of mankind, a direct

The Universal
Language.

outgrowth of the fusion of the five modern languages, under the presidency of the Italian as the most musical.

During the second period, the moral education given by the first is carried on, by virtue of the influence on the affections exerted by the esthetic culture. From the relation between the two we must draw the best criterion of the intellectual advance, instinctively directed towards the perfecting of the personal cultus, the formation of which comes now to be distinctly traceable. A prayer, a hymn, a drawing, in honour of the mother, will evidence, by their gradual improvement, the gradual increase of power to body forth real feelings, not without aid borrowed from the artistic treasures of Humanity.

Moral training during second period.

Art during this period holds avowedly the first place, but it forms, as it were, a preparation for science, by encouraging the observation of all events, whereas previously beings and beings only had been its object. For art, whether fine art or industrial, has to do, as science has, solely with phenomena; it differs from science in always referring them to bodies, instead of treating them as abstractions. Towards the end of the first period of childhood, the child spontaneously forms subjective milieus, and by their aid combines these two modes of contemplation, by forming images distinct from beings, at least in the case of the inorganic world, the primary domain of scientific investigation.

Intellectual.

In the 'General View,' I attributed to the second period of childhood a polytheistic synthesis, as a natural product of abstract observation and in perfect harmony with the esthetic culture. I would now limit this modification to the three first centuries of the normal state, for by that time the historical filiation of that state should be a matter of universal consciousness. When, as a result of the fusion of Fetichism in Positivism, Theologism in all its forms shall be eliminated, the philosophy of the earliest period of childhood will persist through the second, to be incorporated, in the third, with human reason in its definitive state. The cultivation of the artistic faculties will be found compatible with this improvement of the individual initiation, which by it is dispensed from servilely reproducing the evolution of the race. With one language-paramount, Fetichist poetry, finding free scope by a large introduction of subjective milieus, will evoke master works more in keeping than the ancient with the normal age of Humanity.

The Polytheistic character of the second period need not survive the first three centuries of the normal state.

In both these periods some industrial training.

In regard to private education, the present is the fitting place for a remark, affecting both its periods, but specially applicable to the second, on the spontaneous beginning of practical life. Though such action as there is at that time should be of an esthetic rather than an industrial character, it is well to assist the natural growth of the instinct of construction, were it only as a counterpoise to that of destruction. The mother will easily turn to purpose, if she attend to the point: intellectually, the power there is in action to evidence the conditions and difficulties of effecting any result whatever; morally, its tendency to implant a direct consciousness of the value of the voluntary cooperation of men and even of animals.

The child must be taught that feelings are more important than acts.

Again, these two periods are the time for creating the fundamental habit of mind which should always put forward feelings as more important than acts, and this is effected by leading the child to judge of acts by their bearing upon feelings, be it as exercise or as result. Such teaching can only be begun with effect at the age when actions, as of no serious consequence, leave the motives which inspired them open to view and more intelligible from their simple character. It is then that the mother lays the synthetical basis of Positive morality by making the child feel that happiness consists above all in the gratification of our kindly affections, acts being only the means by which we satisfy and even excite them.

Public Instruction.

Having said enough on private education, we must pass to the public instruction which is its systematic complement, the nature and course of which I have already determined.

Its general spirit. The supremacy of the Heart.

The chief difficulty it presents is this, how to develop the intellect without detriment to the supremacy of the heart, which indeed it ought to fortify. To bring the two into harmony is the high prerogative of Positivism, which succeeds Theologism in the spiritual government of mankind, in order to repair the errors, intellectual and moral, inherent in the second or indirect causality. For the earlier form sanctioned the primacy of feeling as well as allowed the search after laws; so that in reality the sole flaw in the Fetichist synthesis was its absolute character, inevitable in the beginning of things. When limited in its scientific application to the cases in which we cannot discover the law, Fetichity, thus made relative, from the esthetic point of view should keep and even enlarge its original domain, in order to aid Positivity in the intellectual, no less than in the

moral, sphere. Theologism, on the contrary, the value of which was mainly political, aggravated the main disadvantages of the absolute philosophy, by making happiness and perfection consist in a life of contemplation. True it is, that the revolt of the intellect against the heart reached its full proportions only under the impulse of metaphysics, and that more particularly during the period of modern anarchy, yet if we trace it to its source we come to the synthesis of Theology, at the time when the priesthood no longer controlled the doctrine. But by introducing Positivism as the direct successor of Feticism, the normal state enables us to avoid, in the education of the individual, the dangers unavoidable in the evolution of the race, as it gets clear of the disturbing influences of unchecked abstraction.

For this, it is enough if the analytical study of the doctrine be entered on under the synthetical direction of the worship, as is indicated in the everduring fusion of the philosophic function in the priestly office, to which the scientific elaboration will always be made secondary. With its foundations laid in the developement of the affections, and with the preliminary cultivation of the artistic faculties, the study of abstract science closes education by establishing the systematic unity which is the only possible guide for active life. The effort of analysis required for the construction of this unity must always be treated as limited to adolescence, and as introductory to the regime of synthesis, the only perfectly rational regime, as in it all our conceptions converge to the service of Humanity. Such is the judgment formally enunciated in the sacrament appointed for the inauguration of the public education, a judgment expanded on fitting occasions during the whole course of scientific study. It is more firmly rooted during that course, by three influences: the continuity of the mother's care; the prolongation of the esthetic culture; the opening of the preparatory stage of practical life.

For this purpose the worship must institute the study of the doctrine.

Bound to teach in succession the seven fundamental sciences, the professor is preserved from any excessive predilection for any one of them, by keeping constantly before him their synthetical object, one in full conformity with the priestly character. Addressed alternately to the two sexes in the same week, his lectures, as a natural result, lead both teacher and learner to appreciate the continuous submission of the intellect to feeling.

Each professor teaches the seven sciences in succession.

The High Priest must exercise constant watchfulness to guard against intellectualism.

The noviciate moral rather than intellectual.

Still in spite of all the safeguards inherent in the encyclopædic system, the concentration of the intellect acts with such force, that nothing but the watchfulness of the High-Priest, aided by public opinion, can prevent or remedy its dangerous influence on the heart and on the intellect.

For the right institution of the scientific noviciate, it must be always represented as having a moral, rather than an intellectual aim. Through it faith ought to perfect love, in order to regulate activity, the means being, the study from the relative point of view of the universal order. In the private education, the growth of affection and the culture of the imagination have given, as a natural consequence, the sense of moral laws, and even of the value of voluntary submission, more particularly through the instrumentality of personal worship. But this spontaneous result remains insufficient and precarious so long as the order within us is disconnected from the order without us, to which it is subject. It is not possible to consolidate the soul but by linking it to its environment by the intermedium of the body. Hence arises the necessity for a course of abstraction, the object being the formation of general conceptions as the indispensable condition of fixed convictions shared by all. The course must begin, then, with the simplest phenomena, which underlie all the others, and must proceed by gradations to the phenomena of moral science, where abstraction ceases, and where, consequently, the episode of analysis ends in the systematisation of the state of synthesis, in its origin purely spontaneous.

Demonstration cultivated for submission.

The Positive religion triumphs over the tendencies to criticism encouraged by its scientific introduction and certain to recur during the abstract education unless there be a constant surveillance. In cultivating demonstration it aims at producing, not barren or divergent discussion, but active and voluntary submission, which is to ennoble even the most physical necessities, by connecting them with moral advance. It is not a demonstrated faith, but a faith which at all times is demonstrable, that suits the maturity of human reason, when it will be the object to trace consequences, not to discuss principles.

The noviciate will lead the Positivist to see that his individual must

At the close of his encyclopædic noviciate, the Positivist will feel, more strongly than before, the need of subordinating the individual intellect to the intelligence of the race, and of keeping speculative powers for the incidental demands of active

life in its natural course. Those whom their vocation singles out as destined for the priesthood will share more profoundly in these two convictions, otherwise they could never become the interpreters of the Great Being and the discipliners of human life.

be subordi-
nated to the
collective
intelligence.

Such is the general spirit which must always preside over our intellectual education as a safeguard against tendencies fatal to the religious aim of that education. Its necessity will be deeply impressed by the synthetical preamble to the encyclopædic noviciate, the first three weeks of which will be devoted to the eighteen lectures on the First Philosophy, explained in the preceding chapter. The object we have in view in this extraordinary concentration of lectures will be the better attained, by addressing them to both sexes at once, met for the occasion in the temple, in the presence of the whole presbytery, with the chief magistrates and the families of the catechumens as assessors. An appropriate introductory discourse having been given by the senior priest, one lecture will give the theory of abstraction, the fifteen following will be devoted to the fifteen universal laws, the two last to the construction of the encyclopædic hierarchy. The effect of these nineteen introductory lectures on the pupils, the teachers, and the public should be a lasting impression, calculated to ensure a tendency to prefer synthesis whilst engaged in analytical studies.

The course
of Instruc-
tion.

The nine-
teen lectures
on the First
Philosophy.

With this introduction, the Second Philosophy will systematically develop the Positive doctrine during seven years, forty lectures on one of the seven sciences being given each year to either sex. But Mathematics require a larger number, three times as many in fact, sixteen being given to each of the five first chapters of the work I have described, and twenty to each of the two last. To suit this distribution, the ordinary number of lectures must be doubled during each of the two first years, an exception limited to the boys; the girls' teaching, though more condensed, must not be curtailed in substance.

The seven
years given
to the ab-
stract
sciences.

Remembering the explanations of the last chapter in completion of the indications of the first volume, there is no need for further details on the scientific noviciate. It coincides in time with the industrial apprenticeship, the influence of which is calculated to reinforce its synthetical character and its purpose. This cooperation is furthered by devoting the three last years to travel, according to the judicious practice of the

The theo-
retic novi-
ciate and
industrial
apprentice-
ship close
together.

Three years
of travel.

Western proletariat, a practice which might be useful to all. By long residence in one place their travels may be combined with continuous scientific study, considering the homogeneous character of the sacerdotal teaching and its complete regularity, as the same lecture will at one and the same time be in course of delivery in all schools of the globe. Yet it must not be forgotten that the real preparation for active life should follow, not coincide with, that of the intelligence. But it is a consequence of the free trials which come after the scientific course during the seven years between the sacrament of Admission and that of Destination. For this period, which alone is, in the full sense, practical, the preceding is but the simple introduction, and however necessary it may be, it bears rather on the intellectual and moral than on active life.

Effects of
the Public
Education.

On this plan, the public education will perfect love by faith, so to systematise action, the paramount influence of which latter will be found the best security for Positive unity, as preserving affection and thought equally from the peculiar aberrations of either. It is not a foolish pride, but rather profound humility, that should be encouraged by our encyclopædic initiation, such is the pervading contrast between the difficulty of the real problems and the weakness of man's power to solve them, if we put aside idle questions which cloke our incapacity. Limiting the process of analysis to preparing the synthetic construction, our initiation subordinates speculation to action with a view to affection, whose empire it consolidates by its systematic recognition of submission, enforced submission in the first place, then voluntary.

Reading
discouraged
as a habit.
What read-
ing useful.

The regime described, so far from encouraging the habit of reading, makes all feel to what an extent it hampers meditation, the only real aid to which is to be found in the inexhaustible study of the master-works of poetry, invariably in relation with the problem of man's existence.

Guided by the hints I have given, the true Positivist may, even if a priest, reduce his library to a hundred volumes. Philosophy is condensed into ten, poetry into twenty more; another twenty will suffice for the whole of our concrete conceptions, the data required for industrial purposes, natural history, and the knowledge of the past. The second half of the collection will be devoted to the monumental works which deserve from their original merit to survive the systematic

destruction of the accumulations which now compress or misdirect thought.

To end our examination of the universal education, we must direct our attention to the harmonious relation of its two periods, public and private, the agreement of which is hidden and even impaired by their being consecutive and not simultaneous. In the normal state the one prepares, the other completes the definitive consecration of each child of the Great Being to the continuous service of Humanity, by fashioning him, at first unconsciously, then consciously, to a true unity. The first leads us to faith by love, the second strengthens love by faith. The first develops voluntary submission, the second continues the work by making us acquiesce in the involuntary, the two together resulting in a discipline as noble as it is stable, where veneration and necessity assist one another. The first phase has for its basis the sense of moral laws, the second the knowledge of physical laws, the two are in concert in reference to the laws of the intellect, which are equally connected with the two orders. The one employs analysis in the spirit of synthesis, the other consolidates synthesis by analysis. But their difference in nature and in their processes is manifested in their results, always certain in the private period, as in conformity with the normal state; frequently missed in the public phase, which merits not the name of education when not completed.

Harmony of the two great divisions, private and public.

The encyclopædic noviciate, then, must be held to consist emphatically in its last year, the others being but steps in its preparation. The scientific education which stops short of its termination in Morals will be an object of contempt, as it would tend to encourage discussion to the exclusion of systematic submission; it would be, that is, a perversion of analysis from its true aim, synthesis. It is, then, on the last year that the sacrament of Admission must directly depend, the sacrament which follows and condenses our public education. Still so necessary are the preliminary notions, that none may be admitted to study Morals, who are found, in the annual examinations, too unversed in profane science. Even in these exclusions, however, the priesthood must show its liberality; they are to depend on defective appreciation of method rather than on want of knowledge; and in no case must depend on the question, where the candidate got his knowledge; it is quite open to him to have acquired it by his own unaided efforts.

Hence the importance of the last year.

The two
phases con-
trasted so-
cially.

If we consider them from the social point of view, private education and public education represent, the one the Family, the other Humanity. But the perfect combination of these two extreme terms of the social series is only possible on the insertion of the middle term. Now the Country is a conception which we cannot appreciate previously to the active phase which succeeds the affective and speculative phases, for in them the bond of citizenship exists only in rudiment, owing to the absence of a practical aim. Again, it is through this complementary period of freedom that we concentrate and combine the ideas and the feelings of order and progress, which separately characterised the two successive stages of our preparation whilst pupils. By showing us the value of an order due to will, private education sets on foot our moral progress; as the result of our knowledge of an order due to fate, public education gives a systematic direction to material progress. Thus the training of the individual reproduces the evolution of the race, which in the mediæval period originated the idea of moral progress, and carried forward physical improvement during the Western revolution. It is for the complementary period of education proper to harmonise these two results, which was, historically, the task devolved on the exceptional century which was destined to precede the normal state.

Disposition
developed by
the Positive
Education.

Supposing the Positive education not to have failed, we are formed by it to live for others by the definitive attainment of true unity. We have learnt to respect the external order as the basis of the human, but at the same time to look upon it as the sphere for a persistent and collective action. The empirical character which always cleaves to our conception of it renders us more disposed to modify it; its regularity, the effect solely of its simplicity, stimulates us to make our own arrangements, the creations of will, more perfect than the laws of destiny. Convinced that by union only can we ease the yoke of that destiny, we attach more value to the feelings which secure that union than to the results which it produces, for we are aware of the instability of our existence, whether individual or collective. Ever on the point of sinking under the weight of the body or of the environment, the soul never relaxes its exertions, never ceases to find in them a stimulus to moral improvement, the unfailing source of happiness and dignity.

Such are the prevalent dispositions due to an education in

which reason confirms feeling, at the age at which we are most ready to treat egoism as the great defect of our nature. Far from encouraging discussion, Positive instruction systematises submission, as the permanent basis for action, which is the real end of our being, in order to better our condition and more than all our nature. At the close of the encyclopædic noviciate, we feel that what we want is simply to retain the principles it has given us, whilst forgetting their scientific proofs, the more perfectly to devote our intelligence to the practical applications of those principles.

The dispositions formed by the Positive Education ; submission and retention of principles, not of their demonstrations.

This general result is characteristic of the system of Positive education in and by itself, even supposing it not derived from the clergy, though the clergy alone can secure its universal reception. Thus we attain the adoption by all of the dispositions which make it possible for the priesthood of Humanity to systematise the action of man with a view to its consecration to the service of the Great Being, such systematisation being effected by the developement of the unity, the groundwork of which was laid by the preparatory period. It is this systematisation which I have now to consider in its nature and course, in relation, first, to the individual, then to the Family, lastly to the State.

Conclusion of the subject of Education proper.

Our progress will be the sounder, if I first explain a religious institution, the special object of which is to condense our whole advance towards perfection, physical, intellectual, and moral, by concentrating it on one capital step. This is, the systematisation of human reproduction, by making it depend solely on the woman. But before I examine an Utopia, pointed to in the previous chapters, I must set forth clearly its aim, an aim traceable to the need of a condensation inherent in every synthesis, even when partial, much more when general.

Systematisation of active life. Preliminary observations. Institution of a religious Utopia.

Such a condensation is the natural consequence and the necessary complement of the separation of the two powers ; this separation alone makes it possible by calling for systematisation, and exacts it when it divides theory from practice. At this point it is hopeless to avoid or remedy the divergence of feelings and thoughts save by resuming the synthesis in a special institution, as a focus for our highest emotions and conceptions. There are however two distinct ways of satisfying the want here indicated, mysteries if the religion be theological, utopias if it be Positive.

A condensation necessary to a synthesis.

Precedent in
the Eucha-
rist.

The sole decisive example of such a complement to synthesis naturally, then, emanated from Catholicism, instituting, as it did, at its origin, the incomparable sacrament of the Eucharist, to condense at once its worship, its doctrine, and even its regime. So completely characteristic of the Western Monotheism was this admirable condensation that the system lost all coherence as soon as it was changed. Although, however, as the first type of the concentration of a synthesis, the Catholic sacrament deserves eternal reverence, in the Positive religion we must satisfy the same want in another way. As a fact, the Catholic systematisation was, strictly speaking, limited to the emotions; it was not able satisfactorily to include intellect or activity, though it managed to evade their demands so long as the affective transition lasted. On the contrary, the comprehensiveness inseparable from the Positive synthesis compels the institution, which is to serve as its condensation, to be a presentment at once of the three constituents of human nature, in their true order of dependence. In a word, the synthetical conclusion of Positivism must harmonise order and progress, by the institution of a progress which is the developement of order in the full signification of the term. Now, this is what rightly constructed utopias can effect, and in the increasing production of such utopias we have the indication, though not the satisfaction, of the craving for unity arising from modern anarchy.

Former
Utopias.

The trans-
mutation of
metals.

There is a necessary correlation between these synthetical constructions and the progress of Positivity; hence, as yet, they have been confined to the external order, especially the inorganic order, but not to the exclusion of the vital. The best worked out and the most effective took its rise in the Middle Ages, with Chemistry. During the greater portion of the Western revolution, the transmutation of metals offered an admirable rallying-point for all the efforts, both theoretical and practical, directed to the improvement of man's environment. Its sway lasted till the approach of the final crisis, when the spirit of utopian speculation was ennobled by having a social aim given it, as had been foreshadowed, for three centuries, by abortive attempts. But the social or ultimate domain of Positivity, whether imaginative or dealing with reality, required a doctrine of universal application, in default of which an utopia, which ought to be a condensation, remains simply an

aperçu, an element of disturbance rather than a source of progress. Now this great primary condition is adequately met by the definitive advent of Sociology, with its consequence, the irresistible convergence of the revolutionary movement towards the installation of the Positive religion. This religion, as the legitimate issue of previous advance, comes forward at once to eliminate subversive utopias, and to substitute a synthetic conception which shall rally all high aspirations around one important progress, representative of the universal supremacy of Morals.

As early as 1838, in the third volume of my 'Philosophy,' there was the implicit announcement of a movement in this direction, in the proposal to introduce, deliberately, in Biology imaginary organisms, in order to perfect the science as a whole. But as, in this its earliest form, the suggestion had only an intellectual bearing, it could not be taken as a type of Positive utopias, which must be practical quite as much as theoretical. Yet, compared with the transmutation of metals, it was an advance in the institution of utopias, for it enlarged their sphere by adding to the inorganic the vital order. A better instance of progress in the same province, was the suggestion made at the beginning of the present work, as to the transformation of herbivorous into carnivorous animals, viewed as the limit of the improvement of animals. Whilst it opens a wide field for science, this utopia equally interests art, not as regards the animals which elaborate our food, for in them an excess of animalisation would be an evil, but as regards the companions of our labour, which are thereby rendered more active and more intelligent. This advance, however, is still inadequate, confined as it is to the domain of profane science and not carrying Positive idealisation into the world of man, which is its true sphere, as being at once more important and more modifiable. To direct aright, then, the growth of utopias, which are to be the condensations of the final synthesis, we must carry them into the domain of sacred science, as the only one in which we can condense progress on the basis of order, by a combination of the three modes or degrees of amelioration, physical, intellectual, and moral.

Such is the theory, from the historical as well as the dogmatical point of view, of utopias in the Positive sense, in which poetry and philosophy should be in more perfect concert than

Biological
utopia.
'Phil.Pos.'
vol. III. 433
1st ed.

The theory
of utopias
complementary
to that
of religion.

they were in the utopias of Theology or Metaphysics, since in the Positive the relative takes the place of the absolute. The theory, as here stated, becomes the complement of the theory of religion, by condensing the real unity in an ideal limit, the point of convergence for all the distinct aspirations, plans, and attempts bearing on the continuous advance towards perfection of our threefold nature. The better to secure this convergence, it is necessary to assign it one single object; we may substitute others when it has been attained; a course always open, so boundless is the domain of human Providence, though as yet scarcely existing in rudiment, even as regards our environment.

Utopia of
the Virgin-
Mother.

In this way I am led to present the utopia of the Virgin-Mother as the synthetical condensation of the Positive religion, all the various aspects of which find their place in it. Its examination in detail belongs to the work promised for 1859 on the theory and practice of Morals. All that I can do here, is to coordinate, in regard to it, the main points.

Inductive
considera-
tions.

Rising superior to scientific prejudices, we must first acknowledge that there is no flaw in the agreement of the institution with the whole system of natural laws. Restricted to the most modifiable species, and in that species peculiar to the sex which is most perfectible, in that sex it concerns the noblest function of organic life, the one in which the brain can most influence the body. The reasonableness of the problem has its ground in our determination of the real office of the male generative system, which has as its chief purpose the supply to the blood of a stimulating fluid, capable of invigorating the action of all the organs, the organs of animal as well as those of vegetal life. When compared with this general function, fecundation becomes but a particular case, one more and more secondary as the organism is higher. It is conceivable, then, that in the noblest species, the liquid may cease to be indispensable to the fertilisation of the germ, and that this result might be attained by many other means, even material means, but especially by a better action of the nervous on the vascular system. The advance is foreshadowed in the constant growth of chastity, an idea peculiar to the human species, at least in the male, and which shows the value for that race of a right use of the vivifying fluid—its value physically, intellectually, and morally. Still more applicable is the observation to women, if we take account of the unfailing combination of

three special symptoms: the very slight share of the liquid in fecundation; menstruation; and the influence of the mother on the fœtus.

In support of this objective induction, we may adduce the subjective consideration of the general course opinion has followed in reference to human reproduction. In point of fact, as shown in the comparison pointed to in the first chapter of this volume, the current of opinion is more and more in favour of the greater participation of the woman. Now, an advance of this kind does not merely tend to smoothe the way for, and bear witness to, the advent of the utopia in which it finds its completion. All who estimate at its due value the general unison between the objective and the subjective, will allow that this course of our conceptions may represent the course of phenomena, in an order which is very modifiable, the earlier steps of which are unknown to us, from the want of a theory of hereditary transmission. If so, it is conceivable that civilisation not only predisposes men to a better appreciation of woman, but also increases the share of the latter in reproduction, and that in the limit, reproduction should be the exclusive appanage of the sex.

Subjective considerations.

Adopting this conclusion, the higher minds can feel no repugnance to examine, in the general, the legitimate consequences of an improvement, unattainable unless as a result of the aggregate advance of man, his physical and moral amelioration, fixed in the race by hereditary transmission. The synthetical aim of the institution makes it incumbent upon me, in the present place, to indicate summarily its several reactions on the individual, the Family, the State: with the further advantage of enunciating its chief conditions.

Reaction of this conclusion on our advance in all directions.

As regards personal morality, the modification is calculated to improve the constitution, of brain and body alike, of both sexes, by encouraging the habit of chastity, the importance of which was more and more felt by the general instinct, even under the rule of license. In the woman, this result will be ensured by the weakness of sexual desire, any activity of which, in her case, usually depends on the wish to become a mother. In the man the reverse is true; but when the pretext for sexual indulgence is gone, education and opinion will not find it difficult to make it yield to the need of preserving the vivifying fluid for

(1) Personal.

its proper function, the scope of which will be enlarged, the value more duly estimated.

(II) Domestic.

From the point of view of the Family, the change would bring its constitution more into conformity with the general spirit of the Sociocracy, as it would complete the just emancipation of woman, thus rendered independent of man, even physically. It would be no longer possible to contest the full ascendancy of the affective sex over children which were its offspring exclusively. But the most important consequence would be the perfecting the fundamental institution of marriage, its Positive theory becoming, in the case supposed, irrefragable. So purified, the conjugal union would experience, as marked an improvement as when monogamy took the place of polygamy; for it would be the realisation of the mediæval utopia of maternity compatible with virginity. The full developement thus allowed for woman's most eminent quality would not, it must be remembered, exclude the sympathetic influence of the sexual instinct, the more certain the more limited its satisfaction, without absolutely forbidding a pleasure which loses its dignity after the primary concession.

(III) Civic.

Judged in reference to the State, this institution alone allows us to regulate the most important kind of production, any satisfactory regulation of which is impossible while accomplished under the delirium of passion, and with no sense of responsibility. If restricted to its best organs, the function of reproduction would improve the human race, by introducing greater certainty into the hereditary transmission of such beneficial changes as have been effected by the sum of the continuous influences, social or individual, to which the race has been subjected. The main laws of this great phenomenon of transmission will probably remain unknown till this simplification has been effected. But, as reproduction in its systematic form must ever remain more or less the special privilege of the higher types, the comparison of the two forms would, besides throwing valuable light on the subject, give rise to an important institution, conferring on Sociocracy the greatest advantage possessed by Theocracy. For the extension of the new method would soon give rise to a caste without the hereditary principle, a class better adapted than the mass of the population to supply spiritual, nay even temporal chiefs, with an authority resting in

this case on a real superiority of birth, which would not shrink from investigation.

Combine the above remarks and we can see in its true light the utopia of the Virgin-Mother, the aim of which is to furnish Positivism with a synthetical condensation, the equivalent of that given to Catholicism by the institution of the Eucharist. Supposing the problem never solved, its utility, morally and intellectually, will never cease to be as great as was for material progress that of the dream of the transmutation of metals. But, supposing it solved, then, so imperfect is man's world, another will soon take its place, one not less adapted to be the central focus of our advance. Though I may not here broach the question, lest I distract attention, I recommend my successors to connect the new enquiry with our bodily existence, the material and the moral progress between which that existence is the link being already occupied. In any case I have now laid the groundwork for the systematic employment of utopias, in default of which the religion of Humanity would be incapable of adequately presenting the totality of our highest aspirations, poetical, philosophical, and political.

Were this utopia realised, others might follow.

With this preamble I have it in my power to enter properly on the direct examination of the Positive regime, abstraction made however, in treating it, of the ideal limit just constructed, except in so far as I may make implicit use of it in order to bring out more clearly the general tendency of human progress.

The direct examination of the Positive Regime.

Though for the regulation of our existence, the concert, the permanent concert of the two powers in society, is a necessity, the function more particularly belongs to the priesthood. Giving full effect in the name of Humanity to the power, both for control and guidance, it derives from the education, the priesthood disciplines the wills of men, whether as individuals or as corporations, by appealing in succession to feeling, reason, and lastly to public opinion. The action of the temporal government bears only on the outward act, it can only therefore complete the spiritual discipline, by establishing, for the ruder and more urgent cases, a force for prevention or correction. But this subsidiary material power, though never to disappear, must be constantly on the wane, in proportion as civilisation develops the moral power. Its sphere is the larger, the more distant and the vaster the relations with which it

The functions of government. Participation of the two powers

deals. I have here only to treat it accessorially, in reference to each several portion of the direct discipline. The leading function of the temporal government is to direct man's activity, and the systematic view of human industry is reserved for my concluding treatise, promised at the end of the last chapter, for 1861.

Positive
Morality
always
social under
all its forms.

Social under all its aspects, Positive morality, in distinguishing between the three forms, personal, domestic, and civic, of human life, distinguishes them only as the natural gradations of one and the same discipline, in which each is a preparation for the next, and is acted upon by the next. Ranked on the principle of increase in the extension, decrease in the intimacy of the relations, a principle from which flows their interdependence, the rules applicable to them are always referred to the service of the Great Being, the sole source of the true unity which they confirm and develope. It is in the perfect homogeneity thus obtained, that should lie the superiority, morally, of Positivism over Catholicism, for Catholicism, owing to the egoistic character inherent in the absolute Synthesis, could directly regulate only individual existence.

(1) Personal
Morality.

Henceforth regarded as the basis of social life, the importance of individual existence will not be less, and its dignity will be increased. But this primary form, even more than the two others, ought to be always considered from the point of view of the indivisibility of our nature; we must see, that is, in the intellect and the activity the indispensable ministers of feeling, on any true estimate, inseparable from it. It is in this way that our physical progress, and *à fortiori* our mental or moral progress, will be organised synthetically under the perpetual invocation of Humanity, who alone can dispel uncertainty of convictions, hesitation in conduct. Besides the general cases which admit of formal rules, the discipline of Positivism must extend equally to the minor events of life, referring them to the Great Being through feeling as the source of unity. The most trivial resolutions may thus be ennobled and become consistent to a degree unknown to the individualistic system of Metaphysics or Theology.

Physical
injunctions.

It is especially in regard to physical injunctions that Positivism will develope its competence to regulate aright our personal existence, when medicine shall be more thoroughly incorporated with religion than it was under the theocratic

regime. Health, as happiness, consists in unity, whether considered as the unity of the body or of the brain. Taking into account the close connection of our physical and moral existence, disorders in the one can never be treated apart from the other, even in the higher animals, much more in man. Civilisation increases this consensus, and therefore requires that the function of the physician be more and more absorbed into the office of the priest, instead of sanctioning the ever-widening divergence of the two, which was applicable only to the Western transition. But it is for Sociocracy irrevocably to effect the fusion, by virtue of the encyclopædic character of the common education; everyone by it being qualified to assist the priesthood in these accessory duties, always subordinate to its principal function. Such aid is particularly to be looked for from women, who will know how to recover for the sanctuary of the home most of the functions which have been one after the other usurped by Western physicians, leaving the clergy only the more important consultations. Not to dwell on the facilities for concentrating medicine in the hands of the priests given by its systematisation, we see that, notwithstanding their limited numbers and their other avocations, the sick will have the advice and the care they require, without any necessity for a distinction which is as indefensible on moral as on rational grounds.

Our object being to regulate individual existence, we must always consider it under two aspects, distinct yet co-existent, nay, correlated, the one negative, the other positive. The solution of the human problem, on which we now enter directly, lies in compressing egoism, developing altruism. The first method was the one naturally preferred by Catholicism; the second is essentially the more effective, even from the negative point of view, since the most powerful check on any instinct is in the uninterrupted growth of its antagonists. Instead of sacrificing everything to purity, Positivism sanctions the resistance of Chivalry, and places it below tenderness in women, below both tenderness and energy in men. Still it adopts the term, and gives it a wider extension by giving it a systematic definition, for it condenses in purity the proper repression of all the seven personal instincts, not limiting it to the most troublesome. Still, the restraint of this last will continue to require in the man direct efforts, as the sexual impulses are the least amenable to

Two aspects
of personal
existence.
(i) Negative.
(ii) Positive.

discipline, from relating to the wants which offer the greatest opening for sophistry. But Positivism will triumph over them more completely than Catholicism could, and transfer its principal effort to the noblest pair of egoistic instincts, so to complete the process of purification begun by Theocracy when it disciplined the instinct of nutrition.

For regulating Purity the personal instincts grouped in three couples.

The process has been a gradual one; the better to make it a systematic one, we should group the personal inclinations by pairs, in the order given in the synopsis of the brain, first excluding the maternal instinct as imperfectly developed in man, the main subject of the discipline we propose. The result is, three couples, lower, middle, and upper, so named quite as much in reference to their dignity as to their position. The first couple determines the predominant impulses, whilst the two others are destined above all to satisfy those impulses, the one acting upon things, the other on persons, so to convert the without into the instrument of the within.

(1) Negative aspect. Apparent possibility of an egoistic synthesis.

Such an unity of purpose would seem at first sight to imply the possibility of an egoistic synthesis, putting altruism for the time out of sight. In fact, on the one hand, the destructive or the constructive instinct, on the other, pride or vanity, are ready to acquiesce in the supremacy of the first couple, in spite of their own inherent energy, for this supremacy finds scope for their energy, though the sympathetic synthesis is better in this respect. The same arrangement might be available for women, provided that in the primary couple the maternal take the place of the sexual instinct, the last being as undeveloped in women as the maternal is in men.

Rejected on deeper examination.

But a deeper examination of this coordination strengthens the conviction of the impossibility of forming any directly personal synthesis. For, in the system supposed, there would be two instincts sharing the supremacy, instincts which are often irreconcilable, especially in men. Nearly equal in energy, the most constant inevitably prevails, were it only as presiding over the continuous gratification of our imperious physical wants. Where human foresight adequately provides for these, as with the wealthy, the sexual instinct would tend to reign supreme over the whole existence, were there not the antagonism of altruism and the intervention of society to check its demands. It would never attain a lasting preponderance, for such would soon endanger life, by the unbounded desires it

excites. Short of this however, its capricious aspirations would always be an obstacle to any decisive triumph of the instinct of conservation. The conclusion is: that our personality, if it is to be systematized, must be so by subordinating itself to our sociality, which alone can discipline the within and connect it with the without, for it alone can sanction all our instincts, suiting its rule to the nature of each.

The fundamental instinct is sanctified by the altruistic synthesis, by the entrusting to its care the general direction of the bodily life on which rests that of the brain. It is in the fullest sense amenable to discipline, by virtue of a function as definite as it is legitimate, which excess imperils. Thus we see the scale of the affections beginning and ending with a propensity which may be regulated by an appeal to itself. The centres respectively of the soul and of the body, benevolence and the instinct of self-preservation, organise happiness and health as the result of the unity which springs from their concert. But whilst each of them tends to sanction the other in the name of its own proper object, yet there can be no hesitation as to precedence, the general synthesis being only possible on condition of the second bending to the first, as alone competent to regulate the within by binding it to the without. ●

The part played by the instincts of self-preservation and benevolence respectively.

By accepting this subordinate position for the instinct of nutrition, we may discipline it with equal energy and respect, without any serious hesitation, whereas all merely personal motives leave room for doubt in the struggle between prudence and appetite. Physicians but rarely succeed, even as against their own inclinations, when they prescribe sobriety in the interest of health. It was solely by an appeal to an authority superior to individual judgment, that Theocracy and Catholicism obtained on this point their decided success; that it was not lasting is evidence of the inadequacy of supernatural motives. We must get rid of personality in every shape, even of the personality of an imaginary being, if we would found a powerful and enduring discipline, in the name of Humanity. Unable to bring altruism into the field against egoism, the old regime had a constant tendency to become illusory because it involved a contradiction; curbing self-interest solely by stimulating it, it left each to judge of the sacrifices to be made. The new Synthesis groups systematically around the Great Being the social motives which, even in their empirical form,

The instinct of nutrition.

have been, since the close of the middle ages, the real source of the discipline of this instinct, a discipline which has been constantly gaining strength even in despite of the Western anarchy. Without enlarging here on explanations reserved for my treatise on Morals, I must still point out the capabilities of Positivism in regard to the discipline of the nutritive instinct, a discipline left inchoate by Theologism, from an insufficient knowledge of human nature.

The two social grounds for the discipline of this instinct.

The whole discipline of nutrition rests on the natural combination of two social grounds: the obligation to husband carefully the provisions which have been accumulated by the Great Being for the use of its servants viewed collectively; the duty of making the nourishment of the body subserve the function of the soul. Those who would look on themselves as the masters when they are simply the stewards of wealth, may not forget that their coarse enjoyment imposes unjustly privations upon others. If intemperance involves no evil consequences to health, it invariably disturbs the functions of the brain, especially the affective functions, but in a degree also its active and speculative functions. From these two points of view, nothing but our anarchical habits can explain, if it cannot excuse, the universal tendency to indulge appetite beyond what is requisite for or allowed by its social purpose. But the normal state must begin especially with the two classes on which it devolves to regenerate the others; for they, more than the others, ought to appreciate the degradation consequent on excess in food and have a higher respect for accumulations which exempt them from producing. Women and priests will everywhere adopt the Positive standard of sobriety, accomplishing and perfecting that which Islam attempted so admirably, the entire abandonment of wine and other physical stimulants, when alimentation has become sufficiently nutritious. Favourable alike to sound health and high self-respect, their initiative will soon be followed by a population predisposed to place happiness in the constant play of the sympathetic affections, the supremacy of which must in two ways be fostered by such a regimen.

No ascetic rules to be applied to this instinct.

There is no need for me to set forth the full application of this mode of viewing the subject to all the other questions which concern the instinct of self-preservation, in the gratification of which, and that directly, is incurred the larger part of our expenditure. If we meet its legitimate demands, we are the

better able to control it, in that the moderation inculcated allows us to judge more clearly of the impulses traceable to it by calling into activity our physical and moral sensibility. Judicious control however—not unwise compression—such is the dictate of Positive morality in regard to this instinct, for the compression would tend to take away from our proper value as servants of Humanity.

As for the second constituent of the principal pair of personal instincts, the preceding remarks suffice for the present to make us aware that it needs a sterner discipline, especially in the man. Useless for the preservation of the individual, in the propagation of the species the sexual instinct contributes but in an accessory degree, and even that degree is open to question. Philosophers really untrammelled by superstition ought more and more to look upon it as tending to interfere with the true purpose of the vivifying fluid. But without waiting for the realization of the utopia as to women, it is possible to effect, if not the atrophy, at any rate the inaction of this instinct, now stimulated unduly by the brain; and to attain this result with more ease than might be inferred from the ineffectual efforts of Theology. Not merely will the Positive education make all feel the defects of the instinct and raise a hope of its entire desuetude, but the whole tendency of the definitive regime will be to institute a revulsive treatment of greater efficacy than the austerities of Catholicism. For the universal participation in family and public life will develop to such a degree the sympathetic instincts, that feeling, intellect, and activity will all combine to discredit and repress the most troublesome of the egoistic instincts. As we contemplate the thousands of instances of chastity found in Buddhism and Catholicism, in spite of the dangers of celibacy and of a discipline more calculated to irritate than to crush, we cannot but admit the possibility of taming an instinct of dubious character by appealing to the grand aim which it contravenes.

(II) Sexual
Instinct.

It were superfluous here to dwell on the direct discipline of the intermediate couple of the personal instincts, seeing that the Positive state, by its nature, favours the instinct of construction and restrains that of destruction. Notwithstanding its spontaneous energy and its natural connection with the military life, the latter was sufficiently disciplined by the education of mankind to cause no further anxiety, save as regards the repair of

(III) In-
stincts of
destruction
and con-
struction.

the havoc caused by modern anarchy. Duelling, and even suicide, have already become so opposed to the manners and habits of the West, that in the Positive state a sufficient corrective of these two aberrations of the destructive instinct will be found in treating the bodies of those guilty of them as the bodies of murderers. A religion which devotes all our powers to the uninterrupted service of Humanity, forbids us, more forcibly than any other, ever to dispose of the life so consecrated; none but the ministers of the Great Being may take that life in exceptional cases of incurable perversion. And yet the instinct in question will always require careful watching, as it will never cease to play a part in all our operations, even the operations of our intellect; implying as they do the incessant destruction of the obstacles which impede the gradual construction of the means of action.

Now that the exigencies of our carnivorous nature are concentrated by the institution of a public service, the propensity to destroy, even when it sinks into evil speaking, may be kept in check without any direct effort, as a simple result of the general habits implanted by Positive education.

(iv) Pride
and Vanity.

It is in the highest pair of the personal instincts that lies the great difficulty in the purification of human nature, since the ultimate regime has a peculiar tendency to stimulate in all pride and vanity. The perpetual antagonism of the two, grounded on the normal separation of the two powers, is a source of irritation rather than a basis of discipline in the case of instincts which are inseparable from the very idea of the patriciate and of the priesthood. At the same time the participation—subordinate yet permanent—of the great body of the people in political and moral government, a participation indirect in one sex and direct in the other, must at once aggravate and spread the intrinsic dangers of the over stimulation of these two instincts. But an unceasing watchfulness on the part of all may keep them within the limits prescribed by their object, Positive education teaching us that they are the exclusive attributes of the temporal or spiritual chiefs, with whom they impair happiness whilst easing their work. Again, this education, besides encouraging humility, humility in classes no less than in individuals, places in so clear a light the conditions of competence and the principles of judgment, as to lead to an instinctive rejection of pride and vanity by the body which they would discompose.

Thus we see how the altruistic discipline gives completeness and system to the purification of human nature, begun under the egoistic. Preparatory though it be, or secondary, the negative form of our moral progress will ever retain an importance disproportioned to its intrinsic efficacy, on the ground that it originates the decisive expansion of the moral power which, if not so tested, would continue inadequate, nay even doubtful whether it existed or not. Its several portions support one another, either by virtue of the contiguity of the organs or from the interdependence of the functions. Their mutuality becomes especially perceptible in the case of the principal pair, where we have already seen to what an extent sobriety facilitates chastity, though the converse be not as fully admitted, and yet it is equally true, for the need of food is in a direct ratio with that of repair of loss. But, over and above the several means of repressing personality, the essential condition of purification is the exertion of sympathy, which regulates individual existence by the family relations, and these again by the civic.

Concluding remarks on the negative discipline.

It follows that, from every point of view, the ultimate systematisation of human life must consist above all in the development of altruism. No detailed explanations, however, are here needed of this paramount constituent of true morality, for the culture of our sympathies is introduced by the personal worship, and the completion of the process is an immediate consequence of the social ties, to which I shall devote the rest of this chapter. Only I must here recommend perfect spontaneity in our daily prayers, as ever indispensable for their chief purpose, any factitious or premature efforts interfering with its attainment, as they tend to conceal the evil, not to cure it.

(ii) Positive Aspect. Altruism the great regulator.

In regard to our individual existence, in which acts are, usually, of less importance and less fixed than in domestic or civic life, I must not pass unnoticed the power it has to encourage our altruistic instincts by applying them in the regulation of all the ordinary incidents. These are often so unimportant that we have no intellectual or practical ground for deciding on our course, which the feelings alone can determine, and must determine if we are to avoid caprice, which is by its nature favourable to the worse suggestions. In these efforts known only to himself, and ennobled by their object, each may freely aspire to be more regular than the phenomena of the heavens,

(a) Personal existence considered in regard to feeling.

as he may perfect the order he creates by availing himself of number, the earliest and most universal of human institutions, but which has not yet borne its best fruits.

Then to intelligence.

Besides feeling, the discipline of the individual embraces also the intellect, but not the activity; that is essentially bound up with social life, domestic or civic, allowing, that is, for the share it has, a point previously settled, in the expression of feeling or of thought. But the mental discipline which is to complete the training of the individual, has been examined sufficiently, in the course of the preceding chapter. It condenses the intellectual capital of man, in art, in science, and in industry, into a hundred volumes, the half of which, as historical rather than dogmatical, there is little need of reading twice. Education ended, all classes, without excepting the priesthood, will confine their reading habitually to the masterpieces of poetry, which have a constant tendency to recall us to the principal field for our understanding. The scientific treatises containing the doctrine will be re-perused at times solely in order to revive the general impressions arising from the systematic noviciate, and the technical books will be consulted as occasion requires. If at any time some grave necessity call for really fresh meditations, they will always be connected with the special purpose which called for them, without increasing the abstract encyclopædia, which should remain so condensed as to be of universal use. I have given above a decisive example of the discipline indicated, in connecting with the regime a question of fundamental importance, the various intellectual aspects of which, poetical, scientific, or political, are so blended, that it would have been out of place in our study of the doctrine.

(3) Domestic existence.

In order now to set forth the direct systematisation of family life on the basis of the preliminary coordination of the existence of the individual, the first point to insist on is, the necessity of subordinating the domestic existence to the civic, which alone admits of complete unity.

Preamble.
Two modes of the altruistic synthesis.

To attain its full proportions, the altruistic synthesis can be developed only in one form; but practically two are admissible, differing in the mode of interdependence established between the two indispensable ministers of feeling. Action rules or seconds the intellect, according as the object in view is to modify the external world, or to bring into evidence the

world within. But the first mode alone is adapted to real life, the other is exclusively suited to the preparatory period, whether of the individual or of the race. Now on this point, the evolution of the West presented a grave anomaly which has a tendency to persist in the family, if its conditions are misconceived. For the normal mode was worthily presented only by Roman civilisation, when the subordination of speculation to action was inseparably connected with that of private to public life. This correlation had been completely lost sight of in the Greek movement, which with characteristic inconsequence, even in its utopias, proclaimed simultaneously the superiority of the political and of the contemplative life. Inheriting as it did the organisation of Rome, Catholicism in its systematisation only escaped the Greek contradiction by unduly exalting feeling at the expense alike of intelligence and activity, at the same time that it defined beatitude as speculation.

Rome.

Greece.

Catholicism

Since the end of the Middle Ages, under the combined weight of these conflicting antecedents, the intellectual movement of Western Europe presented in this respect, as in so many others, a profound discrepancy between the influence of the scientific and that of the practical impulse. The former, more in accordance with the mind of Greece than the genius of Rome, protracted under a metaphysical form the reactionary movement of Catholicism, ignoring the capital step in advance taken by the Romans, our true social ancestors, in placing action above speculation. The error was the more serious as in a certain degree in harmony with the real nature of the modern revolution, an intellectual rather than a social revolution. And yet all the time, the thinkers, especially those with utopian tendencies, accepted, nay even exaggerated, as was the wont of their Greek prototypes, the supremacy of public as compared with private life. The main cause, however, of the adhesion to this conclusion is to be found in the impulse indirectly emanating from practical life, in proportion as industry got the upper hand and the prevalent form of human action was consequently in incessant contradiction with the aspirations of pedantocrats. All the West, with the exception of the lettered classes, has undergone this continuous influence, so that the normal state, initiated by the spontaneous action of Rome, will be established in a sufficient degree, on

Modern times.

the recognition of the natural correlation between the superiority of action and that of the civic life. Although the habits implanted by Catholicism set themselves everywhere against this conclusion, the instinct of the proletariat has already risen above them in its aspiration after a collective existence, and the patriciate with its empirical policy will evince a similar disposition, as soon as Positivism shall remove its alarm at communism.

Subordination of private to public life.

Nothing then, henceforward, can prevent the noble subordination of public to private life, the aspiration of Antiquity transmitted to us by Chivalry, even against the teaching of Catholicism. Yet the theory of human unity is so little understood, that I was compelled to enter on the above explanation, an explanation at once historical and dogmatical, before I could set forth the life of the family. For such is the attraction of this life, that there would be always a risk of our returning to the contemptuous attitude of Catholicism in relation to public life, were not Positivism to obviate the danger, by appealing to a truer estimate of the very feeling in which the risk originates. But the superiority of speculation to action being definitively and universally rejected, none can fail to recognise the ascendancy of the civic life, which alone gives full scope for activity, the foundation on which rests the whole existence of Humanity. The second mode of Positive unity will, however, continue to exist in the preparatory period of life, when the providence of man dispenses with action, not, however, to the prolongation of this preliminary state, even for the rich, when education issues in its proper destination, that is, in action.

Systematisation of the Family by the country in the name of Humanity.

This introduction enables me to expound the systematisation of the Family by the instrumentality of the Country in the name of Humanity. I must begin by completing and correcting the indications of my Social Statics as to the number of constituents in the normal family.

Three groups in the normal family.

My theory of the family reduces them to two groups; the one consisting of the married pair, the other of their offspring, to the number usually of three. Now, the family so constituted is adequate in point of solidarity, but defective as regards continuity, such continuity as there is only connecting the present with the future, not including the past. To remedy this defect, the Positive family must admit another couple,

formed by the parents of the husband. Without this complement, the normal state would on this point fall below the level reached by the earlier and preparatory period, through the institution of the Old Men. The Family would not be in sufficient accord with the City, since its feminine element represents only the moral side of the spiritual power, its intellectual aspect imperatively requires old age to represent it. As the mother of the husband combines in her own person these two sources of religious supremacy, she will become the goddess of the Positivist family, when the conjoint influences of the ultimate regime shall have wholly extinguished disputes originating in ungrounded pretensions. Equally subjective and objective, the unity of the Family thus constituted will form as solid a basis for practical duties as for the moral conditions, as it will ensure subsistence to the aged sufficiently for them to resign voluntarily the capital they cease to administer.

With this addition, seven members are allotted to the average Positivist family, formed in this way of three constituents, representing respectively the past, the present, and the future, and allowing equally for continuity and for solidarity. But whilst sufficient for the mass of the people, this number requires a fresh addition for the directing classes, more particularly for the capitalist; the addition by incorporation of the complete and permanent servants of the family, as settled in the worship. Whatever restrictions be called for by the luxury of the rich, it would seriously interfere with the public service, if the patricians, nay even the priests, were obliged, as the proletaries are, to rely on their own families exclusively for their ordinary household arrangements.

Seven members of the family in the proletariat. The rich and the clergy need auxiliaries.

That envy is the source of the democratic objections on this point, is evidenced by the prevalent inconsistency which denies the rich what it allows the poor, the practice of Catholicism sanctioning the servants of the clergy. Such anarchical tendencies will be easily overcome by Positivism; for Positivism, systematising the habits of the West, which are yet in full vigour in the nations which have escaped Protestantism and Deism, consecrates Domesticity as an integral part, henceforth, of the worship of Humanity.

The jealousy of this institution overcome by Positive religion.

Taking into account this supplement, the family will as a rule comprise ten members, in the two aristocracies which are to guide the normal state. For the accession of the new

The family thus has ten members.

element, if it is to be consistent with self-respect in the domestics and stable, cannot involve their renunciation of the leading family ties. Once secure as a general rule the existence of the working classes, and no rich man will be able, with rare exceptions, to find a servant voluntarily separated from wife and child, especially as that wife and child can assist him in his service, no less than in supplying his own wants.

Thirteen for
the patrician
class.

For the clergy the addition of three members is sufficient ; for the patrician family it must be doubled. For besides the requirements of a certain ostentation, in too close connection with command, for it to be either desirable or possible for the normal habits to put it down, the greater extent and greater complexity of service require such increase, which moreover will bind the patriciate more strongly to the proletariat. Thus, the Positive family, ordinarily of seven members, has ten in the case of the spiritual chiefs, thirteen in that of the temporal, nor, as a rule, are larger numbers consistent with the habits of life and the respective positions.

The domi-
cile.

The numbers of the family determined, it will be well for completeness' sake to point out, though only in the most important case, the arrangement of its domicile. The French term *ménage* fuses the ideas of *family* and *house*, and so points to a universal recognition of community of abode as the result and condition of the intimacy required for the family. It is especially by such a common residence that we can clearly mark the limits of the elementary association, to the exclusion of all bonds of a strength inadequate to support the living together.

The prole-
tary domi-
cile requires
seven rooms.

From the preceding remarks, each of the three elements of the proletary family requires its own separate portion of the common *apartment*, over and above the withdrawing and reception room which is usually distinct from that in which the meals are prepared and taken. However deep their sympathies, however identical their education, the difference of age and of situation would prevent the desired harmony between the two couples, the one in full activity, the other withdrawn from active life, unless it were open to them to separate and meet at pleasure, as also to be rid of the children. The children's part must be always subdivided in order to isolate the sexes, but with no subdivision for number. Lastly, every family requires

an oratory, in which each member may properly develope his private worship, and which may serve as sanctuary for the celebration in common of the family worship. Normally then, the home of the working man consists of seven rooms of unequal size, with no useless part in an estimate which can only be deemed extravagant because in the existing anarchy the patrician is prone to neglect his duty, the plebeian to sink his self-respect.

When, by the spread of the Positive religion the conviction has become general, that family life is of paramount importance for all as the best security for public order, and the great source of private happiness, all the chiefs will accept as a standing obligation to establish it for all on a firm basis. Then the above determination, resting on indisputable grounds, will be generally held to supply a fit standard for the duties of the rich, and for the claims of the poor, in the name of the Great Being whose ministers the former are, whose agents the latter.

The patricians will come to see their duty in this respect, the plebeians their claims.

Remarking that our rule assigns to the domicile a number of rooms equal to that of the members of the family, it will be easy to extend its application from the proletary to the two other classes. It is for the reader to see that in the normal state the apartment will have ten or thirteen rooms, according as the household is sacerdotal or patrician. This law gives us a clear standard of luxury, in the true sense, and the object of having such a standard is, that whilst stigmatising its excess, we may, without violation to our feelings and habits, tolerate it—especially in the patriciate—in the degree suited to the average imperfection of human nature.

Houses of the clergy and the Patriciate.

All the essential conceptions in the constitution of the Positive family have been sufficiently explained in the previous volumes, and the explanation has been rendered complete by these recent remarks, so that there remains only their coordination.

Co-ordination of the conceptions relating to the Family.

In effecting this coordination I rely principally on the fusion, the legitimate fusion of the two statical forms of the theory of the Family, which provisionally I disjoined, and the combination of which has been gradually prepared by our dynamical studies. Under one form the family was the basis of action, and was referred to the Country; under the other it was the source of education, and was referred to Humanity. The two modes must ultimately converge when the State

The two statical conceptions of the Family, as the basis of action or the source of education, must be combined.

receives its systematic organisation from the Church. Now the condition of such convergence is the introduction of the couple which I brought in to complete the family organism. In fact, this complement by its very nature reconciles the two forms, moral and political, of the family organisation, since the two differ only as regards the influence of the women of the family; in the one it is essentially the influence of the mother, in the other that of the wife which prevails. Uniting once for all the two forms, the religious theory of the family issues in bringing the regime into complete conformity with the worship, where the combination was already effected. But the importance of this solution demands, in the present place, a special, though summary examination.

Two corrections required in the religious theory of the family.

In its improved form the theory left two lacunæ; it did not protract sufficiently the influence of the mother; it did not take full advantage of women as educators. These, its defects as a statical theory, naturally came into stronger relief as the dynamical investigation showed an uninterrupted growth of the ascendancy of women and of their peculiar aptitudes, such growth being a consequence of the increasing influence of civic upon domestic life.

The best conception of those corrections gained by distinguishing education and instruction.

To unite in one conception these two corrections, we may resolve them into the more accurate determination, for either sex, of what education really is in its entirety, when properly distinguished from instruction. Whilst instruction ends with the preparatory stage of life, including its complement of active training, education necessarily continues throughout the whole of our objective life, which is but one unceasing preparation for the subjective, the sole permanent existence. When our acquisitions of scientific or practical knowledge have lost all importance, for our feelings there is still both desirable and attainable a large advance, an advance, in the normal case, continuing until death, more particularly as regards our self-command. But our spontaneous progress in this respect can and should be furthered by all the influences which incessantly co-operated in our moral education. It never ceases to depend principally on the action of women, and that action again becomes more and more qualified to ameliorate us.

Veneration the principal object and here the mother's in-

If we take the growth and confirmation of veneration as the expression of the grand object of our moral progress, we cannot but feel to what an extent man needs on this point the

assistance of woman. No one but our mother could discipline us whilst we were unexposed to the feelings connected with action; how much more valuable must her watchfulness be when we are habitually subjected to the temptations of business. The influence of the wife can in no degree, in this respect, take the place of the ascendancy of the mother, an ascendancy of which civilisation has increased the efficacy, by the closer union it has effected between private and public life.

fluence is invaluable.

Again, the feeling and conception of the Country, cannot, even for the man, become distinctly appreciable before the period of practical training, which succeeds that in which he gains his knowledge, at first instinctive, then systematic, of Humanity. Still more palpably is this the course of events for the affective sex, as women are immediately withdrawn from the influences originating in active life. Marriage alone can initiate women into civic life; it is from her husband that she gradually gains her conception of it, even without the knowledge of either. But it is not on the husband principally that reacts this slow initiation, it naturally tells most on the son. Its most valuable fruit would therefore be lost, if marriage was fated to withdraw the son from his mother's advice, when his circumstances render it more than ever necessary.

The mother's intervention necessary after marriage.

There is little ground for surprise at the tardy recognition of the importance of this last constituent of the normal family as compared with the others; it is explained if we take into account the coarse instinct which influenced man's judgment of women through the whole period of initiation. Its adjunction will constitute one of the best features of Positivism, inaugurating at length the sound theory of the female sex, by virtue of the true knowledge of human nature.

Importance of the elder couple.

A general comparison of the first and last volumes of my religious construction, brings out, on this point, a decisive contrast; the 'General View' gives in a satisfactory form the theory of marriage; the theory of the mother remained imperfect till the present chapter. Though influenced by the thought of a guardian angel, the order adopted is essentially the expression of the spontaneous course of the human initiation, for I might have drawn from my own personal memories the venerated type of the mother.

Theory of the mother completed in this chapter.

The better to understand the definitive constitution of the family, the grand object of which is always to give full scope

Position of the head of the family in

reference to
the influence
of women.

for the just influence of woman upon man, we must bring before us, by a comparison of ages, the normal position assigned by that constitution, as a general rule, to each head of a family. As, commonly, he will be twenty-three years younger than his mother, seven years older than his wife, thirty years older than his daughter, about the age of fifty he will be under the constant influence of their threefold aid, urging him to good, turning him from evil. Under the combined weight of the past, the present, and the future, he grows as a citizen, having his veneration, his attachment, and his benevolence unconsciously stimulated, and from henceforward harmonised by the regime as they had been in the worship.

The mother
the image of
the country.

In this way and in this way only can the ultimate regeneration of the race, in unison with the true programme of the modern revolution, reconcile the conditions of the social existence of Rome with the tendencies of the civilization represented by Chivalry. In the two periods of childhood our mother was for us the loving personification of Humanity; in our riper years she is the venerated image of the Country, and there can be no better image of it ordinarily for each of us. When the sense of citizenship has recovered from the attacks of Catholicism, the mere change of a letter will suffice to rectify the usurpation of the male sex. The mother's influence recalls us to public life, whilst the wife's has a tendency to confine us to the family, from her inadequate sense of its true connection with political existence. The antagonism between the two will, as a rule, continue till the time of the mother's death, when she becomes for ever the subjective image of Humanity, and the wife the objective personification, and as such qualified, also to represent, as she is then capable of appreciating, the Country. Without adopting the utopian scale of human longevity suggested by my spiritual father Condorcet, we must admit that in the ultimate condition of Humanity the continuous improvement of our physical and mental regime will prolong the normal duration of human life to ninety-one, or thirteen septennial periods. Now this augmentation should be sufficient to allow the influence of woman in all its three aspects to act upon the man during the whole course of his full maturity.

Patrie
Matrie.

No evil to be
feared from
the wife and
mother
residing
together.

As for the exaggerated fear of the risks attendant on the presence in the same dwelling of the mother and the wife, they are in the main due to existing defects in the system of educa-

tion and in the family arrangements, which often give rise to dissensions impossible in the normal state. Neither having power or wealth, by their own act centered in the head of the family, they can be rivals only in advice, whilst the wife administers, the mother superintends, the common household, always under his government. Thus is effected a proper distribution of the consultative influence, which tends to preserve the husband from the exclusive pressure of either, whilst not compelling him to check their advice. But the most valuable result of the distribution is that it purifies the two elements, the intellectual and moral element, of the moderating power always called for by the government of the family; and as purified they become perfectly compatible. The husband's daily worship of his mother leads him to a truer appreciation of his wife, and thus secures her from the coarseness which is the too frequent accompaniment of man's tenderness. On the other hand the mother's ascendancy is strengthened by his deep knowledge of woman's nature, the full attainment of which requires the intimacy of married life. If, prior to the advent of Positivism, man in his ripe age submits but with reluctance to the mother's interference, it is that he has no sufficient sense of the dignity of the wife.

We see thus how the entire constitution of the family is condensed in the addition of its third normal element, which is meant to bring the regime, as it regards the family, into unison with the worship. With this addition we may connect all the characteristic features of the family, as a Positive institution, already enumerated: eternal widowhood; the superintendence of education by the mother; the support of woman by man; the voluntary renunciation by women of dowries; and of inheritance; liberty in disposing of property by will; and the power of adoption. Each one is indispensable if man is rightly to feel the constant influence of woman, as exerted simultaneously by the mother, the wife, and the daughter, with the sister acting equally in support of the three, or in case of need taking the place of either of the three in her peculiar relation. Without this sevenfold security, the family life were inadequate as the preparation for, and the support of, the action of the citizen, or the devotion of the religious being. But the nature and the object of these correlated institutions, in which the Positive synthesis gives systematic expression to the instinctive

The seven conditions required for the religious theory of the Family.

tendencies of Western manners, imperatively require that their adoption never be other than in the fullest sense voluntary.

Not to be
made bind-
ing by law.

Far from yielding to the indiscreet ardour of public opinion, the priesthood will be bound always to dissuade the patriciate from any enforcement by law of these seven regulations, for each would become oppressive, and at no distant period illusory, if ever it ceased to be a purely religious obligation. It is to ensure liberty in this respect that Positivism sanctions and encourages the institution of civil marriage, although in its origin, and even in its character, it is revolutionary; consequently without such sanction it could not be universal.

Civil Mar-
riage.

Not a vicious
concession to
the temporal
power.

There is an apparent contradiction in this incorporation of civil marriage into the system, which I am bound to clear up or to anticipate; our Catholic associations leading us to see in it a mistaken concession on the part of the new spiritual power to the gradual encroachments of the old temporal power. The reproach has not been formally made, but it would in my eyes be a serious one, if I were unable completely to clear myself of it, as the sacred law of continuity obliges me to uphold or to reassert for the Positive priesthood all the powers justly claimed by former priesthoods, without committing myself to any abuse of such powers. But I have given such good reasons for the sanction of civil marriage by Positivism, as the normal preliminary to the religious union, that no one, I hope, of my theocratic opponents will accuse me of losing sight in it of the Catholic or true privileges of the clergy.

Civil mar-
riage useful
in the appre-
ciation of
the relations
of the two
Powers.

Passing from this point, I avail myself of the opportunity the question offers for a juster understanding of the general relations of the two powers in society: for the normal division of the two, hitherto impracticable, has not yet been able to evoke, anywhere, the dispositions required for their habitual accord. By the statical theory of political power, the one as much as the other rests upon opinion; if unsupported by opinion it would soon lose all real authority. But each has its own proper mode of taking root in opinion, the priesthood actively, the government passively. Government can appeal only to long-established opinions, whilst the priesthood carries out those opinions to fresh consequences, just as it originally formed them. The case in question is a favourable one for appreciating this difference, for the revolutionary institution of civil marriage has, at bottom, for its sole justification the

theocratic character which in a confused way will attach to the temporal power so long as the West remains unregenerated by Positivism. It were impossible otherwise to understand, how a subaltern and purely local magistrate becomes capable of forming a tie which will be universally respected. The religious basis, however, of the credit he enjoys being rotten, the institution could not endure, much less spread, were not the Positive worship to incorporate it in a subordinate position with itself, by the sanction it accords the magistrate as a special assistant of the priesthood of Humanity.

With all respect for the spontaneity in all cases of the observance of the seven conditions required by the religious theory of the family, the priesthood will yet be compelled to ask for some legal measures in regard to them, most particularly with reference to the age of civil marriage. All Western codes allow too early an age, especially for women, who, by the French law are sacrificed to the coarseness of men before their organisation, even their physical constitution, is sufficiently settled. The High Priest of Humanity, then, must prevail on the several dictators to decree that the woman never marry till she has completed her nineteenth year, not insisting on the twenty-first, which will remain the proper age for the religious marriage. As for the man, it will be well to prolong till twenty-eight, the normal age for the sacrament of destination, the veto of the father on marriage. By these two arrangements, most Positivist marriages will be between women of twenty-two and men of twenty-nine; so as to keep the disparity of seven years, which seems the best.

The legal limits of the age for Marriage.

With regard to the power of disposing of property by will and to that of adoption, Western legislation requires, and in France more than elsewhere, more profound modifications if it is to be adapted to the religious constitution of the family. But the very importance of these modifications must be my justification for not touching on them in detail till the following chapter, the chapter devoted to tracing the final transition, for which such measures are essentially meant. In regard to the normal state, it is enough here if I make the general remark that adoption once disengaged from existing obstacles, will still be subjected to precautions against mere impulses, and that the disposal of property by will presupposes a just attention to the interests of the natural heirs.

Legal measures as to wills and adoption reserved for next chapter.

Theory of
the Family
summed up
in its normal
variations.

By a combination of the preceding observations, the ultimate systematisation of the family stands out so clearly that I may pass from it to enquire into the constitution of the state, the principal domain of Positivity. But before I enter on it, I must point out in what way the theory of the family is summarised quite naturally by a general estimate of its admissible modifications, modifications studied in detail in the third volume.

A constant
progress
traceable in
the constitution
of the
Family.

At all times thought to have as its aim the developing the influence of woman upon man, there is traceable in the constitution of the Family a continuous progress from the coarse stimulus which called it into existence, to its ideal limit in the utopia of the Virgin-Mother. Our most remote ancestors were even, nearly as the animals are, accessible to sexual desire only at certain periods. The women of Oceania even now find long stimulation necessary to arouse an ignoble appetite. Such in its earliest form is the influence of women, nor as yet, admirable as are the improvements introduced, is it regenerated. The Positive religion alone can definitively secure the triumph of a high estimate of woman, as the normal mediator between man and Humanity. The utopia of the Virgin-Mother implies in its very statement the desired regeneration, as it frees the sex from all coarse dependence, in order to reserve for it, at one and the same time, the most important physical function and the noblest moral mission. Even should this institution of the religion never be other than an ideal, yet when confronted with the point of departure it would condense the whole initiation of the race, to which we limit the dominion of an instinct doomed to extinction in the maturity of mankind.

A sound
utopia
should be an
anticipation.

But a sound utopia can never really be other than in a certain degree an anticipation of fact; whereas unsound ones always favour an impossible return upon the past. Thus, the anarchical reveries of Plato and of his modern imitators, on the community of property and of wives, so far from indicating real progress, only tended to the re-establishment of the collective property and the promiscuous intercourse, which are distinctive of the primitive ages. On the contrary, the admirable utopia of Henry IV., of the Quakers, and of Leibnitz, on perpetual peace in Western Europe, did but precede by about two centuries, the result of the spontaneous evolution of the state of mankind. We may hope then a like issue for the feminine

utopia ; in full agreement with the whole teaching of the past, it should serve henceforth as the ideal expression of the future. For the rest, everything tends to the conclusion that the education of the individual, from this time forward systematically conducted, will be bound to no servile reproduction, as regards the sexual instinct, of the evolution of the race, since already we see the Western nations becoming in the full sense of the word, monogamic, without ever having been polygamic.

To give clearness to the exposition of civic existence, the first step is to determine the constitution of the social milieu under its material aspect. This preliminary operation consists of two successive processes : first, the assigning their limits to the nationalities which will become the political elements of regenerate Humanity ; secondly, the decomposition of each nation into industrial classes. The professional distribution of those classes belongs to my promised work on the Positive systematisation of human industry.

(c) Civic existence.

Preliminary processes.

In the preceding volume it has been satisfactorily shown, that the formation of the great states of the Western world was a necessary consequence of the modern revolution, one destined to end with it, in accordance with the principles laid down in my Social Statics. In the following chapter, I shall explain, more especially in the case of France, the normal plan on which these factitious aggregates, even now without solid justification, will pass peaceably into free and durable states. Each of these Positive Republics should have a population of from one to three millions on a territory about equal to that of Belgium, Tuscany, Holland, Sicily, and Sardinia, &c.

Decomposition of the great States of the West.

Extent of the Positive Republics.

In default of this decomposition, which, in an imperfect form, was realised in the Middle Ages simultaneously with the division of the two powers, our moral education would fail from there being no satisfactory intermedium between the Family and Humanity. Meant to be the bond between the closest and the most extensive of human associations, the Country can only discharge this its primary function, on condition of its being so limited in extent as to allow a real sense of the relations of citizenship. Language indicates the universal admission of this principle, when it represents the feelings of patriotism as confined to the union formed by the grouping of the rural population round one paramount city.

Moral Education requires an intermediate aggregate between the Family and Humanity.

Patriotism, political.

This original limit was only exceeded as a consequence of

This original limit first passed in consequence of the Roman Conquest.

the compulsory incorporation which resulted from the gradual extension of Roman Conquest. In lieu thereof, the Middle Ages substituted a voluntary aggregation of nations, politically independent but spiritually connected, with a natural tendency towards an association coextensive with the race, had the faith they held in common been able to impose itself on mankind. Such an association with such a faith it is for the religion of Humanity definitively to organise, when it has triumphed over the state of anarchy, which made the temporary formation of great states in the West as indispensable as it was inevitable.

No exact limit of the Positive Nationalities.

It is not possible to fix the exact limit of the Positive nation, though it may be confidently asserted that it will be larger than in the mediæval period, when social intercourse was less general and the want of it less felt. The standard above given seems to me one which will long remain appropriate, as allowing aggregations in the degree in which concert is reconcileable with independence. As the Positive religion will have secured the general adoption of the principle of free aggregation, new decompositions or combinations may be always effected without any struggle, as the progress of society may warrant them. And although the definitive civilisation will gradually enlarge the political association, I doubt its ever being much in excess of the limit just assigned it. For the rest, the question has already lost its great importance; since the Positive regime will make government more and more spiritual, less and less temporal, thus systematising the natural progress of society.

Political motive for decomposition.

In the political point of view, not less than in the moral, the normal decomposition of the large states is of great value, as equally favourable to order and to progress. Each of the three general elements of the sociocratic state, will always derive important advantages from it. The priesthood of Humanity will be better able to modify the government of the nation, which under these conditions will be less inclined to encroach upon the spiritual functions. But at the same time, the patri-cians will find greater respect paid to an authority the origin and use of which will be intelligible to all. Lastly, the proletaries will find it easier to deal with a smaller amount of oppression, and more opening for the exercise of regular control.

We must consider, then, the Positive regime as having for

its social basis the distribution of the Western territory into seventy republics, each, as an average, comprising three hundred thousand families, each of the normal size as above laid down. Adopting this basis, we have five hundred states for the whole earth, and we find the task easier of their internal distribution into industrial classes.

Division of
the West
into seventy
Republics.

In reference to this second point, I congratulate myself on having ventured to propose definite numbers in the *Positivist Catechism* published about the middle of October, 1852. For the numbers there given have in the natural course of things been accepted, explicitly or implicitly, by the most competent judges, in regard to a point on which the special data are as yet insufficient. So supported, I do not hesitate to present the Western patriciate in the normal state as consisting of two thousand bankers, a hundred thousand merchants, two hundred thousand manufacturers, and four hundred thousand agriculturists.

Numbers of
the Pa-
triciate.

Observing that the number of bankers corresponds to the number of temples of Humanity, we get a direct connection between the temporal hierarchy and the constitution of the spirituality, taking into account the habitual relations of the senior member of each presbytery with the patrician invested with its financial administration. On this scale, each banker on the average will have to meet the wants of ten thousand families, an arrangement which, as it seems to me, accords with the principle that the sphere of every office is to be as large as is compatible with direct responsibility in the functionary. The same rule is observed in the case of the lowest number, since it assigns, on an average, to each agricultural patrician a domain of five hundred hectares, an extent of cultivation to which one person can attend without strain. For the members of the two intervening classes, they seem to me to harmonise sufficiently with the law of increased condensation of industrial service, in proportion to the increase of generality and abstraction. I urge the reader to make himself familiar with this distribution as a whole by applying it to France as it actually exists, dividing, that is, each of the preceding numbers by four.

1,225 acres.

By virtue of these two operations, we can form a clear conception of the social milieu in which the Positive religion has to systematise civic life. But, as the numbers above given apply only to the patrician hierarchy, the survey, to be sufficiently

The distri-
bution of the
Proletariate.

exact, requires the distribution of the proletaries also among their industrial chiefs.

Ratio of the rural to the town proletariate. Distribution of the latter.

Although the special data as regards this first point are wanting more than in the case of the patricians, I think I may, as a first step, allot agricultural industry a population double the amount of that required for all the town industries together. The apportioning of these latter will be clearer if I specify it for a capital, in which the number of families should be thirty times less than in the State of which it was the capital, in accordance with the actual average of France. In a nation of the normal size above given, such a capital would be formed of ten thousand households, exclusive of the patricians and priests. Of these ten thousand I assign seven thousand to manufacturers, three thousand to commerce, including, in both cases, the various intermediate agents between the capitalist and the workman. Multiply these numbers by ten, and the sum will meet the case of the nation of which it is the capital, the central government of which seems to me to require five thousand special functionaries, three fifths military, the other two fifths civil.

The type chosen represents the average provincial capital.

The abstract capital which has served as a type, has a population equivalent to that of most of the capitals of the seventeen republics into which France will break up peaceably about the end of the present century. This is the average case, but there will be many states in which the capital will admit of a population double, treble, quintuple, or even septuple of that given. The original number must be multiplied by eleven when we come to the old capitals of the political aggregations, which in some parts of the world, reproduce to a certain extent the Western type. For these voluntary associations will always remain sufficiently important to draw an exceptional population to their centres. Finally the number taken as the basis must be multiplied thirteen times for Paris, as the metropolis of mankind, in accordance with its present state, and its increase is not desirable.

The capital taken as type is of the size most suited to our modern wants.

These are the rates I venture to hazard in order to fix attention on an important, though in the present place a subordinate question. The number selected for the typical capital answers to the degree of concentration, in my judgment, ordinarily desirable, any notable excess involving moral and even political risks when the normal habits, and manners, are

once established. The same proportions apply, but inversely, to the several cases of the smaller cities, the last case being the village or the concentration of the rural community, in order to avoid the excessive dispersion, no less than the excessive agglomeration of population.

Summarising these hints, we must combine the two parts of the preliminary statistical sketch here given by an estimate of the normal proportion of plebeians to patricians. Taking each of the five hundred republics of the world by itself, the families of the aristocracy will be the thirtieth part of the whole number.

The patrician families are to the plebeian as one to thirty.

But, if we bear in mind the laws of the numerical constitution of the family, the workmen are only sixteen times as numerous as the employers. Each agricultural patrician directs thirty-five proletaries, each manufacturing seventy, each commercial patrician sixty.

The Capitalists to the workman as one to sixteen.

Without pressing further definite arrangements, which, as anticipations, must have a logical, rather than a scientific, value, I have now to delineate the public regime, beginning with an estimate of the support it derives continually from the private life, personal as well as family life. But no further explanation is needed of the fundamental preparation formed by the education, and developed in the worship; so that I may confine myself to pointing out the influence which the systematisation of private existence exercises directly and continually on that of public life.

The civic regime as influenced by the private.

At all times men have held a virtuous private life to be the first guarantee of true civism, although such life might be the offspring of mere personal prudence. At the same time that it is easier to estimate the rules of conduct in the narrower sphere, acts are in that sphere of less importance, and also more modifiable, the result being that it offers the best test of our moral strength, which must incessantly look to it for the renewal of its vigour. This, the universal judgment, is in a special degree applicable in the final state, where the systematisation of individual existence with constant reference to Humanity is the consequence of an assiduous culture, both objective and subjective, of the sympathetic instincts. Each one then always feels that the family of which he is a member, or even the class to which that family belongs, though not an immediate organ of the Great Being, is an indispensable element of the action of the State, which alone is in direct relation with the eternal

Under the religion of Humanity all individual conduct has a collective bearing.

whole. All individual conduct, then, becomes social in its destination, whence principally it derives its nobleness and its coherence, qualities, consequently, traceable in the most insignificant acts, which are never indifferent in view of the feelings which they indicate, or which they evoke.

Our life as
citizens in-
fluenced by
our guardian
angels.

The morality of the individual finds its condensation in his private worship, and should be a direct aid to his morality as a citizen, over and above its indirect influence through his domestic morality. Our three guardian angels, though drawn from the family, do not confine their action to the perfecting of that family. Their true and highest function is to guide us or to sustain us in the exertions and dangers attendant on our social existence, as was admirably felt by Chivalry, even under the counteraction of Catholicism. Thus we give reality to the fiction of Theology, that man has always by his side a superior being, lending him a benevolent assistance, judging him without illusion. All our public acts admit this intervention, and may become so many continuations of our personal worship, in a regime in which the Family is brought into constant relation with Humanity, through the intermedium of the Country.

Most of all
in the
Priesthood.

All classes feel this influence, but the priesthood above all ; as better able to appreciate it, it will connect it with the constant perfecting of the moral qualities required by its most important office. The interpreter of Humanity gains strength and dignity from feeling himself ever aided by her highest personification. Disciplining the present in the interest of the future, in the name of the past, his devotedness and his energy should be constantly rekindled by the direct invocation of the angelic ideal, which concentrates for him, by its very constitution the sum of human relations. In his secret communion with this ideal, the priest is best able to rise above the vanity, which hides from him his deficiencies, a just sense of which is encouraged by the comparison of himself with his ideal. Amidst the contests of public life, its holy influence stimulates, or calms him, by its presentation of the past, which he has to explain, and of the future which is to be his judge.

The still
greater in-
fluence of
domestic
life upon public
Morality.

Still, whatever the influence continually exerted by private on public morality, it cannot be as direct or as efficacious as that of a rightly ordered domestic life, owing to the closer resemblance of the Family to the State, especially if it is formed on true social principles. It is in domestic life that the funda-

mental maxim: *Live for Others* begins to take practical complement: *Live without concealment*, without which it would soon become inadequate, nay even too often illusory. No precautions suggested by the self-interest of metaphysical legislators will long bar the instinct of the Western nations from regarding full publicity of private conduct as the indispensable security of right civic action. The natural school for command and obedience, family life cannot answer its main purpose if withdrawn from the healthy influences of the judgment of the priesthood and even of the public. They who refuse to live openly will be justly liable to the suspicion of not really wishing to live for others. To judge of feelings we require acts; if so, the two virtues which are essential to civic life, self-devotion and veneration, must be practised daily in family life if their existence is to be recognised, the practice of them there being easier and more open to all than in public life. We must not forget, however, when we sum up social morality in the obligation of living without concealment, that it must be in subordination to the precept of living for others, though it is only times of anarchy that allow a regular parade of vicious conduct.

Quite apart from its power in this respect, domestic life is a direct support to public life, in that it gives the priesthood an enduring influence over the servant of Humanity. The education and the worship naturally give the priests access to the family, and they are often appealed to to soothe or remedy the collisions which, such is the imperfection of our nature, are inseparable from the highest ties. Their interference is the more effective, as they have a personal knowledge of all the members of the family, owing to the rule, the social value of which is on a par with the intellectual, that everyone during his years of encyclopædic training is under the same teacher. It was to give completeness to this personal relation, by making it common to husband and wife, that I fixed seven years as the most suitable difference in age for marriage. Allow this, and the two priests to whom the two couples owed their initiation and who consecrated their union, are the better qualified to restore harmony in the family and mutual agreement, as well as to replace on a right footing the relations with the children, by invoking the common belief.

A connection of this kind, at once particular and general, ought, conversely, to be an assistance to the priesthood, by

The domestic aids the civic life by affording scope for the action of the Priesthood on the individual.

The women, as the Roman ma-

trons, must
have the
Civic feeling.

ensuring it, in the bosom of each family, the support of the women and of the old as against the industrial chiefs on whom the social action of the Priesthood is usually brought to bear. But to be effectual on extraordinary occasions, such aid must have been the object of habitual attention in the ordinary relations of life. Now, this implies that women encourage in themselves in due degree the true civic feeling, nobly therein imitating the Roman type, nay in the normal state surpassing it by its combination with the instinct of Chivalry. The natural tendency of the wife to absorption in the family may, not to speak of the influence of the mother, be generally overcome by an increased sense of the close connection which exists between self-devotion within the family circle and self-renunciation in public life. Even granting that the preference of Family to Country were not a mere cloak for selfishness, Positive education will predispose women to acknowledge the instability inherent in such conduct, the collective egoism impairing personal tenderness.

The relations of one family with others attach it to the City.

By virtue of this predisposition family life, in its normal development, will be in direct connection with public life, first through the relations between the members of each family, secondly, through its daily intercourse with others, whether related or not. In such a state of things the full value will be felt of the fraternal relation, the main source of noble friendships. The influence on society of such friendships should awake the sense how important it is for Positivism to re-establish, and even to extend, the wise prohibitions by which Catholicism completed the admirable discipline instituted by the Theocracy as regards incest. Although in the case of marriage the law of widowhood of itself meets the want, yet as a purely religious ordinance it does not exempt the civil legislation from the duty of including all fraternal connections without exception in the two prohibitions which are at present limited to fraternity by birth. But the largest development of mutual relations between Positive families will be due to adoption and domesticity, neither of which institutions will be the incorporation of merely isolated individuals, but of families, the difference in position being compensated by the identity of education.

Influence of the Salon.

The family relations as a whole should offer a direct and powerful aid to public life, as an instrument constantly available for the formation of public opinion. In defiance of metaphysical anarchy, the Positive faith will soon have re-

generated the Western *salon*, the presidency in which invariably belongs to women, but to the mother rather than to the wife. Including all ranks, adopted by all nations, especially when the sacred language shall have come into general use, these meetings, traceable in their origin to feudalism, will everywhere display their capacity to form the habitual connection between private and public life. Under the joint authority of sex and age, they will assume a moral rather than a political direction, strengthening religious principles by an application of them in detail, and that a natural application, never degenerating into pedantry. These private assemblies in which women play the principal part, cannot, it is true, supersede the public meetings of men, but they will limit such meetings to the general and, above all, the local questions which directly concern industrial action.

Such are the sources normally of public opinion, when the milieu is no longer under the dominion of journalism, the peculiar feature of the latest revolutionary phase. Its weekly addresses offer the priesthood the best means for explaining in due season the less important applications of the principles of the doctrine. When a written explanation is necessary, it will issue special placards, similar to those of Catholicism, but not with a periodical character. Concentrated on their permanent functions, the theoreticians will naturally set an example to all of the respect due to the institutions of writing and printing, by using them solely for important communications, such as are meant chiefly for posterity. Freed from the influence of the literary class, be it by its Positive education, or by the incorporation of the thinkers of that class into the priesthood, the public will imitate the reserve of its guides and will look with contempt on unnecessary publications, without any attack on the liberty of exposition and discussion. Under this regime the *salons* will put out their full power to prepare opinion, which again will be more easily judged than when its chief organ of expression was an unreliable press. In this way it is that women should indirectly share in the current judgment of acts and persons, without any detriment to their moral mission, the daily accomplishment of which can alone prevent men from being carried away by political feeling.

The reaction of domestic on public life, common as it naturally is to all classes, should, like that of individual existence,

The organs
of public
opinion.

The Salons
of the
Priesthood.

be most powerful in the clergy. The freely accepted supremacy of the *salon* of the presbytery will imply to all, especially to women, the social precedence of the priesthood over the patriciate. Notwithstanding their greater power and wealth, the temporal chiefs will hold it an honour to be admitted to this distinguished society, the venerable president of which unites in her own person the dignity of age and sex with the consideration attaching to the office of her son. In the capital of Humanity, the *Salon* of the High Priest will thus initiate throughout the world conceptions well adapted to second his synthetic influence and capable of serving in lieu of more formal communications. Spreading from presbytery to presbytery, and radiating thence by a natural process, they will be equivalent to a systematic domestic organisation of public opinion, as they will stamp an unconstrained uniformity on all the salons of the globe, a process facilitated by the progressive acceleration of all the means of communication.

Of the
Bankers.

As regards the patricians, the salon should strengthen their union as a hierarchy, and moderate their industrial rivalries. Its capabilities in these two respects will be most visibly shown in the salons of the bankers, the natural centres of meeting for all the industrial classes. There, each member of the supreme patriciate will create a truer appreciation of his class as the common regulator of human industry, by fraternising with dignity with all his clients, agriculturists, manufacturers, and merchants, to whom his weekly receptions will always be open. Whilst admirably calculated to prepare and facilitate particular operations, these meetings will not degenerate into mere professional meetings, the safeguard lying either in the diversity of their component elements, or still more in the presence habitually of the more eminent proletaries, who will give them a more general character. Not in immediate contact with the people, as banking, the most abstract form of industry, scarcely needs any workmen, bankers worthy of their position will be conscious of the value of this personal intercourse with the class which in the normal state will look to them as its natural temporal protectors.

Of the Pro-
letariate.

But, allowing its full efficacy for social purposes to the Positive salon in the case of the priest or the patrician, it is with the proletary class that the institution will habitually bear its best fruits. It supplies the plebeians the best means for

preparing, and even extending their due control over all civic concerns, under the presidency of women, which by its mere acceptance recalls them to great principles, to the suppression of incidental passions. Indispensably requisite to complete the constitution of the Sociocracy, this function would alone suffice to justify my speaking, as above, of the salon as part of the working man's apartment. Thus become a regular institution, the private meetings of the proletariat will be superior in moral dignity and political value to its public meetings, which become of secondary importance, though immediately they are so important as to account for the attention paid them in the 'General View.' The tendency to disorder of these noisy discussions, in which pride and vanity soon get the upper hand even in the higher natures, must always be a source of alarm to the patrician class; but its only way of escape is the encouragement of the institution which rejects them and fills their place.

To complete the general examination of the direct and persistent reaction of domestic on civic life, it remains for me to put forward a question of more special interest and greater importance than the preceding, the question namely of the propagation of the race.

The growth
of popula-
tion.

As the necessary seat of the highest form of production, the family by it is in most intimate connection with the whole system of industrial activity, for which it supplies the agents. The paramount importance however of this function is as yet masked by the difficulties of its regulation, owing to the non-existence of right ideas on the subject and appropriate institutions. The real commencement of human education takes place in a state of brute passion with no sense of responsibility. Such being the case, it may be feared that human wisdom will never succeed in fully ordering an existence with such a beginning. Yet the success obtained in beings less modifiable than man allows the hope that the initial function may be as compatible with regular control as are its whole consequences.

Regulation
required.

We need not be surprised at the existing contrast between the importance attached to the propagation of the inferior animals and the neglect of that of man. "For the rough and violent methods adopted for the former are wholly inapplicable to the latter. It was a domain which, for two reasons, was closed till the advent of Positivism, the only system capable of supplying the appropriate theories and institutions, for it alone

There are
indications
that Positive
institutions
will be equal
to this dif-
ficult task.

completes and systematises science and morality. Without the normal division of the two powers, characteristic of the religion of Humanity, procreation in our race can only be regulated by legal measures, and such are as ineffectual as they are unseemly. It may seem premature, on scientific and moral grounds, to approach the subject, yet two general symptoms warn us that it will shortly demand our attention; such is the inference to be drawn from the spontaneous convergence of the questions everywhere coming up as to the number and quality of the children born.

Indication
as to num-
ber.

A sophistical, perhaps a blameworthy theory, first drew the attention of Western Europe, were it only by the indignation it excited in the nations which had escaped Protestantism. Veiling its metaphysical and empirical character under a varnish of science, it erred, scientifically, by ignoring the general law by which, throughout the series of living beings, fecundity diminishes in proportion as the race is higher in the scale. It erred, practically, in that it was in direct contradiction with the constant rate of increase observed in the population of the West, during the thirty centuries of the great transition, a rate unaffected by the parallel increase of general wellbeing.

(2). As to
Quality.

Again, the hereditary transmission of the more serious diseases, and that frequently in an aggravated form, has induced a general sense that it is desirable to regulate, not merely the quantity, but still more the quality of man's offspring. The Western world in modern times has become increasingly averse to the barbarous institutions which aimed at compensating this inevitable evil, so that the danger has assumed proportions calculated to excite universal attention, in proportion as the decline of Theology allowed an examination of the question. But the materialistic tendencies of medicine have prevented our conceiving of any remedy but one which is as illusory as it is oppressive, the prohibition, viz., of marriage to all of bad constitution.

In what con-
sists the
difficulty of
the problem.

Still, in the fact that economists and physicians continue their joint efforts, however discordant and irrational their views may be, we have an historical indication, that the question is ripe for settlement, more especially since the advent of the religion which is destined to accomplish that settlement. The difficulty is this, how to reconcile two wants, both equally imperious: the obligation of regulating human propagation;

the duty of respecting the marriage union as the universal basis of the Family which in its turn is the basis of the State. Now, this is only possible by a moral regulation of marriages, to the exclusion of legal checks ; so to make the production of children a responsible function voluntarily assumed.

On this question the Positive religion has two general solutions to offer, the one radical but an hypothesis, the other real but inadequate ; the two may always act in concert. As I have already sufficiently expounded them, it is enough ; here, to point out their conjoint application to this great problem. The two are : the utopia as to women, and chaste marriage, the chief purpose of which I have already stated.

Two general solutions offered by Positivism.

We should look on the former as supplying the only possible basis for a definitive systematisation of human reproduction, which, by its adoption, becomes voluntary and responsible. So long as it is not attained, the evil will never be attacked at its source ; all remedies will be but palliative. But the noblest vegetative function of Humanity once duly confined to her highest organs, the rapid spread of the Positive theory of hereditary transmission will allow a gradual regulation of that function, both as to number and quality. The natural laws of these two conditions will, at the same time, have become cognisable by all, by virtue of a considerable evolution of the universal Sociocracy. The solution, however, is one which will always be limited to the higher natures, for it is essentially of a moral kind and, as such, requires the persistent combination of higher sensibility and extreme purity.

(a) The Utopia.

Even if realised, then, it will never entirely supersede the less important institution, alone feasible at present, and a consequence of the systematic encouragement of chastity in marriage. When the Positive faith shall have generally subdued the coarse view sanctioned by Theologism as to the nature and destination of women, this form of marriage will rapidly spread ; already, prior to any theory, decisive instances proclaim its approach. A noble use of adoption will allow the completing of this exceptional form of marriage, by offering the parental relation in its purest form to those in whom the union of soul is most perfect, with the additional advantage of relieving the married couples who are in the best conditions for reproduction.

(b) Chaste marriage.

Inadequate, and inadequate because it is negative—this latter solution may even now, over and above its moral efficacy,

This a negative solution but useful.

lead to physical results of value by preventing the birth of children whose short life could be but a burden both to themselves and to society. As a palliative also, it foreshadows, nay even prepares the way for, the grand remedy, as it draws general attention to the problem, and gives rise to partial efforts towards its solution.

Intervention
of the Priest-
hood in both
cases.

Equally in either case, there will naturally be a necessity for the Positivist priesthood to intervene, to point out the end and judge of its attainment. But besides its general means of access to the sociocratic family, it will have a special introduction, with a view to its action on this point, in the body of opinions implanted by education and cultivated in the worship. That the maternal functions are social functions—this was duly if incompletely recognised by Catholicism,—Positivism stamps the truth with its definitive sanction, and the free acquiescence of the family is evidenced by its asking for and receiving the sacrament of Presentation.

Direct treat-
ment of
public life.

The normal reaction of private life upon public life thus sufficiently explained, the next step is to lay down the plan of public life, which we do by a systematic statement first, of its fundamental object, then, of its general conditions, lastly, of its several functions in detail.

Its funda-
mental pur-
pose.

From the first point of view, the difficulty lies in determining the permanent end of the collective action in the industrial state, industry originally being necessarily individual in its character. In spite of the persistent efforts of the Theocracy,—no other system has hitherto attempted to organise labour,—it has never been able to disengage itself sufficiently from its origin. Although the institution of castes in no way recognised the anarchical division of social functions into private and public, it could not but leave industry its essentially family character, it could not make it a really civic function. In fact, for this transformation two preliminary conditions are required: the separation of the capitalists and workmen; and the formation of the industrial hierarchy. The first alone is conclusive, the second, though necessary, has no social efficacy, save in so far as it is the spontaneous complement of the first. But, by an inversion, the second only was a consideration with the Theocracy; it was unable even to inaugurate the other, in default of a free developement of labour, a want traceable to the hereditary transmission of professions. Such forced inversion of the natural

order allowed no intercourse between the different castes but such as sprang from their respective employments; the organisation of industry was out of the question, whilst each producer was capitalist and workman in one.

When warlike activity emancipated the nation from the theocratic regime, a radical obstacle to industrial organisation lay in the necessity of enslaving the industrial to the soldier class in order to carry out the system of conquest. But this very subjection was ultimately to be the source of the regeneration of industry, the Western world escaping by its means the institution of castes. The true solution arose in the Middle Ages, when the change from conquest to defence had led to the gradual enfranchisement of the workmen, in the towns first, then in the country. From this point onwards, the directors of industry have become more and more distinct from the handicraftsmen, with a tendency to found a new patriciate, as a result of the progressive accumulation of productive capital. At the same time, their regular intercourse with one another has constantly led to fresh developement of the industrial hierarchy, a process which culminated in the gradual advent of the class whose special function it is to systematise man's peaceful activity.

The military regime preserved the West from Castes.

This highest patriciate can neither enter upon nor accomplish its social mission but under the all-pervading impulsion of the Positive religion. To judge aright its need of this, it is not enough to be aware, in the general, that every merely partial synthesis is impracticable, so long as the complete synthesis be not definitively established. We must go farther, and understand, in reference to this need, the radical difference that exists between the two successive forms of human activity. In its warlike stage it is intrinsically synthetical, in its pacific stage it is as naturally analytical; the first being in direct relation with the human order, where unity is the paramount idea, whilst the second deals exclusively with the external order, and here the predominant feature is dispersion. Hence the direct tendency of soldiers to develop the state, and the long persistence of the workers in the isolation of the Family.

The bankers need the impulse of the Religion of Humanity.

But if this natural difference gave the social superiority to war, during the whole course of human initiation, it will ultimately educe from the industrial existence a higher form of society. For war could only be organised on behalf of the

But industrialism finally most favourable to social life.

Country, whilst industry for its systematisation requires the idea of Humanity. All States were naturally rivals during the military period, be it that they simultaneously aimed at empire which one could only gain, or as they resisted singly the forcible incorporation which alone could secure their union. In the industrial period, on the contrary, they naturally converge, as it assigns to each an aim which may become the aim of all, as it is invariably an external aim. All alike seeking to profit by the resources the earth offers, there may be a distribution of parts between the several Republics, analogous to that by which we coordinate the several component classes of each Republic.

Positivism
favours in
two ways
the transfor-
mation of
industry.

We thus see that peaceful activity is the natural introduction to the union of the race, which alone can give it its systematic form, whereas military society could not rise above the idea of the State. The distinction explains the ultimate superiority of the industrial condition, whilst it explains also the inevitable slowness of its triumph. Its rise has been possible only in the West, after the utter exhaustion, not merely of war, whether for conquest or defence, but also of the absolute synthesis, whether theological or metaphysical. The organisation of labour demanded: the ascendancy of the habits of peace, as alone susceptible of the universality it presupposes, and the triumph of the Positive spirit, the only basis for the coordination of industry. Such are the two claims of Positivism to exclusive competence in regard to a transformation which necessarily devolved on Sociocracy, however judiciously it had been initiated by Theocracy.

The task re-
quires the
religion of
Humanity.

Its accomplishment demands the establishment of the universal religion, which will give systematic precedence to feeling over both intellect and activity. If in previous chapters I have shown that the theoretical class is mistaken in seeking for a purely scientific synthesis, the reader must now see that practical men are equally wrong in aiming exclusively at the discipline of industry. Neither action nor faith can be systematised without love, though the coordination of action and thought is the indispensable complement of the unity constituted by sympathy.

Moral ad-
vance su-

In its industrial form both universal and eternal, practical, as theoretic life, must look to feeling for its definitive organisation, the great outcome of the religion of Humanity. The first would degenerate into an useless accumulation of products,

the second into a barren collection of truths, were not both, over and above their relations with one another, subjected to the only power competent to regulate and ennoble them. Identifying happiness and duty, Positive religion places them once for all in moral improvement, the exclusive source of true unity. Under the persistent influence of that religion, all the aspects of human existence should become henceforward coherent and pure by virtue of the capital substitution of the relative for the absolute. In the last chapter, this substitution is effected for the intellect, which for the future will aid feeling by bringing faith to the support of love. We must now similarly regenerate the activity, which is more open to the process, as more social by nature. For private life the process is accomplished, and we have only to extend it to public life, the sole security for the whole discipline.

It is not enough for this, to conceive of action as equally competent with faith to be the support of love, from its completing the sense of order by that of progress. Its influence in this respect, necessary as it is, and common to all its forms, is inadequate to a satisfactory organisation of labour, which must excel that of war by substituting the union of mankind for the political society. To enable Humanity to throw off its egoistic character when getting rid of the absolute synthesis, man's peaceful activity must become, not merely collective, but distinctly altruistic in character.

Activity must become directly altruistic.

Hitherto, the only Occidentals who have made any serious effort to organise industry have been content with the endeavour to reintroduce, under a different form, the nationality characteristic of antiquity. Their patriotism was as inimical to other nations as the patriotism of ancient nations, its only aim being to substitute industrial for military dominion. Their attempts were too conflicting to allow of full developement, yet they soon proved to be more oppressive than anterior conquests; these latter invariably leading to incorporation, compulsory it is true in the first instance, but subsequently accepted by free consent, whereas the former tended to destruction. Their aim was to solve the problem of collective action to the total neglect of any moral purpose, and the result at which they arrived was the retrograde one of keeping war, in the interest of industry; a result which has brought them into complete discredit after two centuries of painful exertions. In the nation, where territorial

Hitherto attempts to organise industry have been national.

isolation, official Protestantism, and aristocratic rule, acted in spontaneous concert so as to give an appearance of consistency to this defective form of industrial organisation, peace and liberty have already led to its abandonment.

Socialist
attempt.

The revolutionary crisis gave birth in the West to another attempt to solve the problem, one more vague in its character but less transient, which seems to comply with the condition of universality, whereas in reality all it does is to change the object of preference. It gained, as was to be expected, most adhesion in the central nation, aided thereto by the negative metaphysical philosophy which France alone up to the present time has applied to the work of reconstruction; the initiative throughout resting with her, by virtue of the whole of past history. But aspirations of a similar nature have already shown themselves in all the Western nations, not excepting even the nation apparently given over to the craving for industrial supremacy. The errors in question, if more respectable, must be held to be also more dangerous than the other, as they combine the organisation of labour with the regeneration of society. Hence it is incumbent on Positivism rather to give attention to their examination with the object of correction, than to aim at completing and coordinating the investigation entered on by the economists with reference to national industrialism.

The supremacy of the
Proletariate
of all nations
substituted
for that of
one nation.

The difference between the two solutions, both equally erroneous, may be reduced to this: the one transfers to the proletariate, without distinction of nation, the oppressive dominion which the other sought to establish on behalf of one particular nation under exceptional conditions. Such is the only form in which it is possible for the metaphysical dogmas of the sovereignty of the people to retain a firm and dangerous hold, till such time as the Positive religion shall have succeeded in regenerating the anarchical aspirations which find in it their formula. In complete insurrection against the rich, the poor in their turn wish to be supreme; on the ground of their numbers they would be, not the basis, but the end, of all collective action. The error may wear a more social aspect than the preceding, but at bottom it is not less oppressive, since it exerts a pressure within the State instead of outside it, substituting, that is, the selfishness of a class for the selfishness of a nation. If it took this subversive form, the civism of modern times would be a contradiction in terms, since it would be the consecration of a

system of mutual industrial oppression, whereas its aspiration is to emancipate itself from that evil. To say nothing of the moral invalidity of the claim resting on mere number which is urged in justification of this new form of collective selfishness, its practical result could only be a never-ending struggle between the various constituents of the proletariat when it had triumphed over its common enemy, the patriciate. Were it then practicable, which it is not, from its anarchical nature,—a circumstance which gives it, as a theory, a longer existence,—we might confidently assert that the industrial demagogism would be even more ephemeral than national industrialism.

Treading neither path, for both equally though diversely mislead, in our organisation of human labour on the principles of universality and permanence we must ever keep in view the whole race of mankind without any exclusive preference. For the due compliance with this condition continuity must consequently take precedence of solidarity, as it did in the truly social phase of Antiquity, solidarity being purified in the normal state in that its sphere is enlarged by virtue of its better form of activity. Labour, as conquest, requires, to be rightly organised, that it be in the interest of posterity; the two cases differ only in that Humanity takes the place of the Country, as being the ultimate goal of all social existence.

Human labour must keep Humanity in view.

Thus it is, then, that the Positive religion constructs the system of man's active life by making it subordinate to the sympathetic synthesis whose universal supremacy has already coordinated our intellectual life. Destined respectively to reveal order and develop progress, both may really consist in living for others. But the consecration to this purpose implies that the above destination always regards the future, not the present, so to avoid the deterioration of our collective existence in the direction of egoism. With this condition the intellect spontaneously complies, as speculation naturally has a distant range, whether in art or science, not as a rule bearing fruit till the succeeding generations. It is for action to become as liberal as thought by stripping itself of all selfishness in a degree unknown to its earlier and introductory forms. Begun by the instinct of Fetichism with an eye to the Family descendants, the transformation became a conscious process during the military period on behalf of the succeeding generations of Citizens, and must now learn to embrace Posterity as a whole. No being can

The Future not the Present.

nobly labour for itself save Humanity, her servants for the time being do but employ in the interest of her servants yet unborn the products which they get from the materials collected by her servants in the past.

We must
work con-
sciously for
Posterity,
not, as
hitherto,
blindly.

The organisation of human industry as here presented requires no extraordinary enthusiasm in the industrial milieu, it does not even require any radical change in the prevailing habits. Here, as elsewhere, the ultimate regeneration is but the doing consciously and voluntarily what was hitherto done blindly. Traceable in the higher animals in rudiment, this disposition to labour for a posterity ever growing larger and more remote, was at all times the highest attribute of man. Here above all is the point at which the family and the state lend each other mutual support, the one preparing and re-kindling the impulse which the other perfects and consolidates. Had our predecessors treated us, as demagogic selfishness would treat posterity, Humanity would never have improved either its circumstances or itself. Fortunately solidarity has more and more become secondary to continuity, owing to the increasing importance of the accumulations of the past as compared with the present production. In the maturity of the race our great effort being not so much to develop as to regulate our powers, it is with the future especially that we must connect our exertions, so to rise superior to egoism, which, if it continue, even in a collective form, will inevitably end in mere personal selfishness.

The end of
industrial
activity.

Thus conceived, industrial existence is at once social and synthetical, by virtue of the concentration of all activity on this end of universal applicability: the developement of our sympathetic instincts by providing posterity with the means of securing their fuller triumph. Each family feels itself constantly ennobled and bound together by its inevitable cooperation with the whole of the race in the task of perfecting the external order on which all existence rests. Our compatriots and our contemporaries appear to us merely as fellow-labourers more within our ken, whose work we can second in a higher degree, without neglecting our own proper duties, the chief ground of our connection with the Great Being. The still beginning, never ending, reproduction of material wealth becomes for all the normal source of a growth of sympathy, on scale beyond what the indestructible treasures of the intellect

can ever excite, save only in the special class which presides over their universal distribution. The non-recognition hitherto of this prerogative of industry was solely due to the incompetence of the absolute synthesis on all social questions, the ordinary phenomena of which are so complex as to interfere more than others with their perception, in the absence of a theory which is an adequate presentation of them.

Assuming this as the fundamental end of human industry when regenerated, I have now to state the general conditions, the moral in the first place, then the political, implied in the collective service of the Great Being. Peaceful activity looks no longer to one family, nor to one class, nor to one nation, but to Humanity in its utmost comprehension, so that all the great sources of dispute disappear of themselves, leaving only, what are inevitable, occasional disorders. In such a state of things the priesthood, aided by women and the old men, may well succeed in inducing the ministers and the agents of the Great Being to exhibit, in their general conduct, the feelings and habits best calculated to consolidate and develop the Sociocracy.

The collective service of Humanity has for its perpetual foundation two correlative dispositions: the devotion of the strong to the weak, the veneration of the weak for the strong. During the whole preparatory stage, the latter naturally prevailed, for the object then was to concentrate powers whose very existence depended on such concentration. But in our maturity, the former principle vindicates for itself the legitimate predominance which I could not but assign it in my construction of statical Sociology. They on whom the Great Being devolves the permanent direction of its material providence should habitually set the example of the dispositions required by their office and which legitimise their power. A faith which is at all times demonstrable can warrant their claim to due obedience on the part of their subordinates, only so far as they themselves rest command on abnegation. And yet these dispositions on both sides would establish no solid accord, were not the end both have in common constantly made paramount, an end external in equal degree to all the associated workers without exception, each of whom, in the vigorous performance of his own service, ought to assist all the rest. Under these conditions, the distribution of the several functions may be an object of sincere respect, be the sentiments of the func-

The general conditions of industry, moral and political.

(1) The moral conditions.

Devotion and Veneration the two pillars of the social fabric.

tionaries what they may; their estimation as individuals depending, apart from their service, on a due comparison of their classification by the priesthood and their value as members of the practical hierarchy, a comparison involving no risk to discipline.

How the regime encourages the two.

The whole Positive regime naturally fosters in all alike devotion and veneration, by virtue of the feelings inspired respectively by the future and the past. Implanted by the education, consecrated by the worship, these subjective dispositions find, in industrial life, their outward object in women and priests, whom the patriciate and the proletariat unite in protecting and respecting. The way thus doubly prepared, the priesthood can easily recall the ministers and agents of the Great Being to the reciprocal sentiments which they should cherish in view of their joint destination. For, on comparing the two general divisions of the active class, we see that the proletariat and the patriciate, like women and priests, represent respectively the future and the past. It is for the priesthood, by its example, to breathe into both these reciprocal sentiments, for they are dispositions which its office compels it to cultivate simultaneously in itself—by its respect for the rich, by its devotion to the poor.

We attribute to the Patriciate the function of Will.

As regards the normal state, it were a work of supererogation to expound the inherent aptitude of the Positive religion to sanction and regulate wealth. It is only during the last phase of the transition, the subject of the next chapter, that the priesthood invested with the task of regeneration will find any serious difficulty in inspiring rich and poor, in the name of Humanity, with that respect and sense of duty which God can no longer bind upon them. In the maturity of the race we concentrate the two obligations, by attributing to the patriciate the function of will, which, as the expression of the objective life, completes the subjective.

The organisation of the true Providence depends mainly on the Patriciate.

In accordance with this view, the organisation of the true Providence must depend above all on the ministers of the Great Being; for her representatives, her interpreters, and even her agents are incompetent to impress on the direction a sufficient fixity, and without it the failure would be complete. Fatality, whether man's destiny or external necessity, were inadequate to regulate our conduct, if the will did not come in to complete the order of nature by combining command with

arrangement. Now, the introduction of this new but indispensable element implies the permanent concert of energy and power, a concert requiring for its due production a special class. Misplaced everywhere else, in this class the will is the legitimate instrument for supplementing the deficiencies in the composite and subjective constitution of the Great Being which prevent its originating, *proprio motu*, really effective decisions. The directing class, when admitted to share its supremacy, assumes a burden of responsibility commensurate with its elevation. The depositary of a power without which any satisfactory discipline of the wills of others would be impossible, the patriciate feels the need of discipline for its own will, more liable than any to disturbances, which, if more excusable, are more pernicious. Hence, if the patriciate is to discharge aright its office, and this is the condition alike of its happiness and duty, it must in all its commands respect the laws of Humanity, which it has only to complete, and from which comes its chief claim to the respect of all.

It follows that to regulate its action, the priesthood has only to appeal, in suitable terms, to the destination which is the ground of its existence. The various faults attendant on the possession of riches are to be judged in reference to the office of the patriciate, which may be stated as the conservation, and reproduction with increase, of the material capital of Humanity. If the statement is correct it leads us to complete and systematise the improvement Dante introduced, when his instinct led him to assign the prodigal the same punishment and the same expiation as the miser, Catholicism only condemning the latter. Positive morality goes farther, it disallows the equality, and definitively considers the miser superior to the prodigal; the prodigal being just as selfish as the miser in the eyes of all but his parasites, and more noxious to society, moreover less estimable from his want of the practical virtues, or of self-control. During the military period the facility of acquisition led men to confound profusion with liberality. Under the industrial regime, on the contrary, when accumulation is a laborious process, motives of self-interest do not destroy the social and moral value of habits of forethought and economy. Avarice implies discipline, and all that is required is to give that discipline a better direction, whereas the

The vices
incident to
wealth—
how re-
garded by
Positivism.

Avarice
above prodigality.

indiscipline consequent on prodigality admits of no such transformation.

Pride more
excusable
than vanity.

An analogous judgment is even more applicable to the two instincts of ambition, especially to pride, more excusable and more serviceable in the patrician than vanity in the theoretician. So deficient in energy are the altruistic instincts, that the craving for power is, as a rule, indispensable to the formation of real strength of will. But, authority once established, the more generous impulses can be and ought to be its sufficient support; they were not strong enough to create it, but they, and they alone, can ennoble it and consolidate it.

Ambition to
be checked
in the Pro-
letariate.

It is in the proletary class especially that the priesthood will repress ambition, for in that class it is as fatal to happiness as to duty, allowing for cases of an exceptional aptitude for the patriciate. Habitual submission, in all cases ennobled by respect, and often originating in attachment—this is the fundamental condition of its service to society and of its self-respect. Provided the patriciate ensures them the secure position which is their due, the happiness of the proletaries should be greater than that of their chiefs; for whilst contributing as much as the patricians to the common end, they have a fuller enjoyment of family life, in harmonious connection with their existence as citizens. Protected at all times by the interval between them and the patricians from the wish to rise out of their class, they reject instinctively the instigations of envy and distrust on the subject of the concentration of wealth, a concentration indispensable for the progressive improvement of their circumstances. If Catholicism occasionally succeeded in transforming the rich so that they became poor in spirit, Positivism will often raise the poor, so that they become rich in heart, the free auxiliaries of the capitalists in the conservation of capital.

The Patriciate as condensed as possible.

The moral attitude, however, suitable to the two organs of material Providence requires a complement in regard to both, based on the political conditions of collective action. To command with effect, the patricians have need to concentrate wealth and power as much as possible, with no other limits than those fixed by actual administration and personal responsibility. If the numbers given above for the four orders of the patriciate are rejected, they should be changed without interfering with the principle; better data only are required, and the

result could hardly be any very great modification in the degree of condensation.

As for the hereditary transmission of functions and capital, Rule of inheritance. in the sociocratic sense of the term, all we have here to do is to state more fully the fundamental law, laid down in my statical volume, of the free choice of the successor, with the sanction of the superior. Every functionary should nominate his successor seven years before his retirement, in our religious system fixed for sixty-three, that the nomination may be duly submitted to the control of public opinion, which will be bound to treat with respect the decision, whatever it may be. It were a waste of time to remind the reader of the regular connection between this act and the powers of disposing of property by will, and of adoption.

The education and the regime of Sociocracy will, of themselves, in combination, inspire the proletariat with the feeling of respect justly due to a concentration of power and wealth which must raise the conceptions and the feelings of the patri- Strikes. ciate by increasing their means and their responsibility. In accordance with the presentiment which finds its expression in ordinary language, their offices become charges or burdens, inviting pity rather than envy, the true compensation being the greater ability to serve Humanity. But the Sociocratic constitution demands of the proletariat that it renounce all violence as reactionary and anarchical. Where a struggle is unavoidable it must be limited to the refusal to co-operate, and in this, numbers may triumph over wealth, if their grounds of complaint deserve the sanction of the spiritual power, the only power which can give the requisite extension and union to the plebeian leagues. However great the popular excitement, an impartial and respected priesthood will as a rule obtain this abandonment of force, on the ground of a disinterestedness better appreciated by the inferiors than by the superiors.

Whilst the dispute is yet unembittered, the priesthood may often by a wise action prevent an open rupture by a judicious appeal to the conscience of the two contending parties; if that fail, to public opinion. Conscience, the noblest and the most efficient of moral forces, is the result of a combination in due proportion of love and faith. Prior to the advent of the true religion, a clear conception of conscience was unattainable, as no account could be taken of the impulse given by sympathy, The Priesthood appeals to conscience, public opinion, and finally has recourse to excommunication.

which, when fairly aided by the intellect, acts as a check on bad suggestions. But its Positive theory will enable us to make a better use of it by an appropriate appeal to each of its two constituents, both equally trained in the Positive education. Yet whilst stimulating conscience, the priesthood cannot at times avoid recourse to opinion, in the family in the first instance, then to that of society. When driven to this step, it will invoke in succession the women, the elders of the family, even the children and the servants; whilst in the city the priesthood will find its natural support in the proletaries. If forced to give the blame of society its extreme form of excommunication, so effectual will be its censure by the aggregate support of these auxiliaries, that, when it is just, the guilty person will be compelled, without any attack on his wealth, to depend entirely on himself for the supply of all his wants.

Power given
by the Sacra-
ment of In-
corporation.

Were it limited to the present or objective life, the action of the priesthood, whether on the State or on the Family, through conscience or opinion, would still be inadequate, and have a tendency to become oppressive. Its principal sphere, however, is the subjective life; there its competence is indisputable; and hence in the natural course of things it derives a supplementary resource for spreading indirectly a sound judgment of persons, by a wise employment of the sacrament of Incorporation. Yet it must not be forgotten that this final consecration demands, more than any other, perfect liberty, if it is to have its full efficiency. No one is to be subjected to the judgment of the priesthood unless at his own personal request, made when receiving the sacrament of Transformation. Nor is this personal consent sufficient; it must be ratified after his death by his family. So in most cases we avoid formal rejection, and when applied, a more decisive weight attaches to it. The full advantage of this moderation will, however, be reaped in the cases where the judgment is favourable, as it nullifies beforehand the protests raised by family vanity against the degree of honour conferred.

Precautions
against the
abuse of
capital.

In the second volume, I have sufficiently pointed out the complementary legislation in aid of the religion, as against the more serious disturbances of order. The intervention of the temporal power, though constantly on the decrease, as follows from the continuous expansion of the moral discipline, will never entirely cease to be required, even as regards persons. But I

must here remind the reader of the tendency of the Positive regime to rely rather on the use of contrast than of repression, rewarding the good, that is, rather than punishing the bad. In reference to the abuse of wealth, it will prefer creating capitalists to reducing them to poverty, and therefore will extend the practice of gifts, without absolutely renouncing confiscation, even in perpetuity. This mode will become so consonant to the general feeling, that, in default of the action of government, the donations might, at need, take the shape of purely voluntary subscriptions. Still, as this supplementary action always implies some defect in the constitution of society, it requires as many precautions as confiscation. It will be seen below in what way the regular progress of the Sociocracy will of itself supersede the necessity of frequent recourse to any such extraordinary methods, applicable principally during the last phase of the transition.

More important than either is another supplementary institution of an universal character, a moral and political institution; the systematic reconstitution of chivalry, the feudal germ of which must receive careful cultivation in industrialism, allowing for modifications in practice. In Industrialism, the voluntary protectorate, as the wrongs which it repairs or obviates, will concern property rather than persons; and, as such, its organisation will be easier and on a vaster scale. Its real strength will lie in a central nucleus, a body of patrician widowers, solemnly dedicated by their own free act to the office, but not therefore ceasing to take part in industrial life, except at stated periods of retreat, in buildings set apart for the purpose, in order to rekindle their zeal by contact with the priesthood. Round them will rally, before reaching their maturity, all such as, possessed of the requisite wealth, aspire to be enrolled one day in the protecting corporation. The consecration of wealth to such an object will make all feel the great importance of respecting liberty in the employment of capital, even when its holders have no distinct function, for such may exceptionally become the most useful members of the wealthy class, if they use aright the freedom which their position gives them. The central chivalry will in general find another source of support in the elder patricians, who will often retain great influence, even after they have transferred their capital. Lastly, it will complete itself by the adjunction

Industrial
Chivalry.

of the nobler proletaries, their devotion and their energy compensating their poverty, and offering the body of voluntary protectors an alliance which ensures success.

Precautions
against
abuse on the
part of the
Priesthood.

Such an aggregate of guarantees should in general suffice to guard against the abuses to which the patriciate is liable. For the priesthood, the repression of abuse on its part neither requires nor admits of any special institution, since the power which consecrates all the others cannot be subject to any standing external control. So long as its degeneracy, however extensive, does not reach the high priest, he has the regular remedy in his power, in the substitution, in case of need, of an entirely new clergy. But, if he too, supported by the body, go wrong, then the only remedy left would be the refusal of co-operation, a remedy which can never fail, as the priesthood rests solely on conscience and opinion, and succumbs, therefore, to their adverse sentence. The patriciate would curb it sufficiently by suspending its stipend, for in cases of serious error, popular subscriptions would not replace it, unless on the supposition of a fanaticism scarcely compatible with the Positive faith, where there is enthusiasm for the doctrines rather than for the teachers.

Functions
of the indus-
trial classes.

The aims of industry and the conditions of industry having been explained, it remains for me, in order to complete the organisation of labour, to determine, first, the functions of the directors of industry, when reorganised, secondly those of its agents.

The Direc-
tors.

The patriciate centralises both action and nutrition, but it is the latter that will always be its principal function, and that increasingly. For, the continual reproduction of materials must principally relate to provisions, notwithstanding that there is a proportionate increase of the instruments of production; for these, as less perishable, form a prominent part of the capital of man without affecting in any high degree the ordinary expenditure. In regard to this latter, we distinguish two cases, according as the maintenance allotted is public or private, a point which depends on the nature of the services rendered, according as they are general or particular. The first mode is exclusively applicable to the government, spiritual and temporal equally; it is the second therefore which I have specially to examine here, for it is the mode of maintaining the families of the people, and as such is the great

object of the patricians' attention. When I have explained it, I shall complete the subject by a consideration of the public expenses, which will never be anything but a small item in the cost of production.

The plebeian no less than the patrician ought to have, as the basis of his material existence, a distinct connection with the planet which is the abode of Humanity. Without it, action is deficient in steadiness, continuity is impaired, even solidarity is incomplete. Owing to the want of this connection, the earliest and most important of the revolutions in the temporal order, the passage, namely, from the nomad to the sedentary life, is as yet, in no single instance, ended. For in Western industry we are often struck by the scandal of wealthy capitalists who are not the owners of the buildings in which their business is carried on. But it is in the proletaries above all that we trace the imperfect fulfilment of this condition, they but rarely obeying the social law enunciated in my second volume. For the normal state, it is indispensable that every family become the owner of whatever it needs for its exclusive and continual use. In the case of the proletaries, we may sum up this in the ownership of their house; beyond this their aiming at property would be prejudicial to their happiness no less than to their duty.

Private
main-
tenance.

This ownership admits of two modes; either the possession of an apartment or of an entire house, the former required by the concentration of town life, the latter suited to the isolation of the country. The first, besides being most attainable, will offer many advantages socially, when the normal habits shall have removed causes which might now be occasions of disputes. It gives greater homogeneity to the proletariat by giving large opportunity for personal intercourse; it cements the mutual relations of plebeians and patricians, as the latter are in all cases the proprietors, and at times dwellers in the houses which on this scheme are divided into apartments for separate sale. The most common arrangement of the whole building would be into three stories, the two upper containing each three proletary families, the rest reserved for industrial purposes and for the patricians' dwelling. A seventh plebeian dwelling would belong to the family entrusted with the care of the whole, with the maintenance of order, and the facilitating the intercourse of the occupants, as the representative of the local magistracy of the proprietor.

Ownership
of the domi-
cile differs
in town
and country.

Beneficial
effects of
this owner-
ship.

This ownership of the domicile besides its own direct and special value, is susceptible of an indirect influence on the heart and on the intellect, by increasing fixity of feeling and of thought by a corresponding fixity of habits. It is a confirmation and extension of the duty now too generally neglected, never capriciously to change our connection even with the humblest tradesman, so to facilitate prevision in industry. Though enforced by Positive morality, this obligation would be liable to frequent evasion, particularly on the part of the working classes, where it is of peculiar importance, were the instinct of caprice not curbed by fixity of abode.

Its religious
effect.

The form adopted in towns for the working man's dwelling may further exercise a religious influence of a nature to be largely developed by the normal state in the children of Humanity. In the first place everyone thus connects his family's past with the apartment in which he was born; secondly, the fact that this apartment is an integral part of a larger building represents for him the solidarity of the citizen, nay even his connection with mankind. For there is an analogy between the distribution of the earth's surface among the possessors of the soil, and that of the social dwelling among the clients of the common proprietor, in whom, unless wholly unworthy, they may see the local representative of the Being to whom all belongs.

Annual ex-
penditure of
each Family.

In order to complete the systematisation of the material existence of the proletaries, I have to determine the ordinary amount of the annual expenses of each family, and as a consequence the average salary of the workman who presides over it. First however, we may, by virtue of the previous explanation, strike out the rent of his dwelling, the rule being that he is owner and not occupier. The regular time for its acquisition is when the young agent of Humanity takes the sacrament of Destination, or at any rate before that of Marriage; so to provide a secure existence for the new household. The best way is a yearly payment, taken during seven years from his wages, before his expenditure reaches its full amount. Even thus, however, as a rule, the new workman will require his father's aid to enable him to become the owner of his house, such aid being usually the last instance of parental assistance.

Wages.

It will suffice here if I simply restate the principle enunciated in my social Statics, which enjoins that wages, in their

normal amount, be divided into two unequal portions; the one fixed for each workman, whatever the work, the other proportional to the product of his labour. This law is as indisputable as that on which it rests, the necessarily gratuitous character of all human labour in a state in which all belongs to the Great Being, who entrusts his capital to his ministers to feed his agents. But I must now complete its statement by venturing to fix the normal ratio of the two portions, whereas in my second volume it was left to the patricians to determine it. I have since come to feel that, for a right understanding of the principle, the spiritual power must take the initiative and give it at once a precise form, allowing for ulterior correction as with all the other numerical suggestions of the present chapter. For these reasons I do not hesitate to propose, that for each of the thirteen months of the Positivist year, each workman receive a salary of a hundred francs, always paid by his employer, whether in town or country, so long as the free mutual engagement lasts.

Fixed portion of wages.

In towns, and towns must be the first organised, it seems to me that this amount should, as a rule, be one third of the whole salary, the fluctuating portion of which I estimate at seven francs for the average day of actual work. Whilst all rules as to the festivals observed and even the weekly rest are a question of habits and manners, we may yet assume that the worship will be scrupulously attended, especially by the proletaries, as for them above all it is meant. If so, the above rates give nine francs for the daily maintenance of a working family, consisting, as has been shown, normally, of seven members.

The variable portion.

My object in fixing this amount is to give a type, yet it differs but little from the results often attained even in the present anarchical condition of the West. On this point I see no ground for any distinctions between the several branches of industry in towns, the difference in their money returns being properly a question for the capitalist, as the industrial hierarchy was. The homogeneity characteristic of the proletariat will be constantly developed and fortified by the spontaneous concurrence of two influences, affecting the whole body equally, the one intellectual, the other moral. In the first place, from the completeness and uniformity of Positive education the workman will have it in his power to turn with such ease to a new trade that no serious inequality of wages can persist as between the

Inequalities of wages ultimately very slight.

various labourers of any given town or even of any given republic. Add to this pervading influence the improvement in the means of transport and the great increase of intercourse, and we can ultimately extend this equality wherever Positivism extends, and that has no limits but those of the habitable globe. This consequence of the identity of education and of worship, an identity perfected by similarity of habits and the universal adoption of the sacred language, is further placed on a solid footing by the direct and continual intervention of the supreme patriciate. By the exercise of active forethought on the part of its fourteen thousand bankers, there will be throughout the human planet an evenness of prices, which will be the last of the several securities justly due to the workman against the inequalities and fluctuations arising from the incompetence or the neglect of the capitalist.

Wages intended for the maintenance of the Proletariate, as the agents of Humanity.

In the second place, the gratuitousness of labour once adequately admitted through the agency of the Positive religion, wages, in obedience to the habits of the normal state, will be directed to their true purpose: the maintenance of the agents of the Great Being, each of whom in ordinary circumstances will have to support a household of seven members. This doctrine, which is the combination of a moral obligation with an intellectual conception, has met with no recognition hitherto, solely because the absolute synthesis was impuissant in presence of social life, even of the family, and that as a consequence of the want originally felt to develop powers without attending to their control. The morality of Theology could but preach veneration to the inferiors, leaving devotedness optional with the superiors, as the descendants or the representatives of the Gods, in accordance with the maxim naturally accepted by Antiquity: *paucis nascitur humanum genus*. It was reserved for a relative religion to extinguish all rights without exception by substituting throughout duties, in the name of Humanity, when on reaching his maturity man is led to discipline the forces which had their rise in his period of preparation. Then the morality of Positivism prescribes to all the servants of the Great Being alike, devotion and veneration, be it in their intercourse with one another, or in their common obligations to posterity.

The gratuitous character of Labour.

Thus, the doctrine that labour is gratuitous, is an inference from, and an expression of, the social character attaching to the institution of property, under whatever form it exist; it is

always an inheritance handed down to the present by the past, with the future especially in view. Every payment is an exchange, in which the recipient should receive more than he gives; as such, payment is a purely material question and never applies to the action of man, where the only equivalent is fair reciprocity. In the normal state, the agents of the Great Being hold their wages by the same title as its interpreters hold their stipends, its ministers their incomes; that is to say, as a condition of existence and the means of action, not as the price of their labour. For the obligation to serve, it is common to all, the only difference is in the service being more or less general and direct, whilst in no case can its nature be estimated in money. This conception, as accordant with the facts of social life as with personal self-respect,—both equally ignored in the theocratic idea of property,—leads to a uniform rate of wages for all families, which, on their part, in the public interest, put their requirements as low as possible.

No difference in this respect is legitimately admissible, save such as is due to an inequality in the cost of living. This will soon resolve itself into the distinction between the denser town population and the more scattered country population, a distinction which, however improved the relations between the two, will always have an influence on prices in each case. But the disparity will be constantly on the decrease, by the tendency to equilibrium of the price of materials and that of products.

These indications, taken as a whole, should make us feel that modern utopias as to sameness of wages have in them, notwithstanding their anarchical character, a confused anticipation of the social future. Their only radical flaw is their dangerous tendency to regulate by legislation what is exclusively within the competence of moral discipline. But as they share this error at the present day with all political schools, all equally adverse to the separation of the two powers, true philosophers should view it with indulgence in the people, as the natural receptacle for vague aspirations after the normal order.

To complete this examination of the principal function of the patricians, it is necessary to draw out distinctly the practicability of giving to all workmen the maintenance above settled, an amount actually inferior to what many of them even now attain. Such uniform rate of wages is not less feasible than is an universal encyclopædic education. The performance of

A general level with a certain difference for town and country.

Modern utopias on wages a dim anticipation of the truth.

Feasibility of the rate indicated.

these two correlated duties of the superiors to the inferiors, can alone secure the establishment of a really stable order, as substitutes for the two guarantees given, in the Middle Ages, by the protection of Feudalism and the discipline of Catholicism.

Economy of
the Positi-
vist system.

Never isolate the two bases, temporal and spiritual, of the Sociocratic regime,—in this condition lies a sufficient safeguard against the dangers, a sufficient power of overcoming the obstacles, which would meet us if we rested on one or the other exclusively. By constantly subordinating industrial reorganisation to moral regeneration, it is easy to see how practicable will be the reform above traced when habits and feelings, as opinions, shall have everywhere undergone a change. For the altruistic synthesis is in the highest degree economical, since it places happiness in the progressive cultivation by all of the instincts which lead to the least outlay. An analysis, with the conspectus of the brain before us, of human expenditure, will soon convince us, that in the larger part, it is undertaken to satisfy instincts which in the Positive religion are to be the object of increasing repression. Inculcating on all, in the name of happiness and duty, the keeping down the nutritive, the extinction of the sexual, instinct; making pride and vanity infirmities, altruistic morality will without difficulty procure the adoption of the habits of life consonant with the Sociocracy.

Public Ex-
penditure.

The next point is to complete our estimate of the general cost of man's nutrition by the consideration of the expenses of the government, temporal first, then the spiritual, which as such are met not by the resources of individuals but by the public treasury.

(1) Tempo-
ral. A cen-
tral govern-
ment indis-
pensable.

The patrician exercises as patrician a local power, in its extent determined by his capital and credit. As, however, industrial operations are essentially of an analytical character, even in the case of bankers, this separate power of the several patricians cannot regulate the industrial existence without the general and persistent intervention of a central power, invested with the functions of direction and repression. True it is that the government of man tends to be more and more spiritual, less and less temporal, yet counsel never can entirely supersede command. Each sociocratic republic, though not exceeding in extent and population Normandy or Burgundy, requires a government properly so called—that is to say a central power, ramifying in all directions, and consolidating and developing public life. In

the absence of such a power, it would be impossible to imagine the generality of conception and the elevation of feeling requisite to ensure the due convergence of the various industrial classes. To understand the want, it is enough to remark that the most wealthy bankers, even acting in concert, would be unequal to the money business of a territory of the above extent, as is clear at present from the spontaneous formation of branches by the bank of France or of England. Still, this more general power, necessary as it is to secure the voluntary convergence of three hundred thousand industrial agents, derives valuable aid from the local magistracies, the direct creation of the patricians, on which devolves the bulk of the administration of justice and police.

Thus simplified, the government, so far as it is political, may be vested exclusively in a supreme triumvirate, emanating from the thirty bankers usually found in the republic, as above limited. Of the patricians distinguished for breadth of thought and generosity of feeling, central power appertains to the three most remarkable for these two qualities. But they may not take this position till they have received the sacrament of Maturity, the normal age for which is forty-two, so as to have given satisfactory proof of capacity and to have established their credit. When consecrating them, the High-Priest of Humanity, or his representative, their national superior, will duly point out to them that however important their action hitherto, the duties on which they are now entering require a far higher intellectual and moral elevation. Such enlargement of views and feeling is naturally confined to the priesthood, but the priesthood is bound, at any cost, to abstain from all share in command, so to maintain intact the purity of heart and intellect which the consultative office presupposes.

The number of the dictators in the normal state is determined by this consideration, that the three more special branches of industry should meet on equal terms in the government taken from the more general branch. Within the territorial limits above assigned, a banker of ability is competent ultimately to grasp the aggregate of commercial operations or of manufacturing enterprises, or even that of agricultural industry. But no single banker could embrace the three in combination with the clear mastery requisite for the central government. Normally, then, the dictatorship is vested in the three principal

The supreme
Triumvirate.

The three
Ministers
respectively
of Agriculture,
Manufactures,
and Commerce.

bankers, respectively connected, by predilection, with agriculture, with manufactures, with commerce, not however exclusively, as their business involves habitual relations with all three departments. The three dictators are independent of one another except so far as they are bound together by the similarity of their social function and the influence upon it of a common faith. These two securities would render inexcusable any antagonism between them, for, obviated, as it is, by the difference of their administration, it could only spring from an excess of personality, which would be soon liable to the blame of the public or of the priesthood. The division of power between three would completely ensure us against their encroaching on spiritual functions; but this is a consideration, which though of very serious moment during the closing phase of the transition, need scarcely be taken into account in the normal state, the separation of the two powers being then, from every point of view, beyond the reach of attack.

Relations of
the Trium-
virate to the
Proletariate.

Thus rooted in the confidence of the patriciate, the socio-cratic triumvirate gains that of the people as a natural consequence of the constant relations, both private and public, of the bankers with the proletariat. Such connection seems at first sight inconsistent with the abstract character of the highest industry, which, as abstract, is in little need of workmen. But, from the personal ties formed in the weekly soirées, the socio-cratic arrangement as to the payment of the plebeian will be always giving rise to contact between the banker and all the workmen of his district. The capitalists will in fact find it convenient to look to their bankers for the monthly payment of their workmen, thus simplifying their weekly accounts. So there will arise a periodical connection of each banker with ten thousand proletaries; the result being that the least plebeian branch of industry will have the largest amount of intercourse with the people, and though such intercourse may be in itself slight, it may be a strong support to the dictatorship taken from the class in question.

Gratuitous
discharge of
the functions
of govern-
ment,

The government of the patricians, local as well as central, will be always gratuitous, its sole admissible reward being public esteem. Were one of its members to abuse his power to increase his wealth, public opinion would suffice, in default of legal authority, to drive the offender from power. But in subordination to the central government the system requires,

in addition to a special constabulary, an administrative service, with its members exclusively devoted to their duties. Herein we have the two great sources of public expenditure. The annual total for the two combined, taking the former numbers as the basis of an estimate, would, it seems to me, reach the sum of twenty millions of francs in each of the sociocratic states, as already determined. This sum will ordinarily be increased by a half in consequence of the regular institution of a system of public works, calculated to meet the evils arising from interruptions of private undertakings, and so to obviate or remedy the tendency in trades' unions to imperil industrial action. On this estimate the annual expenses of each republic will amount to thirty millions of francs, to be paid by the patriciate, allowing it the compensation it may derive from including this insignificant item in the accounts on which the rate of prices will depend.

Police and
Civil Service.

£1,200,000.

The only point on which the sociocratic budget is now defective is the determination of the sum of the Sacerdotal income, long derived from voluntary subscriptions, as I shall explain when treating of the transition, but finally requiring an official organisation. Adopting the numbers given in the opening of the chapter, I fix this annual payment at three hundred millions of francs for the whole West, or fifteen francs for each sacerdotal household; this includes all the expenses of the two thousand temples, each with a normal congregation of seventy thousand. The result is, the addition of a sixth to the national budget, reckoning, however, in this amount the sum transmitted to the central budget of the priesthood of Humanity to meet such expenses as have a general and not a local object.

(d) Spiritual
government.
The Sacer-
dotal sub-
sidy.

£12,000,000.

Anyone, with these data, can sum up the whole cost of nutrition which the normal patriciate has habitually to provide, by constituting it a first charge on the produce of labour when organised on a systematic plan. The temple with its ten philosophers meets the wants of ten thousand families; it represents one banker, fifty merchants, a hundred manufacturers, and two hundred agriculturists. Thus the interpreters of the Great Being are the thousandth, its ministers the thirtieth, part of its agents. The weekly and monthly expenses of the maintenance of these agents, then, with a very slight exception, constitute nearly the whole of the outlay which the patriciate has to control by a constant superintendence, both as indi-

The total
expenses of
nutrition to
be met by
the Patri-
ciate.

viduals and as a government. It is able, then, to estimate the amount of increase in the annual production necessary, if the generation it directs is duly to transmit to its successor the aggregate capital it received from its predecessor, with the anticipated augmentation. The result will be the formation of a true system of statistics (the statistics of the present day are empirical and unreliable) affording a reliable view of man's industrial progress, by aid of the accounts annually published by each of the five hundred dictatorships. Their publication will at once afford the means of judging whether the expenditure of the patricians does or does not interfere with the right discharge of their functions as regards the present and the future; such judgment constituting the sole financial check on the worthy ministers of Humanity within the competence of the priesthood and the public.

The chief
function of
the banker.

We thus see how the subordination of action to nutrition is more complete in the collective than in the individual organism; the end in view becoming external, altruism supplants egoism in the direction, and forms a more perfect and less unstable unity. The view here taken sets in its true light the normal dignity of the supreme patriciate, alone competent to conceive human industry in its entirety, by the light of the theory furnished by the religion, and under the impulse of synthesis derived from the priesthood. Under these conditions, the chief function of the banker is to organise with wisdom such undertakings as deserve assistance, whilst aiding in the suppression of the less sound. Besides the money derived from the circulation of values, he will dispose of the capital placed at his command by retired patricians, and perhaps even by the savings of plebeians, in both cases freely offered in aid of his financial operations, from the wish to avoid the trouble and anxiety attendant on inadequate means. It is in my eyes a happy omen for the proximate advent of Positivism that my first hints on the function of the banker have already led to an adequate conception of that function in its full extent on the part of a young banker, whose adhesion to the true religion is as prudent as it is devoted.

The part of
the Proleta-
riate in
civil life.

I have now, as the last step required to end the delineation of civic existence, to systematise its indispensable complement, the complement, at once moral and political, which it finds in the proletariat, the sole decisive guarantee of its coherence and its dignity.

Granting the sociocratic conception of wages to remain in full force, the working classes, shielded as they are from liability to want, are in a better position than their temporal chiefs, nay even than their spiritual, for realising the grand object of the common education. Their situation is the one in which a man can best attend to his improvement and to his happiness, by a wise exercise of all the faculties which are worth cultivating, whilst he links his domestic to his citizen life through the instrumentality of the form of action most consonant to our nature. In the proletariat, more than elsewhere, is the subordination of egoism to altruism on a right footing, as circumstances there favour the repression of the former, the growth of the latter. The happy mean ought there to render easy the discipline of the nutritive instinct, and the plenitude of domestic bliss victory over the sexual. Pride and vanity, these are the instincts which the people must most exert its wisdom to check, for they can find there no social destination as in the exceptional instances above given, and so tend usually to be a source of trouble both privately and publicly. Looking on them as human infirmities, the proletariat will exert himself so to shape them and limit them that they may act simply as a healthy stimulus to emulation in the discharge of his daily duties, whether as a workman or as a man. If a real vocation leads him to aspire to a share in government, either spiritual or temporal, he is aware that its necessary concentration in few hands places it out of the reach of most of those who might have a claim; he bends himself to the putting forth of his own proper value in such a degree as to deserve the only recompense accessible to all.

Favourable
situation of
the Proleta-
riate
morally.

Unlike his chiefs, the proletariat is not absorbed by his special business; as much as they, however, must he consider its right performance as the first duty of the true citizen. To feel its nobleness, he has but to consider that a concerted interruption of work would soon derange the whole economy of society. But, whilst such a cessation of action by the collective proletariat must always be open to it, in order to ensure a proper respect for its free cooperation, the proletariat will reserve this formidable power as a last resource, to meet serious and protracted violations of the sociocratic arrangements. Its possibility is destined mainly to obviate the having recourse to violence, such a step being intrinsically inconsistent with

The great
power of the
Proletariate
to be felt
rather than
put out.

industrial life, and yet at all times imminent, as the people has a natural propensity to surmount social difficulties by an abuse of the power of number. As a result of the whole education and regime, the peculiar power of the proletariat will be generally felt without being called into exercise. For not to dwell on the systematic remonstrances of the priesthood, the patricians will of themselves be aware that they are not the direct agents in reproducing wealth, and that, however large their capital from all sources, they would be powerless if the plebeians did not turn this instrument to account. Far from encouraging pride in the people, their sense of this truth habitually reacts with a sympathetic influence, as it tends to lead the proletaries to a juster estimate of their continuous service on behalf of posterity in the aggregate, the only legitimate object of all their labours of whatever kind.

General
office of the
Proletariate.

Although it is incumbent on the proletariat to overcome its inherent tendency to neglect its special work and attend to its general function, it is still this general function which determines its character as a social element, by the contrast between the homogeneity of the plebeian and the heterogeneity of the patrician body. If the citizen is to pay, as he should pay, constant attention to the welfare of the whole, it can only be on the condition that his peculiar business do not habitually absorb him, but involve simply an easy responsibility. In the priesthood even, where the two coincide, the general function takes a special character, and so tends to interfere with the supervision of the whole by making the priesthood attach undue importance to the systematisation of abstract science. The exercise of this supervision then, a normal want, devolves on the proletariat, disengaged as it is from all prepossessions and naturally drawn towards an office involving no responsibility, and rendered easy by the limited area of the sociocratic States. Whilst listening with respect to the advice of the priesthood in regard to it, the plebeians should discharge it with complete independence, so to be able, if occasions arise, to wield it against the encroachments of the spiritual power no less than the abuses of the practical power, invoking against both the faith, which all alike acknowledge.

The Salons
of the People.

The salons of the people, then, become the principal laboratories of public opinion not merely as the more numerous, but above all as more apt to check an authority not derived from

the people, but the misuse of which falls principally on the people. The primary condition of the right discharge of this function of control is the homogeneity of the proletariat, the way for which has been prepared by the dissolution, in the natural course of things, of all the trade associations, associations only suited to the Middle Ages. Such homogeneity, however, of the proletariat will be no obstacle to the rise of a class of workmen whose special work brings them into relation with all the others, a class therefore holding to the proletariat a position analogous to that which the bankers hold to the other capitalists.

- Since the total abolition of slavery, the use of machinery has gradually allowed us to draw from the inorganic world the material forces which human beings no longer furnished. Machinery, as the general complement of the industrial organisation, grew in importance everywhere during the latest phase of the Western revolution, coincidently with the rise of the banking class, prior to which event industrial undertakings were limited in extent and deficient in permanence. In the normal state and under systematic direction, machinery is to the arts what methods are to the sciences; neither directly produces, but both become the great means of production. Of universal application, the construction of machines leads to the creation of a distinct branch of industry, in natural connection with all other branches, not merely of manufacture, but of commerce, nay even of agriculture. Banking alone is independent of it, but the character of generality which attaches to both alike should form a bond between the highest directors and the highest operatives, once let the haughtiness of the patrician and the pride of the plebeian give way to the better feelings of the normal state.

Machinery
and Engi-
neers.

The existence and the fraternal ascendancy of this class, a class composed of the highest and least special working men, constitute a natural preservative of the homogeneity of the proletariat, the condition of its convergent action, and an obstacle to the dissolving tendency of scattered effort. But the free acceptance of its supremacy, the sole hierarchical element admissible in the popular milieu, requires to complete it at the other end of the scale, the incorporation, on suitable conditions, of an exceptional class, a class with regard to which Western feeling is as yet defective, especially in Protestant nations.

Mendicants.

Under the
protection
of the Pro-
letariate.

When proclaiming the gratuitousness of labour in order to organise the sociocratic existence of the proletaries, the Positive religion may not neglect those who, though in spite of the common education, are temporarily or even permanently incompetent to fulfil their own more peculiar duties. Such inability may be due to a defect in their physical, mental, or moral constitution; it may be due to some defect in the collective organism; in either case Humanity requires that these, her exceptional children, be maintained and made available, not however placed on a level with her full servants. The patriciate, nay even the priesthood, may equally with the proletariat, furnish, in the natural course of things, recruits to this supplementary body, into which fall all who have failed either from accident or from defective organisation. Their maintenance cannot devolve on individuals, inasmuch as they contribute nothing industrially, but must in all cases rest on the free extension to them of a noble fraternity. The Protectorate is one which especially pertains to the proletariat, be it that the class is more keenly alive to circumstances more akin to its own, or rather that it has a clearer sense of the value socially of a body with such complete liberty of action.

Beggars—
passive
proletaries.

All those, whom in our present anarchical state we stigmatise as beggars, may be as valuable members of the poorer class as the so-called leisure class is among the rich. By both, the name of parasite is deserved only if they fail to use the freedom which is their characteristic. Both, though in opposite ways, have an existence without any definite purpose, but they may equally contribute to the public welfare, by perfecting the patrician chivalry or the plebeian supervision. It were to attach a degrading importance to the reproduction of wealth to think that inability to take part in it justifies contempt or oppression. Without taking such part, with no definite duty whatever to perform, a citizen may be habitually rendering great service, he may even attain to honour after death, if he duly put to use the capacity as a citizen which is to balance his incapacity as a workman.

Fraternity
between the
Engineers
and Work-
men.

Thus arise, at the two extremès of the proletary body, two natural appendices, the one normal, the other exceptional, each in its own way qualified to concentrate and to complete the general supervision exercised by the body. Equally disposed to fraternise with all plebeians, and from different motives prone to

migratory habits, they will be instinctively led to a special intimacy, with the object of increasing the social influence of the proletariat, when the normal habits and feelings shall exist in any considerable extent. As the highest titles to personal consideration are, in the Positive religion, width of intellect and generosity of feeling, the most active class of the plebeians may rationally fraternise with the most passive, in spite of the discrepancy in their characters.

For the full organisation of human life it remains for me to pass from the relations between citizens to the relations of the States, so to gain a clear idea of the way in which the five hundred separate Republics of the regenerated globe constitute the universal Republic, by virtue of a concert, in all cases perfectly free. But, though their convergence, the convergence of instinct and of reason, will be the noblest result of the religion, and more than in the mediæval period is the highest of the priesthood's tasks, yet its explanation at present offers no serious difficulty. For their agreement rests directly on the joint supremacy of the spirit of relativity and of peaceful activity, the two foundations of the altruistic synthesis, the only synthesis of universal acceptance. All that I have to do is to characterise the continual concurrence to this end of the patriciate and proletariat with the priesthood, that priesthood aided throughout by the women and the old men. Although the human family in its entirety requires and admits only a spiritual government, with no admixture of temporal rule, unity of sympathies would be unattainable were not the influence of the practical brought to the support of the counsels of the temporal power.

The relations between States.

Common education, common feelings, nay even common language,—with these bases, the free harmonious action of the several sociocracies of the earth still calls for the habitual intervention of the priesthood, aided by all classes, to anticipate or settle disputes, to prepare the way for or promote cooperation. Notwithstanding the universal predominance of industry and peace, and the entire abolition of war, there will always be a liability to outbreaks of national selfishness, under the form, as between nations, of monopoly as the substitute for conquest; as between classes, of the despotism of wealth or numbers. Consequently it will be often the duty of the priesthood to enforce on nations, just as much as on classes, the truth, that the

Monopoly prevented by the Country being subordinated to Humanity.

ascendancy, so universally invoked, of the social over the personal instincts can only be permanently secured by our sympathies being extended from the race. It will be necessary to proclaim that it is as indispensable constantly to subordinate the Country to Humanity, as it is to subordinate the Family to the Country. The limitation of area will support this conviction, each separate Sociocracy being thus preserved from the foolish effort to subsist by its own industry alone and to get rid of all dependence upon other nations.

The Priesthood will need in this the aid of the Bankers and Proletariate.

Yet the checks of intellect and feeling would be inadequate in industrial difficulties, without the freely offered assistance of the supreme patriciate and of the whole proletariat. But with the additional aid of these two classes it will commonly be possible to overcome the disturbing action of a disorderly activity or ill-directed patriotism. For monopolist leanings are peculiarly proper to the capitalists who are directly engaged in industry, whether merchants, manufacturers, or even agriculturists. Bankers as a rule are exempt, owing to the extent of their operations; the proletariat from its complete homogeneity. Nay even within the limits of the popular body, I should point to the engineer class as particularly predisposed to secure the triumph of the social principle both at home and abroad, by virtue of its regular relations with all branches of industrialists.

The peace of the world, how preserved.

The fourteen thousand bankers who preside over the development of the earth's resources, the millions of proletaries with whom they are in habitual contact, will enable the Pontiff to maintain, by his hundred and forty thousand organs, peace upon the planet. Sanctioning patriotism, as an indispensable intermedium between family affection and the love of mankind, the Positive religion transforms it into the persistent disposition to perfect the State. The true citizen renounces monopoly and conquest equally, and will love his country as he loves his lady, exerting himself to render his country a better servant of Humanity, without concealing from himself her shortcomings.

Uniformity of legislation—of weights and measure

Nor is the establishment of peace the sole aim of the spiritual government of Humanity, it must, with the same auxiliaries, organise, systematically, concert. Exercising a constant influence upon the five hundred dictatorships, the priesthood alone can institute and maintain uniformity in legislation, especially as regards marriage and inheritance, in order to

secure complete moral similarity and to facilitate convergence in action. From it too must come the universal adoption of a suitable system of weights and measures, a natural appendix of Positive education.

From the dynamical point of view, the influence of the Church upon the State, industrially, should be directed to the perfecting industrial harmony by directing the local efforts to their best use. The continuous developement of general socio-eratic feeling will soon determine the true aptitude of each country as regards particular branches of agriculture or of manufactures which it should pursue. This determined, the bankers, guided by the scientific instructions of the priesthood and instinctively aided by the engineers, will give the whole system of production its right direction, to the avoidance of misdirected and duplicate efforts, so as to secure in every case the appropriate result.

Special industrial aptitudes of the several countries.

The last step in the systematic direction of Human activity is the ordering of the largest relations, the relations of the human species, as a collective personality, with all the animal races amenable to discipline, with a view to making the order of things in which we live as perfect as possible.

The relations of man with the animals.

The standing league of free agents against External necessity, the rudiment of which is traceable to the instinct of Fetichism, becomes under Positivism the chief sphere of political action in the true sense of the term, so soon as the requisite harmony has been introduced into the direction of the world. A Being external to the world, which should guide its affairs, would follow the course naturally taken by human Providence, in first perfecting the highest race, the race most susceptible of improvement. This, the basic improvement, is at the present day summarily expressed by the definitive victory of Relativism over Theologism, of peaceful industry over war. So constituted, the Great Being should inaugurate its maturity by the gradual raising of the auxiliary races which with their own consent it associated during its childhood. An imperious necessity forbids its extending its tutelary sympathy to all animal races, yet it has, at least, the satisfaction of feeling that its enemies are the enemies of its allies, and that by the destruction of its rivals in power it guarantees their existence.

The Great Being must ameliorate the condition of its voluntary allies.

Amongst the races which have been disciplined, we must distinguish between the laboratories of our food and our active

Domesticated animals.

(1) Those
which serve
for food.

auxiliars. The first class has long been a creation of human foresight, for without it the ruminants would have disappeared by this time under the teeth of the carnivores. But that they are so is an obligation for us, whilst submitting to the law which compels the use of animal food, to submit in a better spirit by protecting its victims as far as is consistent with our necessities. Up to the last moment, we ought with active sympathy to exert ourselves by improvements in their circumstances and by kind treatment, to make them forget the gloomy prospect their predecessors' fate holds out. At the time of death, those on whom the terrible office devolves will do their work with the seriousness it demands, perfecting the means of destruction in order to lessen suffering. Although its encyclopædic education prompts this class to use the opportunity to make experiments, experiments which should be disallowed by Positive morality in every other case, it will not forget to extend to the innocent the merciful treatment customary with the guilty.

(2) Our ac-
tive auxi-
liars.

For our auxiliars, the sympathy of man may and should take a more satisfactory course, improving not so much their external conditions as their nature, physical, intellectual, and moral, by the habitual encouragement of true fraternity of feeling. The herbivores will be gradually raised by the Great Being to the dignity of carnivores, so to become more active, more intelligent, nay even more devoted, as they more and more are assimilated to the direct servants of Humanity. As for the animals which are nearest the human type, both in brain and in body, it is for Humanity in its maturity to give systematic direction and expansion to its association with them,—the association of feeling and often of action, which its well-grounded instinct of sympathy led it to institute during its childhood.

Animals not
to be em-
ployed
where inor-
ganic forces
will do.

The Positive Economy should always consist in the assigning to every agent the task for which it is fitted, not employing for its accomplishment forces which might be turned to a better purpose. On this principle, in Western industry we have reached the point of considering it barbarous to use men as a weight or motive power; all purely mechanical services, not merely statical but dynamical, we project out of ourselves, by the aid of a judicious employment of machines. Hence a simultaneous advance both in personal dignity and in social utility, as we can avail ourselves of the mental and moral value inseparable

from the humblest children of Humanity, but previously lost to the race and painful to the individual. Our progress however in this respect too often stops short at the substitution of animals for man, not sufficiently utilising inorganic forces. The more complete introduction of industrial machinery and its better use will have as consequences, respect for our voluntary assistants and increased use of the blind forces of nature, the vast power inherent in which should suffice us did we but know how to use it; for instance, did we know how to employ to better purpose the immense force of the tide. From the animals as from men, we should demand no merely automatic service, as opposed alike to economy and morality. When we have learnt to avail ourselves of the heart and intelligence of our allies to such a degree as to entrust them with the main superintendence of inorganic forces, we shall find a better use for the human agents thus set free, and be able to develope on a larger scale the sense of fraternity upon earth.

The double progress here indicated is one in which all classes of regenerate Humanity ought instinctively to aid, by a steady influence, at once intellectual and moral. But it more particularly concerns the priesthood and the proletariat, both alike deriving their inspiration from women. Besides the intellectual reaction of Positive education which removes from animals the ban of Theology, the sociocratic clergy, on resuming the medical functions, will be careful to include the animals in their exercise in a far more satisfactory way than was possible under the Theocracy. Taught by its example, the proletaries, the immediate directors of the league between man and the animals, will ensure the prevalence of true sympathy towards our lower brethren, without needing to insist on the services they render or to trace the close connection which exists between their habits and ours. The two extreme classes in the Sociocracy will combine to perfect, by theory and practice, the soul and the body of the races already disciplined, as also to widen the range of association, which has not been able to take a step in advance since Fetichism.

That the unity based on sympathy may attain its utmost completeness, we must be able to embrace in it even the inorganic world, in relation to which Construction must always take precedence of Destruction; never must we forget that, here too, all caprice is immoral.

All classes must cooperate in this amelioration.

The inorganic kingdom not left out.

Materials, as well as products, are to be respected.

The familiar knowledge of human nature will make all feel that contempt and oppression exercised on matter may extend further, may extend to the body and ultimately to the soul. Accustomed to respect products, true sociocrats will learn also to reverence materials, and thus allow full scope for the moral influences attendant on the irrevocable absorption of Fetichism in Positivism, especially when aided by the institution of subjective milieus. The external order ever suggests Humanity, for Humanity alone can know that order and improve it, Humanity therefore consecrates it as condensing it. We ought* so far to ameliorate the terrestrial regime as to give us just ground for regret that the economy of the heavens is wholly beyond our intervention, so wholly that we can but use it, not correct it. Yet whilst realising all the improvements in our power, we never forget that their attainment is based on our submission to the order of nature, and that our gratitude is due to the laws of nature, as they give us a basis for action. Whilst faith reveals to us our dependence upon the whole formed by the beings we know, love gives us a sense of our dignity, as aware that the destination of our action is to modify the hierarchy with which we are connected in the common interest of its various elements. The whole wisdom of man, whether theoretical or practical, is condensed in this fundamental law: the noblest order perfects the lowest through submission to it.

The result of the whole chapter is a triumphant verification of the announcement with which it opened, of the inherent competence of the regime to fully harmonise sympathy and synthesis, the former embodied in the worship, the latter in the doctrine. The unity which sympathy gives has stood the hardest test, it has disciplined practical life, after having reduced to system our intellectual existence. Under the guidance of love, under the control of faith, action unites and strengthens the union of the two, by the developement of industry in its collective mode, thus made the material groundwork of human progress, physical, intellectual, and moral.

This chapter having concluded the work of construction of the Positive religion, the next has to organise its universal acceptance.

CHAPTER V.

THE PHILOSOPHICAL ESTIMATE OF THE PRESENT, BY VIRTUE OF THE
" COMBINATION OF THE FUTURE WITH THE PAST ;

WHENCE

A GENERAL VIEW OF THE LAST PHASE OF THE TRANSITION.

THIS last volume may be regarded as the systematic expansion of the fundamental formula which embodies the Positive religion. The first chapter dealt with it directly, putting it forward as a whole ; of the three following each treated one of its three indispensable constituents. Its definitive acceptance becomes the particular object of this last chapter, in which the religion comes into immediate connection with the political system.

Object of this chapter —the acceptance of the formula of the Positive Religion.

The Western revolution, as intellectual rather than social, should naturally enter on its close, at the point where the intellectual reconstruction vindicated its claim to universal applicability by embracing, for the first time, the whole range of human interests. Now, this condition is actually satisfied by the systematisation which I have just ended, and especially by the preceding chapter, where love and faith meet in action. But, to evidence its competence, and to complete its service, the religion which deduces the future from the past must direct the present, so as to bring it into unison with its source and with its destination, both objects of general conception.

Positivism has to regulate the Present no less than to deduce the future from the Past

It is by thus triumphing over our present anarchy, that Positivism, at one and the same time, submits to a crucial test and conquers irreversible assent. Its ascendancy must be gained by its establishment of a complete discipline in the very midst of the most entire disorder, a disorder which threatens human society with absolute disintegration. The religion which possesses such power will, by virtue of the possession, be called upon to regulate a future, in which the work of organisation will be as difficult as at present. In the fullest sense real, in its very essence social,

By overcoming anarchy Positivism will win assent.

the Positive faith may be brought to bear immediately on the government of society; whereas Catholicism, as egoistic and chimerical, could not influence government till after its acceptance by individuals. The heir of five centuries of increasing disorganisation, the religion of Humanity will be universally summoned to the rescue of order and of progress, when once it is sufficiently known. Although destined to regenerate the whole of man's existence, its first application must be to public life, as the main seat of disorder. It will inaugurate the universal morality by regulating the conduct of nations first, then that of families and individuals, but without ever failing to draw out the essential correlation of the three parts of the Positive regime.

Examination
of the state
of the West.

Our aim being to order the latest phase of the transition, the first point is to judge aright the actual situation of affairs, by combining the knowledge of the previous evolution of man with the conception of his normal state as already given with sufficient accuracy. In this introduction no portion of Humanity but is concerned, yet it has more special reference to the West, for thirty centuries the seat of the gradual movement towards the regeneration of mankind.

The prepara-
tory evo-
lution.

The successive phases of our evolution all co-exist in the actual condition of man; all, however, alike giving signs of a common tendency to adopt a solution which meets the immediate wants of each, as realising aspirations both universal and persistent. After creating the family, Fetichism in its highest form as Astrolatry, undertook to found an universal association on the basis of a homogeneous existence regulated by a common faith. Theocracy advanced farther in the same direction, availing itself of the only belief which at that early period could enforce the due amount of subordination. Polytheism in its military form might seem to lose sight of the end but was really a movement towards it, by its system of conquest which resulted in the conquering nation's becoming definitively the nucleus of union for the whole. The convergence was distinctly traceable under Monotheism, more particularly defensive Monotheism, with its overt aspiration after the formation of a universal society. The effort failed, but the nations have never lost the wish for, never abandoned the hope of, an association co-extensive with the race. The establishment of such an association as an intellectual conception and as a social fact—such is the issue of the revolution, which, by virtue of the

exhaustion of the established order, ensures the simultaneous triumph of a demonstrable faith, and of peaceful activity.

In regard to the common issue of the aspirations arisen during the process of education, we must distinguish between the two unequal portions of the race, demarcated by the waiting for, or the active endeavour after, this universal society. The past teaches us, that the nations, in by far the larger part, whilst in heart and intellect bent on the formation of one great human family, have one after the other given up the hope of becoming its centre. All the dispositions grounded on the various forms of the absolute synthesis have neutralised one another, the result being to concentrate the process of elaborating the common solution on that portion of the world which is the cradle of the relative religion.

Distinction
between the
peoples
which wait
for this
culmination.

On the rise and spread of Theologism, Fetichism altogether abandoned the hope of universal acceptance which marked its latest stage, Astrolatry. But the great Theocracies, which deliberately renewed the attempt, in their turn lost the initiative, in consequence of the prevalence of the military regime. Thus the two principal forms of the provisional religion became essentially passive, and have for a long time been waiting for the regeneration which they have no hope of directing. The presidency of Humanity was definitively vested in the West, under the impulse successively of the conquests of Rome, and of the defensive form of Monotheism. Catholicism and Islam alike claimed universality, and on equivalent grounds, but their claims cancelled one another, and the focus of the movement, the West, was left to work out the common solution in the only possible way, by the preparation for a relative religion to be substituted for all the absolute syntheses at once. Whilst engaged in the necessary preliminaries, the scientific and practical groundwork of this construction, the West was rendering its acceptance easier by emancipating itself, as was necessary, from the beliefs calculated to prevent the various populations from uniting with their Western centre. By tacit assent, an assent on the part of Islam as much as on that of Theocracy and Fetichism, there devolves on the West, unshackled as it is by theological belief, the direct working out of a renovation expected by all alike.

Fetichism
and Theo-
cracy have
become pas-
sive. Mono-
theism in its
two forms
has failed.

The West
becomes the
organ.

* Neither the struggles between the Western nations since the close of the Middle Ages, nor their abuse in common of their

This it owes
to its triple
transition.

superiority over other nations, have been able to destroy this instinctive convergence, the first step to the ultimate union. So unprecedented an agreement is in all cases the result of the utter exhaustion of the previous system, combined with a defective growth of the germs of renovation. The West owes its prerogative solely to its triple transition—its intellectual, active, and lastly affective transition—which, extending throughout thirty centuries, issues, in the five latest, in the elaboration, negatively and positively, of the universal solution, a result not possible elsewhere.

Difficulty of
the final
phase.

Once let this mission be as fully recognised in the West as it is outside, and the Western nations will be disposed to adopt gradually the feelings, habits, and opinions consonant to its primacy in the race. But such recognition can only be the result of a triumphant spread of the doctrine which guides the reconstruction, and nowhere will that doctrine meet with greater obstacles than in the milieu which is to raise the others, for the revolutionary habits there prevalent, once a furtherance, are become a hindrance to the fulfilment of its mission. In my third volume I have clearly explained by what fatal chain of circumstances the transition in the West became more and more anarchical in character, even before it had completely lost all organic tendencies. Complete organisation has hitherto been attainable only under the Theocracy, and there it soon became adverse to progress. The effect of opposition between the two has been that progress has prevailed, but has prevailed by encouraging, side by side with a partial construction, a general revolt against the original system, the substitute for which Positivism alone offers. The character of anarchy has been strengthened in proportion as the developement of the powers of man has evidenced the incompetence of the absolute synthesis to regulate them without undue compression. The revolutionary disposition, long limited to the increasing impairment of continuity, extended to solidarity on the disruption of the Catholic unity and the Feudal hierarchy.

The tendency useful in its day is now an evil.

Such a tendency was of use in furthering the inevitable transition from Theocracy to Sociocracy, so long as the process of regeneration consisted in the preparation of materials; construction at that time being impossible without destruction. But when reorganisation proper has become the urgent want, the work of demolition being complete, the revolutionary

habits interfere with their own purpose, as they set themselves against any synthesis. Thus it is that, in disposition, the more active portions of the race are not on a level with the more passive; the latter invariably expecting with confidence and resignation the construction of an order which shall embrace all, the former looking with repugnance on the indispensable conditions of such construction.

Thus the chief task of the Positive religion is to regenerate the nucleus which has prepared its way; and this accomplished, its extension to the whole will be effected without hindrance. Long destined to furnish in all cases leaders, whilst the masses remain comparatively unaffected, it must first perform this office for the milieu which gave it birth, and which is amenable from its increasing anarchy to no other discipline. In default of its guidance, the well-grounded anxiety inspired by the progressive advance of subversive tendencies, drives men provisionally to rally to retrograde beliefs, which are radically incompatible with any effective moral or even political action. But the advent of Positivism, the work of this treatise, enables those who uphold order to assume the direction of progress, and progress henceforward consists essentially in the systematic discipline of all the powers of man. The mediocrities which flourish in the existing anarchy will resume their normal subaltern position, and the government of the West will shortly be centred in those who shall know how always to reconcile renovation with conservation.

Thus the chief task is to regenerate the West.

Considering the nature of the malady from which the West is suffering, it was requisite for its right treatment to begin with the comprehensive conception of human affairs, so to found the sole authority capable of guiding the present in the name of the past and in the interest of the future. Great as is the actual mental indiscipline, men will joyfully replace themselves under the yoke of their antecedents, if its resumption hold out to them a prospect of great consequents. Reassured as to progress, they will lend their aid in the construction of order, rejecting anarchy as vigorously as they reject reaction. The utterly incurable amongst the revolutionists will quietly disappear, as an anachronism rather than a source of disturbance, when once the conservative power shall be armed with a satisfactory theory. They have still, it is true, influence with the people, in show rather than in substance, and due to

Discredit of the Revolutionary party.

a certain routine, but their inability to unite except for some negative interludes and at wider intervals, disables them from offering any effective resistance to an organic policy, however limited the number of its adherents.

Hence it is
easy for
Positivism
to order the
Transition.

The actual disposition of men's minds, a consequence of the utter exhaustion of negativism, and expressed by the irrevocable accession of the dictatorship in the central nation, allows the Positive religion to organise the transition which is to be the proper termination of the Western revolution. The political calm does but bring into relief the spiritual disorder, since nowhere does there attach to it any sense of security. Reaction and revolution are alike in discredit, and yet the incoherent amalgam of the two, in the absence of any organic teaching, still ministers as the basis of public opinion, still furnishes the official formulæ.

Apprecia-
tion of the
revolution-
ary principle
of Private
Judgment.

Rightly to understand the nature and extent of the Western disease, we must examine directly the principle of revolution, which consists in men acknowledging no other spiritual authority but their individual reason, most of all when dealing with the most important questions. This anarchical principle has become so universal amongst all Occidentals, that it rules supreme even with those who are trying to re-establish the discipline the decay of which evoked it. Men avow the conditions of competence required for the most unimportant decisions in natural philosophy, but acknowledge no obligation in the domain of moral and social phenomena.

Its results.

This intellectual revolt of the individual against the race is the more dangerous, in that, an inevitable consequence of the impotence of the older beliefs, it was originally indispensable to the elaboration of the new. Had Descartes and the thinkers worthy to tread in his steps not deliberately set aside all the then recognised authorities, the ultimate reconstruction would have remained an impossibility. But such emancipation as theirs, necessary when the object was to create new convictions, is become simply anarchical in minds too weak by their own action to get rid of doubt. Such weakness renders errors inevitable, unless on the assumption of an indifference fatal to morality, when opinions are at stake which concern man's whole existence. When the demands of action drive such men to delegate the decision to others, without principles to guide them they usually misplace their confidence, and the result is a more disastrous issue to their blunders.

Originally it was the higher provinces of thought to which the revolt was confined, where the old discipline was more oppressive; but if it persist, it will infallibly extend to the lower, so as to endanger the aggregate of our scientific acquisitions. It would be strange if minds content to make the suggestions of their individual reason the sole basis of their moral and political convictions were to remain indefinitely submissive to scientific authority, on points of less importance and less difficulty. A sound estimate of the acceptance by the Western world of modern discoveries, shows their general adoption to have been due, most of all, to habits traceable to the previous training, in spite of the decay which had overtaken its intellectual groundwork. Suppose—the hypothesis involves, it must be allowed, a contradiction—the announcement of the earth's motion made for the first time in the full tide of revolutionary feeling, it would find it an insuperable obstacle to its reception, as opinion would be directed on a host of inconsistent amendments. The easy success often obtained by the coarsest illusions or juggleries; the revolt which already threatens even the province of Mathematics; are everywhere two opposite but convergent evidences of the urgent need, and of the difficulty, of a true discipline. Even in the scientific world, where there is still some regard paid to competence, some respect for authority, the feebleness of conclusions, consequent on the dispersion of thought, encourages a similar anarchy—the strongest evidence of which is the habitual triumph of mediocrities. This absence of direction and discipline extends to the cultivation of art, which, by nature inherently synthetic, acquiesces in the general prevalence of a degrading specialism, substance being sacrificed to form.

The wide range of the anarchy.

A doctrine of universal validity—such is the sole remedy, if the reason of the West is to be freed from its present contradictory position, in which destruction of the whole becomes more and more irreconcilable with construction in detail. Authority recognised in the lower sciences must, on due conditions, be also recognised in the higher, or the disorder in which these last are perishing will spread to the lower. On examination, however, we see that this regeneration, if it is not to be abortive, must be moral quite as much as intellectual.

Need of an universal doctrine.

After the substitution of a demonstrable faith for beliefs insusceptible of verification, feeling will never cease to be the

Feeling must be intro-

duced as the
complement
of reason.

complement of reason in regard to the majority of admissible opinions, the special proofs of which would often be inadequate to carry conviction, did not confidence come to their aid. I have put forward the institution of such a discipline as the capital result of the encyclopædic education, which predisposes us to follow out consequences rather than to discuss principles. Suited to the normal state, even for theoreticians, such habits have more value during the transition which is to usher in that state. Purely chimerical is to be held the hope aroused by an undue estimate of logical sequence, when it thinks to attain convergence under the exclusive impulse of the intellect, without the participation of the heart. Even where there is the mental ability really to appreciate demonstrations, disagreement on the most unimportant suffices to neutralise agreement on the most important points, when there is no veneration to overcome insubordination. A partial synthesis then is to be looked on as so impossible, that Positivism would have simply given a useless pabulum for intellectual exertion, had it remained a philosophy, stopping short of the full religious conception. The grave character of the existing anarchy lies chiefly in this, that whilst essentially intellectual, it has ended in derangement of the feelings.

The feelings
have been
tamped
with.

Sole stay of the existing order, the impaired power of the feelings is particularly sensible in the case of veneration, even in private life, where attachment too often fails to conceal a defective subordination. Moreover, the harmony of the family is imperilled by differences of opinion and the intrusion of individualism. But it is in public morality that the worst change has taken place, solidarity being only recognised in relation to the most ordinary intercourse, whilst continuity is altogether ignored. Reactionists or revolutionists, all Occidentals agree in contempt of the past, in neglect of the future, looking exclusively to antagonism of material interests for any control of man's action. In reference to continuity, the great bond of Humanity, Catholicism is as much to blame as Protestantism or Deism, for it was the first to break the chain of the ages by cursing its true ancestors. The Monotheistic faith could only rise by the repudiation of authority; it was inconsistent then, when, in its turn, it tried to arrest emancipation by appealing to its priority of establishment. Positivism alone can plead all the antecedents of man, as the relative character of its synthesis

allows it to sanction all, as so many spontaneous tributaries to its systematic unity.

To secure in all cases the triumph of general over special conceptions, the subordination of the self-regarding instincts to the social feelings—these are the two services, in intimate relation the one with the other; to be rendered by the true religion in the present day. Its object now and its object in the normal state are identical, and require similar means; the only difference is that the difficulty now is greater, the difficulty of setting on foot an order which it will subsequently have only to maintain and develop. Outside of the Positive religion all is retrogradation and anarchy, morally no less than intellectually, and no reconstruction is possible but through its unity, an unity, by the nature of the case, at first confined to its founder, sole interpreter of Humanity.

The nature and difficulty of the final phase of transition thus made clear, we must at once order it for the West, whence it will spread to the race. But to effect this for the West itself, necessitates an important distinction, according as the operation concerns the central nation or the other nationalities; in regard to which latter the first point is to determine definitively the order of their regeneration, thus completing and correcting my original statements.

The determination of this order is in the main, notwithstanding the modern revolution, in correspondence with the course of Roman incorporation, allowing for the modification due to the defensive Monotheism. When the Western Republic took the place of the Empire of the West, the political centre, previously at one extremity of the system, was definitively removed to the centre, by the gradual substitution of Paris for Rome, a change accomplished before the end of the Middle Ages. The change was required to mark the indispensable transformation of a compulsory aggregation into a voluntary association. But with this modification, the constituents of the group kept their original relative position, which had gathered force from the Catholico-Feudal initiation. Round the French nationality, as centre, were grouped, first, the two southern populations by virtue of a more advanced civilization, then the two northern, which had entered later into the movement. The focus of the Western world was apparently transferred to each of these two in succession during the two centuries after

The two tasks of the Positive religion: to make generality prevail over speciality; Sociality over Personality.

The order of the transition as regards the several Western nations.

Reasons for the order given.

Attitude of
the Priest-
hood.

priesthood, for, commissioned by the Great Being to reduce to system the constructive transition, that priesthood must even now prove its true competence by sanctioning the powers whose adviser it is, not abandoning, on extraordinary occasions, its power to condemn. Posterity will habitually date the establishment of the Positive regime from the epoch at which the renovating doctrine was so far complete as to admit its constant application to the conduct of States and individuals. The priests of Humanity ought, then, to consider themselves as already in the Future which they prophesy and prepare, whilst they assume towards nations and their rulers, whoever those rulers may be, an attitude as far removed from sedition as from servility.

All existing
authorities,
if socially
useful, to be
sanctioned.

As, in the present religious interregnum, no power can have a really normal character, Positivism should avail itself of the existing authorities, sanctioning them so far as they evince a capacity for social utility, be their origin what it may, revolutionary or retrograde. To be efficient, power must have concentration and security; the relative religion, then, will manifest its inherent superiority by consolidating powers which rest on an insecure basis and are constantly diverted from their purpose by the cares of selfpreservation. In renouncing absolute doctrines, the Western nations will learn to respect all acquisitions of power or wealth, if in unison with the actual requirements of human wisdom, whatever the state of that wisdom may be, exceptional or regular, a point for which individuals in no case are responsible. Even where this rule is violated, the religion which throughout substitutes duties for rights is more concerned to utilise an existing power than to amend its wielder, so to avoid barren or agitating discussions. There should be a constant sense that, if on the one hand no power can bear fruit unless it last, on the other its permanence tends to raise it, by strengthening the social instincts at the expense of the personal impulses, without which it had not come into existence.

Special ap-
plication of
these dispo-
sitions to the
opening of
the tran-
sition.

I have to show the special application of these general dispositions to the actual commencement of the organic transition, the transition reserved for the third generation of the present century; the exceptional century which in the history of Positivism is the analogue of that of Constantine and Theodosius in the history of Catholicism. The two preceding generations were, by the necessity of the case, the one at first revolutionary

and then reactionary, the other both revolutionary and reactionary, that is to say parliamentary. It is true, this last state seems yet to continue, in the absence of a theory in consonance with the facts, but it has undergone a radical change since the irreversible establishment of the dictatorship in France. Without waiting for the termination of the present work, I had publicly urged this concentration of power several years before it was effected. And though my advice as given in the 'General View' could in no degree contribute to the result, I feel bound to recall it as a proof of the nascent capacity of the true philosophy to initiate a sound political system. It is not improbable that this agreement of advice with the event, an agreement in no wise accidental, will be regarded by posterity as marking the unconscious opening of the constructive transition, in regard to which the spiritual power was naturally, in accordance with its nature and its destination, in advance of the temporal. The two ought now, by virtue of so capital an agreement, so far to cooperate as to inaugurate at once the transition which is to terminate the revolution begun at the close of the Middle Ages.

For this concert we must recognise two distinct forms, or two successive phases, the one spontaneous, the other systematic; according as the regenerating priesthood gives advice to a dictator unconverted to the Positive faith, or to chiefs who have adopted it. And although the latter case admits of the more distinct and more complete influence, it is from the former that the most important measures will come, measures suggested to statesmen by the theoretical power under the increasing pressure of the condition of the West. If at that time the intervention of the spirituality meets with more obstacles, it remains more true to itself, as more entirely clear of temporal support, and has a more conclusive value, in that its advice can only be accepted on the ground of its perfect opportuneness.

Two modes
of coope-
ration.

Catholicism, as an absolute system, could not act upon the political leaders till it had converted them. Positivism, as a relative system, requires no such preliminary. Looking upon all earlier beliefs as having converged towards its own, it is the more bound to apply the same conception to its judgment of contemporary opinions. In the eyes of the priesthood of Humanity all men are, and at the present day more than ever, instinctive Positivists at various stages of their evolution, all

Conversion
not neces-
sary. But
there must
be a para-
mount will
to modify.

that is wanting being completeness. To modify public life, Positivism is content if the course of events have thrown up a paramount and responsible will.

This condition to a certain extent satisfied in France.

The condition is to a certain extent fulfilled in France, since the advent of the dictatorship, as that dispenses the organic doctrine from being laid before assemblies, whose constant tendency it is, even when reactionary, to perpetuate the revolutionary state. The dogmas of Theology or Metaphysics being at the present day discredited, the temporal power can find guidance only in a sceptical empiricism. Although the absence of principles tends to leave the path open to the ascendancy of egoism, it cannot entirely neutralise the altruistic reaction which is a rapid consequence of the possession of great power. In fact the very want must be painful to those who are by it often obliged to invoke the aid of opinions which they despise, and which moreover they know are generally given up. It is matter, then, for little surprise that the infant dictatorship has not yet assumed its proper attitude, in the absence of a theory which might enlighten whilst sanctioning it. But its actual defects can be no indication of dislike for a doctrine, which, free from all temporal ambition, is ready to consolidate and encourage the exercise of an indispensable authority, in whomsoever vested. Without aiming at his conversion, the suggestions of Positivism may enlighten the chief who overcame parliamentary anarchy; especially if, listening to my respectful invitation, he adapt his government to the Republican attitude which France has irrevocably taken for the last two generations.

Its power to modify without converting a most valuable privilege of Positivism.

Its aptness to modify political action without having put an end to the religious interregnum—this must be held to be one of the greatest privileges conferred on Positivism by the relativity which is its characteristic. It is in this way more than in any other that it will triumph over the empiricism of a sceptical milieu, which, whatever its indifference to the future, cannot turn with contempt from the solutions offered by Positivism of present difficulties. The more eminent the position, the more will its occupier, from his anxiety about those difficulties, be led to appreciate the only theory which at the present day offers practical guidance. Without converting, then, either the public or its leaders, Positivism is enabled by its fundamental reality and its complete adaptation to present

needs, to gain such a limited amount of ascendancy as is required to institute the final transition, and that without any consciousness of it on the part of the chief cooperators in the movement. Had it not this competence, so complex is the change, that it would require more than the generation which I persist in believing sufficient for its accomplishment in the West; by virtue of which its ulterior and consequent extension to the race will ask only an equal time, as I shall explain later.

To inaugurate the transition, all that is wanted is to reconcile once for all dictatorial government and liberty, in accordance with the philosophical wish of Hobbes, unconsciously achieved by Frederic. Positivism succeeds in this by accepting both conditions in their full consequences, showing at the same time the correlation of the two. Could the dictatorship of Danton have lasted till the peace he had fixed as its limit, its progressive character would have involved the removal, in due course, of a compression only justified by the defence of the Republic. When the military orgy was over and with it any real reaction, the refusal of full liberty was owing mainly to the weakness of the central power under the parliamentary regime, a régime incompatible with intellectual and moral regeneration. But the definitive triumph of the dictatorial principle in a state of things in which social questions are recognised as undeniably paramount, must, at no distant period, determine the unalterable acceptance of the complete spiritual liberty without which any reconstruction would be impossible.

The two
bases of the
organic
transition—
the Dictator-
ship and
Spiritual
Liberty.

Entire liberty of exposition, nay even of discussion, is indispensable as a permanent security against the danger, a danger always imminent, of a dictatorship of a purely empirical character degenerating into a retrograde tyranny. And yet the actual state of things, where order is more at stake than progress, should of itself preclude anxiety on this head, by imposing the conviction that a real retrogradation is impossible, when those who call for it do so only as an obstacle to anarchy. Complete however as is the discredit attaching to the revolutionary spirit, the certainty that the negative state will persist so long as the religious interregnum lasts, ought to lead to liberty of opinion as the means of overcoming a solvent scepticism. Necessary as the foundation of the normal state, with a view to constitute a solid basis for its division of the two

Spiritual
Liberty.

powers, this liberty will at the present day be claimed most especially in the name of order, public and private equally; no mere forcible compression offering any security against the subversive tendencies of an unbelieving milieu. The more the dictatorship enforces tranquillity, the more prominence does it give to the irrepressible questions which, with no direct bearing on politics, touch the great bases of human society. At the same time, the actual calm, under which the French nation has already meditated more than it has done since the beginning of the great crisis, evidences as a natural consequence the utter incompetence of Theologism to deal with these formidable discussions, in regard to which Positivism alone can get the better of Communism. Free discussion may be open to boundless abuse in a milieu with no convictions; none the less must it be invariably respected as necessary to the advent of the intellectual and moral discipline which will guide its ulterior course.

Excuse for
the non-recognition of
this condition by the
Dictatorship.

An empirical dictator may be excused for failing to see the importance of this condition, so long as from the want of a constructive system it was thought impossible completely to extirpate anarchical sophism. Theoricians without responsibility may carry their abstract love of liberty of exposition and discussion to the point of insisting upon it, however dangerous under actual conditions its encouragement might be to the primary institutions of society. But statesmen responsible for the maintenance of public order in a time of spiritual disorder may well refuse so to sacrifice the present to the future. They cannot consent to discussion of the family and property when they are in doubt as to whether the two will survive the metaphysical attacks made on them. And certainty on this point has only been attainable since the decisive advent of Positivism; for Positivism, originating in the revolutionary milieu, has already proved its capacity for organisation, by disciplining some profoundly anarchical natures, which had been given over as incurable by Theologism.

With Positivism the Dictatorship may feel secure.

Relying on the guarantee of Positivism, the temporal dictatorship may safely, nay is bound to, inaugurate the organic transition by establishing once for all spiritual liberty, which anarchical tendencies had induced it provisionally to restrict. Thus acknowledging that the Western malady is essentially an intellectual and moral malady, the head of the

French nation looks for its radical cure to the only religion which has given proofs of its competence. The confidence leads to a definitive alliance of the two powers, an alliance fraught with great consequences, which is an anticipation at once, and a preparation, of the normal state.

To convince us that the measure proposed is opportune, we need only observe that freedom of expression is at present quite as much an object of aversion to the revolutionary as to the reactionary party. Under the anarchy of parliamentarism, we have seen the prohibition by law of discussion of the doctrines of Metaphysics, which have become more incapable than the doctrines of Theology to stand a searching enquiry. They who so misjudged the republican movement as to consider it favourable to the encroachments of demagogues, wished also to impose by law a protestant or deistical education, which in some dim way they felt to be absolutely incompatible with French habits and feelings.

Such liberty
opportune.

Everything foreshadows, then, the healthy direction which full liberty of expression will take, called for, as it really is, only by the system which is destined to reorganise the West. The existing restraint injures order more than progress, for it teaches the people instinctively to look on the bases of society as not defensible by argument, examination of them being forbidden in a time of perfect tranquillity. And yet, so adverse is the present state of things to the sophisms of Metaphysics, that the silence is in no way favourable to them, since it suggests thoughts which produce a general craving for an intellectual and moral reconstruction. But the work of solitary meditation, which followed properly on the turbulent outbreak of the social malady, cannot suffice for its cure; for that there must be the avowed and progressive influence of the regenerative doctrine. Anarchical utopias must be free to appear, as so only can Positivists place them in their true light, whilst it becomes impossible for jugglers or dreamers to conceal their radical incompetence under an enforced silence, the principal source of what credit they still retain.

Repression
of Spiritual
liberty more
adverse to
order than
progress.

I proceed, in my exposition of the two bases on which the constructive transition rests, to specify the essential conditions of free expression, the basis on which Positivism will reorganise men's opinions, habits, and feelings, whilst the dictatorship maintains public order.

The condi-
tions of the
liberty
advocated.

No restrictions on the press.

In the first place we must do away with all restrictions on writings; the police of the press, even for placards, resolving itself into the obligation to sign everything, adding the exact address of the author with the date and place of his birth. This condition is in full unison with the present state of feeling, so that any infringement may be severely punished by law, in the shape of a heavy fine, and on the third offence by the refusal, provisional or final, of publicity. These precautions again would be a satisfactory substitute for the precautions of a disgraceful legislation, against the abuses to which is liable the discussion—the necessary discussion—of the private life of public men, above all of the private life of those who claim spiritual power and who are therefore the more bound to give proof of morality.

Journalism extinguished. Its substitute, the Placard.

The discipline advocated, far from fostering journalism, should rapidly extinguish, and that as a result of the full developement of spiritual liberty, this anarchical institution, engendered by the impuissance of Theologism, and animated by a fruitless hostility to Positivism. Already its principal sustenance is gone, as a natural consequence of the advent of the dictatorship by the suppression of the parliamentary regime, without which the periodical press can hardly flourish when the public it addresses has got clear of all metaphysical illusions. But beyond every other means of freeing France from the scourge of journalism is a large use of placards, allowing addresses to the public whenever they may be thought requisite, without any connection with this or that coterie, all equally incompetent and oppressive. Not to speak of the unworthiness of most of its actual teachers, opinion needs, as the experience of Catholicism shows, only one weekly discourse to direct it in connecting with the worship the application of the principles given by education. And the amount of periodical teaching which is enough for the normal state, is still more suited for the organic transition, when convictions ought above all to receive a new birth from solitary meditation, perpetually broken in upon by those who undertake to speak with no reason for speaking. If we observe the antipathy of literary men to a *street press*, we may infer the inability of the journal to compete with the placard, always gratuitous, usually seasonable, and often admirable,—the forerunner of the new spiritual power, a reminiscence of the old. The liberal jargon

of journalists is but a flimsy veil, through which you may perceive an habitual sympathy with the existing restrictions, the foundation of their personal success as well as of their class influence.

A judicious use of placards, with the addition of a few occasional pamphlets,—this is all Positivism requires to regenerate public opinion, aiding, as it will thus do by special publications, the meditations based upon the general treatises. Rejecting councils and parliaments, it could really dispense with clubs, when preparing a regime in which exposition will supersede discussion without giving rise to it. And yet Positivism must prove that it fears no meetings whatever, by claiming for speech, whether in meetings or in private life, the same freedom it claims for writings, with analogous precautions, and, in addition, a respectful surveillance.

Occasional pamphlets.

Clubs.

Though clubs are not, in a normal state of things, as healthy an influence as salons, where woman's presidency acts beneficially on the pride of man, yet even in the present day the club offers less danger than the journal. They may be useful in promoting the reorganisation of the West, when in them thought shall take precedence of expression, under the influence of a doctrine strong enough to overcome the tendencies fostered by metaphysics. They are not, as the papers, bound up with the parliamentary regime; on the contrary they are instinctively hostile to it. The only experience of clubs has been in French History, and that warrants us in asserting, that naturally they lean to the support of an able dictatorship, even at a time when a purely negative theory could form only a temporary bond. Statesmen who, without respecting it, can accept and direct universal suffrage, should be more ready to welcome the club with its distinctly social bent, notwithstanding that in the present lack of convictions it may be too prone to disorder. With the abolition of the parliamentary regime, the great danger of the institution has been removed, for its first object was to form a popular counterpoise to that regime. Any uneasiness on this point would remind one of the childish alarms of the most defective of the five Dictators who have succeeded Danton.

Their character.

Louis Philippe.

Full freedom of exposition and discussion thus established, and that not on the anarchical ground that it is a right, but as a guarantee of order and a means of reconstruction; we must complete the work by the entire suppression of the intellectual budget,

Suppression of the budgets of Theology, Metaphysics, and Science.

of all grants, that is, to the clergy, metaphysicians, or science. As the temporal power has unreservedly abandoned all claim to any spiritual supremacy, so better to discharge its own civil functions, it ought always to hand over the reorganization of opinions and feelings to the free competition of the doctrines able to accomplish the task. If, when tried by this test, the Positive religion satisfactorily establishes its intellectual and moral superiority, then to it will be entrusted, as part of its regular duty, the direction of the common education, without, however, reestablishing an oppressive monopoly in its favour, a point already distinctly stated. Till then, the clergy of Positivism must, after the example of its founder, depend entirely on the voluntary contributions of its private adherents. Nay, it is most desirable that this introductory arrangement continue during the whole duration of the organic transition, first in the West, then throughout the world, as a fuller guarantee for the independence and the dignity of the priesthood, under these conditions respected by the wealthy, beloved by the poor. But whilst applying this rule to the religion which is to terminate the modern revolution, it must hold good also for the religions which by their weakness and errors occasioned and perverted the final crisis. In default of this impartiality, the dictatorship would remain anarchical and reactionary in character, as it is intrinsically during its empirical stage, when Positivism alone can transform it.

How this
measure
should be
carried out.

Left incomplete by the school of Danton, the complete abolition of the intellectual budget must now be effected, not on economical grounds, but as a result and a condition, with all due regard for the parties interested. Such priests or professors as have attained maturity, and therefore cannot adopt a new career, will retain their official salary, as, if withdrawn, private contributions would but rarely replace it. Access to a better position must be made easy to the rest, by continuing their actual salary for seven years, allowing for exceptional cases of personal unworthiness, or of the office held being a mere abuse. In such a measure, the sole object at which the dictatorship should aim, is the withdrawal of the national sanction from an anarchical or retrograde teaching, to which, taught by the past, we may not entrust the future. This condition implies that all the corporations engaged in this teaching, theological, metaphysical, and even scientific, lose all official

character, but without in any way being disturbed, if they avail themselves of the liberty of meeting accorded to all without exception.

Were Catholicism as powerful as it claims to be, it would, under such circumstances, be in a position largely to increase its ascendancy, by proving that its apparent influence is not due to the legal protection, which it has long been wont to invoke in any difficulty. Some of its defenders, even ecclesiastics, have indeed proposed its temporal independence as a means of spiritual renovation, in the spirit of confidence naturally given by a doctrine esteemed competent to command the intellects and hearts of men. The Christian clergy, however, has not welcomed these temporary illusions of individuals, from a deep sense of its intellectual and social decline. The religion which allowed the rise of the Western revolution cannot be called in to close it; if appealed to, it can only be as a provisional protest against anarchy, prior to the advent of a really organic doctrine. Since its reestablishment as the official religion, triumphant Catholicism with the immense resources at its disposal has disciplined fewer anarchists than nascent Positivism. As true as it is that spiritual supremacy is beyond the reach of temporal prohibitions, so true is it that it is impossible ever to reestablish the authority from which all others must proceed. On these grounds it is that the more clear-sighted priests look on the withdrawal of all State support as likely to reduce their body to the fourth of its actual numbers, not to speak of the destruction of all ecclesiastical discipline involved in the measure, such discipline at present resting mainly on property considerations.

Let them, however, accept with dignity the inevitable, and the last remnants of the mediæval priesthood may still maintain a noble attitude, may still be of real use. In the necessary suppression of that priesthood, none of the rancorous feeling will be at work, which inspired our revolutionary ancestors, whether atheists or theists. Positivism in presence of expiring Catholicism feels not as the jealous rival, but as the legitimate heir, who, to uphold the law of continuity on which he rests for his titles, needs the sanction of his predecessor. I here unhesitatingly renew the engagement, publicly made in my lectures, to subscribe annually a hundred francs to the Catholic fund, so soon as I shall have induced the dictatorship to suppress the

(1) In regard to Theology. The opposition of Catholicism.

Attitude of Positivism to disestablished Catholicism.

Catholic budget. All true Positivists will follow my example and aid me in protecting the representatives of the provisional spirituality against the revolutionary oppression instigated by the jealousy of metaphysicians. This possibly may be the ground on which, in the first instance, I shall be admitted into the temple of the Virgin Mother, that I may obtain in the name of Humanity that respectful toleration of his nobler interpreters, which God can no longer enforce from sceptics. It is a grave interest for Positivism to encourage universally the moral cultivation of our nature, which in its most belated form is, at the present day, preferable to the entire abandonment usual with Occidentals, even when their emancipation has been most happily effected.

Attitude of
the dictatorial govern-
ment to-
wards Ca-
tholicism.

In the very beginning of the organic transition, a system of mean hypocrisy will, under the impulse of relativity, be changed for one of honourable forbearance towards the several relics of the mediæval religion. The French dictatorship, never otherwise than sceptical in character, should now take the lead in this transformation; a conclusive precedent for which we have set by the incomparable Frédéric in the full vigour of the anti-religious movement. Under the increasing pressure of our social condition, French statesmen were always saved from becoming both anarchical and retrograde; except when a mixture of Germanism and Anglomania made them eclectics or parliamentarians. But as mere empirics they are driven at present to invoke, by turns, anarchy or reaction, as a check one on the other, according as they are in opposition or in office. Still, even without becoming Positivists, the relative religion may make them so far rightly estimate the wants of their time as to adopt a bearing as clear of falsehood as of detraction.

The attitude
towards the
non-Catholic
monotheists
of the West.

Whilst in due measure including all the *débris* of Western Monotheism, the management advocated, whether it rest on instinct or on reason, cannot accord to all without distinction an equal respect. It must be proportioned to the greatness and duration of the several churches, the two standards by which we estimate their intellectual and still more their social value. It follows that Catholicism, even as Jesuitism, must take the first place in any sound comparative estimate of the moribund churches, for Catholicism, as it always recalls the fundamental division of the two powers, presents us with the last form of Theo-

logism which can in any true sense be called organic. In their breach of Catholic unity, the northern nations of Western Europe, with a vague sense that they were tending to anarchy, exerted themselves to arrest the process of emancipation at the particular point they themselves had reached. The consequence is, that, at the present day, we have different degrees of religious decomposition, requiring a different degree of respect from the philosopher and the statesman, according as each phase has retained more or less of the old intellectual and moral discipline. It would however usually be a waste of time to distinguish any but two general cases: the Protestantism which has preserved episcopacy, and that which adopted presbyterianism. For the future, we should relegate to the last rank of theologians Deists, Pantheists, and Atheists; all alike incompetent for union or for discipline, they have never been able to form a church, and lost any useful function with the century of destruction.

The official reestablishment of the University was the worst mistake of Bonaparte; metaphysical corporations, if less costly, being more noxious and less discredited than the clergy. A dictator of energy, disregarding their noisy opposition, may, at the present day, suppress their grants, without awakening any resistance in support of an institution which is a source of degradation and corruption. The whole of modern history teaches us to see in the abolition of the University the consequence and complement of the abolition of the Parliamentary regime, for the latter drew its recruits, as did journalism, from the colleges, the constant nursery of our philosophical and political agitators.

(11) In regard
to Metaphysics.
Abolition of
the University.

Answering no deep want, the University of France is, more than any clergy, dependent on the protection of the State, and could find no substitute for it in voluntary support. Take away its budget and its monopoly, and its collective existence is gone, whatever the attraction apparently still lingering in the study of words and entities. As for the special schools, they might all disappear at once, all but the veterinary schools, without really interfering either with the public service or the wants of individuals. Farther on, I shall explain the substitute offered in the second phase of the organic transition, with the object of strengthening and developing such germs of reconstruction as they contain in reference to general education; the existence of the said germs constituting at all times their chief

Colleges and
Schools.

usefulness. But it is important that the freedom of teaching be proved to exist by the large increase of private undertakings, subject to a purely moral surveillance on the part of the dictatorship, through the agency of the police, more enlightened and less oppressive in its action than the judicial body. The quasi-monastic schools, at all times and under all forms noxious, will hardly pass away before the termination of the Western transition, for it is impossible without its aid to secure the general recognition of home education as superior to public instruction. The government, however, without in any way hampering private educational institutions, ought never to encourage a practice which is an evidence of, and a stimulus to, the neglect by the modern family of its first duty.

Primary instruction.

Besides substituting, as explained below, the Positive School for the whole mass of special schools, the dictatorial power in France will prepare the way for the priesthood to regenerate the common education by extending and improving primary instruction. This instruction, cleared of all the puerilities of literature and metaphysics no less than of all alloy of Theology, will become purely scientific, esthetic, and above all moral, by virtue of the simultaneous cultivation of arithmetic, singing, and drawing, together with reading and writing. But the universal extension of this preliminary instruction should nowise exempt the corporation of primary instructors from the general suppression of pædagogic associations, which it presents in their worst form, both intellectually and socially, as it devotes itself to the most futile of the three classical rudiments. In primary instruction more than anywhere, it is important to secure full liberty, by instituting, for the state-paid masterships, an honourable competition, the competitors being in the main ill-assorted proletaries. In giving the office its full range and due security, its occupants will be warned that it is provisional, as being an encroachment on the normal function of the mother, a function for which she will be qualified by the end of the Western transition.

(iii) In regard to science. The scientific budget the most corrupting.

I have now to explain the final step in the suppression of the intellectual budget; to examine, that is, the indispensable withdrawal of all grants in aid of science and scientific societies, from which the dictatorship of Danton had wisely delivered us. Although this element in the threefold reaction is less burdensome than the preceding ones, it has really been a greater clog

on the regeneration of the West, as it corrupts directly its source in the intelligence. Neither the clergy, nor even the University, equal the Institute, and still more the Academy of Sciences in misleading the youth of France, by turning it from the synthetical and sympathetic dispositions which its actual mission demands.

Academy of
Sciences.

Vol. vi., 436
81., 186. Ed.

A survey of the general intellectual movement during the first half of the nineteenth century is enough to show the evil influence exercised upon it by a corporation, as retrograde as it is anarchical, on which I refer the reader to my *Positive Philosophy*. When Danton abolished it, it had just lost, in consequence of the rise of Chemistry, its temporary usefulness, such usefulness, in the nature of things, being limited to the rise and growth of Cosmology, and more particularly to the developement of Celestial Mechanics. Since its reestablishment, its routine preference for analysis has been in a high degree detrimental to Biology, for the genius of Biology is properly synthetical, and it has therefore been compelled to form itself outside of the official precinct, where Bichat, Broussais, and Gall were never admitted. The degeneracy of the Academy would be sufficiently clear from the division between two of the office which was the main source of its credit, the society being compelled to appoint two half-Fontenelles as it could not tolerate a Condorcet. Had the dictatorial government been more clear-sighted, it would have mitigated the intellectual and moral evils of this corporation by protecting the rival the physicians established, although the easier and more advantageous plan would have been to suppress both. In the face of experience, it is impossible now to hesitate as to the absolute extinction of these organized insurrections of mediocrity against superior genius, provided that in withdrawing their salaries the dictatorship leaves these scientific clubs full liberty. Indispensable, however, as is their abolition, it involves a measure of compensation, a provision for the pecuniary assistance they indirectly furnish to men of real intellectual value, at present lost amid the nobodies whom they serve to screen.

Without requiring of artists, savants, or men of erudition, that they should hold useless or worse than useless offices, offices created principally for the support of their first occupants, the organic transition will see the beginnings of the institution of pensioners, the dictatorship for a time acting for the priesthood

Pensioners to
artists,
savants, and
learned men.

on this point. The great Colbert, with the noble aid of the brothers Perrault, originated this plan, and for a long time, at small cost, it seconded the career of men of true talent, seldom degenerating into a protection of intriguing or servile mediocrity. To give it its full extension, I propose the foundation of twenty annuities of twelve thousand francs (480*l.*), forty of six thousand, eighty of three thousand. These last would, originally, be granted for seven years, but might be continued till the first vacancy in the class above, where the experiment had not been a failure. The two others would always be for life, except where there was persistent misconduct; and promotion would depend solely on seniority, though the government might nominate directly to the first class, so long as its numbers were not full. If besides this, the government bore the cost of publication of works of art and science, it would give a more wholesome and less expensive protection than that now afforded by the academical system. Although these pensions are to be shared by men of distinction in the West with those of genuine celebrity in France, I could hardly venture at the present day to name twenty names worthy of the highest pension, even were I to include those who require no pecuniary assistance.

Abolition of
copyright.

The full statement of the system of measures which is to ensure complete spiritual liberty, the combination of which with the dictatorial government is the foundation of the organic transition, requires me to explain the necessity of abolishing so called literary property.

Copyright
conceded for
seven years,
then abo-
lished.

Though it is useless at present to expect of theoreticians the attitude which their social function demands, we must yet promote the natural tendency to it, by depriving venality of a factitious protection in which mediocrity alone finds its account. The sole inconsistency of the dictatorship of Danton, this protection of literature is so discredited that no resistance deserving of respect would be aroused by its suppression, provided due notice were given. The decree which shall proclaim the return to the normal state in this respect should limit to seven years the present privileges of authors, warning them that then they will cease.

The author
to be master
of his work.

It would be a fit complement to this declaration, if the government engaged to meet the cost of printing works of value, when their authors publicly announced their resolution not to sell them. As a final token of confidence in the author, a con-

fidence of an ennobling tendency, it would leave him, as in the normal state, the free distribution of his work, with the exception of the copies reserved for the public libraries. Any fraud, however, on his part or through his agents, must be sternly checked by the complete withdrawal of the national munificence on the third offence. Thus invested with a social character, the writer of merit would keep in his own hands and have fuller scope for the control of his publications, in which at present he is hampered by the interference of the bookseller, whom the venality of authors gives a function which in no way appertains to him. The author ought always, on his own moral responsibility, to regulate the distribution of his works, he alone being competent to judge where they are rightly placed, and he is more prone to exaggerate, than to underrate the demand for them.

On a review of the system of measures here indicated as belonging to the initial phase of the organic transition, it is evident that their great object is to perfect and consolidate the dictatorial government by shaping its character into conformity with its destination. By the establishment of peace in Europe, the reaction which inevitably followed the revolution lost much of its intensity. Its justification having lain in the revolutionary spirit, it now confined itself to fettering spiritual freedom, the freedom of thought and of utterance, by a combination of direct restraint with the reestablishment, as government institutions, of all the effete corporations abolished by Danton in his dictatorship. Now that Positivism renders it possible to overcome by regular means the subversive tendencies, order ought not to continue reactionary, progress being no longer revolutionary. A system which is, in the fullest sense of the term, constructive, offers the conservatives that which they have ever sought, the reconciliation of Order and Progress, whilst it stigmatizes as an anachronism those whom the government represses as mere agitators. Under these circumstances, the dictatorship may attain the degree of consistency and extension it requires, by making its attitude definitively an attitude of progress; the first step being the entire abandonment of all spiritual claims in order to concentrate itself on its temporal functions. Such is the leading aim of the suite of measures above set forth; in them we have a real substitute for the monarchy, in harmony with the essential requirements of the actual republican order.

Object of the
measures to
purify the
Dictator-
ship.

The Dicta-
torship.

Once disengaged from an empirical and retrograde policy, the dictatorial government can, and ought to, assert its legitimate supremacy, by emancipating itself from parliamentary forms, whereas it now tolerates them in substance. Be it inconsistency or hypocrisy, the concession, a heavy burden on the finances, and one which from the beginning I never hesitated to blame, carries with it moral dangers by awakening the hope of reviving a policy which, thoroughly unpopular as it is, yet meets with sympathy in the less advanced politicians.

A purely
financial
assembly
alone
needed.

The subtle metaphysical distinction between laws and decrees was invented, by the legists of the Dantonian school, as a means of escape from the tendencies to anarchy inherent in the demagogic constitution, under cover of which the revolutionary government arose. This reason no longer exists, and the dictatorial government, become progressive, ought to take a nobler and freer course, assume, that is, on its sole responsibility, full temporal power, unimpaired by any childish or foolish formalities. The only political assembly to be retained should have no voice in legislation, but, sitting once in three years, it should devote the first month of its session to voting the budget as a whole, the two others to a revision of the accounts of the past. It should be a purely financial assembly, composed of three deputies from each department, one representing the agricultural, one the manufacturing, the third the commercial population of the department, its industrial population that is. The function of deputy should be always gratuitous, but occasionally, by voluntary subscriptions, poor men may be entrusted with an office naturally devolving on the wealthy.

The triennial
election.

Modifica-
tions of
universal
suffrage.

At the triennial election, we must treat the latest form of the disease under which the West is suffering, by modifying in two ways universal suffrage, after first putting an end to one of the revolutionary inconsistencies, by making twenty-eight, not twenty-one, the age of full citizenship. In the first place, each vote should be completely public, in order that its due responsibility may attach to the revolutionary process by which the inferiors appoint their superiors. In the second place, by the system of delegation, each individual up to the moment of the election may name another to vote for him, thus concentrating the suffrage without any sense of personal annoyance. The arrangement, the mere developement and regularisation of a natural custom, will soon throw up, from the ranks of the people,

leaders really in possession of its political confidence, leaders deserving the attention of the dictator. Under the combined operation of these two modifications, the unhealthy revolutionary state will peaceably disappear, in proportion as the spiritual reorganisation shall make intelligible the conditions of competence, and shall inspire the sense that concentration of power is desirable.

By this plan, we reduce within its narrowest limits the only influence of a thoroughly abnormal character which by the existing anarchy we are compelled to incorporate with the government of the transition. As, step by step, the leading features of the normal state become visible, under the teaching of the directing doctrine, the contrast between them and the actual state will lessen the dangers of the transitional regime whilst the definitive order is yet out of our reach. Whilst bowing to necessity in the restriction imposed on the temporal dictatorship by the triennial vote of the taxes, it will be felt that the distrust which is reasonable in a time of disorder should be laid aside in the normal state, the control of public opinion being then adequate.

This limitation of the dictatorship only provisional.

To aid our examination of the first phase of the organic transition, we proceed to state the motto which characterises and the act which is to inaugurate it.

Formula of the first phase.

Of the five successors of Danton in the dictatorship, Louis Napoleon alone has originated a sentence really adapted to the wants of the situation: *To destroy you must replace*. Suggested by the apparent resurrection of what seemed extinct, this admirable maxim is an embodiment of the truth that a revolution to be decisive must be organic. But it is only philosophical wisdom that can confirm and fertilise practical experience, the keenest insight of which is no security against inconsistency. The sentence quoted has remained barren, or nearly so, with its author, and become really effective only when incorporated, and on good grounds, into Positivism. Two years have passed since the actual head of the government judiciously suppressed an anarchical motto, but as yet he has offered us no substitute. This unexpected inconsistency, and that five years after the publication of the normal formula, is a fresh instance of the truth of the maxim in question. It renders France liable to the revival of the revolutionary motto, not forgotten in spite of a century of disuse, owing to the absence of any substitute.

Necessity of
the adoption
of the Posi-
tivist poli-
tical for-
mula : Order
and Pro-

The omission should teach the dictatorship how important it is to adopt the formula *Order and Progress*, the only systematic expression of the persistent aims of all conservatives ever since the outbreak of the great crisis. The rise of a general formula indicates that the time is come when human wisdom, definitively placed at the social point of view, exerts itself to understand the whole round of human wants, with a view to their appropriate satisfaction. Our revolutionary predecessors alone could fulfil this condition, after their own fashion; later movements in a counter-direction have always been powerless in presence of the fundamental question, and have therefore confined themselves to a protest against the anarchical tendencies of the French revolution. As they could construct nothing, the several phases of reaction have remained destitute of motto, hymn, and emblem. When the parliamentary government had lasted for half a generation, in the hour of danger there arose, as a spontaneous growth, an empirical motto expressing the protest of the bourgeoisie against the anarchy which was ever imminent. But the formula, whilst pointing by instinct to certain conditions and certain existing deficiencies, never received the sanction of government, and the class which voluntarily adopted it failed in maintaining it, so paralysing to any initiative is the reactionary attitude. Self-contradictory as is the revolutionary motto, it reappeared without hindrance as the only adequate expression hitherto of a crisis, the termination of which must be sought, not in protests against its conduct, but in its guidance to its destination.

Liberty and
Order.

The Posi-
tivist for-
mula satis-
fies all the
conditions.

A general formula is always connected with the advent of a new order, and to have its full efficacy it must be at once a clear aperçu and a characteristic condensation of the synthesis it represents. The political motto of Positivism answers both these conditions, when I proclaimed it in my lectures of 1847, five years after the complete publication of my philosophical treatise, the social destination of which it expresses. It has been now satisfactorily tested and will soon have overcome the prejudices of the revolutionist and the reactionist, when the policy of the government is such as to make it worthy of such a symbol.

The act
which inau-
gurates the
transition.

The guarantee offered by the motto should be strengthened by an act of peculiar significance, in which the dictatorial power, now altered in spirit, will complete its inauguration of

the constructive transition by repudiating an ill-omened connection. By nobly taking the lead in the repression by the Western Powers of a military encroachment, the present dictator brings out more clearly the contradiction involved in the sanction given by France to a similar aberration in the past. The noble pledge of a decidedly pacific policy thus given should, then, be followed up by the voluntary execution of the formal decree of Europe as to the tomb of Bonaparte, the violation of which was due to weakness on the part of both the governments concerned. The grave at St. Helena is more fitting for the military dictator than the burial of a parvenu amidst the crowd of French kings. The irrefragable announcement of a sound policy, internal as well as external—the reversal of this act would gain in dignity and significance if accomplished by the actual chief of the French nation.

As a consequence of such a manifestation, the metropolis of Humanity should purify itself of a monument of oppression, inconsistent with a neighbourhood, which recalls the establishment of permanent peace. For the parody of Trajan's column should be substituted a noble statue of Charlemagne, the incomparable founder of the Western Republic. The great Emperor, the highest type of the Middle Ages, has nowhere yet been visibly presented, and the act of cultus thus paid to him will inaugurate the transition on which devolves the preparation of the future by the glorification of the past. If the insulting column, when broken up, does not furnish sufficient materials for the monument of union, the deficiency, met by a recourse to other similar sources, will be soon made up by the voluntary contributions of the Western world. When our brothers of whatever Western nation shall pass through the *Rue Charlemagne* and the *Rue de la Paix* to *La place Occidentale*, there to pay their homage to the most eminent precursor of the civilization of mankind, the feeling will arise, that they too in their respective countries should follow the example it was for France to give, and atone for the anarchy in which all have taken part.

These suggestions lead me on to close my introductory survey of the organic transition by an exposition of the direct efforts made by the priesthood which is to regenerate; efforts aiming at the preparation of the normal state and the reconstruction of the West by a worthy glorification of the past.

The column
in the place
Vendôme.

Efforts of
the Priest-
hood to pre-
pare the
normal state
by the
glorification
of the past.

The Posi-
tivist Ca-
lendar.

As the very essence of the revolutionary principle consists in the breach of continuity, it devolves upon Positivism at the present day to begin its social action by systematising public commemoration, which is misapprehended by all existing schools equally. For this reason, without waiting for the termination of the present work, I took pains to inaugurate the organic transition by the construction of the *Positivist Calendar*; its triumphant success attests the reasonableness of this initial step. In the very first edition published in 1849 I explained that the calendar was a provisional institution, destined for the present exceptional century, to serve as an introduction to the abstract worship of Humanity, the nature and plan of which I even then indicated, in perfect agreement with their fuller development, as given in this volume.

Three de-
grees in this
concrete
glorification
of Human-
ity.

For the concrete glorification of the Great Being, I take the highest individual types of the preliminary period, and arrange them in three ranks, monthly, weekly and daily, beginning with the initial Theocracy and ending with the early beginnings of the final crisis. In this scheme Fetichism alone is without its commemoration, Fetichism never having been able to throw up any names. But the definitive amalgamation of Fetichism with Positivism will be so clearly indicated in the festivals of the organic transition, that its enforced omission can lead to no unjust depreciation of the indispensable commencement of the whole human evolution.

Chronologi-
cal place of
the types
fixed by the
calendar.

For each degree of our ideal presentation of the past, the chronological order removes all uncertainty as to the position of any given type; so that the festivals might in all cases serve as dates. But such use of them I have always left optional, except in reference to the first degree; there the best servants of the Great Being find their highest honour in giving names to the thirteen months of the Positivist year. As early as the second edition of the Calendar, published in 1850, in a separate pamphlet, I introduced the indispensable nomenclature, now definitively consecrated by use. Its success leads me to give an answer now to the question raised in the second chapter of this volume, as to the ultimate names of the Positive months, for which I think I ought to adopt those given them for the transition. Although concrete, the nomenclature is yet, so general in its character as to be adapted to the abstract worship, in which latter I have even used it for the days of the

Names of
the months.

week, in order to restore the familiar sense of the most important instance of continuity.

The case is different for the Positive era, which, until the close of the organic transition, must be dated from the beginning of the French Revolution; it being important that all Occidentals should have a ready measure of its course. The incomparable assembly which guided the Republican outbreak made a serious mistake on this point, from its not recognizing what posterity has recognized, that the Republic really began with the taking of the Bastille by the people of Paris. I have restored, then, the custom adopted by its predecessor, on this single point instinctively its superior, by virtue of an irresistible impulse; that predecessor, moreover, respecting the traditional arrangement of the Western year, from a presentiment of the reasons for it, as given in the second chapter of this volume.

The Positive Era.

Provisional era. 1789.

But the normal state cannot adhere to an era which recalls an anarchical explosion, soon followed by a long reaction. And yet the future were not satisfactorily connected with the past, if the opening date of the ultimate chronology of the world be not fixed in this exceptional century. To comply with both conditions, it is enough if we place the Positive era at the beginning of the organic transition, the work reserved for the last of the three generations which intervene between the extinction of Theologism and the establishment of Positivism. Chronologically, this gives us the year 1855 as our starting point; sociologically a well-marked point, as we have in it the striking coexistence of a definitive dictatorship with the complete construction of the Religion of Humanity. The provisional and the ultimate era, then, of the Positivist Calendar must differ by two thirds of a century; a difference which facilitates our habitual comparison of the present with the future or the past.

Definitive era. 1855.

Were the object of this system of commemoration purely intellectual, we might stop at the two first degrees, as conjointly offering a sufficient presentation of the philosophy of history, so far at least as regards the Western transition as a whole. After having, in the first month, glorified all the theocratic ties of the human Family, each subsequent monthly type marks a phase of man's education or an essential aspect of a phase. The four weekly types, in subordination to the monthly type, are above all meant to be the representatives of

For intellectual purposes, the monthly and weekly types would suffice.

the principal modes or degrees of the phase of evolution with which they are connected, and which through them becomes clear. So complemented, the succession of the thirteen monthly types forms an adequate idealization of the whole past. The two series, as the basis of our system of commemoration, will ever be an integral part of the normal worship in the three months it devotes to history, as these sixty-five names are almost all employed in the concrete developement of the abstract festivals, as may be seen by reference to the conspectus of Sociolatr^y.

The daily
types re-
quired for
moral pur-
poses.

Important as it is to impress, by means of art, on the Western mind the general conception of the past, the main destination of the historical calendar is yet a moral one; to revive, that is, the sense of continuity everywhere in profound decay. To the children of revolution who turn to the future in contempt of the past, the priesthood of Humanity steps forward to proclaim the Great Being by the honour it pays to its best servants. Therefore it is that the concrete worship should be instituted on such a scale, that the veneration due to our ancestors may issue in devotion to our posterity. The past has been misjudged, and its pressure should at the present day be made sensible by a multiplication of individual connections, to be condensed later when continuity is firmly established. The expansion is no less desirable on another ground; it may help to overcome the selfishness of theological and the individualism of metaphysical belief, by awakening in all the noble desire of honourable incorporation with the supreme existence. For these reasons it is, that the Western commemoration should at present include daily types, always arranged in chronological order, but chosen indifferently from the precursors, rivals, and successors of the weekly type. I was thus led, from the very beginning, to make the concrete worship still more complete, by adopting for certain days secondary names, to be substituted for their principals in leap years.

Supplemen-
tary names.

It is solely in reference to these secondary names, distinguished by italics in the Calendar (*see below*), that I have occasionally profited by the judicious observations not unfrequently made to me during the last five years, with a view to improving the Western calendar, by addition or substitution. The result of this gradual amelioration is that, as a construction, it leaves me no regret on the score of omission, though I hold

myself bound to carefully examine any new proposals, provided they be not purely negative in character. I alone as yet am at the Western point of view, and I am sufficiently clear of partiality towards France to judge all distinguished names whatsoever through the veil of national illusions.

A comparison of the Calendar with the preceding volume brings out clearly the inevitable defects of the concrete worship, its inability, viz., to embrace the larger portion of man's educational stage. Not only is it unable on the grounds already assigned to include Fetichism, it pays but scanty honour to the Theocracy, the highest types of the Theocracy being lost to us, in consequence of the admirable self-denial which was characteristic of the system; and the result is that I have been driven to incorporate in the first month some collective commemorations and even some purely mythical names. Throughout the remainder of the Calendar, the number of the festivals is seldom in proportion to the importance of the phase; so that a synoptical table, the main object of which is to place before us the Western transition as a whole, fails as a comparison of its principal phases. It gives three months to the intellectual movement of Greece, whilst Roman civilization is condensed into one, and half even of that concerns what is but indirectly a preparation for it. If two months are really sufficient to idealize the nine centuries of the Middle Ages, the evolution of modern times would seem not to deserve six. Of the five constituents of the Western world, the Spanish type receives but scant honour; for the superiority of Spain, admirable as it is, is a superiority in feeling, and as such cannot be adequately appreciated when we are commemorating the developement of intellect and activity. These various defects may be, it is true, in great measure, remedied by the wisdom of its interpreters, still they are inseparable from the concrete worship, and its function therefore is simply to prepare the existing generation for the abstract glorification of the past.

This enumeration of the inevitable shortcomings of the historical calendar would be incomplete, if we omitted to remark that, in it, intellectual or practical services naturally are of more weight than moral desert, our object being to understand aright the developement of the powers of man at a time when the discipline of those powers was impossible. The calendar is not meant to give us examples of conduct; for

Insufficiency
of the
concrete
worship.

In the
Calendar
theoretical
and practical
services
prevail over
moral.

such, in any large numbers, we must wait for the normal state; its purpose is to call us back from anarchy—to subordination to the past, through the honouring the individual instruments of the progress achieved by the race. Although the list should, after the transition, serve invariably in our choice of baptismal names, that is to say, when it has received its full completeness, this is a use of it which will always require the intervention of the priesthood, if we would avoid undesirable patrons. Even in classifying the intellectual types, in some instances I have been obliged to look to the results attained rather than to individual merit, such results mainly depending on their circumstances, in some cases favourable to their vocation, in others adverse. Of the six thinkers ranked under Bacon, three were in my judgment his superiors, but their superiority lacked the opportunity to evince itself by their giving as great an impulse as Bacon gave to the intellectual progress; the contrast is similar between Lagrange and Newton.

The calendar
purely
provisional.

Such is the spirit in which the calendar is to be studied and taught, as a summing up the whole commemoration of the past. Though almost entirely devoted to the vast transition through which the Western world had to pass from Theocracy to Sociocracy, it may be looked upon in the present day as representing the whole initiation of mankind, the issue of which is furnished us by this transition. The instinct of continuity was not really impaired, save in these thirty centuries, and as a termination of them, Positivism recalls the Western nations, increasingly revolutionary, to the normal attitude of the Theocrats and the Fetichists, its aim being the union of the race. Putting aside the fact that the general plan of the historical calendar indicates by itself its purely provisional intention, there are details in the construction which directly announce as proximate the advent of the normal cultus; I allude to the abstract character of the two festivals with which it ends. For the last day of the year and the additional day in leap years are the same festivals as those which stand last in the *Conspectus of Sociolatriy*.

Two pro-
visions re-
quisite to
complete the
above.

So I am led on to complete my exposition by two explanations which are indispensable to a clear comparison of the transitional worship in its actual state with its previous state in former editions, that in the *Positivist Catechism* included.¹

¹ That is to say, in the first French edition. In the second and in the English translation it stands as in the present volume.

A feeling of kindness, a feeling quite undeserved, prompted my recommendation of a specious proposal to consecrate the days of the week to the several fundamental ties of human society. Not only, however, is the plan not adapted for the normal state, where the months perform this office, but it would be useless during the transition, when we have only to consider public festivals; the personal worship, and the domestic sacraments having already attained their definitive state. The abortive attempt will leave no other trace but the touching series of prayers to which it gave occasion; the author, a true Positivist, will disengage them from this connection and distinguish them by their several objects, adhering to the established names.

(1) The days of the week not consecrated to the fundamental ties.

A more important explanation regards the day devoted to reprobation, which from the 'General View' passed into all the editions of the Calendar, having been introduced into my lectures. I was led to a capital modification of it by the objections of a lady; subsequently the honourable remonstrance of a British Positivist has led me to reflect and on reflection entirely to abandon the idea. I had always so far seen the exceptional character of the institution as to limit it to the first four bissextile years of the organic transition. But on sifting more thoroughly the reasons assigned for this limitation, I decided not to divert the complementary day from its normal destination, as given above. Recognizing the danger of any regular cultivation of the feelings of hatred even when indignation is most legitimate, we must especially avoid any stimulus to these feelings in a milieu prone to criticism, and in which Positivism aims at reestablishing veneration. Rulers, whose misconduct is traceable in the main to an ill-governed desire for celebrity, find their best punishment in oblivion, the more effective by contrast with the honour paid to the higher types. A ceremony specially devoted to reprobation would risk, with an incompetent public, the misapplication of the principles on which we should be compelled to ground our condemnation.

(2) Suppression of all reprobation.

The types which occupy the greater portion of the historical calendar are such as to suggest to the priesthood which presides over the reconstruction, the completing the institution by proposing a system of reading in unison with the organic transition. Poets, philosophers, men of science—these form the majority in the list of the names commemorated, and the public in honour-

The Positivist Library.

ing them naturally wishes to know their works, works not in all cases fit for its use. Again, it might be thought that all authors excluded from this provisional cultus are undeserving of perusal, whereas this would be often unjust, in some cases a positive evil. To avoid mistakes, either the reading works we should not, or the omission of those we should, read, it is necessary to regulate a propensity which has become both excessive and universal, and to do this we must add, as a complement to the roll of famous names, the list of the books which deserve to live. This is the aim of the Appendix to the present volume : with some modifications, it is a reproduction of the Catalogue inserted in the preface of the Positivist Catechism ; a separate edition appeared in October 1851.

The Library
consists of
150 volumes.

In this provisional collection of a hundred and fifty volumes, more or less in constant use,—a step towards the normal condensation of the intellectual treasures of Humanity in a hundred volumes formed on system,—we must distinguish the poetical and moral works, as alone adapted for habitual reading. If, amongst these, we confine ourselves to the real master works, the organic transition will be greatly facilitated by our familiar intercourse with the highest types of the preparatory life of Humanity. The conclusive test of experience induces me to recommend above all the daily reading of the sublime, if incomplete, effort of *À Kempis* and the incomparable epic of Dante. More than seven years have passed since I have read each morning a chapter of the one, each evening a canto of the other, never ceasing to find beauties previously unseen, never ceasing to reap new fruits, intellectual or moral. To say nothing of the positive advantages of a habit which ever reminds us of the great object of all human meditation, it has the negative advantage of keeping us from useless or bad books, whilst it offers the best corrective of such reading. Till such time as Positivism, invoking Humanity, work out the moral and political synthesis attempted by Catholicism in the name of God, the mystical condensation of the mediæval religion will serve as our daily guide in the study and improvement of our nature. As a monument of the past, this unrivalled composition (I am happy to think that I have already increased its use by true believers) must have a value for our most distant successors; but independently of such value, it is even at present ranked among our sacred books. •

Later mod-
ifications of

If we treat the Positivist Library as the natural complement

of the historical calendar, we use it and judge it in accordance with the synthetical conception, the dynamical character, and the provisional destination of the more important table. Both lists are peculiar to the West, both are provisional, both equally stand in need of revision and completion to fit them for universal adoption as definitive institutions. Both speak to the undisciplined in intellect and in morals, and accordingly we must judge of their efficacy, not by this or that partial result, but on a general survey of the impressions of synthesis and sympathy their habitual use conveys. Their services during the transition will secure them a certain subaltern value in the normal state, when the sacerdotal functions, of which they are the rudimentary form, shall be in full and regular action. The Library, in a modified form, will then continue to guide our reading; and the Calendar, then complete, will always serve as a basis for our choice of baptismal names.

the Calendar
and the
Library.

Calendar and Library—by the aid of the two, the priesthood of Humanity will lay the groundwork of its ascendancy over the living by its judgment of the dead, during the first phase of the organic transition. It discharged this function freely,—an office which everything tends to assist, which nothing can prevent—prior to the advent of the dictatorship, to the advent, that is, of the political condition of its social efficacy. The scale of its exercise will be enlarged so soon as liberty in matters of opinion is sufficiently secured, not waiting for the adoption of the three subsidiary measures which are to ensure it against retrogression. Nevertheless, the direct influence of the Positive clergy in the reorganisation of society will not be felt, till the attitude of the government correspond fully to the real condition of things, break, that is, with the falsehood which involves the sanction of three spiritual powers in a sceptical society. But whenever, by the complete suppression of the spiritual budget—theological, metaphysical, and scientific—the way is cleared for the recognition of the persistent need of a spiritual reorganisation, the religion of Humanity will evoke a general sense of its capacity to terminate the great Revolution. Whilst it enunciates definitively the fundamental problem, this measure of enfranchisement supplies, moreover, the only means of its practical solution, on a large scale, by the open growth of the Positive worship, at present destitute of material resources, which the law reserves for the deposed faiths. And although

The two institutions finally the judgment of the Dead.

in abolishing the ecclesiastical budget the Catholic churches must be always respected, their disuse in the natural course of things, in proportion as the real decay of the belated belief stands revealed, will peacefully transfer to Positivism some temples worthy of the Great Being.

The Worship explained during the first phase.

Naturally devoted to the worship,—for the adoption of the worship will precede that of the doctrine, still more that of the regime,—the first phase of the constructive transition will institute, on some scale or other, the three modes or essential degrees of that worship. Private worship, and even the social sacraments—these have already begun for true believers, never to disappear, as their introduction needs only individual conversions, and is unaffected by public considerations. As the dictatorial regime gradually arouses a general sense of the necessity for moral reorganisation, the vacillating or the fallen⁴ will come asking from the worship of Humanity the consolations and the protection which the decrepit beliefs can no longer give them. More particularly will this be the case in the ties of domestic life, most of all in reference to marriage, where the weakness of Theology discloses the inadequacy of the mere civil union. Some decisive instances already show that, under a deep sense of the moral deficiencies in their sceptical milieu, there are some who are disposed to strengthen their union by the voluntary promise of eternal widowhood, an engagement incompatible with the fallen creeds.

Mixed marriages.

In view of the approaching increase of Positivist marriages, I address myself to a point on which I have often been consulted, the difficulty, namely, as to mixed marriages, unknown ultimately in the normal state, but the commonest case during the organic transition. Positivism alone can sanction such marriages without inconsistency by virtue of its invariable relativity, this enabling it to look upon all the anterior beliefs, without exception, as so many preparations for the demonstrable faith. It will use such marriages as an honourable means of propagating its worship, not merely with the several Monotheists, but with the Polytheists, and even the Fetichists.

Two conditions for mixed marriages.

(1) Conversion of the woman after

Mixed marriages must be allowed only under two general conditions, lest we weaken the just ascendancy of the definitive religion by hopeless efforts, often issuing in permanent discord. First of all, the expectation of conversion must be entertained only in reference to the sex which is most susceptible of modifi-

cation, the sex in which attachment to the old forms of worship most deserves respect, as determined mainly by the wants of the heart, in opposition to the suggestions of the intellect. Positivism will, in a higher degree than Catholicism, avail itself of the influence of woman, but at the same time it will uphold more firmly the dignity of man, by confining to the husband the office of teacher, which is unbecoming in the wife. Conjugal harmony would be gravely imperilled, were the wife to look to marriage for conversion when she had failed to effect it previously. Whereas the man, as a rule, may hope gradually to bring over to the Positive faith a companion who is naturally •predisposed to accept intellectual guidance, within fair limits, and still more to feel, as it should be felt, the moral superiority of the true religion.

marriage
allowed, not
of the man.

So regarded, mixed marriage is allowable in the case of any Positivist sufficiently emancipated from previous religions to be able to take a passive part in the ceremonies of such religions, without any pretence of adhesion. More than once I have urged true believers freely to give so fair a proof of their personal deference and their respect for the institutions of their country. But this initiative of the man should be met by a corresponding action on the part of the woman; she should consent, that is, to take in the temple of Humanity the formal engagement of Positivist widowhood. Such an amount of adhesion to the universal religion is consistent, for the time, with an harmonious union, whilst it leaves a near prospect of complete conversion, one in which the heart will assist the intellect to feel the indivisibility of the true faith. If the woman refuse this concession, the priesthood cannot sanction the marriage, and the man must put it off till the condition be accepted, so avoiding a struggle of which the issue is uncertain, and which would be as fatal to happiness as to self-respect. In the present state of the Western world, when the older faith cannot really inspire a fanatical adherence, such a persistent refusal would imply the hope of obtaining undue power, a hope but ill-veiled by the pretext that it is impossible to renounce a former worship. Such a ground is an illusion in Monotheists, for their ancestors must at one time or another have abandoned the religion of their fathers; it is respectable only in the case of Polytheist or Fetichist women, and with them the widowhood of Positivism will be always welcome.

(2) The woman must accept eternal widowhood.

In any case
the mother
has the edu-
cation of the
children.

Whatever the shape the mixed marriage assume, one thing is clear, there must be no compromise of the Positivist rule, that the mother has the superintendence of the education of the children of both sexes. In belief the wife may be behindhand, but that does not prevent her being, by virtue of her moral superiority, more qualified than the husband to preside over education, so far as it is given within the family, and even to superintend the public instruction, so that in it the intellect may be subordinated to the heart. No true Positivist will ever interfere with this function; be it from a sound estimate of the part really played by the intellect in human education; be it that his strong conviction of the superiority of his faith makes him hope that it will ultimately prevail by its own intrinsic merit.

The Public
Worship.

The first two degrees of the worship of Humanity ought then, even in the present day, to take their normal shape, the milieu only having power to hamper or promote a development which is beyond its control. The case is different in regard to the system of public festivals; and yet in default of such a system the Positive religion cannot adequately discharge its social function, nor even establish on a solid footing its power over the individual and the family. The complement is one which demands more complete conversions and in larger numbers than is feasible during the whole of the constructive transition. I was thus led to construct a public worship specially adapted to the final stage of preparation, aiming at no other results than the encouragement of our tendencies to synthesis and sympathy by the establishment of the fundamental doctrine of continuity. Nevertheless, the system of festivals organized by the Western calendar issues in two ceremonies of an abstract nature, which, as such, prefigure the normal cultus.

Festival of
Humanity.

That the indication may not be inadequate, we must add two festivals of a typical kind and standing in close connection; the one in full agreement with the synopsis of Sociolatriy, whilst in the other the inevitable admixture of a provisional element is no obstacle to our fully realizing what it will finally be, nay even serves to connect it better with the past. The first addition requires no explanation here, as it is simply the immediate celebration of the arch-festival, the festival of the Great Being, sufficiently described in the second chapter of this volume. So

ripe is the time for it, that I proposed it as early as 1848, in the separate edition of the 'General View,' having previously stated it in my public lectures in 1847; and the success of the proposal has appeared in manifestations of increasing significance, lacking only publicity. For the last seven years, the true believers have inaugurated the Positivist year by coming of their own accord in a body to offer their homage to the founder of the religion of Humanity, recognized by them as the systematic interpreter of the Great Being. Completed, as it soon was, by the presence of women, this spontaneous action, the introduction of the only universal festival of which the present state of disorder admits, will become a solemnity of a decisive character when a public temple shall be open for its celebration.

As for the second additional festival, a distinct explanation is here imperative. Its object is to lay a foundation for the adoration, the collective adoration, of the representatives of Humanity, by instituting the abstract worship of woman, through the medium of the public festival of the Virgin-Mother, a festival in which the organic transition will incorporate the best condensation of the Middle Ages. By adhering to the day appointed by Catholicism, the true believers will naturally awake in their Catholic brethren a sense of the power inherent in the relative religion to preserve and allow full growth to all the germs emanating from the absolute faiths. In this festival Sociolatriy will reconcile the three Monotheisms, by pointing out to Christian hearts the founder of Islam choosing the eminent Jewess as the highest type of the sex when initiating its just worship. This festival, about the middle of the year, will be the complement of that which marks its beginning, when the habitual use of the historical calendar shall have effected a sufficient recognition of the Virgin-Mother as the spontaneous idealization of Humanity.

I avail myself of this close connection to introduce one last elucidation of the feminine utopia, which enters into all parts of this volume, and is most fully set forth in the preceding chapter.

A satisfactory institution of the worship of woman is out of the question so long as the idea of maternity is incompatible with purity. Hence it was that Chivalry welcomed and carried out to its full consequences the Catholic fiction in which idealiza-

Festival of
the Virgin-
Mother.

August 15.

A final elucidation
of
the Utopia.

Rise of the
cultus of the
Virgin and
decline of
the Eucharist. This
indicates the

tendency to
the Positiv-
ist Utopia.

tion endeavoured to supply the deficiencies of reality. To feel how far the unparalleled charm of the mystical type of woman is due to feudal tenderness rather than to Christian faith, we have only to compare its large acceptance in the West with its failure in Byzantine Christianity, in spite of the identity of doctrine. So far from heralding the universal ascendancy of Catholicism, the worship of the Crusaders pointed to the inward exhaustion of European Monotheism, for from that time forward there was a tendency to substitute the Virgin for God, a tendency which has become fact with the Catholics of Southern Europe. As an irrefragable proof of the antagonism between the two, we may remark the coincidence, constantly becoming more evident, of the acceptance of the mystery of the Virgin-Mother, with the decay of intellectual belief in the Sacrament of the Eucharist, the true embodiment of the religion of St. Paul. During the century which preceded the Crusades, the doctrine of the Eucharist occasioned a marked expression of doubts; doubts which have grown stronger ever since, keeping pace with the modifications introduced into the Catholic synthesis by the sympathetic conclusions of Chivalry. No doctrine admitting two condensations, however compatible they may seem, the new mode of skimming up Catholicism was an indication of the instinctive tendency of the Western world towards the only worship which can in an equal degree satisfy either sex.

Positivism
realises the
medieval
Utopia by
presenting
the members
of the human
family as
issuing from
a spouseless
mother.

Place in direct juxtaposition the worship of the Virgin-Mother by the West, and the worship of Humanity by mankind, and we see the fundamental affinity of the two by virtue of which the one is the unconscious preliminary of the other. For the Great Being is a realization of the feminine utopia in that it needs no external agency for its fecundation. Dreamers and charlatans are even now endeavouring, the first to smooth the way for the adoption of the new worship, the charlatan to delay the death of the old, by an effort to unite Humanity to God. But such endeavours, due to the increasing influence of Positivism, can be attended with no serious danger, as it is the literary class alone,—a class falling more and more into discredit,—which can fail to recognize the radical incompatibility of the relative and the absolute. This is how Positivism realises the Utopia of the Middle Ages, by presenting all the members of the great family as the offspring of a spouseless mother. On the basis of this conception, the worship of the transitional

period will, from the very beginning, definitively systematise, and by systematising, give its full effect to the unconscious transformation, which, since the twelfth century, has been the growing aspiration of the Southern nations, and that more than ever since the outbreak of Protestantism. At the same time the feminine Utopia becomes an inseparable part of the Positive religion, for all whose heart enables them to use it subjectively, without waiting till it is an objective fact.

Such is the aggregate of the institutions characteristic of the first phase of the organic transition, the period in which the priesthood of Humanity elaborates the regeneration of the West by establishing the worship of the Great Being, whilst the dictatorship, purely empirical in character, maintains the requisite political tranquillity. As yet unable to conceive a type of order different from that which is passing away, the temporal government is guided by its circumstances to respect a spiritual power which it considers competent to overcome the intellectual anarchy. Free scope, in public and in private, thus given to Positivism, it should manifest such a power of construction as gradually to effect either the spontaneous conversion of the older statesmen or the deliberate installation of fresh ones. This is how the opening period of the final transition will be a preparation for its decisive form, in proportion as the natural course of events of all kinds shall present the religion of Humanity as the only religion which can terminate the Western revolution. It was incumbent on me to bring first into contrast the two extreme phases, to the exclusion of the mean, but having done so, it is necessary now to acknowledge the necessity of intercalating an intermediate phase, in which the dictatorial power, though not Positivist, has yet adopted irrevocably an attitude of progress.

This intermediate phase is more akin to the first than to the third; so that it might be accomplished under the same ruler if he could be so far modified. In a sceptical society, the change is one not beyond the limit of advance possible in a real statesman during the period of mature manhood. Were the example of a philosopher of avail in the case, I might venture to cite my own public life, with its two distinct careers, distinct and yet connected, the one philosophical, the other religious, succeeding one another in legitimate succession, without any necessity for two different thinkers, as had been at

Connection
of the phases
of the tran-
sition.

The inter-
mediate
phase more
like the first.

first supposed. The practician, it is true, cannot change to the same extent, but the difference between the two modes of the dictatorial government is so much slighter as to justify my quoting my own precedent. The actual head of the French nation seems to me, then, capable of presiding over the central as well as over the initial phase of the organic transition, if he adopt my proposal, before mentioned, and place his government formally in unison with the real condition of things, thus turning to good account the unexampled acclaim of his power.

The final
phase.

With regard to the last phase, one, be it remembered, longer in duration than the two others together, the prolongation of his power would be inexpedient, though there ought not to be any breach of continuity between the last and the preceding phases, as I shall shortly explain. In fact, the dictatorship, hitherto monocratic, now becomes a triumvirate, as was pointed out in the 'General View,' and is to be further explained below. By this capital change, the preparatory government is brought, to a considerable degree, into harmony with the normal regime, the regime explained in the preceding chapter, and the change is coincident with the conversion of the governors to the reconstructive doctrine of Positivism, in default of which conversion the triumviral form would give rise to dangerous struggles.

The three
phases
briefly char-
acterised.

In this way the organic transition, in appearance one and indivisible, breaks up, by two divisions, into three successive phases, the serial succession of which phases forms a progression, in its first portion instinctive, then systematic, towards the complete regeneration of the West. All three equally resting on the combination of temporal concentration and spiritual liberty, they have their points of difference, both political and religious. During the two first, the Positive priesthood directs its special attention to the introduction, first, of the worship, then of the doctrine, under a monocratic dictatorship, at the outset originally retrograde or rather stationary, but subsequently progressive; in the last phase the priesthood works out the regime in concert with the triumvirate, which is the characteristic feature of that period.

Second
phase.

Three mea-
sures neces-
sary.

On this general plan I have now to explain the second phase, for the conception of which we required the previous conception of the two extremes, in obedience to the fifteenth law of the First Philosophy. Resembling the preceding politi-

cally rather than religiously, its temporal aspect takes precedence here of its spiritual.

So viewed, the mean phase of the organic transition will see the dictatorial government, now unquestionably progressive, carry out its policy by three correlated measures, up to this time impracticable, although they are but the completion of the policy of the first period. The most decisive is the definitive suppression of the French army, the substitute for which is eighty thousand gendarmes, a number sufficient for the due maintenance of order, both in public and as between individuals. This indispensable transformation,—a precedent soon followed throughout the West,—will inaugurate everywhere and for ever a policy of progress and of peace, not to speak of its twofold reaction upon industry. Its direct advantages will, however, at the outset, have a set-off, financially, in the obligation to extend to military, the rules of indemnization already laid down for civil, offices of more questionable utility. Compensation to the private soldiers is uncalled for, as they have long had no other wish but to leave a service which is alien to modern feeling, so that the only class to be considered would be the superior officers; the increase of the gendarmerie, naturally with suitable appointments, supplying a legitimate opening for the subalterns.

(1) The army to become a constabulary, or gendarmerie.

To complete the statement, a distinction must be made for the artillery (including under the term the engineers) and the navy, as both require a difficult apprenticeship, and, what is more, costly materials. Still, the special schools for the two services must be included in the suppression of the whole scientific budget; they are, at bottom, no advantage to the corps, which long did without them, any more than to the gendarmerie, which never suffered from this incubus on just promotion. Reducing the two special arms to the fourth of their actual amount, it is necessary at once to retain their distinct organisation and make them a substantive part of the normal militia, in which the military character is duly subordinated to the peaceful function, on foreign as well as on home service.

Artillery and Navy.

Such a constabulary, military and naval, will suffice to guarantee order in Western Europe, when the decisive result of the present war shall have put an end to the disquiet, whether sincere or otherwise, inspired by the retrograde attitude of the abortive Monotheists. For France henceforth ought to abandon

The force sufficient for external order.

all precautions as against its immediate neighbours; their oppressive military establishments being maintained chiefly as barriers against her; and they will everywhere fall as soon as by the suppression of its army France takes away what has long been a just cause of alarm. Supposing a reactionary coalition again to interfere with its noble effort to solve the problem of human regeneration, a special appeal on the part of the government of the transition would suffice to ensure its independence, as by virtue of the whole past invested with the initiative of reconstruction.

Also for
internal.

At home, the military force proposed would also be adequate, notwithstanding the prolongation of anarchy in matters of opinion, for, while treble the existing amount, it is double of that specified, in the preceding chapter, for the normal state. The condition, however, of its efficiency is the absolute suppression of the national guard, a force always at variance with modern feeling, seldom of real use in earlier troubles, and become an element of disorder now that the great Revolution is in full career. Unable, at least in France, either to exclude or to admit the proletary class, the national guard is at present a political danger without any social compensation. In fact, socially, its tendency is in direct opposition with the essential conditions of industrial reorganisation, a reorganisation in which there is no place for the bourgeoisie, hostile as it is equally to patrician and to plebeian. Its military conclaves act also as a check upon the regeneration of opinion, for the bourgeoisie has now, for some time, been the main seat of metaphysical empiricism and of sceptical egoism, evils which require a solitary treatment, and such treatment these assemblies always disturb.

Character
of the force.

Eighty thousand gendarmes, if the only armed force, can really maintain order in France in all disturbances whatsoever, if they avail themselves to the full of the peculiar advantages of an armed force at once voluntary and disciplined, every member of which deserves confidence and accepts responsibility. The gendarmerie, as the police, has its origin in industrial existence, and is intimately bound up with that existence, by virtue of the profoundly social character of its service, a service as independent as it is useful, and always compatible with family life. Compulsory enlistment has never been needed for the gendarmerie; its members are soldiers, but soldiers regenerated by the enduring sense of duty and selfrespect. During the

whole course of the modern revolution, the force rose by its own merits in public opinion, especially in France, side by side with the growing alienation of public feeling from the army properly so called. Since the developement of the final crisis, their republican instinct has connected the gendarmes more and more closely with the successful issue of a reconstruction, the aim of which is to secure the general prevalence of a social judgment. Such objections as at the present day may be urged with apparent justice against this constabulary, have in reality no force as against its constitution in itself, and had their source solely in the general political retrogradation. Under a really progressive dictator, the force, as was seen under Danton, will be able to give the proper assistance to the government without degrading itself by services which are not required when the executive is in no fear of public opinion.

The decisive step just explained would have been premature in the preceding phase; the retrograde attitude of the government at that time precluding such an amount of trust in the dispositions of the people, too anarchical to tolerate a regime which was an object of suspicion. But, in the second stage of the organic transition, the dictator's attitude has become progressive, and the popularity attaching to it as such is not weakened by the vagueness of its aspirations. Under these conditions, a force which, originally, would have at times failed in maintaining public order, may keep down factious attempts, and even restrain the disturbances of society caused by the indecision natural to a policy in which feeling endeavours to supply the place of reason. Inadequate as against a real insurrection, the Positivist military force will suffice to quell riots; and from riots it is important that the dictatorial regime should be guaranteed, otherwise its action is fettered by the necessity of concessions to popular prejudices. And although, in the present transitional state, we are liable to troubles of a more general kind, no military precautions should be taken against them, and for this reason, that the government may find, in the sense that it must and can anticipate such troubles by a wise policy, a control and a guidance not to be found in its vague doctrines.

The measure
not practicable
till the
second
phase.

Thus it is that the intermediate phase of the organic transition will fulfil the hopes that have arisen everywhere, and in France above all, during the last forty years, as a consequence

of the establishment of peace in the West. Solemnly promised, at the close of the extraordinary orgy in which the military instinct had revelled, the final transformation of the army into a gendarmerie was time after time adjourned on the ground of foreign complications and internal disquiet. But, at the period now in question, both grounds are so far removed, that the dictatorship may without danger gratify the universal wish by fulfilling the promise, and the measure will be the best assurance of its progressive tendencies.

Two complementary measures.

This transformation of the army into a gendarmerie leads, in the middle period of the organic transition, to two complementary measures, of capital importance, the one relating to external, the other to internal affairs.

(2) Abdoument of Algeria.

In the first place, to mark the definitive adoption of a thoroughly pacific policy, there must be a noble restoration of Algeria to the Arabs. Not merely is the continuance of our dominion impossible after the suppression of the French army, but it is radically incompatible with any reorganisation of society. That act of oppression was begun and carried on, at great cost, in order to rekindle the warlike feeling; to cultivate outside France a ferocious temper to be used in France; above all to corrupt the French nation, in order to divert it from social objects by interesting it in a retrograde tyranny. The policy was the more blameable in Louis Philippe, the least estimable of the five French dictators, in that when it was in his power to reject, and make reparation for, the wrong of his predecessor, he made it his own, not from conviction but in order to conciliate prejudices which might easily have been thwarted. But, over and above the general grounds on which the act of restoration has always been desirable, the present remarkable episode in our policy ought to hasten its accomplishment; evincing, as it does, the contradiction involved in a policy which upholds, to the south of the Ottoman empire, a process of spoliation which is resisted on its northern frontier. The accomplishment of this act of justice need not in any way, it may be as well to say, be hampered by consideration for our colonial establishment in Algeria, consideration quite undeserved, as that establishment rests on no solid basis, and has never been anything but a feeble compensation for numerous iniquities. If the sceptical adventurers who will be handed over to the generosity of the Mussulman had had any serious intention of

forming part of the Arab people, they would have adopted Islam, not cherished the hope, the futile and culpable hope, of gaining a triumph for Catholicism.

At home, this second phase advances the organic transition, industrially, by authorising the coalitions of the workmen as fully as those of the masters. These inevitable leagues require nothing, on either side, in the way of legal interference but the firm repression of violence towards those who refuse to join them. Under this single condition, the continuous growth of these antagonist organisations is as useful in the preparation of the Normal State as in its consolidation. For thus only can be brought home to both sides by experience, the need of a constant conciliation, the systematic direction of which is vested in the priesthood of Humanity. The experience of England has, it is true, taught us the defects and the dangers of these contests, so long as they are confined exclusively to material interests, but they will be an assistance in the reorganisation of industry when the Positive religion shall regulate their management.

With these two measures to supplement the abolition of the French army, the dictatorial government in its progressive stage will complete its guidance of the second period of the organic transition, by the introduction of two institutions, one political, the other moral, in a special sense preparatory of the last phase.

It should be, even then, an object to qualify Paris, in the next century, to take its place as the metropolis of the West; and for this to reduce its political ascendancy over the provinces of France, now crushed under an excessive centralization. This reform, generally and ardently desired, was always promised by the retrograde party but never effected; its inability to accomplish it arising from its not having the progressive policy indispensable for the change, if it were not to interfere with the social mission of France. Its accomplishment appertains to the true conservatives, when Positivism shall have produced upon them the impression in detail which must precede their conversion to its general doctrine.

In my systematisation of the organic transition, I met these legitimate objections to the present system by the division of France into seventeen separate governments,—intendancies,—each on an average comprising five departments, grouped, as far as possible, on a comprehensive survey of their local affinities.

(3) Authorisation of Trade-Union.

(a) The political measure. Decentralisation.

France to be divided into seventeen states.

The governors, in all cases appointed and removed by the central power, will be authorised to decide most of the administrative questions now settled at Paris; and each, governing his capital, will name the prefects of the subordinate towns. For the better understanding of this measure, the principal object of which I shall shortly explain, and which will serve as a type for the other Western nations, I feel bound here to give in detail the division of France, arranged according to the populousness of the capitals.

SCHEDULE OF THE SEVENTEEN FRENCH GOVERNMENTS.

1. Paris . . . (Seine, Seine-et-Oise).
2. Marseilles . . (Basses-Alpes, Vaucluse, Gard, Bouches-du-Rhône, Var).
3. Lyons . . . (Rhône, Ain, Isère, Hautes-Alpes, Drôme).
4. Bordeaux . . (Lot, Dordogne, Gironde, Lot-et-Garonne, Landes, Basses-Pyrénées).
5. Rouen . . . (Eure, Seine-Inférieure, Calvados, Orne, Manche).
6. Nantes . . . (Ille-et-Vilaine, Loire-Inférieure, Morbihan, Côtes-du-Nord, Finistère).
7. Toulouse . . (Tarn-et-Garonne, Gers, Haute-Garonne, Hautes-Pyrénées, Ariège).
8. Lille . . . (Oise, Somme, Aisne, Pas-de-Calais, Nord).
9. Strasbourg . . (Meuse, Moselle, Meurthe, Vosges, Haut-Rhin, Bas-Rhin).
10. Reims . . . (Seine-et-Marne, Aube, Marne, Haute-Marne, Ardennes).
11. Orleans . . . (Eure-et-Loire, Loiret, Loir-et-Cher, Cher, Indre).
12. Angers . . . (Sarthe, Mayenne, Maine-et-Loire, Indre-et-Loire).
13. Montpellier . . (Aveyron, Tarn, Hérault, Aude, Pyrénées-Orientales).
14. Limoges . . . (Nièvre, Allier, Creuse, Haute-Vienne, Corrèze).
15. Clermont . . (Loire, Ardèche, Puy-de-Dôme, Cantal, Haute-Loire, Lozère).
16. Dijon . . . (Yonne, Côte-d'Or, Saône-et-Loire, Jura, Doubs, Haute-Saône).
17. Rochefort . . (Vienne, Deux-Sèvres, Vendée, Charente-Inférieure, Charente).

(b) The religious measure.

From the religious point of view, the middle period of the organic transition will be the complement of the first, so far as regards the general adhesion then given to the fundamental principle of Positivism, by superadding its moral device to its political formula, still however without any change in the French flag. In adopting the formula, *Order and Progress*,

the first phase expressed the decided determination to end the modern revolutionary movement by the entire reconciliation of the two ideas, a fusion unanimously called for since the outbreak of the final crisis. In the second phase, the true nature of the regeneration of the West is brought more prominently into view, by the announcement that the solution must be in its origin a moral solution; this is done by the formal acceptance of the law, *Live for others*. Then, and not till then, will women become an element, as they should be, in the movement of modern times; they are outside of it and alien to it, even after it has become constructive, so long as it embraces only the intellect and the action of man without bringing both alike under the control of feeling. The combination of the two mottoes will place the political in direct connection with the moral reorganisation, so preparing the way for the thoroughly religious character which is to mark the latest phase of the Western transition.

I am thus brought to the point at which, to complete the ordering of the intermediate phase, it is necessary to trace the progress of Positivism during its course.

Though this is the period in which the true religion must enlarge its sway so as to include the doctrine in addition to the worship, without as yet embracing the regime, the priesthood in its work of regeneration even now, and that opportunely, enters on an extension of the system of abstract festivals, which was begun during the first period by the festivals of Humanity, of Women, and of the Dead. These characteristic solemnities, with a judicious admixture of concrete types, will receive an addition in a fourth annual festival,—suggested by the developement of the antagonism between the industrial classes, itself a result of the popular unions,—a festival which, while in every respect adapted to the transitional, may form part of the normal, state. The introduction, towards the end of the summer, of the Festival of Machinery by the Positive priesthood, will be an effort on its part to anticipate and to mitigate all industrial disputes by honouring the main foundation of peaceful activity. Our systematic sanction of the spontaneous Fetichism of the race will allow us to idealize these admirable instruments, which give to labour its productiveness, to the labourer his true dignity. The festival in their honour will have a direct tendency to introduce everywhere the normal

Developement of Positivism during the second phase.

Establishment of abstract fêtes.

Festival of Machines.

manners, as being a corrective of the popular errors which, owing to our existing anarchy, reappear on every fresh extension of the power of machinery. It will show in the strongest light the need there is to discipline human activity, as its unchecked career soon involves a contradiction, in the utter opposition between the end and the means. The festival of machines will encourage a brotherly subordination on the part of all the working classes to the class which is marked out as the normal leader, socially speaking, of the proletariat.

But the second phase mainly concerns the doctrine.

Important, however, as, in a special point of view, is this expansion of the abstract worship, it is the establishment, on a large scale, of schools for the encyclopædic education that will be the spiritual characteristic of the second phase, a phase essentially concerned with the doctrine; this measure I have now to explain.

Causes that will lead to a regeneration of public instruction.

The abolition of the triple theoretical budget will bring about the general recognition of the necessity and the feasibility of reorganising public instruction. It will be impossible then not to see, how completely the state of the Western world is adverse to all theological or metaphysical teaching—how favourable it is to all Positive tendencies. At the same time, the spread of subversive Utopias will reveal the true nature of the evil from which we are suffering, whereas it is now masked by the various material palliatives. The conclusive evidence of more than one contest will dispose all enlightened and honest conservatives to recognize in the Religion of Humanity the only power capable of disciplining the minds of men. Its aid will soon be in such high esteem as to inspire statesmen not merely with habitual respect for its counsels, but with the desire actively to contribute to its adoption by society.

Positive schools established by the government.

The impulse thus given will act on the dictatorial government, before it become Positivist, and lead it to prepare for the development of the true priesthood and the renovation of public education by founding schools, analogous in character to the schools of the normal state, the general type of which will be then familiar. Such schools will of necessity have mainly a philosophical result, but the ground on which the government founds them must be that they are to educate the various services which remain under its control. Their connection with these services, calculated as it is moreover to obviate or correct scientific vagueness of purpose, is as legiti-

mate in the organic transition as it was in the last phase of the revolution. It foreshadows, in the cases where it applies, the general connection between the systematisation of practical life and the encyclopædic training. Far from regretting that the *Positive School* is not destined by the dictatorial government to recruit the new priesthood, we ought to congratulate ourselves on our escape from such a violation of true principles in reference to the spiritual reorganisation. It has ever been my endeavour to make it felt, that the Positive education, common to all, should suffice for all, the clergy not excepted, allowing for the special preparation which is always a matter of free individual exertion. And yet notwithstanding, the transitional schools, destined to initiate the movement for the complete renovation of public instruction, will naturally be peculiarly advantageous to the free corporation which presides over that movement.

To ensure the efficiency of these schools, in their particular as in their general objects, it is important to preserve them from the corrupting influence of monopoly, the ruin hitherto of all such institutions. The empirical limitation, and the irrational intermingling of the abstract sciences; the entire absence of publicity; evils constantly magnified by the academical system, these causes combined in the irremediable failure of a school which since its reestablishment has been constantly deteriorating. But the degradation of the Polytechnic school (its name sounds ironical), its intellectual no less than its moral degeneracy, was due, above all, to the fatal mistake of its illustrious founders, who thought to ensure its success by giving it a privilege which has made it at once retrograde and anarchical.

Enlightened by this blunder, the dictator will shun conferring any monopoly on the nursery for rightly trained minds which is to take the place of this abortive institution and all its adjuncts. The various services for which the Positive school offers a training will always be recruited by open competition; the only advantage of its pupils in such competition will be its better teaching, and this will not unfrequently be counterbalanced in their competitors by natural abilities and favourable circumstances. It is by this more than anything else, that its establishment will be a decisive prelude to the systematic remodelling of general education, as distinguished

There must
be no
monopoly.

L'École
Polytech-
nique.

Open compe-
tition for the
public ser-
vices, so far
as the lower
grade is con-
cerned.

from all special objects. For exactness' sake in regard to this fundamental condition, it is necessary at this point to explain how we reconcile,—and we are bound to reconcile,—a judicious application of the principle of competition with due respect for the prerogative of the dictatorship. The universal adoption of the competitive method is only possible if limited to the lower grade, where, far from hampering the government, it affords a better choice and preserves it from all pressure. But, thus introduced, its agents must owe all promotion to their actual services, without having to stand a contest which is as illusory as it is degrading where there is a direct test for the functionaries. In all cases the intermediate grade will be reached by seniority, allowing for individual exceptions; and the highest grade will be a matter of free choice, such choice, in case of need, not limited to the department actually concerned.

The services
most pre-
pared for are
those of
Justice, Dip-
lomacy,
and Admini-
stration.

Judges.

Diplo-
matists.

Meant for all branches of the public service, the Positive school will yet exert its formative powers most particularly on behalf of those which are most able to facilitate the transition of the West; systematically directing, that is, justice, diplomacy, and administration. The judicial functions must ultimately, under better conditions than in the Middle Ages and in Antiquity, be resumed by the industrial patriciate as its normal appendage; but they will continue to give rise to a special class till such time as the chiefs of industry have risen to their true position. This special body, which, since the Roman prætors, has been, as a matter of history, connected with the spontaneous growth of a purely human morality, will welcome the extinction of empirical and declamatory institutions, and the substitution in their place of schools, in which profane science leads up to sacred science, as a preparation for the direct professional training of magistrates worthy of the name. Diplomats, as the judges, had their origin in the confusion of the two powers during the modern revolutionary period, but they are, to a greater degree than the judges, predisposed to second the impulse of the religion which is to end it. Weary alike of scepticism and hypocrisy, they have so far tested the inadequacy of purely political measures as to be ready to welcome a moral regeneration, the offspring of a synthesis which will honour their services and extend them, though ultimately it extinguishes the profession. But it is

the administrative service which is the most qualified to sympathise with Positivism, for the regime which it proclaims not only does not suppress the class, but will raise it in the estimation of the patricians, as their permanent auxiliary in the discharge of their political functions. These modest and laborious servants, on whom rests at the present day the uninterrupted maintenance of public order in the midst of spiritual disorder, well deserve the infusion of new power they will get, when they draw from the Positive schools, by free competition, the recruits they want, as sub-prefects, commissioners of police, and clerks.

- After all however, both from the general and the special point of view, it is the physicians who will be most benefited by the institution, as having, since we shook off the yoke of Theocracy, become, more and more, the natural precursors of the Sociocratic priesthood. The tendency of modern science to degenerate into academical pedantry shocks at once their social aspirations and their predisposition to synthesis, as it transfers to the cosmologists, and more especially to the geometricians, that leadership in science, which, as the result of the Middle Ages, normally devolved on the biologists. More fully emancipated, more progressive than any other class, the physicians, though a provisional class, alone knew how to use aright the just censure of Molière, being stimulated by it to shake off the fetters of Metaphysics and literature, with the result of becoming the best support of nascent Positivism. Though I have always spoken freely of the materialism and the venality of the profession, I always found there valuable sympathies with the Positive teaching, as a doctrine which raises its social importance and its scientific independence by incorporating its function into those of the priesthood of Humanity. In this historical judgment, it is not solely nor even chiefly the pure biologists that I have in view; they are already too deteriorated by the academical indiscipline to be qualified for hearty cooperation in the work of mental and moral reorganisation. I have more confidence in the higher order of practitioners, whose apparent contempt of medical theories is but the expression of their instinctive sense of the futility of partial syntheses. At bottom, they are the most predisposed of all to promote the regeneration of their profession, one in

The School
of most
value in
Medicine.

which the higher minds have constantly to strive against imminent degradation.

Measures for
the regene-
ration of the
medical pro-
fession.

Such considerations as these led me, when planning the transitional institution of Positive schools, to treat them as especially meant for the medical profession in the ordinary sense of the term. Such schools may act directly on the doctors, on whom the government confers a legal status by entrusting them with a sanitary office, such trust justifying it in exacting certain intellectual and moral conditions. The intellectual guarantee will be a consequence of their encyclopædic training, the type of which is given in the Positive school; to satisfy the moral will consist in their formally renouncing all private practice, in order to devote themselves properly to the service of the public, such service of course to be suitably remunerated. Three grades in succession, determined, as in other cases, by competition, seniority, and choice, will receive annual salaries of three thousand, six thousand, and twelve thousand francs, the same scale as the priesthood. To encourage hierarchical subordination in a class which, in its own nature, is averse to discipline, each functionary will superintend the practice, whether it be the treatment of persons or the service of public health, of the two physicians beneath him in rank who shall be specially attached to him. Hospitals are an institution exclusively adapted to the Middle Ages and destined to disappear utterly, in proportion as the increase of material comfort, coinciding with increased selfrespect in the working classes, shall allow us to substitute for a degrading assistance the careful attention of the family. But the change must be gradual, and it is desirable to further it by establishing on a large scale, during the whole course of the transitional period, public physicians with the duty of directing gratuitously the medical treatment of patients at their own homes.

Hospitals.

Degrees
abolished,
and all medi-
cal corpora-
tions, nurs-
ing institu-
tions in-
cluded.

To complete the regeneration of the medical profession we must rid it of a mischievous monopoly, and of alien assistants. The legal privilege conferred by the doctor's degree, really only benefits the charlatan from whom it apparently protects the public, whereas there is no real protection for it against the practical consequences of our intellectual anarchy, aggravated as it is by ignorance and credulity. This legal sanction is the main support of an useless course of instruction, which would ere this have fallen into discredit, were it not for this

power of conferring a monopoly of medical advice. At issue alike with the dignity of the priesthood and with spiritual freedom, the rule is a clog at once on the affectionate care of women and the generosity of the patrician class. But whilst we put an end to this oppressive influence at headquarters, we must not respect it in the subalterns, with whom its evils are often increased by superstition and hypocrisy. Involved in the general suppression of the ecclesiastical budget, the corporations, above all those of women, on which the reactionary movement conferred the monopoly of nursing, will thus lose, without hope of recovery, a privilege of which all physicians feel the inconveniences, both in public and private life. If any one wishes to devote himself to the service of the sick, for a time or for a permanence, he should be able to do so freely, without joining or being dependent on any brotherhood or sisterhood, where pride and vanity are fostered under the cloke of a self-devotion more apparent than real.

The destination of the Positive schools during the transition having been sufficiently explained, we must give the general plan of their organisation, which will most differ from that of the normal state in that the pupils are secluded during the three years of their encyclopædic noviciate. This exceptional measure rests on the necessity of withdrawing a picked body of young men from the influences of the sceptical and corrupt milieu which they are to be one great means of regenerating. If magistrates, diplomatists, administrators, and above all physicians are to become, by training, the auxiliaries or precursors of the Positive priesthood, it is allimportant that during their intellectual and moral instruction they be not exposed to the disturbing influences of such milieu. But the risks of the scholastic cloister-life will be diminished by the age of the pupils, an age allowing in all cases the previous careful cultivation of the domestic affections, none being admitted till after the completion of their twentieth year. A competent governor, usually chosen from the retired practitioners, will make it his especial aim to encourage in the school the continual subordination of the intellect to the heart, in view of a social mission with no alloy of monopoly, with the further aid derived from the diversity of callings and classes.

General organisation of the Positive schools.

• The better to attain the grand object of the institution, it is urgent that the French nation, which is to bear the whole ex-

The School open to all the Western Nations.

pense, should use it to evidence the Occidental character of its action, by throwing it open within due limits to each of its immediate neighbours. During the whole of their existence, however, and it has a natural limit in the organic transition, the schools must not admit candidates from nations not included in the advanced guard of Humanity, a restriction intended to preserve the homogeneous character requisite for their success. But, as the instruction will always be public, the Eastern populations may be represented by out-pupils, most frequently volunteers, but at times specially nominated in accordance with the wishes of the government whose subjects they are.

All will be
able to uti-
lise their
final certi-
ficate.

There is no reason to fear that the want of a direct social mission will isolate the other pupils from the French, in such a way as to diminish energy and the continuity of exertions, from a disparity in zeal in two groups of invariably equal numbers. The non-existence of any monopoly places both on an equality of uncertainty in reference to their future career, any claims they may have being derived exclusively from an education and a reputation which they share in common. As the particular grounds on which the encyclopædic institution rests for its justification are of universal application, the pupils from the other Western nations, admitted, educated, and judged in the same way as the French, will turn to as good purpose as these last their final diploma.

The lan-
guages to
be learnt.

To give freer play to the intellectual and moral influences of such intermixture of the nations, the French candidates are to know two Western languages, one Southern, the other Northern, and all the pupils will be bound to acquire by their own efforts, during their noviciate of three years, the Western languages they do not know. This regulation includes also the two sources of Western unity, as a consequence of the obligation to bring with them a knowledge of Latin and to acquire that of Greek. By putting the heavier pressure on the nation, which least recognises the common duty, to make it learn the languages of its neighbours, the law will be a wholesome stimulus to it to promote the formation of one universal language, a process at once spontaneous and systematic.

A school in
each of the
17 govern-
ments.

Considering the nature and aim of the Positive school, its normal type must be established at Paris, a hundred French candidates being annually admitted, with twenty-five from each of the other populations, Italian, Spanish, British and German.

At no great interval, however, the central dictatorial government should form a similar school in each provincial capital, with half the above numbers, but in all cases with a total of the Western pupils equal to the total of the French. The permanent need of unity of direction and of discipline in these seventeen nurseries will naturally induce the executive power to entrust their government and the choice of all their functionaries to the head of the Positive priesthood, alone competent to the task. The first recognition by the State of the High Priest of Humanity will consequently be in his quality of Director-General of the Positive schools. By discharging the office gratuitously, he will maintain the independence which his nomination to this post implies and facilitates, not letting himself be drawn by any seduction to depend for his subsistence on aught but the voluntary contributions of the true believers.

I may here dispense with any explanations as to the encyclopædic teaching, the only difference between the transitional and the final state, in regard to it, being the reduction of the noviciate to three years, each year devoted to one of the three pairs of abstract sciences. The last year alone will have three courses of lectures, the object being that Biology and Sociology may lead up to and end in Morals, first as science, then as art. Each of the seven courses, which are always in succession, never simultaneous, will consist, as in the normal state, of forty lectures, three a week, with a month for preparation and examination between the two subjects of each year, so as to leave three months' vacation after devoting ten weeks to the final examinations. But in the last year it will be necessary to have four lectures in the week, and to suppress the usual interval, for which there is not the same necessity, as the period of leaving is at hand. In regard to the first pair of sciences, the exceptional duplication of lectures is not necessary, owing to the knowledge previously acquired by the candidates, who are bound to know all the theories of geometry and mechanics which are fairly independent of the transcendental calculus. The better to ensure the synthetical character of the teaching, the courses of lectures, which begin each year after the festival of Humanity, will be preceded, in the case of the new students, by seven lectures on the First Philosophy. The great guarantee, however, that the teaching will not degenerate into mere academical pedantry, will, as in the normal state, be the obli-

Course of
study.

gation on each professor to take the same pupils through the seven phases of their noviciate.

The Professors.

The professors by this arrangement being reduced to three, provision may be made for their choice, at the very beginning of the organic transition, by watching the essays at philosophical instruction of the people which will follow quite naturally on the abolition of the theoretical budget. If, against all probability, professors of a really encyclopædic capacity are not thrown up in this way, even for Paris, during the second phase, the Pontiff would urge the dictator to adjourn the creation of the school till such time as this fundamental condition were satisfactorily met. On its fulfilment must mainly depend the extension of the Positive schools to the several provinces, by availing ourselves of the best products of the central school.

The examinations, by whom conducted.

As the teaching will occupy less time during the first two years, the professors of those two years will divide between them the examinations of those who are leaving, examinations on the three courses of the last year and, besides this, on the whole of their preceding studies, to be conducted with the same publicity as the lectures. But the examinations at the end of each of the two first years, and all the intermediate examinations, at which all pupils and the public will always be allowed to be present, require two special functionaries, each of the two examining the same pupils both years. Besides these examiners, to ensure success in study and to superintend the moral conduct, there must be two inspectors, on whom devolves the duty of questioning in public the three divisions, once a week, on the lectures of the preceding months, including the knowledge they brought with them at their admission, which is now revised from a philosophical point of view. Every Positive School, then, will require only seven scientific teachers, appointed as elsewhere by competition, seniority, and selection, with the salaries of three thousand, six thousand, and twelve thousand francs per annum—the scale of the priesthood. All must reside within the establishment, for the better performance of their office, as much a moral as an intellectual office, and the better to deserve the personal respect which their functions exact. No one of them may have any employment besides his post in the establishment, not even the two inspectors, when once definitively installed after three years of probation. It is desirable to introduce also, during the transition, the same

conditions of age as for the Positivist clergy, conferring the three degrees in teaching at twenty-eight, thirty-five, and forty-two, with individual exceptions, rarer at this time than in the final state.

The schools are, in the main, schools for scientific teaching, yet it is essential to persevere in the esthetic culture of the period before admission; for at their admission the candidates will have given proof of sufficient familiarity with singing and drawing. For these two arts a master from without will be required, with an income of nine thousand francs and the obligation to have no other engagement. These functionaries will have to direct and judge the graduated exercises, both active and passive, in the three divisions, the music master in winter, the drawing master in summer; and besides this, their main duty will consist in giving one weekly lecture to each group throughout the duration of the scientific lectures. The teaching on these subjects may be made more philosophical in character than any other, as it may introduce the study, both historically and dogmatically, of the language of music and the plastic arts. It will cultivate the sense of unity, statical and dynamical unity, by showing the dependence of the special arts of sound and of form on their common source in poetry, so tempering wisely by idealisation the intrinsic dryness of scientific abstraction.

Lessons
in art.

To secure the full efficiency, intellectual and social, of the Positive schools, it is most important that the admission of candidates be so managed as that every guarantee be taken against the waste of the very considerable funds they will require, when established on a scale in accordance with the wants of the transitional period. Though the gratuitousness which is inseparable from the encyclopædic instruction must, in the normal state, apply in all cases whatsoever, yet here, efforts, made at proportionately greater cost, will, at first, be limited to such as are capable of actively promoting the systematic regeneration of the West. There must therefore be a careful selection of them from all ranks in the five advanced populations, and the selection must be made by seven officers appointed for the purpose, they too named by the director-general of the Positive schools, and each receiving an income of twelve thousand francs.

Instruction
gratuitous.
Care in the
admission of
candidates
most re-
quisite.

It must be their duty to give two successive judgments, the

Two successive tests, one of admissibility, the other for admission.

one of admissibility, the other for admission, the first in the spring, the second in the autumn. For the first, the French candidate has simply to repair to the capital of his province, the candidates of the other Western nations to Rome, Madrid, London, or Vienna, according to their country, European or colonial. After having divided amongst themselves the examination of Paris, the seven judges will take between them the four national capitals and the sixteen provincial capitals in order to pronounce on the admissibility of candidates, the tests being first a written, then an oral, examination in science, combined with exercises in art and testimonials of moral conduct. They will reject without examination candidates after three failures, so avoiding, as far as possible, useless attempts and ill-considered efforts. The provisional candidates so chosen will repair to Paris, at the expense of the French nation, there to undergo the examination for admission, three months after they have been declared admissible. The seven judges will divide this examination between them, each classifying the candidates he examines only so far as is necessary for the final decision, thus avoiding all mischievous emulation. On the termination of their several decisions, the seven will meet to complete their work, by naming the particular school out of the seventeen, which each of the candidates chosen is to join, in order to begin, at the winter solstice, his encyclopædic education.

Cost of these schools.

It were well to place the preceding scheme before us as a whole, by summarising the extent of the organisation I have explained, and its cost. Each Positive school requires only eleven officers; two being practical: the governor invested with the general control of the whole; the steward on whom rest the business arrangements. If we assign these two, incomes of twenty thousand and eight thousand francs, we see, on reference to the other salaries, that a hundred thousand francs yearly suffice for the officials of each establishment, allowing a satisfactory payment to each. Estimating the annual expense of each scholar at a thousand francs, the seventeen schools together, at their full complement of five thousand students, will cost seven millions of francs (280,000*l.*) and require two hundred functionaries, including the judges of admission. Such is the cost of an institution which is to supply, each year, for the different services in France nine hundred well-trained members, and distributes the same

number of rightly cultivated minds among the four adjacent nations, at an expense for each noviciate of four thousand francs.

The professional complement of the institution should in all cases be practice, under the superintendence of the chief concerned, not requiring from him any teaching properly so called. This rule must apply even in the case of the medical body, in reference to which all who appreciate the above institution will not regret the existing schools, hopelessly deteriorated, even in France, by ontology or materialism. Doctors may be formed everywhere, as they are in England, by practice well directed, especially when they have duly passed through the encyclopædic curriculum, and no other at the present day deserves the protection of the government, given with a view to the creation of the definitive order.

Special professional training.

For such a preparation hospitals may be quite dispensed with; yet as the institution is to subsist till the end of the Western transition, we must turn to use its latest form, by connecting it with the professional training in medicine of those who adopt that profession after their systematic education. The pupils of the Positive schools who aspire to be physicians will form pairs, each pair receiving, during three years, clinical instruction from one of the four physicians of the second grade attached to the hospital. An allowance of fifteen hundred francs yearly will provide for the maintenance of the candidate during this noviciate, at the end of which his position must depend on the open competition by which he is to enter the public health service.

The hospitals may be utilised for clinical instruction.

His practical studies during the above period will be systematised chiefly by the reflections suggested by well-directed reading, under the general impulse of the theories of Biology. But, as an aid, he will have the explanations regularly given by the three other functionaries of the hospital. During his first year of clinical teaching, one of the two ordinary physicians will treat, once a week, of the diseases of organic life, in a series of forty lectures methodically arranged. Similarly, his colleague will examine, in the following year, the diseases of animal life properly so called. On the basis of these two series, the senior physician will devote the last year to the explanation of brain diseases and general pathology.

Practical studies.

I am thus brought to the last point in the complete appreciation of the Positive school, the description, that is, of the

The Hospital.

latest form of this provisional institution, the hospital, an institution which, wisely reorganised, may do good service, prior to the adoption of the normal practice towards which it is to be a step. Seven physicians carefully chosen, and above money considerations, will be devoted exclusively to the hospital, each treating forty cases in addition to the gratuitous advice given weekly by the physicians of the second grade to out-patients. The direction is to centre wholly in the principal physician, his residence and his office being on the ground floor, whilst his six assistants occupy an adjoining house. The hospital will be in three storeys, each storey with seven wards, with no communication between the wards except by a common corridor, spacious enough to serve as a walk for the convalescents who are unable to go down into the garden. Each ward is to be broken up into thirteen rooms by fixed partitions, with a window for each of the thirteen.

The sanitary service under the Director-General of the Positive Schools.

The chief town of each province (or intendancy) will have three hospitals thus arranged, so providing for the separate treatment of the sexes, and of children and old men. The department of public health will be placed, for the whole of France, under the control of the Director-General of the Positive schools, with complete independence of the government, except as to the expenses. This extension of the prerogative he enjoys in regard to instruction will betoken the ultimate position of the medical function as an appendage to the priesthood of Humanity.

Post mortem examinations.

By such a regime, the principal abuses now existing are set aside at once, more particularly post-mortem examinations, in regard to which in the present anarchical state of Western Europe unworthy advantage is taken of the poverty of the proletariat. The dissection of the human body, a practice coeval with the modern revolution, ought by this time to have done its work of preparation. But, if five centuries of ill-directed efforts are not sufficient, Positivism will enforce an universal respect for the dignity of the poor, which Catholicism in its decline was unable to protect. In the hospital, as elsewhere, none will be subject to the outrage of an autopsy without his own free consent, ratified subsequently by his family. Physicians must have but a feeble conviction of the necessity of such examination, for those who most loudly advocate it seldom direct their own bodies to be submitted to it.

Among the physicians supplied by the Positive school, the normal feeling on the subject will soon spring up, under the influence of the habits formed by their encyclopædic education, an education in which the rational use of induction and deduction will dispense with observations as irrational as they are immoral. I congratulate myself on having gone through all my studies in Biology without ever lowering my dignity as a philosopher by shedding the blood of man, or even of any animal. The condition will involve less difficulty for those who henceforward will be taught systematically what I was obliged to teach myself.

A better education will supersede their necessity.

It were superfluous here to examine in equal detail the other public careers for which the Positive school will supply qualified occupants. The professional noviciate required for each will be equally achievable in three years, on a system of preparation analogous to the one given in the case of the medical profession. By open competition, the aspirant, after completing his education, will find himself everywhere in possession of a noble function, by the munificence of the French nation, on reaching the normal age for the sacrament of Destination, and he will present himself of his own accord to receive that sacrament from the new clergy which is forming.

The other careers.

To complete our examination of the influence of Positivism as a system of doctrine, during the second phase of the organic transition, it remains to place before the reader three special institutions, one technical in its character, the second scientific, the third esthetical.

Three special institutions.

I made an exception above in favour of veterinary schools, exempting them from the suppression which, by the abolition of the scientific budget, will be the fate of all the provisional establishments thrown up, in France more than elsewhere, during the latest stage of the revolution of the West. These veterinary schools may, in fact, promote not only the regeneration of the common instruction; but the adoption of the normal habits, if reorganised on system and so connected with the Positive school, the model on which they will be formed. Each provincial capital will have a veterinary institute with three professors, always in relation with the same pupils, and teaching them, in three years, the treatment, first of the carnivores, secondly of the herbivores, lastly of the ruminants. After having thus dealt with all the mammalia

(a) Technical, Veterinary School.

which are useful to man,—the dog, the horse, and the ox being taken as types,—the final course of lectures should complete the subject by treating on a similar plan the whole remainder of the animal kingdom. It will pay special attention to the birds susceptible of domestication, then to the other useful vertebrates, followed by some invertebrates, nor should the lecturer fail to include in his teaching the pathology of the commoner vegetables. Such a course of instruction, at once practical and theoretical, requires, in this case too, the seclusion of the pupils, which is further justified by the need there is to form in them the normal state of feeling as regards the auxiliary races. Under the influence of the true religion, the three professors will have but little difficulty in implanting the sense of the nobility of a career directly consecrated to the furtherance of the most important branch of human policy, that in which the Great Being presides over the everduring coalition of living powers against death.

Regime of
the School.

To reap the full benefit of these institutions, they must be maintained on a large scale and with a sound organisation during the whole course of their temporary existence, co-extensive with that of the Positive schools. Each receives annually fifty candidates, chosen by the three professors after a scientific examination, only dispensed with where the candidate has passed satisfactorily through the encyclopædic schools. Their internal arrangements, in all essential points identical with those of these latter, should be such as to ensure a successful result, and require consequently seven functionaries for teaching, besides the governor and the administrator. The three grades in the hierarchy of teachers should have the same salaries as the corresponding ones in the Positive school and the normal hospital, the veterinary institute being a combination of both types. Again, it is important, here also, to place the whole of these establishments under the direction of the High Priest of Humanity, thus more clearly indicating and more fully carrying out their great object, intellectually as well as socially. His presiding influence will ensure in the school a constant respect for the dignity of life, even in the lowest auxiliaries of the Great Being, and will train the minds of the class best adapted for the sound propagation of Positivism among the proletaries, by even at this point placing the veterinaries in connection with the engineers. These are the conditions

which will strongly incline the dictatorial government, in its progressive stage, to consolidate the institution, by the creation of state appointments for the separate treatment of the useful animals, posts analogous to those occupied by the normal physicians, and the holders chosen, as they are, by open competition.

In the second place, the suppression of the chairs of literature, and literary corporations, involves an analogous attention to philological studies during the whole course of the organic transition. That there may be a systematic furtherance of the spontaneous process in the formation of an universal language, the dictator ought to devolve on the pontiff the superintendence of a special school of Philology, for which an institution at Paris will suffice. Three professors will, in three years, bring under the notice of non-resident pupils, attached in all cases to the same professor throughout their course, first the Fetichist languages, then the Polytheistic, lastly the Monotheistic, the prominent characteristics of which are, respectively, feeling, imagination, and reason. The conditions of admission should be, a sufficient knowledge of the seven Western languages, already familiar to the students drawn from the Positive school. As in such studies it is judicious practice, rather than teaching, to which we should look, the public course of lectures is, for each year, reduced to forty, in as many weeks; the great aim of the professor being to set forth clearly the step by step introduction of the universal language. Still, the three functionaries deserve incomes of twelve thousand francs, as being also directors of the central library, the library with which we begin the process of weeding out the accumulations of literature, which have already become of more harm than use. As destined, above all, to aid in the elaboration of the Positive language, and to this end modifying the most poetical of existing languages by the most philosophical, without neglecting any of the influences of the past, the philological school will help forward the organic transition by facilitating the transformation of diplomatists into missionaries.

(b) Scientific.

Thirdly and lastly I have to treat of the Western Theatre, to be established on such principles, as that, throughout the period of reorganisation, it may throw a lustre on the last days of an institution suited exclusively to the modern anarchy.

(c) Esthetic.
The Theatre.

Its developement, equally as a public and a private institution, during the last phase of the Western revolution, is a strong proof of the powerlessness of Catholicism, in its decline, to curb the revolutionary spirit, its most justifiable censures stimulating rather than conquering that spirit. It is for Positivism finally to suppress the theatre, as an institution at once irrational and immoral; and it will do so by reorganising the common education, and by founding, by Sociolatry, a system of festivals calculated to bring unprofitable satisfactions into contempt. Since reading has become so general that all can enjoy by themselves the master works of dramatic literature, the protection given to theatrical representations is solely an encouragement to mediocrity, and the factitious support in no way conceals the fact of their instinctive abandonment. For musical compositions alone would a public representation remain indispensable, were it not that the Positive worship, in a higher degree than in the Middle Ages and in Antiquity, offered a legitimate sphere for musical genius by incorporating it with the priesthood.

Constitution
of the
theatre.

Nevertheless, during the last generation of this exceptional century, theatrical representations, under due regulation, may promote the advent of the universal education and of the normal form of existence. The repertory of each of the five Western nations supplies a sufficient number of masterpieces, dramatic or musical, to allow of one performance a week throughout the year, without ever condescending to secondary works and without a too frequent recurrence of the great works. The order in the week, in accordance with the classification of Sociology, will familiarize all Western Europe with the more eminent productions of the French nation and of its four sister nations, the Italian, the Spanish, the British and the German. In the capital of each intendancy, the Western theatre will bring together, five times a week, all classes, to enjoy gratuitously the great dramatic productions, not more than two representations of each to be given in the course of the year. In withdrawing its other grants, the dictatorial government will act on the rich to induce them not to shrink, from pride, from mingling with the poor, for we must not concentrate on the poor the higher pleasures any more than the higher studies. Acting in concert with the Positive schools, the Western theatres will everywhere be an assistance in spreading the kindred languages, in

fostering national sympathies, and in extinguishing national prejudices. They too are under the direction of the Pontiff of Humanity, and will confirm the teaching of the worship as to the character of the Positive priesthood, that it is poetical no less than philosophical, and as such it will soon be called upon, in regard to the public museums, to take the place of oppressive or useless regulations.

Such is the system of provisional institutions, representing the influence of Positivism, as a body of doctrine, during the second phase of the organic transition, when the dictatorial government has taken a progressive attitude but without ceasing to be sceptical. If we combine this its spiritual influence with the practical measures by which I signalized the opening of the intermediate phase, we can appreciate the remarkable modification introduced into the situation of the West, so far as concerns the nation invested with the initiative of regeneration. On the other hand, if we compare this double series of improvements with the picture of the normal state, we feel to what an extent the final transition, in the second phase, still falls short of a really constructive character, a character exclusively reserved for its final phase.

During the two first, the adoption respectively of the two mottoes,—the political and the moral—characteristic of the Western Republic, is equivalent rather to the statement of an appropriate programme than to a satisfactory solution. The first is the expression of the fundamental combination which is to close the revolution; the other points out the necessary source of this combination, but cannot effect it. Were this the permanent state, the only result of the two formulæ would be a more vivid sense of the indispensable conditions, not the supplying the leading deficiencies. In a word, the French people would continue to oscillate between anarchy and reaction, as it has done since the opening of the present century. In contradiction with the spirit of the new mottoes, the attitude of the dictatorship would be a constant source of uneasiness to the people by its excessive attention to order, of alarm to the patricians by its aspirations after progress.

Whether it remain hypocritical or become liberal, scepticism is ever unable to construct. In spite of the universal desire to eliminate all caprice, that of the people and that of God equally, law can only take the place of will, under the condition of a

Yet the second phase is not, any more than the first, truly organic.

The adoption successively of the two mottoes offers a programme rather than a solution.

Scepticism can construct nothing.

perpetual invocation of Humanity. Both principles, that of anarchy and of retrogression, will continue to coexist so long as the transition has not taken an essentially religious character, if not in the less advanced mass of mankind, at any rate in all the more chosen spirits.

The general
insufficiency
of the two
first phases
shown in ex-
amination.

An examination in detail of the two first phases, first from the temporal then from the spiritual point of view, confirms the conviction of their defectiveness. By the suppression of the theoretic budget and the standing army, it would seem that the French nation was moving towards the American type, the most prominent representative of the anarchy of the West. The spiritual movement is less incomplete, as not essentially persisting in mere negation, still it is indecisive owing to a deficiency of system in its advance. The developement of the Positive worship under the first phase, by the aid of the historical calendar, wants the full religious character, as its public festivals, even when abstract, have not private worship for their basis. In the intermediate phase, the institution of Positive schools and their various adjuncts does not represent a direct reorganisation of the common education, though indirectly it may be a preparation for this regeneration by renovating the leading professions.

The moral
must pre-
cede the
political
renovation.

A revolution which, in all its main features, is intellectual, would seem, by the nature of the case, destined to indefinite prolongation, so long as it is not avowedly under the guidance of that theory to which the whole of the past promises success. Till such time as the central dictatorship adopt the religion of Positivism, an internal conflict of principles, and indecision, will continue to be the characteristic of our Western movement. All parties equally will continue to misjudge the nature of the modern revolution; they will only agree in adopting a political treatment for a disease which is spiritual. The revolutionary party, in especial, is liable to this reproach, for, instead of seeing in the effeteness of their own doctrines a reason for embracing Positivism, it leads them to aim directly at a political reconstruction, and subordinate to that aim the moral regeneration which should preside over such reconstruction. The retrograde party is less behindhand, for it recognizes the spiritual anarchy; but it too is in a false position, owing to the weakness of its doctrine, which inclines them to base the reconstruction of belief upon compression by force.

The point, then, to which I have brought the final transition is this: that in its leading features the actual situation remains unchanged, though many valuable if insufficient improvements have been introduced. Hence it is evident that the last generation of the exceptional century can be truly organic only in its third phase, the period which I have now to examine.

Third
Phase.

The great distinction between it and the two others is, that in it the dictator professes Positivism, not merely respects it or assists it. Though the milieu continue sceptical, the government, without infringing liberty, avowedly moves towards the universal ascendancy of the religion of Humanity; consequently the regime of that religion is placed on the same footing of supremacy as its doctrine and its worship. A doctrine, the essential characteristic of which is its applicability to the government of society, cannot excite strong and effective sympathies when men shrink from applying it directly to its principal destination, whilst all the time they admit the danger or the futility of the other beliefs. If then a really organic character is to attach to the direction of affairs in the West, there must be no other discrepancy in the provisional attitude of the government, but that between its religious avowance and the sceptical state of the public. This should be the distinctive character of the phase which I am now to organise, one of longer duration than the two others together, as destined to issue in the definitive order. For the sake of precision, I venture to express the comparison in a numerical form; assigning seven years to the first stage of the organic transition, five to the second, twenty-one to the third. It is in this way that the philosophy of history, after beginning with the explanation of centuries, and then passing to generations, in its latest development, under the impulse of a practical need, ends by demarcating the three ages of one exceptional generation.

The govern-
ment be-
comes Posi-
tivist, the
governed
remaining
sceptical.

The peculiar mark of the last phase of the organic transition should be found in the definitive substitution of a triumvirate acting on system for the empirical and sceptical dictator who was the natural director of the two others. The primary object of so necessary a change is to instil, even at this early period, a presentiment as to what should be the normal form of the temporal government, as explained in the preceding chapter. The three chiefs of the Preparatory Government cannot, it is true, as yet, wear the definitive character ulteriorly attaching to the

The system-
atic Trium-
virate.

sociocratic dictatorship, but they should approach it as nearly as is possible in so provisional a position of affairs. Their plurality following a monocracy,—in its earlier stage a conservative, in its later a progressive, monocracy—this of itself announces that the temporal power must of necessity be divided. The capital importance of this indication is enhanced by the contrast naturally presented by the spiritual authority ; for this latter, long concentrated in the founder of the Religion of Humanity, will perhaps not be upheld by a competent clergy till towards the middle of the period under consideration.

It affords a guarantee that the government will be purely practical.

But besides this legitimate reason for the change, the accession to power of the Positivist triumvirate will be a consequence of an exceptional requirement, which admits of no hesitation. Whilst taking the place of the monarchy, the central dictatorship retains, since the outbreak of the ultimate crisis, the confusion of the two powers which has been on the increase during the whole course of the Western revolution. Usurpation of the functions of the spiritual by the temporal power,—be it in the name of revolution or of reaction—perpetuates both alike, and is a direct rejection of the fundamental principle of modern civilization. Now, it is in the substitution of the triumvirate for the dictator that lies the only decisive guarantee of the purely temporal character which the government has been induced to assume during the two preliminary phases of the organic transition. Antecedents and prejudices—both equally being adverse to the renunciation by the temporal power of spiritual authority, such renunciation will always remain incomplete or precarious, so long as it has it in its power to revoke a concession which, by the nature of the case, must at first be a purely voluntary act. Another Frederic might, for a time, by his attitude, be a security against this particular danger, but there would be nothing to preclude its opposite, the more dangerous usurpation involved in the attempt to secure by law the ascendancy of the Positive religion, without waiting for the conversion of the milieu. Error, in this direction, an error in which instinct and system concur, is the more serious, in that, so long as the government of the French nation is vested in a single chief, it is the High Priest of Humanity who more than any one would seem to be deserving of so high an office.

The directing power once finally divided, the two opposite

forms of usurpation become both equally impossible. Spiritual authority is, by virtue of its synthetical character, incompatible with a plurality of organs, notwithstanding the precedents of councils and academies, ever revolutionary if not completely subordinate. It is on this ground that the spiritual head can no more accept a fragment of empire than the industrial chiefs can absorb the function of consultation, a function always indivisible, as requiring a grasp of the whole, such as no committee can have.

Encroachments of the two powers on one another ended by the division of the temporal.

The division of the temporal power finds, then, its justification, in reference to internal government, in the combined demands of order and progress; whilst, in reference to external affairs, it offers a satisfactory guarantee for the maintenance of peace in Western Europe. Not to dwell on the deviation into militarism which marked the opening of the nineteenth century, the West could not, without grave disquietude, see the dictatorship in France remain monocratic in form, when once its progressive attitude had conferred on it a real popularity. In the absence of an aristocracy strong enough to prevent the misdirection of so great a power, the adjacent nations would justly feel alarmed, and the personal character of the ruler would be unable entirely to dissipate such alarm. Whereas, on the contrary, the non-existence of such an aristocracy becomes a security for tranquillity when a triumvirate is in power, for such a government, however great its popularity, must always lack the consistency and the continuity inherent in the policy of a senate. The three rulers of France, if convergent, would be so only by virtue of their common adhesion to the Positive faith, and this faith prescribes respect for the independence of the West quite as much as respect for spiritual liberty, both in the name of their social mission.

The division a guarantee of peace in the West.

We see thus, how the installation of a triumvirate in France is an announcement and a guarantee of the political supremacy of Positivism at the opening of the last phase of the organic transition. Had the three leaders not openly embraced the religion of Humanity, their quarrels would involve France in disorder, perhaps in bloodshed; or, as an alternative, the division of power would be a delusion. On the other hand, the division ensures the independence of the Positivist priesthood, and proclaims the decided superiority of the moral movement over political agitation. It is in this way that the organic

The triumvirate guarantees the political ascendancy of Positivism and the independence of the Priesthood.

transition will move forwards to its normal result, putting forward most unmistakeably the religious character of the Western revolution, hitherto masked by social contests, as well at home as abroad. The form of government, then, adapted to the ultimate state is also the one best suited to the provisional, so that the passage from the one to the other may be in a true sense gradual, in accordance with the basic law of continuity both in thought and action.

The dictator
propose
moving to
state the
triumphing

As it is the special mission of Positivism to secure the fuller triumph of this law, it will protect it against any infringement when once it has the direction of the social movement. A fitting opportunity for its exemplification is the passage,—a step so momentous,—from the monocratic dictatorship to the systematic triumvirate, the installation of which is incompatible with all violence, as contrary to its organic mission. In a sceptical milieu, a milieu if not hostile, at least indifferent, to the regenerating faith, we may not conceive of the change as wrought other than by the voluntary initiative of the dictator, when alive to its necessity. Since he has already changed so far as to become, and that sincerely, progressive, there is no reason why he should not, without being completely Positivist, so far correctly estimate the general conditions of the phase which has for its immediate object the terminating the Western revolution. If he have the will, the dictator has nothing to do but to use his plenary power to introduce, in due form this indispensable change, thus earning an undying glory, and escaping the blame which attaches to all fruitless resistance to the laws of Humanity.

The change
effected by
modifying
the minister-
ial system.

The transformation should be peacefully effected through a last modification of the ministerial system, an institution dating from the second phase of the modern revolutionary movement, when the monarchy, especially in France, lost its power to wield the dictatorship it had recently obtained. The royal initiative became more and more limited to the choice or dismissal of the leading men—by the force of our statement more than one—between whom were divided the office of government, in accordance with the difference in the services required. Such a distribution of power is involved in the activity of modern times by its nature, which is essentially analytical; and it acted as a natural guarantee of the division of the two powers, allowing, as it did, political unity only as a result of a common

doctrine, the representative of which doctrine was an official dictator. Since the outbreak of the French revolution, the dangers have been such as always to call for one central will, and the definitive submission of parliamentary anarchy to that will. But such condensation of power, necessary as it is at present for the maintenance of order, has no real justification but in the weakness of the prevailing doctrine, which can only supply formulæ, not suggestions for our guidance. The power of Positivism to direct society once adequately recognised, it will be seen that a demonstrable faith constitutes, between the several political chiefs, a more complete and stable bond than that offered by one paramount will, ever liable as it is to vacillation as a natural result of its scepticism. Under these conditions the provisional institution of ministers will merge its functions in the systematic triumvirate, which it substitutes, by a peaceful process, for an empirical dictator.

A common doctrine as the basis of common political action,—the necessity of this, if more pronounced in the normal state, holds primarily for all the phases of the preliminary regime, not merely under the Theocracy, but also after the developement of military activity. War is by its very synthetic in character, and yet it was not war but religion that was, at all times, the bond of union with the Roman patriciate, and the imperial dictatorship inherited it. Under this aspect Theologism and Positivism differ only, in that the first allows the temporal chiefs to be the representatives of the directing synthesis, whilst the second confines this function exclusively to the spiritual chiefs. Therefore it is that the temporal dictatorship, if it remain monocratic, must continue to be retrograde; it will aim, that is, at spiritual authority, and it can only apply for such to the older faith. If it assume a progressive character by renouncing this futile claim, then its natural policy is to complete the change by raising its ministers into governors proper, so to avouch quite openly their practical or industrial character, the natural corrective of previous aberrations.

Still it must be kept in mind that in modern times the constitution of the temporal power forbids excessive dispersion no less than an extreme condensation. The irreversible abolition of the parliamentary regime should have, as its proximate result, a diminution in the number of departments, the multiplication of which was solely due to a desire to offer more openings for

The necessity of a common doctrine as the base of political unity.

But the ministers must not be too numerous.

restless ambition. All need of such a concession being removed by the progressive attitude of the government, it will be felt that three ministers are all that it requires, each holding three of the present offices.

The three
ministers
required.

In effecting this concentration, with the view of facilitating the peaceful advent of the systematic triumvirate, it is desirable to pave the way, as far as possible, for the normal regime, by bringing into relief, even now, the industrial character of the temporal government as finally constituted. The three ministers who are to survive should share amongst them the departments of industry; the minister of the interior taking agriculture, the minister of finance manufacture, the minister of foreign affairs commerce. As, however, the sole object of this distribution at that time is to give, by anticipation, a juster idea of the normal constitution of the temporal power, it need involve no change in the names at present used; they will still be the best till the close of the organic transition.

Their con-
centration of
the existing
offices.

With the first ministry, the great distinctive attribution of which is the police, we must combine the actual department of justice, and that of public instruction, now confined, as we have seen, to the primary schools, except as regards the superintendence of private establishments. The second ministry will absorb the management of public works, a branch of administration which ought soon to become purely financial, when the suppression of all special corporations shall have led to a greater degree of freedom in their execution. Lastly, the third ministry will annex all the duties, military, naval, or colonial, which remain after the transformation of the army into a constabulary.

Such is the concentration of ministerial functions which will prepare the peaceful advent of the systematic triumvirate, when the progressive dictator shall be sufficiently amenable to the counsels of Positivism. He will make the change easier by giving his three ministers the title of governors, as more in accordance with their duties, and susceptible of indefinite continuance. After a sufficient trial of the ministers he has selected, he will inaugurate the latest phase of the organic transition transferring to them the dictatorial government of France, thus definitively vested not in one but in a number.

The change is such as to require that Positivism have so far modified its sceptical milieu, as to enable it to throw up

three statesmen in whom the supreme ruler may place entire confidence. Destined as they are to be the first holders of offices which will give them the power, allowing for exceptions, of choosing their successors, their own nomination can at first be due solely to the free suggestion of the pontiff of Humanity, who alone is competent to propose them to the noble dictator. This exceptional initiative, the first really decisive manifestation of the social power of the priesthood of Positivism, should, as much as possible, foreshadow the normal regime, by its conforming to the systematic distribution of the industrial functions. We may at present hope soon to find, among French bankers, a competent minister of foreign affairs. But as, for the ministry of the interior, it is not yet possible to comply with the normal conditions, we must place in it an agricultural patrician, one shown by his previous life to have the nobility of thought and feeling so important an office requires. For the direction of the finances, the most important branch of administration so long as the transition lasts, on the same principle we should seek for a minister amongst the manufacturing capitalists, were it not that their intellectual and moral state prescribes a serious modification. More than the others deteriorated by empiricism and egoism, ~~it~~ is seen by its more marked leaning to oppressive monopolies, the political incapacity of this class will compel the progressive dictator to choose one of their workmen to be entrusted with the most important department.

The High Priest will suggest their names.

This admission of a proletariat to a place in the systematic triumvirate is the only really great anomaly imposed on the preparatory government. But it has such solid justification in the conditions of the moment, that it should awaken no alarm in sincere and clear-sighted conservatives, not even if it were found desirable to extend it to the two other departments. As the classes which in the normal state are to govern, are at present, in heart and mind, unequal to such charge, our only resource is to find in personal merit a guarantee which social position does not as yet provide. Now, looking to the whole history of the past in modern times, it is amongst proletaries that are most likely to be found, in largest proportion, men really fitted for political power by their wide range of thought and their generosity of feeling. The whole difficulty lies in the bringing them forward acceptably, when, under the

This admission of a proletariat the only glaring anomaly in the preparatory government.

guidance of a truly organic doctrine, the dictator has made his selection. Their accession to power under these conditions, without any demagogic influences, can in no wise encourage the tendency to declassment, inasmuch as it is avowedly an anomaly made necessary by the transitional state of things. Suppose it definitive, and it would at once be seen to involve a contradiction; for plebeians, to become chiefs, must abandon the position to which they owe their intellectual and moral claims; whilst, in obtaining power, patricians are in keeping with themselves.

It will extinguish Demagogism and tend to regenerate the Patricians.

Over and above their individual value, the proletary ministers will bring to the preparatory government the aid of their class, at once from a negative and positive point of view. Their accession offers a powerful security against demagogues; for they, always sprung from the bourgeoisie and the literary bourgeoisie in particular, will thus find superiors in the very class on which their ambition leans for support. Not only will the people not assist them, it will place them in presence of invincible competitors, by putting in power the best organs of the proletariat, and, as such, qualified to throw discredit upon rhetoricians and sophists by the mere force of contrast. But the chief reaction of this anomaly is the assistance it gives in regenerating the patrician body; it will lead, that is, the capitalists to feel what are the intellectual and moral conditions of the power normally vested in their class. Instead of separating the proletariat from the patriciate, the temporary accession of the higher types of the working classes will bring the poor and rich into union, with the aim of eliminating the bourgeoisie, as the main seat of Western anarchy.

Personal recommendation of fit men.

Such is the peaceful process by which the preparatory government should be installed in France, at the opening of the last phase of the organic transition. For several years I have been working at the choice of persons, so to have it in my power duly to discharge my function of adviser, when the dictator shall be sensible of the value of philosophical suggestions, inherently free from all admixture of ambition. Applying to the judgment of persons principles tested in the estimate of events, I hope to find men able to obtain the confidence of the dictator and the public, and to find them amongst the practitioners whom Positivism has already regenerated. When

complete and definitive, I shall in due time announce my choice, in order that a careful examination may render easier and simpler their free acceptance. In the normal state the action of the Positive priesthood will be limited to the sanction of governors chosen by their predecessors ; during the transition it should turn to account the authority it derives from general assent, by proposing for inauguration those on whom it will devolve to name their successors.

Sociocratic continuity cannot as yet wholly supersede the principle of election, the substitute, and more completely so as time advanced, for the theocratic continuity. But it were well to nullify as much as possible this subversive practice, especially as regards the highest governors, whose duty it will be, subsequently, to choose at their discretion all the government functionaries. Though a triumvir cannot, on retirement, name unconditionally his successor, he may always propose him to the seventeen electors chosen by universal suffrage ; such suffrage in this case, as in that of the financial assembly, to be modified by delegation and publicity.

Not possible all at once to discontinue Election. It may be modified.

The citizens of Paris, grouped according to the provinces in which they were born, will name these seventeen special delegates, who will pronounce upon the choice proposed. If they accept the choice, the decision of the metropolis will be submitted to the provinces for ratification, the provinces being represented by the sixteen capitals, ten of which at least must confirm the decision by universal suffrage. If the choice is rejected, the triumvir will be bound to submit a second name to the same electors, who will only take the initiative in case of a second rejection.

Mode of Election.

Any arbitrary limit of time is out of place, where the power rests upon confidence and is guaranteed by responsibility. Yet there must always be some means of removing, peacefully, unworthy governors, supposing them to take no account of just blame, and so not to withdraw when they should. To reconcile the two wants, the electoral system just described may be brought into play for a judgment on the successor of the governor to be removed, such successor to be named by the industrial capitalist with whom originates the accusation, an accusation approved by nineteen other Parisian capitalists. To avoid haste and passion, the nomination, always with the statement of some definite grievances and with the signatures of its twenty

The offices to be held on good behaviour.

supporters—must not be legally valid till it has been twice placarded, at three months' interval. The discussion before the vote, and the possibility that the triumvir attacked may be continued in office, will as a general rule lead either to the withdrawal of an accusation which is the subject of general blame, or to the seasonable retirement from office of the person incriminated.

Two amend-
ments in the
programme
of 1848.
Their
origin.

I must here pause a moment in my exposition of the Preparatory Government, in order to preserve the memory of two incidents, of a nature to strengthen our just confidence in the popular instinct when not misled by metaphysical influences. My original conception in 1848 on the mode of eliminating mischievous governors, involved, in spite of myself, larger concessions to revolutionary prejudices than the one here given. However I was soon able to act on my natural instinct, thanks to the noble wisdom of two proletaries, worthy associates of mine in the Positivist Society, before which I laid the whole conception of the organic transition. The capital amendment, the rejection, that is to say, of any purely negative blame, the compelling the accuser to offer a substitute, came from the plebeian statesman to whom Positivism owes the luminous aphorism: *Work can never be wanting*. Another workman subsequently struck out, with equal originality and modesty, the happy idea of confining the power of legal accusation to the capitalist class.

Not only the
triumvirs
but all really
political
function-
aries to be
Positivists.

As the last point in estimating the degree of social ascendancy attained by Positivism, if it is to be competent to establish aright the Preparatory Government, the obligation to adopt the system as a whole must be limited to those offices which are of a strictly political character. Were the triumvirs alone adherents of the regenerative faith, their ordinary action would be hampered by the indifference or hostility of their chief subordinates; even supposing these last to be simply sceptical. But it is as unnecessary as it is impracticable to go further, and require the conversion of such agents as are strictly administrative, for they are always predisposed to propagate the impulse they receive, and which is independent of them. The only preference of such agents, as a body, for the Positivist dictatorship will be due to their sense of greater security in their offices, with a more honourable service. Then, their just promotion will not be stopped by the reservation of the higher administrative posts.

for political adventurers, thrown up by parliamentary anarchy or servile obsequiousness to a dynasty.

Reduced to the utmost, the obligation of complete adhesion to the prevailing doctrine may be confined to the two services, foreign and domestic, which are in immediate dependence on the triumvirate. If the nine ambassadors and the seventeen intendants are true Positivists, their aid will suffice for the Preparatory Government to organize on a proper footing its administrative services, whatever the belief of its agents, assuming them to be zealous and competent. The office of sub-prefect, nay even of prefect, stripped of its present semblance of political power, will be filled habitually by men chosen by the governors of their respective provinces from the class of special administrators.

Narrowest limits of this obligation.

So concentrated in twenty-nine statesmen, the political direction of France may really fall to Positivism at the period above assigned, at the beginning, that is, of the last phase of the organic transition. In the course of the twelve previous years, the Positivist doctrine ought to gain influence, to a degree which it would be difficult to estimate, prior to its making its way into the milieu most in consonance with its immediate destination, one mainly concerning the government of society. For it is they whom Positivism comes forward to rescue from the pressure which is the necessary consequence of their scepticism, now that the prevalent need of society is, definitively, reconstruction. In all the West, and in France above all, statesmen are obliged to court by turns, and at times together, revolution and reaction, because they have not the convictions which would enable them to triumph over both. It is to Positivism they will owe the full realization of what has hitherto been a barren though constant wish,—ever since the explosion of the French Revolution,—the combination of Order and Progress. Positivism alone can enable them to regain their personal self-respect and to give free play to their social action, as no longer compelled to appear to hold views in unison with the belated state of those whom it is their object to guide. Openly invested, in the name of Humanity, with the necessary power, they will appreciate, in the plenitude of public life, the holy aphorism suggested, naturally, by private life to her who is my eternal companion : *What pleasures can carry it over those of devotion to the welfare of others ?*

Through these 29 statesmen the Government becomes thoroughly Positivist.

Disgust at
the existing
scepticism.

Weary of a scepticism daily more and more at variance with the actual conditions of the West, minds of the higher order cherish in secret the aspiration of freeing themselves from its degrading and paralysing influence, in order to devote themselves, more than at any other time, to the regeneration of the race. But they cannot attain purity and elevation save under the guidance of the faith which claims to regulate the present in the name of the future as deduced from the past. The time is not distant when Positivism will have rallied to itself such men, so far as to enable them to obtain an honourable ascendancy, in a world where, from the absence of complete convictions, there can be no strong resistance to a systematic action.

On the conversion of the statesmen will cease the existing anomaly as to the practical virtues.

Then at once will disappear the anomaly which at present exists, the anomaly, namely, by which certain natures seem in exclusive possession of the practical virtues, especially energy and perseverance, the commonest of the attributes of man, since they are found in all the animals which are in any real sense active. The apparent rarity of these qualities is one of the most striking features of our modern anarchy, where the absence of convictions leads to irresolution. Its tendency to neutralize devotion and courage is seen most active in the highest natures, as they can find no fitting sphere except in public life, and public life has become, in the absence of a religion, the privileged appurtenance of vulgar ambitions. When the Positive faith shall raise and league together those who are born to command, it will be seen, more than ever, how superior are the qualities of the intellect, and still more of the heart, to those of the character, these latter being rarely absent when there is a welldefined and consistent purpose. So will disappear of itself the singular error now prevailing, of confounding energy with cruelty, an error due to our not having the opportunity of observing the full developement of energy in men capable of applying it, in the pursuit of great objects, with settled and complete convictions.

Three conclusive instances of the political success of a doctrine not depending on the number of its adherents.

Three successive instances, in the last hundred years, have given conclusive evidence that the tendency—and a growing tendency—of things in the West, is to give political supremacy, in France, to any doctrine, if even provisionally adapted to the mission of regeneration with which it is invested. Twenty years after the publication of the *Encyclopædia* the last holder

of the monarchical dictatorship confided the government of France to the Encyclopædists, socially represented by the Economists. At the opening of the final crisis, the Republicans were less numerous than the Positivists are now; notwithstanding, in four years they became masters, and that without any large increase of their numbers. Far from being due to the insurrection which manifested it, this consequence of the then situation of France would have been reached earlier, had the convulsion been prevented according to the hypothesis indicated at the end of my third volume. Lastly, when, on the reestablishment of peace in Europe, the necessity of combining Order with Progress was generally recognised, eclecticism, as apparently meeting the want, was dominant under various forms during the greater part of the Parliamentary generation, and that in spite of the fact that the number of Eclectics was small to a proverb.

(1) The Economists.
(2) The Republicans.

(3) The Eclectics.

This concurrence of examples is so much the more conclusive, in that, in all three cases, the doctrines, though the only ones then acceptable, could in no sense comply with the fundamental conditions. This being so, they strengthen our confident anticipations of the advent of Positivism to power, anticipations suggested by its peculiar competence to direct Society. The age in which any great thing seems hopeless, such is the intellectual and moral anarchy, this age promises those who labour worthily in the cause of the renovating Faith unparalleled satisfactions, as the aim we set before us is also without parallel.

Hence there is no fear as to the triumph of Positivism.

I have sufficiently treated the constitution, and the advent to power, of the Positivist triumvirate; and I may now describe its general course, on an examination, first, of its rule of conduct, then, of its most important measure.

General course of the Triumvirate.

In the last phase of the organic transition, the proximate termination of the Western revolution will be announced by raising, at its commencement, the normal standard, with all the emblems which accompany it, for the statement of which in detail I refer to the 'General View.' The two characteristic mottoes have, it is true, been already adopted; yet their adoption, one after the other, was the expression rather of a wish than of a principle, so long as the attitude of the dictatorial government could be but in imperfect unison with them. But when Positivism, after modifying the policy, succeeds in

(1) Its rule of conduct.

Vol. I. 311.

changing the form of the government, the two formulas take the character of a definitive programme, the triumph of which is shown in the change of colour; a change which, without any breach of continuity, disclaims all connection with revolution. At this juncture comes the third motto of the normal regime: *Live without concealment*, the complement of the other pair, as supplying the practical condensation of the system, the system, at once moral and political, which is now adopted finally and for ever. Meant more particularly for public life, this last symbol is peculiarly appropriate as the device for the French coins; this enunciation on them of the means dispensing with a statement of the principle and the result, between which it is the indispensable connection.

Appreciation of this third formula.

To see the full bearing of such a formula, we must keep in view, that its adoption by the government marks the rise of a systematic policy, otherwise the motto were but the announcement of a moral purpose, not of a political determination. Although the mediæval period nobly asserted it in private life, it was unable to extend it duly to public; this, in spite of the aspirations of Chivalry, continued to rest mainly upon mystery and intrigue. Without ignoring the evil feelings which had a share in this result, we are bound to assign as its principal ground, the impossibility of living openly when the future is dark and opinion uncertain. The device, then, is an indication of the decisive acceptance of a doctrine capable of giving systematic expression both to political previsions and to the public judgments. As this twofold systematization is the mark of the ultimate regeneration, its special announcement should be the formula appropriate to human activity, although it draws its greatest value as a symbol from its capacity of representing the symbols which relate to intellect and feeling.

Applicable to the spiritual domain, its chief value is in the temporal.

Sign and condition of synthesis in thought as of loyalty in action—the rule is as suitable for the Positive spirituality as for the pacific temporality. Prior to formulating it, I had always instinctively acted on it, from the very first steps I took, the better to prepare the minds of men for my conceptions, and to perfect those conceptions by the results of their statement, by their influence whether in connection with others or upon myself. I have never ceased to congratulate myself on the practice, though it has often exposed me, either to mistaken objections or to dishonest plagiarism. But its widest

application is in political action, for there the results are more definite and more immediate, and consequently, public discussion may be of greater assistance in the execution and correction of plans, or even in purifying motives. Hence it is, that the Positivist triumvirate will evidence the thoroughly organic character of the third phase of the final transition by its invariable habit of announcing all its measures in time to allow of their examination by all.

Two, three, or six months, according to the urgency and importance of the case,—these intervals have always appeared to me, on this head, to meet all fair-requirements. Adopting the judicious extension of the principle suggested by one of the most eminent of my theoretic disciples, these intervals must be observed as much for nominations and dismissals as for abstract resolutions, in order to give security to functionaries and to avoid intrigues. They are of sufficient length to enable the whole of the West, the colonies inclusive, to take part in the free expression of opinion to which the dictatorial government of France nobly appeals; the slightest actions of that government now being of importance to mankind as connected with its high mission. The triumvirs will thus be disencumbered of their legal advisers,—a source of embarrassment as of expense,—their administrative services being better discharged by a remodelled bureaucracy. But the practice must never be allowed to impair the independence of the governors or their responsibility, the groundwork of both being always a noble character. Not only is it open to them to act against the aggregate opinion, even supposing it unanimous, but, in case of need, they will not hesitate to decide without waiting for its expression, taking of course the risk of legal accusation to which such conduct exposes them. To ensure the fuller application of the Positivist rule, each triumvir will decide alone, on measures as on men, whenever his own department alone is concerned.

The solemn inauguration of this course of action will be the important proclamation, at the beginning of the last phase, of the chief measure of the Preparatory Government, viz., the political disgregation of France by the transformation of the intendancies into republics. Although this measure, as the outcome of the whole organic transition, must mark its conclusion, the prospective familiarity with it will be indicative

Application
of this rule
in detail.

(2) Its chief
measure.
The Intend-
ancies be-
come Re-
publics.

of the new human providence which judiciously modifies its destinies whilst consciously accepting them. Far from weakening the central dictatorship, such an announcement will strengthen its rational ascendancy, as supplying sounder reasons for the measures necessitated by this great transformation, the habitual prospect of which will be a guide to both government and people in the developement of the provisional regime.

A great triumph to effect it peaceably.

Such dismemberments have been frequent during the long course of the education of mankind, but never without giving rise to serious catastrophes, from the impossibility of clearly foreseeing and directing them. It must, then, be looked upon as a decisive triumph, both for the science and the art, of politics, this faculty of peaceably effecting the most important of all dismemberments, after a wise recognition of its necessity, in connection with the whole system of statical and dynamical laws which govern society in its normal state.

Necessity for such change.

In my second volume I satisfactorily established the fundamental principle, that for a free and lasting association the condition is the voluntary grouping of a certain number of towns, with their respective country districts, around a city which has risen to the rank of a capital. This law, one of whose importance the Middle Ages had a just sense, and without which the Country cannot link, in any true sense, the Family to Humanity, presides, in the preceding chapter, over the normal division of the Earth into Sociocracies on the scale of the French intendancies. All the reasons for such limitation in the ultimate state have greater validity at its introduction, from the time that the systematic developement of the religion of Humanity has removed the only justification of later anomalies. As a guarantee of order and of progress internally, the break up of the greater states ought in all cases to be welcomed, and in equal degree, by the priesthood which it emancipates, the patriciate which it raises, the proletariat for which it makes room. Externally, it ensures general peace by making invasion impossible, even before the other Western nations have acted on the example of France, for it is the concentration of France that alone is formidable and, as such, constitutes a special obligation on her to initiate the new policy. Her mission of regeneration ought to do away with all hesitation as to the measure, for her political decomposition becomes the basis of her religious presidency, the bequest of the whole past—especially the more recent

past. If we give the word *Catholicism* its etymological acceptation, applicable only to Positivism, the revolution of the West is simply the substitution of the Catholicism of Paris for that of Rome, when Paris shall be merely the spiritual capital of Humanity.

The Catholicism of Paris.

This holy city cannot even become the religious centre of the French territory, so long as it is not properly purified by renouncing its temporal domination, the retention of which would raise a fear lest there should be an oppressive combination of the two powers. Sadly as the grand result of the mediæval period has suffered from modern anarchy, Metaphysics have yet never been able to prevent the general instinct from feeling the growing opportuneness of the division of the two powers, as more in harmony with our existence than with that of our ancestors. And in the alarm lest it be set aside we have the latent source of the instinctive antipathies, nay even of the idle jealousies, often felt by the provinces of France in regard to the spiritual leadership of Paris; they feel themselves threatened with an indefinite consecration of the political tyranny by which they are at present hampered.

Paris must renounce temporal domination.

It is, then, for the most centralised nation, in the name of its human mission, to set a decisive example of a peaceful decomposition, an example which will soon find imitators everywhere, were it only as a consequence of the catastrophes caused elsewhere by obstinate adherence to routine. Not passing, here, beyond the limits of the West, I point to American independence as having, in the last century, irrevocably initiated the steady movement towards the decomposition of the great states. One might even go farther back to the Dutch revolution, were it not that the political significance of that event is modified by its religious character. But when we see the separation for ever of two populations, united by language and by faith, not to speak of their common and not remote origin, no one can be mistaken as to the real source of the political disruption. It was natural that the verification of the law of cities should have its first instance in the case of the colonies, and they have given it additional confirmation in South America, notwithstanding the greater closeness of the connection with the mother country both in religion and politics. Without waiting for the extension of the process, in these two typical cases, by the inevitable break-up of the secondary nationalities they have formed;

American independence the beginning of the movement.

Extension of the process from the Colonies to Europe.

nationalities in their turn of exorbitant dimensions, all statesmen should even now forecast its spread to the European states. If so, instead of vain regrets, all should prepare to submit with decorum to this destiny, above all in France, as invested with the initiative of regeneration, an initiative which precludes such regrets.

Such extension dimly foreseen at the beginning of the French Revolution.

At the beginning of the final crisis, there was a dim sense of this fatality in the party which was least mistaken as to the true character of the Western revolution, its essentially intellectual character. But in its aspiration after the normal disgregation of France, it was wrong by a century as to its epoch, nor can we blame the terrible punishment of its mistake, when we consider the guilty vanity which made it set itself, so mistaken, against a defence as necessary as it was difficult. When the heroism, however empirical, of its two opponents had secured the independence of the French nation, it soon became possible to estimate duly the merit of the Girondist anticipation, by virtue of the disappearance, in the natural course of things, of the main justification for a provisional concentration. The peace of Europe has strengthened the tendency in this direction by removing as well the fear of invasion from without, as the dread of coalitions within its limits. So it is, that I can judge quietly, with the perfect freedom of the true philosopher, a premature political conception, which cost my spiritual Father, Condorcet, his life, on the groundless suspicion that he approved of it.

Each Intendancy to become a Republic under Triumvirs.

As a step to the gradual adoption of this great change, the Positivist triumvirate should allow the Intendants, when tested by seven years' right exercise of power, the choice of their successors, who will on this plan be more identified with the population they are to govern. Each Intendancy should be made into an independent republic, as soon as it complies with the religious conditions of political emancipation, not waiting till the other provinces have also earned their independence, the essence of which is the substitution of local triumvirs for the intendant. Before the general accomplishment of this change, it will have already attained its great object as regards the organic transition in its totality; be it by purifying the attitude of Paris as the spiritual capital, be it by putting an end to the perturbing power of ambition, the great stimulus to which lay in the centralisation.

It remains for me now to explain at length the course, as a political and religious movement, of the principal phase of the organic transition, the phase, that is, the leading features of which are given in the two measures just explained. Its very predominance, however, renders it impossible for its exposition to be on a scale proportionate to that allotted to the two preliminary modes; which, be it remembered, are of more immediate interest and derive less light from the normal type. In order then not to injure at once this explanation and the whole survey of the transition, I feel that it will be better to adjourn it till the time be fully ripe for it. If events support the numbers given in this chapter, and if my career takes its natural course, I will devote a special course of lectures in 1862 to this great problem, at the opening, that is, of the second or intermediate phase, after I have written all the works I have promised. Coinciding with the two decisive decrees for changing the army into a gendarmerie, and for founding the Positive school, this oral teaching will be repeated twice, at the interval of a year, and with such improvements as may be found desirable, thus carrying us on to the opening of the final phase. For the present, I must limit myself, on this point, to such particular remarks as may give a character of completeness to the general outline I have sketched of the political and religious features of the principal period of transition, that in which Positivism inspires the policy of the government. For the political developement and the spiritual movement, we must distinguish between the hints here given, according as they refer to the internal organisation or to the external influence of the central nation.

Political and religious course of the final phase.

From the very beginning of the third phase, the admission of the proletaries into the Preparatory Government should stamp its character on the home policy of the Positivist dictatorship, by reducing the public expenditure and by methodising the punishment of political offences. As, by that time, the compensations granted to the priests and the officers will have expired, the poor will find means of retrenchment beyond what the rich could even conceive; for a triumvirate of an energetic and progressive character will be strong enough adequately to remunerate all services without multiplying its agents. An allowance daily of a hundred, a hundred and fifty, or two hundred francs to the intendants, ambassadors, or governors, will

Political advance internally.

proclaim to all the definitive adoption of the noble simplicity temporarily introduced by the dictatorship of Danton. In this way, without overburdening the finances, it will be possible to develop, on a large scale, a system of public works, more needed at this period than in the normal state, as we have to prevent or to compensate the interruptions of industrial operations, and as it is necessary to secure the performance of services of immediate necessity in the midst of the disturbances arising from the trades' unions. At the same time, the triumvirate will, on its own direct responsibility, take the necessary measures for the repression of political offences, short of the punishment of death, then inadmissible from the non-existence of the convictions which could alone legitimise it. Not sheltering itself behind tribunals—tribunals as incompetent as they are irresponsible—the Preparatory Government will proclaim in the normal mode the proscriptions it shall judge required, and will know how to carry them into effect after a public hearing of the accused by one of its members. The sentence may simply be one of exclusion from civic functions, or it may add banishment at times with the further penalty of confiscation; in either case it will offer guarantees of its justice and moderation of a higher kind than are compatible with illusory and degrading formalities.

Extinction
of the
Bourgeoisie.

Looked at as a whole, the domestic policy of the systematic dictatorship will have as its great object the renovation of the patriciate by eliminating the bourgeoisie, which is a barrier between it and the proletariat. But the removal of this obstacle to union requires the persistent aid of two movements, correlated and yet opposed, the one negative, the other positive: the extinction of literateurs and lawyers; the transformation of the small capitalists. All the metaphysical classes fostered by the Western revolution, are destined ultimately to disappear; on the contrary, the subaltern chiefs of industry as now constituted, will in the majority of instances become valuable workmen, in some instances real patricians.

Of Lawyers.

Journalism and literature will pass away, in the natural course of things, as a consequence of spiritual liberty, and the entire abolition of the theoretic budget; but until the close of the transition the great nucleus of the metaphysicians will survive them; as the services of the various legists will still be needed, although in a decreasing extent. In regard to the best



class, the suppression of all trials for opinions or political action, the extension of arbitration and industrial courts, will allow of the reduction and simplification of the judicial positions, the more eminent occupants of which will have been regenerated by Positivism. By the suppression of the schools of law, the special education of barristers will have been limited to a practical apprenticeship, and the class will gradually disappear when deprived of its monopoly of defence, thus, in a more favourable state of things, carrying into effect the noble attempt of the Dantonian jurists.

These two reforms will give us the means of improving the administration and the police by availing ourselves of the knowledge and the training of the unemployed lawyers. Still the great question for the transition policy will be the regeneration of the Positive portion of the existing bourgeoisie. The concentration of wealth, and the transformation of the greater number of the smaller employers into simple workmen—these will be results, in the main, of the natural laws of industrial existence; which existence in a more disturbed milieu tends more rapidly in their direction, such a milieu only suitable to great strength. And yet the spontaneous movement may be aided by a wise intervention, with the aim, principally, of anticipating or remedying the disasters incident to it. The intervention consists, on the one hand, in the removal of all the checks emanating from a revolutionary legislation, on the other hand, in the due developement of the system of industrial endowments.

Regeneration of the Positivist portion of the Bourgeoisie a great object.

An eminent economist, (M. Dunoyer), rising superior to the prejudices of negativism, has proposed to abolish the factitious equality of properties, and the restoration of the full freedom of bequest. In theory, it is true, he remains individualist, but in his tendencies he is unconsciously sociocratic; so that Positivism can adopt his views and give them systematic expression and completeness. In particular I feel bound to accept the amendment he proposes, which is to adhere to the existing law in cases of intestacy, though I do not think the case as common as he does. There is an advantage in this restriction, in that it allows the natural tendency towards a concentration of inherited properties to manifest itself freely, as soon as Positivism has propagated the conviction, more particularly in France, that large fortunes are eminently desirable. But the aggregate reaction of freedom of bequest would be found insufficient, if

Abolition of the forced division of fiefal property. Freedom of bequest.

Adoption.

option is still left as difficult a process as our legislation makes it. When we set it, too, free from artificial impediments, we must merely retain for it, as for the other, the precautions calculated to obviate haste, with its frequent sequel of vain regret, as also the unjust neglect of the natural heirs. To avoid as far as possible both these evils and yet not to fetter a liberty which is indispensable, it is sufficient if we restrict the power in both cases, by attaching to it the obligation of complete publicity, seven years before the formal execution of the resolution.

Industrial
Endow-
ments.

Whatever the efficacy of this first mode of the concentration of wealth, it is on the second that we must more rely at present, inversely to the normal order, because the one depends especially upon private habits and feelings, the latter on the intervention of the state. A million of francs judiciously employed in each Intendancy to found industrial fortunes, under the full responsibility of the triumvirate, in each of the twenty-one years of the last phase, would give a sufficient impulse to the regeneration of the French patriciate. Directly and indirectly the measure would have its influence, but the indirect would be the greater, as it would check the wealthy who misused their wealth by the contrast with the new patricians thus created, who will never shrink from the examination, under due conditions, of their industrial administration. Positivism prides itself on having amongst its disciples an eminent practician, who, on the basis of a sound scientific education, is struggling, as devotedly as wisely, with the difficulties thrown in his way by his want of sufficient capital to improve to the full his land. Similar instances are already sufficiently numerous to indicate to what extent a systematic interference may aid the natural process of renovating industrial existence, by evoking in the nobler patricians the habits and feelings suitable to Sociocracy, even before the end of the transition.

Confiscation. I may not reckon confiscation amongst the means of hastening this result, although it may seem peculiarly appropriate, looking to the subversive aspirations which are now in their full course. It is in the normal state only, and then in great moderation, that confiscation, which is but the extension of a power inherent in society, will be applicable; when the habits and feelings of all classes of society shall be so regulated as to obviate the chief abuses to which it is liable. During the transition, it is desirable to limit the use of confiscation and

make it a political punishment, needed for the repression of disturbances, caused either by individuals or by masses, and traceable to the various influences which will oppose the reorganisation of Western society. Were we to attempt at once to employ it as against a bad use of wealth; there is no principle on which to control the action of feelings which, even when honourable, and not, as they too generally are, tainted with envy, would yet imperil the security which is indispensable for property. All we have to do is, to develop with prudence *legal interdiction*, or, restraint of abuse of property, and use aright the facilities afforded us by political confiscation, to promote the introduction of the normal dwelling for the proletary class, by making it easy to sell houses in apartments.

To gain a clear idea of the foreign policy of the French triumvirate, I must distinguish its relations with its immediate neighbours from its relations with nations outside the West, in the sociological sense of the term. For the former, the Positivist dictatorial government requires six ambassadors, avowedly accredited to the populations of Italy, Spain, Great Britain, Germany, Spanish America, and Anglo-Saxon America, with the object of promoting the common work of renovation. These ambassadors will never be in hostility to the governments, but yet not in exclusive communication with them, as not having yet become the true leaders of their respective nations. The political missionaries of French Positivism will make it their primary object to prevent any mistaken imitation of the initiative of France and any premature adoption of its leading results. Conservative in a high degree, they will make all feel that the agitation due to Metaphysics and the scepticism engendered by egoism are, for the future, the only real obstacles to the satisfactory accomplishment of the Western revolution. Whilst encouraging the natural tendency towards subordination to the metropolis of the race, they will pave the way for the necessary decomposition of the overgrown national aggregates, by appealing to the noble wisdom which will prevail in France. More especially will they exert themselves to terminate, by suitable means, all oppression as between the several constituents of the Western republic, and this by a free appeal to the public opinion of the country which exercises the oppression.

Prior to the commencement of the final phase, the progressive dictator, the immediate predecessor of the French triumvirate,

External
policy of the
Trium-
virate.

Independ-
ence of

had already set a decisive example of such a policy by restoring Algeria to the Arabs. For the voluntary renunciation of dominion over a non-western people brings into clearer relief the shame attaching to the dominion over a portion of the West. Still, the Preparatory Government will be bound to avoid an inconsistency which might be a clog upon its fraternal diplomacy, by proclaiming the independence of Corsica, nay even of the French colonies, before the decomposition of France proper.

Relations
with nations
external to
the West.

Outside the West, the only states to which the Positivist triumvirate should send ambassadors are the monotheistic states, Turkey first, then Russia, lastly Persia. The first object of these embassies should be to encourage the growing feeling of fraternity, which, since the close of the Middle Ages, connects the two civilisations respectively formed by Catholicism and Islam, both equally amenable to the influences of Chivalry, even beyond the limits of the Roman world. Such legitimate preference of Turkey however must not in any degree interfere with the attention due to the abortive Monotheism of Russia, whenever the directors of the Byzantine faith are capable of following the noble example set them by the Mussulman chiefs of subordination to the metropolis of mankind. In this, its second class of foreign relations, it is the governments that the central triumvirate principally addresses, for now they are at the head of their respective nations, and those nations are not accessible directly to French diplomacy, the interval between them being too wide. On the same grounds we appoint purely commercial agents, when we get beyond the monotheistic world; though Positivism will be more powerful to modify the Polytheistic nations and above all the Fetichist; but it will have this power as a purely spiritual influence, to be explained later.

Religions or
spiritual
advance.

These hints sufficing at present to explain the policy of the triumvirate during the last phase of the organic transition, we must point out, on a similar plan, that of the Positive priesthood, with a special reference to the case of France.

Internal.

Incorporated as an integral constituent of the French regime, Positivism must put forth its power—the conclusive test of its superiority—to overcome the existing anarchy, with a view to pave the way for the definitive adoption of sociocratic habits. Its influence, an influence of a directly organic character, should have two special results; first, the consolidation of the government, then of property; thus following the natural course of

Consolidation
of government

the inroad of revolution during the two preceding phases, an inroad of more violence in proportion as liberty of opinion and expression brought into clearer light the malady of the West.

The government is the most urgent and the most capital point, inasmuch as it is in reference to it that the anarchical tendencies are developed with frightful unanimity. Any one can now verify the fact, that it is the rich rather than the poor who at the present day are in opposition to government, and yet on it depends their safety. I venture to affirm that true Positivists, and true Positivists alone, are at the present day habitually animated with a sincere and disinterested respect for the temporal government, in whosoever hands vested. It is not unbecoming in me to add, that the founder of the Religion of Humanity, even before his complete emancipation from negativism, respected all the successive governments of France during the last forty years. But this disposition to order would naturally long be confined to true believers, who if they would regenerate the world, must first themselves have overcome the habits of revolution, and to do this must have ended by substituting a dogmatic belief for their preliminary scepticism. During the first phase of the final period of transition, Positivism cannot possibly inspire the Conservatives with a sufficient confidence, as not being yet completely disencumbered of the revolutionary environment which was of necessity its cradle. And although, in the second phase, the government recognises its value so far as to entrust it with the reorganisation of public instruction, it is not till the third that it directly invokes its aid against the full tide of anarchy.

The worthy interpreter of the Great Being, the Positive priesthood will enforce, on all, respect for its ministers, in spite of the real imperfections of their origin and their conduct. The action of the Religion of Humanity will not be limited to the true believers, but will lead all sincere friends of social progress to recognise the fact, that the public functionaries are, as a rule, the best class, both in heart and intellect, in the present disorderly state. Positivism frees them, once for all, from a degrading hypocrisy and calls them to the guidance of the world, in the name of the Great Being, on condition of substituting devotedness for devotion. Nay, it will ensure them respect when as yet unconverted, by representing them as alone placed at the social point of view, before which mere personal

Respect for
the servants
of govern-
ment.

impulses soon disappear, if the tenure of power is sufficiently prolonged. As all the criticisms of them are really referable to an unreasonable comparison of them with the definitive standard, the relative spirit of Positivism will put an end to sophistical censures, by limiting the comparison to the several coexisting classes.

(2) Property.

Qualified, by its entire renunciation both of wealth and power, to vindicate equally the one and the other, the true priesthood will enforce general respect for the rich, having first taught them to respect the great. The task devolving on the third phase will naturally be, the conversion on a decisive scale of all wealth to a sociocratic form, a conversion of which we have a direct foreshadowing in the Middle Ages, and even a preliminary in the spontaneous change of Allodia into fiefs. Previous to this first step, which has hitherto been misapprehended, property never lost its theocratic character; a character gradually changed, but never remodelled, during the Græco-Roman transition. Whereas the last phase of the defensive period of Monotheism introduced throughout Western Europe the principle needed for its regeneration, as far as was possible under a doctrine which was incapable of consecrating feeling and of systematising action. Throughout the course of the Western revolution, the state of modern society, owing to opposite vices in the rich and the poor, has simultaneously strengthened the need for consolidating property by its regulation, and shown more forcibly the nullity of the older sanction.

Property must be placed under the guardianship of Humanity.

In the present time, it is to Humanity that we must turn to give wealth, in whatever form it exists, that fundamental basis of security which cannot henceforward be derived from God. In vain have the prevalent official Metaphysics endeavoured to confer on property a sanction independent of both sources, by their assertion of individualism, a doctrine as retrograde as it is anarchical. The so-called rights it invokes will have entirely disappeared before the fuller growth of social impulses, earlier than the end of the two preliminary phases of the organic transition. In the third phase, a new power will be in the ascendant, a power as disinterested as it is systematic, and will guarantee the material basis of society, equally in danger at present from its defenders and assailants. Whilst satisfying the aspirations after reconstruction to a degree impossible so long as they remained simply destructive, the irre-

versible division of the two powers will implant a general conviction, that if there is to be a moral discipline of property it must be on condition of its political inviolability. Not confining its protection to those proprietors who recognise that they hold it as a fief of Humanity, the Positive religion will teach respect for all allodial properties whatsoever, by showing that the worst specimens of the wealthy class cooperate, even against their will, in the conservation of the capital of Humanity. That capital is by its nature perishable, and for its preservation active and constant attention is needed; in this attention consists the principal function of the proprietor, whatever be the flaws in his administration, and, allowing for individual exceptions, his responsibility is in all cases purely a moral responsibility.

This brings me, in order to complete my present remarks on the conservative influence of Positivism, to the mention of the inevitable struggle it will have with Communism, the latest embodiment, in a really honourable and dangerous form, of all the revolutionary instincts. Its first victory will be over the anarchical attitude of the rich towards the great; this gained, the religion of Humanity will consecrate the larger portion of the final transition to the transformation or destruction of the feelings which, till then, will have more and more raised the poor against the rich. Its triumph in this last respect will be a conclusive sign of the near approach of the normal state, proving, as it does, that the relative synthesis, already recognised as superior for the worship and the doctrine, is equally adapted to the life, which has suffered under all forms of the absolute synthesis.

Struggle
with Com-
munism.

For success in this struggle with Communism, there are required, successively, two systematic operations, with the object, respectively, of curbing the Western anarchy in its two forms, between which the distinction is profound, though hitherto they have been erroneously confounded; the first form being that which it takes in towns, the second, in the country.

Different
measures to
be taken in
Town and
Country.

It is the first exclusively, the more honourable and the more dangerous form, to which the term communism, properly so called, applies, especially as regards the plebeians, and it is with them that it exercises a real influence. Positivism is the better able to regenerate, in the name of the Great Being, the proletariat of the towns, in that the error in their case is confined to

Urban com-
munism.

the intellect and does not vitiate their feelings. The priesthood of Humanity, stating the social problem in a broader and more systematic form,—the problem which now finds no presentment but in communism,—will gradually secure the acceptance of its normal solution, after it has shown the inconsistencies involved in the utopia of anarchy. When there is complete liberty, the revolutionary teachers will be unable to mask impotence by persecution, so that the Religion of Humanity will soon convince the better proletaries that they have been in error in their disjunction of the two ideas, the concentration of materials and their appropriation. The latter is the invariable condition of the former, especially when the accumulations are by their nature perishable, and, as such, require for their preservation distinct and responsible agents, who cannot perform their office unless they have full security, the sole source of true activity.

Rural.

Whilst Communism in the towns attaches too great importance to the concentration of wealth, the anarchy of the country, implicating the feelings in the disorder of the intellect, with equal, perhaps greater injury to the feelings, urges to absolute individualism, the means being the indefinite division of the highest property, the land. The want of a distinct name for this latter error can alone account for its being constantly confounded with the opposite utopia; it is a want which will soon be supplied, such will be inevitably the advance of the latest form under which the West can tolerate the subversive tendencies, traceable, and in the same form, even as far back as the Roman period. This extreme of anarchy will find its preachers in the teachers of the primary schools, predisposed, by the socialist popularising of scientific knowledge, to avail themselves of their position to veil under an appearance of system the sophisms of the country population. By the conversion, however, to Positivism of the better communists, particularly from the mechanicians, the Positivist priesthood will gain a natural supply of valuable auxiliaries in its critical struggle on behalf of solidarity, not less in danger than continuity. I think with pleasure that, by urging the encouragement of veterinary schools, I have, during the second phase, prepared a body of assistants qualified more than any other to promote, during the third phase, the triumph of the true believers over the anarchical dispositions of the rural districts.

Although, at this period, the attention of the priesthood will

naturally be absorbed by the regime, it will be led by that very regime to perfect the abstract portion of the transitional worship, by the addition of three social festivals to the festival which succeeded the three moral ones. The three will be annual, and introduced successively, with the interval of a year between them, during the first third of the last phase; the first in honour of the Press, the second of the Post, the third of the Police.

Worship.
Completion
of its
abstract
portion.

Preeminently popular though it be, the first could not previously be introduced without danger, for the services of the Press were as yet of too questionable a character. Essentially an institution of the normal state, it does not deserve the sanction of religion, till it has been fully purified from the revolutionary character which it displayed during the Western revolution. Journalism and literature must become extinct at their centre, before Sociolatriy can be justified in paying honour to the institution which, by the power it confers on reflection to surmount impulse, enables us to organise an appeal to the public opinion of mankind.

Festival of
the Press.

This first festival will incline the French nation to institute a second, in honour of the admirable system of communications, then completed, which is destined to develope and consolidate writing, now become universal. From the establishment of public messengers up to the introduction of the two forms of telegraph, the Positive system of worship must give artistic expression to all the modes or stages of the Post, the institution parallel to the press, and, equally with the press, connected with the most eminent type of modern royalty. There can be no better culture of social feeling than the annual idealization of the concurrence of all human powers in developing the intercommunications of all members of the great human family.

Of the Post.

Duly prepared by these two festivals, the instinct of society will, in the third, give a conclusive evidence of its regeneration, by honouring an institution which is at once more important and less appreciated than the other two. Though France should justly pride itself on its Police, this valuable creation of the monarchical dictatorship is as yet more rightly judged by the other nations of the West. But the sociocratic habits and feelings will then have been so far formed as that the priesthood of Humanity may glorify, when remodelled, an institution, which, at all times animated by a spirit untrammelled by unwise

Of the
Police.

prejudices, unostentatiously protects both individuals and society.

Of the seven transitional festivals, four may be permanent.

Thus we see how, notwithstanding the conflicts incidental to the regime, the Sociolatriy of the transitional period will be completed, towards the middle of the preparatory generation, by the adoption of seven festivals adapted to give an idea of the abstract worship during the prevalence of the concrete. Although more particularly meant for the transition, the four last may be incorporated as accessories into the ultimate system, to which the three first are a direct introduction.

External influence of the religious policy.

With a view to completeness in my sketch of the religious policy of the third phase, it remains to consider it in reference to external affairs. Of this however we shall be better able to judge later, when we come to examine the peculiar modifications of the Positive transition in the four Western groups, and even amongst the other races of men. For the present I need only point to the rise, the rise in succession of two institutions, the one normal, the other provisional, by the aid of which the Pontiff of Humanity will be enabled gradually to organise into a system the unsystematic propagation of the French movement.

Two institutions.

(1) Chivalry.

The first is the institution of the Positive Chivalry, an institution most needed in the transition, though not then capable of so regular a constitution as under the final regime. So ripe is the transition for it, that even now its formation has begun on a decisive scale, though unperceived even by those who cooperate in it. The infamous persecution originating with the most degraded portion of my opponents justly gave rise to the sacerdotal fund, as a species of collective patronage of my individual existence. At no distant period, the systematic extension of this spontaneous protectorate will show men that the germs of chivalry have not been stifled by our modern anarchy. More indispensable now than in the normal state, for the priesthood of Positivism, the Western proletariat, and the affective sex, this voluntary guardianship will shortly bring into concert its three elements, described in the preceding chapter.

Provisional committee.

For the second of the two, I must here remind the reader of the provisional committee, first mentioned, in 1842, in my Philosophy, and more completely explained at the end of the 'General View,' or introduction to my present construction. Though prior in order of conception, I must now place it after the chivalry; as its historical function cannot be rightly judged

till Positivism in France is mainly concerned with external questions, whilst the former institution is quite as much concerned with internal. Nevertheless, there will be seen to be a natural connection between the two institutions; since the Positive committee will be taken from the noblest knights, when the generosity which is their characteristic is directly upheld by eminence in intellect or conduct.

Such are the various *aperçus*, on the spiritual and temporal order, which have their place here as a preparation for the completer statement to be given in 1862, in a course of lectures on the organic transition. I may now sum up the whole preceding exposition, by contrasting it—it is a strongly marked contrast—as it now stands complete, with the original sketch. Under the influence of a republican movement, an influence, which if an irregular was a generous one, I conceived in 1848: first, the Preparatory Government, following the clear indications of my lectures in 1847; then, the Positive School; lastly the Positive Calendar. The 'General View,' written during the oral exposition of these three institutions, bears lasting traces of the course pursued, the exact opposite of my present course. Now, when so contrasted, we may note the profound reality, nay even the perfect opportuneness of a social creation, which suggested by the present, issues in a decisive application of the construction of the future on the basis of the past.

I have now to put the finishing stroke to my last chapter by describing, first, the modifications to be simultaneously introduced into the organic transition by the four constituents of the West; secondly, the mode of its extension, in succession, to the Monotheistic, Polytheistic, and Fetichist populations. These two movements, complementary of the French movement, though they began before the nineteenth or exceptional century, cannot take their definitive character till such time as, by the installation of a permanent and systematic dictatorial government, the initiative of France shall have received its full developement.

Though bound, in the primary case of France, to set forth in detail the organic transition, I have always presented it as, in all essential features, common to all the constituents of the West, in accordance with the intimate connection of France with them, universally recognised at the opening of the French revolution. At the point we have reached, we can verify the assertion,

Contrast between the programme here given and its first sketch in the 'General View.'

Modification of the organic transition by the other Western nations, and its extension outside the West.

The seven decisive steps equally applicable to the whole of the West.

that each of the leading characteristics, in the temporal or spiritual order, of the three successive stages of the movement of transition, is as applicable to the whole West as to its central nation. The full liberty of thought and utterance consequent on the abolition of the spiritual budget; the substitution of a constabulary for the army; even the accession to power of a systematic triumvirate;—these measures are in all cases alike indispensable. And the identity becomes still more evident in the spiritual transition; for there, the growth of the historical worship; the establishment of Positive schools; and the triumph of Positivism over Communism;—these are equally applicable to all the Western nations. The same holds good of the normal decomposition of the larger states, a measure which implies both these series of successive changes. For the seven decisive steps, the French nation is invested, as the result of the whole past, with an initiative calculated to relieve its four neighbours of the necessity of repeating the process of transition; its results are all they need appropriate. But their adoption of them can in no case be a purely passive process; and therefore I must describe the modifications which, in the natural course of things, it will everywhere involve; modifications by which each constituent will contribute its particular improvement to the general result.

Due subordination to the central movement.

In every extension of the principal movement, the priesthood which presides over the regeneration, aided by the Positive committee, will make it its great object to reconcile two conditions of equal importance: a proper subordination to the central operation; and a wise respect for national differences. Such differences must be made to promote the object of the Western effort, which is meant for mankind, by the development of the peculiar capacities of each nation. But the movement in each must always be subordinated to the initiatory movement, and that by an act of voluntary deference, in all cases in agreement with the order of reorganisation laid down in the opening of the present chapter, as a deduction from the whole of the last volume.

Italy.

In this order, the Italian nation is represented as the first to join the movement of reorganisation, which it is peculiarly qualified to aid as an esthetic development. The predispositions requisite for this mission are the more likely to prevail, in that they amount simply to the giving due prominence to

the principal features of the Italian situation, misconceived by the literary class alone. Although the population of Italy is more clear than any other of military habits and feelings, its spiritual guides have never ceased to regret its ancient domination, nay, to dream of its return, and its universality. Rightly viewed, the political decomposition of Italy brings it nearer to the normal state, whereas they aim at its unity, as retrograde as it is anarchical, incompatible too with the necessary degree of independence. But it will not be difficult for Positivism to overcome these errors, as not rooted in popular feeling, by a direct appeal to the instincts of Humanity, more imperfectly represented in Italy than elsewhere. Whilst delivering Italy from the yoke of the stranger, it will maintain throughout the degree of independence demanded by the aggregate of local conditions. It will put an end to all factitious state-unions as oppressive, particularly such as by their plural name sufficiently indicate their heterogeneous character, the great instance being the confused group formed, in the north of Italy, by the union of five discordant states.

The preliminary conditions fairly satisfied, the population of Italy will soon be in a position to renounce a separate unity, the better to fulfil its high function as an eminent contributor to the process of unifying mankind. Its language will become the common language of all nations, by virtue of its superiority in poetry and in music, and inasmuch as, socially, it is clear of all propagation by oppressive means. This privilege of Italy, already proclaimed by Positivism, is the direct tie which connects her feelings with the advent of the renovating faith, a work in which each of her sons may aid, if he substitute the developement of his intellectual and moral nature for political agitation.

The contribution of Italy.

(i) General.

Over and above this general contribution, Italy must give a special one to the advancement of the organic transition; it should complete the concrete worship of Humanity by an esthetic creation. Its main contribution will be an epic poem of an unprecedented order, the presentation of the close of the Western revolution, as the incomparable composition of Dante presided over its commencement. The language destined to universality will perfect its claims by thus completing its representation of the modern movement, the latest phase of the vast

(ii) Special.

preparation which step by step was to substitute Sociocracy for Theocracy.

The Epic of Humanity.

After a sufficient practice of the historical worship, there will be felt, and most keenly in Italy, the want of a poetic embodiment of the past. Foreseeing this want, I am led to describe here the poem which is to meet it; which it is not for me to write, but to which I have already endeavoured to call public attention in the course of lectures described in the preface of the last volume. The composition, as it seems to me, ought, about the middle of the organic transition, to come from an Italian, a pupil of the Positive school, and so having his artistic genius adequately trained by the encyclopædic education given in that school.

Is to consist of thirteen cantos.

The ideal expression of the philosophy of history, the poem of *Humanity* will picture in succession all the phases of the preparatory life of the race, up to the advent of the final state. The ordering of this epic, as a work of art, is founded on the cerebral crisis described at the end of the first chapter of the last volume,—the crisis in which I first rapidly descended the sociological scale and then slowly reascended. Thus was performed, following the course of the ages, a double journey, the equivalent of the single journey of Dante through the various worlds. But a journey such as his, purely statical, and as such precluding any retracing of his steps, could offer no contrasts to be compared with those presented by the comparison, in my dynamical journey, of the three months of descent with the five of ascent. My forthcoming work will unfold the subjective laws which fix thirteen, a trebly prime number, as the proper number of cantos for any systematic epic—but, meanwhile, its adoption may, in the present case, be determined on social grounds.

Synthèse subjective, p. 111.

Description of the Poem.

The introductory canto is statical in character, as the ideal representation of the cerebral unity, disorder in which shows itself in retrogradation, when the disturbance of our sympathies vitiates our synthesis; carrying us back, that is, from laws to causes. Then, in three cantos, we have the descent of the intellectual and moral nature from the relative to the absolute, first in its monotheistic, then in its polytheistic, lastly in its fetichist stage, with a constant aspiration towards complete harmony, but without the power of attaining it. In the eight following cantos, the heart and the intellect reascend, by a grad-

ual course, towards Positive unity, as elaborated by the successive efforts of Fetichism, Astrolatry, Theocracy, the intellectual developement of Greece, the social Polytheism of Rome, the defensive Monotheism, Feudal civilisation, and the movement of Modern times. Finally, in the thirteenth canto, is idealised man's normal existence, at once affective, contemplative, and practical, with equal reference to the race and to the individual. This concluding portion, however, must not be amplified further, lest it interfere with the essentially dynamical character of the epic of the transition, so reserving for the future the statical poem—which that future alone can call into existence.

By such a production, the genius of Italy, whilst still maintaining, and justly, the preeminence which it assigns to art over science, will perfect its own education by becoming systematic, in entire conformity with its aptitude for synthesis, an aptitude which, as yet, it has been unable adequately to display. So decisive a creation, destined to evoke in all the enthusiasm required for the inauguration of the true human providence, ought, at the same time, to give the universal language the only qualities in which it is now deficient. It is in this way that Positivism, at the present day, devolves on the Italian constituents of the West a high intellectual and social mission, one which touches the normal state no less than the whole of the final transition, a mission which it alone can accomplish. Under the impulse thus given, the most artistic of the nations ought at length to reap the choicest fruits of its admirable culture of art, a culture often hitherto judged excessive, simply because it had not reached its true goal. In proportion as the Positive religion spreads the conviction, that the ultimate spirituality wears a poetical rather than a philosophical character, it will be felt that the Italians are, from this point of view, the people the most predisposed for synthesis through sympathy.

It is from the dim consciousness of its superiority in this respect, as well as from the interest inspired by a nation which has been often the oppressed, never the oppressor, that the claims of Italy to the second place in the Western world are more freely admitted than is the initiative of France. Apart from these two first cases, the classification of the sister nations is open to some doubt, a doubt I have myself felt, and one which it is important to remove, because the origin of it, in the

Its influence
upon the
universal
language.

Italy al-
lowed the
second place.
The order of
the other
three in
dispute.

moral nature as well as in the intellect, involves a more serious question than its consequences. The dogma of equality, the ordinary veil of the instinct of domination, is not less revolutionary as between nations than it is in individuals; between nations it acts more strongly as a dissuasive to habitual cooperation. Called, by the whole course of human destinies, to guide the regeneration of the race, the Western nations must begin by setting persistently an example of a noble intersubordination, in the name, always, of their common mission. We may remark here, as in all other cases of the classification of man, that the most advanced are also the most disposed to second the action of the centre. But this tendency were insufficient, if each constituent were willing only to accept the common president, whilst disallowing the precedence of the nation immediately above it in rank. Although their participation in the organic transition must shortly become simultaneous, we must clear up all uncertainty as to their hierarchical arrangement, for it is to serve as the universal type of all voluntary aggregations, in which liberty has full play but without equality.

Spain. Its
title to the
third place.

Allowing too much weight to intellectual and industrial considerations, in my first classification I assigned to Spain the lowest rank in the Western world. Later, on moral and social grounds, I was induced to place her above the northern couple, the position she occupied before the eruption of Protestantism. This decision finds support in the admirable readiness of the most energetic and most persevering of Western nations to acquiesce in the indispensable presidency of France. But the pontiff of Humanity, clear of all national prejudices, may not allot Spain, however eminent, a higher place, though she is not as willing to accept the precedence of Italy as she is the initiative of France. This minor injustice on the part of Spain is due, partly to the disturbing influence of past associations, mainly, however, to the noble consciousness of her soundest claims. In no other Western nation have we so just an appreciation, both in the family and in the state, of the female sex; in no other Western nation have we such a sense of fraternity without any impairment of subordination; nowhere else so unforced an incorporation of the servants into the family. Valid, however, as these titles are, as against the two northern constituents of the West, and valid as they would be even as

against France, were it not that by its central position it is taken out of the comparison, they are not valid as against Italy, which is on a level with Spain in these respects, allowance made for its antecedents.

If it compare itself with the protestant nations, the Spanish people is justified in asserting its moral and social superiority, a superiority in no wise neutralised by its inferiority in thought and in industry. Positivism ratifies its judgment, showing that the deficiency of the Iberic population may be soon supplied under an appropriate stimulus, whereas those of the other Occidentals require a slow and difficult reformation. But from this statement Italy must be excepted, as, in her case, if the claims which she has in common with Spain are less evidently justified, it is due mainly to her aggregate antecedents in more recent times, not so favourable as in Spain to the developement of civic feeling. Her slight inferiority in this respect is more than compensated by her preeminence in art, combined with her incontestable superiority in speculation and action. Even under the moral and social aspect, Spain should recognise the precedence of Italy, with her hands clean of colonisation, and more completely clear of all barbarous customs, were it only by virtue of her military inferiority, an effect of the absence of political centralisation. Errors in policy on the subject of temporal unity are, in Italy, confined to the literary class, whereas in Spain they are more widely spread and more tenaciously held, though not to the point of being really popular, as is shown by the fact that the retrograde party has gained credit by its opposition to them. Nevertheless, the colonial possessions of Spain are the great source of the deterioration of the Spanish character, for her colonisation, as more systematically conducted than that of any other nation, implanted an oppressive disposition which is yet sufficiently strong to mar her cooperation—her indispensable cooperation—with the West in its mission.

These hints, when combined, suffice to justify the rank definitively assigned by Positivism to Spain, immediately after France and Italy, in the ultimate reconstruction of the family which is in the van of Humanity. I could not but dwell most on the most difficult point in a classification which, like every normal arrangement, will summarise the general comparative estimate of the groups classified. Whereas the hierarchy of the

Spain ranks
after France
and Italy.

two protestant nations will merely require the explicit correction of the order originally stated.

Spain's
special con-
tribution.

Accepting the decision just given, I have here to indicate the special contribution of Spain to the Western effort of construction, special as distinct from the general influence which she will naturally exert upon it. Her proper part is, most especially, to promote the organic transition by the voluntary adjunction of the only clergy which in Western Europe is capable of aiding the movement.

Incorporation
of
the Spanish
Clergy.

When the suppression of the spiritual budget shall allow the free emergence of the real tendencies of things, I hope shortly to be able to rally to Positivism one in a hundred of the French priests, who are now kept down under a discipline which is rather temporal than spiritual. But I think I may then calculate on a larger result in the Spanish priesthood, better placed than any other for a sound estimate of the universal degradation of the spiritual power. A clergy in its position cannot take a hostile attitude, it cannot even remain neutral, as regards the advent of the only doctrine competent to raise the dignity of the priesthood, on certain intellectual and moral conditions, which it may soon fulfil.

Nowhere
else is there
hope of the
clergy as
a body.

It has always been with regret that I have watched the extinction of the Catholic organism without being able to utilise, for the final transition, the ruins of a hierarchy which it took so much time and effort to construct, for which its real services were but a slight return. But after many attempts to connect it with the renovation which hitherto it has in vain rejected, I have been gradually compelled to abandon all hope of transforming the French priesthood, its leaders being incapable of compliance with the conditions of such transformation. Positivism must never hope for more than occasional recruits from its ranks, when the pressure of the Episcopacy is to a considerable degree lightened. Still their aid will be valuable; for by their antecedents they are prepared to uphold more firmly the supremacy of Morals, as also to feel greater respect for the normal discipline, which they will be able honourably to reconcile with the scientific construction at present lacking. The above remarks apply also to the Italian priesthood; for as a body it is irredeemable, owing to the apathy of the lower and the corruption of the higher clergy, the latter clinging to spiritual independence solely as a condition of temporal power. As for the

Several protestant clergies, their greater political degradation, the more systematic character of their hypocrisy, alienate them more completely from a spirituality more hostile to Metaphysics than to Theology. Such a spirituality can expect a welcome only from those who, having no state support, really possess a certain religious authority, supposing that their personal worth preserves them from the deteriorating influence which frequently attends on voluntary support in an insurrectionary society.

By this process of exclusion, we arrive at the Iberian priesthood as the only one capable of aiding Positivism in the general conduct of the organic transition. It appears to me really capable of welcoming the regenerative faith, when once fairly adopted by the French dictatorship. For its chiefs have preserved a sufficient superiority over their own body and even their nation, to qualify them for presiding over a transformation calculated to place on a sound basis their authority, an authority already impaired though not destroyed. From a philosophical point of view, their power should show itself in the gradual substitution of the encyclopædic instruction for the studies recognised by Theology. Under the religious aspect, it may transform the worship of the Virgin into an adoration of Humanity.

The Spanish clergy alone capable of aiding Positivism.

But legitimate as these hopes may be as regards the clergy of the peninsula, they seem to me in an especial degree justified in regard to the Spanish and Portuguese settlements in America. In Spain, the influence of the Papacy may impede the regeneration of the priesthood, if not by direct influence,—an influence long more extinct in Spain than elsewhere—at any rate by the indirect ascendancy conferred on it by popular feeling. It is otherwise in America; there the power of the Papacy has been a derivative from the power of the monarchy, the real creator and upholder of the ecclesiastical hierarchy. Since the Catholic colonies gained their independence, the influence of Rome is, as a natural consequence, uprooted there. Although the temporal rulers as yet have but an uncertain tenure, by the nature of the case they have inherited the ecclesiastical prerogatives of the royal government. These dictators on sufferance must, though with a purely empirical policy, be more prone to respect the independence of a priesthood which is the only deeply-rooted institution in such populations as they

Spanish America, The clergy there.

govern. There can be no powerful obstacle to the transformation of which the colonial clergy is more susceptible than the clergy of the mother country, all its ranks being equally accessible to the religion of Humanity.

They will welcome the Positivist conception of marriage.

It is the more calculated to make its way there, in that it gives systematic expression to tendencies which, everywhere instinctive, in Iberian America are more than usually powerful, as in unison with the whole social feeling. The Positivist law of marriage for the priesthood appeals especially to the clergy, as relieving them from the corrupting action of celibacy whilst not exposing them to the degradation inflicted on them by Protestantism. So long as the doctrine professed sanctions an ignoble estimate of women, it is by licence alone, however contradictory to their vows, that priests can escape the isolation which is held up universally as the type of Christian perfection. It is the exclusive privilege of Positivism to place the marriage of priests on its right footing, by establishing the true theory of human nature and the normal union of the sexes. In its regime, marriage will be enjoined on the priesthood as a special guarantee of moral improvement, instead of degenerating into a degrading concession to appetites which religion ought in all cases to repress.

The organic transition easy in these colonies.

Enlarge this view and we can realise how greatly the organic transition will be facilitated in the society constituted by the Spanish and Portuguese colonisation in America, or even in Oceania. For the dispositions which are peculiarly favourable to the political and religious ascendancy of Positivism prevail there equally in the temporal as in the spiritual order. Preserved by the course of events from the parliamentary regime, even when France was yet subject to it, the Republics there founded will move by a direct path towards Sociocracy, so soon as their monocratic dictators shall transform themselves into systematic triumvirates. The army will easily become a constabulary, when all anxiety on the score of invasion has finally disappeared. The abolition of the spiritual budget—this, it is true, is a question of serious difficulty, but the necessity for this provisional measure ceases in a society which has escaped universities and academies, if the priesthood by its regeneration offer full security for liberty of opinion and speech.

England ranks above Germany.

Before I consider the two other constituents of the Western world, I must briefly correct my original error as to the order

in which they will reach the final state. In opposition with the whole of past history, I placed England below Germany, though I had allowed the superiority of the English governing classes, because I attached too much weight to the allpervading deterioration due to the national isolation. I have since come to see that Germany more justly deserves reproach on this head, for she oppresses Western nations who are more advanced than herself, whilst the dominion of England is in the main external to the West and affects belated populations. Setting aside the anomaly relating to art properly so called, the comparison of the two nations in action, speculation, and poetry justifies the precedence of England, and this is supported by her superiority as an industrial society. Of all Occidentals, the Germans are the least removed from the military regime, and from the theologico-metaphysical state; so that they will be the last to reach the common goal of the modern revolution, a conclusion indicated by their inferior participation in the training given by Rome and Feudalism.

An indirect verification of this direct conclusion may be found by comparing the reception of Positivism in the two countries; in Germany it has hitherto been ignored; in England it meets with more appreciation than in France, at least as a philosophy. This contrast appears to me the more decisive, inasmuch as, to appreciate Positivism, the English had to make a noble effort to overcome the repugnance justly excited by my first classification of the constituents of the West. And although the religion of Humanity is destined shortly to be more popular in the South than in the North, the welcome given in England to its philosophical basis seems to me conclusive of the case of a doctrine which primarily addresses itself to the higher order of minds.

The fourth element of the West, besides its general co-operation, should bring, as its special contribution to the perfecting of the organic transition, the staid and regular movement which is unattainable elsewhere. Of all the débris of the older temporality, the British aristocracy alone seems to me capable of transforming itself so as to be competent to direct the national reorganisation, thus preserved from the stormy irregularities which will occur in the remainder of the West. The hope corresponds to that which I even now indicated, in reference to the spirituality of Christendom, in the

Acceptance
of the Posi-
tive Philo-
sophy in
England.

The special
contribu-
tion of
England.

The British
aristocracy.

case of the Iberian priesthood, the remodelling of which seems to me more difficult and less prepared.

If competent
it may hold
its power
without in-
terruption.

To give definiteness to this hope, we must direct our attention more particularly to the last phase of the transition as a political movement; the two others will be easy in England, as will be the three stages of the spiritual transition. The Positivist triumvirate, in due time, must obtain in England as in other countries; but in England it may do so without passing through the temporary anomaly which in the rest of the Western world is inevitable, owing to the degeneracy of the old patriciate and the incompetence of the new. If the British aristocracy accept the proper modifications, it will avoid the transient supremacy of the proletariat, and will have the unparalleled honour of directing, in an orderly movement, the formation and installation of the normal state.

Previous
modifica-
tions of the
British
patriciate.

However difficult, the change is one which cannot but seem possible, if we consider the changes already accepted by the English aristocracy, the ablest patriciate the world has seen since the Roman senate. After frankly acquiescing, as a final result, in the establishment of peace as the permanent condition of Europe, it has wholly abandoned the policy based upon war with the aim of hindering the inevitable spread of the Republican movement. This implies that it has resigned itself to the overcoming by appropriate methods communism or socialism, the last shape worn by the revolutionary instinct, and a more dangerous shape than the Jacobinism so dreaded at first. In spite of the over-confidence which the governing classes of England place in material remedies, from their want of a political theory, they cannot conceal from themselves that the malady is essentially cerebral and, as such, imperiously demands an intellectual and moral treatment. Too clear-sighted to look to Theology for this treatment, the decay of belief being the primary source of the disorder, they will be soon led to feel the power of Positivism to direct society, as a natural consequence of their actual recognition of its superiority as a philosophy.

It will
welcome
Positivism
when it sees
it overcome
Communism
in France.

In vain do the literary classes in England, more than elsewhere, strive to confine the new philosophy to its purely intellectual function. Their efforts, prompted by self-interest, will fail against an indivisible synthesis, nor will they long prevent the statesmen of England from forming a true estimate of Positivism, especially as a social power. The struggle once

openly begun in France between it and communism, it will rivet their attention in a degree beyond any possible anticipation at present. They will see in it the sole legitimate source of a policy competent to obviate or overcome a crisis at home, which, if left to take its natural course, would be more stormy in England than anywhere. It is not likely that the conditions attached to this political regeneration will excite repugnance in them, for what are those conditions but the substitution in regard to the existing spirituality of a system of management for a system of hypocrisy?

Patricians of their stamp cannot but deeply lament the necessity which obliges them, sceptics as they are, to bend to a degrading theological system, a system which subjects them to the dominion of the very people whose rulers they deem themselves. From the false position in which their doubt places them, they can be extricated only by the adoption of real religious convictions, but by such convictions they will become as superior to their environment in heart and in character as they already are in intellect. So raised, they will be enabled, to their own eternal honour, to the great good of their people, and even of the whole world, to avail themselves, to the full, of the more striking advantages of their exceptional position, neutralised hitherto by their empirical conservatism. If, on the other hand, their conversion is too long delayed, they will be outstripped by the élite of the British proletariat, led by its own unaided studies, to be shortly systematised by Positivism, to place in power, by an irresistible effort, the legitimate successors of Cromwell. The democratic revolution of the seventeenth century failed, it is true, for it had no theory to direct it and the circumstances were unfavourable, but it has left in the noblest English spirits imperishable germ of maturity. Compression at home, tension abroad, both alike have lost their power to resist tendencies which have as a groundwork the whole of the past, and which would be sure of ultimate victory, even if the English evolution were to run its course in isolation. They must soon become resistless, when the advent of the proletariat in France to the systematic dictatorship shall appeal forcibly to the popular sympathy throughout Europe.

But they must be on the alert or they will be superseded by the Proletariate, and some successor of Cromwell.

If it would avoid a democratic revolution by a sociocratic evolution, the English aristocracy must revise its external no

Their proper foreign policy.

less than its internal policy. In the first place, away the last symptoms of a disposition to oppression as regards the other Western nations, more particularly by putting an end to the insulting anomaly which subjects to England a city of Andalusia. I have the more hope of witnessing at an early period this evidence of a definitively fraternal policy, in that, when I urged the measure, in the name of Humanity, in my public lectures in 1849, an English Positivist told me that the opinion had been spontaneously broached by an English manufacturer. The indication is valuable as showing the peaceable growth of a true Occidental policy, the general adoption of such policy to be secured by the new diplomacy through a noble appeal to the nation which holds Gibraltar. It is, however, principally with reference to the populations outside the West, that there is needed a complete change in the domination of England; for the partial benefits it confers, even when most palpable, are not sufficient to cancel the general sense of oppression. Not to dwell on the truth that material interests are not the highest, for nations any more than for individuals, the legitimate satisfaction of those interests in no case requires a corrupting supremacy, the tendency of which is to perpetuate war in the name of industry. When regenerated by Positivism the English aristocracy will become thoroughly industrial, and will rest its preponderating foreign influence solely on its skilful use of its wealth, when all the Western nations will eagerly assist it, the better to serve Humanity.

Mr. Cobden.

The United States.

This summary view of the reform which the existing foreign and domestic policy of the British constituent both requires and admits, rally applies to it in its full sociological comprehension, to the Anglo-Saxon world, that is, and especially to the United States of America. They have thrown off their political connection with England, but they cannot break their filial connection, the intellectual and moral tradition which binds them, so that they have recourse to it for the names of their towns, even, in a greater degree than was the case with the Arabs in Spain. Whilst however we enlarge to this extent the scope of our previous remarks, one general modification of them is needed, otherwise they would seem inapplicable, or their application might mislead.

Difference in the relations of North and

The peculiar form of colonisation establishes a permanent difference between the North and the South of America, as

active relations with the parent states. Catholicism and royalty directed on system the colonial movement of the Spanish and Portuguese, hence it adhered in the aggregate to its antecedents; it even allowed, as I have just shown, a better developement of the great characteristics of their social state. Whereas the British colonization, originating as it did in individual efforts under the sanction of Protestantism, weakened the social traditions, and the more so, in that the colonists were principally the persecuted and rebels. On both forms alike rests the grave blot of slavery, the enslaving of the race in which affection predominates; but this monstrous institution places the two in strong contrast, showing the extent to which their inadequate discipline, whether spiritual or temporal, lowers Protestants in relation to Catholics. The same difference reappears from whatever side we approach the subject, and owing to it, the British Americans are the most anarchical of all Western nations, because they have encouraged the defects and repressed the excellences of the English type.

South America to the mother country.

Still, their particular form of degeneracy should be no insuperable obstacle to Positivism in availing itself of the advantages of their situation, so that they, after their manner, may aid in the general construction of the final state, which, as a political movement, is of easier introduction in America than anywhere else. The grand difficulty there is connected with the spiritual transition, in reference even to the doctrine, but still more to the worship: for the latter, our system of commemoration accords ill with a nation without antecedents; for the former, the Positive school is a stumbling-block to the metaphysical spirit there in the ascendant, though with a varnish of encyclopædism. But the uneasiness which is felt as to their political condition will, at no distant period, ensue the adoption of an indivisible synthesis; its aid against communism was duly invoked by the eminent American whose premature loss I had to regret in the preface to the preceding volume. Even as it is, the spontaneous spread of Positivism in America offers a vague confirmation of the more precise evidence of his appeal; so that we may see, to what an extent the representatives in America of the British aristocracy may use the special advantages of their position in the furtherance of the organic transition. Without a standing army, without an established church, the American statesmen can have no empirical illusions as to

The chief difficulty in America the spiritual regeneration.

the value of material remedies; and they are thus better qualified to diagnose aright the disease under which the West is suffering; in particular they are prepared to accept the inevitable disgregation of all factitious aggregations.

The Anglo-Saxon element will not be able to dispense with the exceptional intervention of the proletariat.

Still, to whatever degree the British leaders can be transformed, especially in England, it is certain that the fourth element of the West will require, equally with the others, for its reorganisation, an extraordinary intervention on the part of the proletariat. The transfer of political power to the working classes may not be as indispensable provisionally, there as elsewhere, as a means of raising the capitalist, yet the nobler patricians will at any rate need the aid of the plebeians to place the central power in its due position. The necessity of abolishing the parliamentary regime in its proper home will involve difficulties, which, without the help of the people, would be insurmountable; there being no other power able to eradicate the organised hypocrisy inseparable from English constitutionalism.

Germany. Its sociological connections with the preceding element are found in Holland and Sweden.

In proceeding to the last and most heterogeneous constituent of the Western world, the first point is to distinguish between Germany and its two chief appendages, the links sociologically between Germany and England, industrial Holland and aristocratic Sweden. These two nations, though opposed to one another, are yet brought together by the circumstance that they are both superior, with an equivalent superiority, industrial or political, to the German world; both, too, equally accept subordination to France as the centre of the West. Were the German group as a whole at the level of these two outlying portions, it would deserve the rank which I originally assigned it in the collective advance of the élite of Humanity. The two may have an influence for good on the organic transition far beyond what their material power might seem to promise, and such, that they may regain the social consideration deserved by their services and their excellences. In advance of Germany from the time that they created their admirable country, and by its creation nobly submitted to the law of fixity of habitation; always the least selfish of the Western nations in the midst of the great political struggles, the Dutch have developed in a higher form the industrial state and have been more successful in avoiding its concomitant evils. As for the Swedish aristocracy, though its reform is of less importance for the West than that of the English, it is easier, from its system of hypocrisy being

connected in Sweden with national isolation. As the Italians, the Scandinavians have remained untainted by colonisation, and would be therefore morally superior to the Batavians; were it not that the latter, besides having attained a higher culture, especially a higher esthetic culture, ordered their colonies more systematically than the English, more liberally than the Spaniards.

It was necessary, at the outset, to put aside these two noble exceptions, if we were to estimate aright the organic transition in the case of Germany, the true character of which will thus be less obscured by heterogeneous elements. The ultimate period of preparation is as much a necessity for Germany as for the others, and from both points of view the process presents more difficulties in Germany, difficulties which have but a slight set off in its special advantages. Still the satisfactory incorporation of the fifth element is a condition which we cannot elude in the reconstruction of the West,—its necessary reconstruction—the decisive step from which we pass to the regeneration of mankind.

Apart from Holland and Sweden, Germany offers peculiar difficulties.

Although the Positive religion is fated to meet with more obstacles and less support in Germany than anywhere else, it will be most hampered by the influential classes, influential for a time, that is, which are the peculiar growth of the modern revolution. Nay more, it is from the metaphysicians and them only that comes the great opposition to the acceptance of an organisation; for the German legists are more available than those of other countries as useful assistants in the movement of reconstruction. But the disease of ontology, inherent in Protestantism, has gradually acquired so extensive and so firm a hold on the German nation, as to make the success of Positivism in Germany the greatest triumph of the system.

Opposition of the Metaphysicians.

Of all Western nations, the French have always been, and are at the present day more than ever, the least affected by literateurs and metaphysicians, and this owing to the two safeguards furnished, under the royal dictatorship, by their social aspirations and their scientific tendencies. Such influence as the two classes have had, has been less noxious in France than elsewhere, and more in conformity with the national dispositions, by virtue of the demand there was for their services in preparing and inaugurating the great Revolution. In Italy, the excellence as well as the precocity of its poetic development

The metaphysicians in the several countries.

swelled the number of its literary class, lowered its character, and gave it a widespread popularity, a popularity however not so representative of the national tendencies. In Spain, an equivalent result was brought about by its deficiency industrially and scientifically, notwithstanding that the monarchy held dictatorial power, and, it must not be forgotten, had a stronger hold upon the legists. The English mind is averse to Metaphysics, yet in point of fact, they are, through Anglicanism, in possession of the ecclesiastical budget; on the condition that they support the existing system of hypocrisy, promoted by most English literateurs ever when dissenters, tacitly at least, and to the abandonment of the cause of the proletariat. The state of Germany gives them less official importance but greater spiritual power, but at the same time it makes them worse representatives of the popular dispositions. Yet the influence they have gained is questionable and precarious, as they are denied equally the legal income of the English literary class, and the voluntary contributions which maintain their American rivals.

Positivism
must appeal
in Germany
to the chiefs
and the
masses.

Guided by these two indications, Positivism is warranted in appealing simultaneously to the rulers of Germany and to its popular masses to set aside the misty obstacle which alone prevents it from penetrating to the German world and securing its appropriate cooperation in the organic transition. I venture to say that the new philosophy is not less known there than elsewhere; for my earliest works, so far back as 1825, were fully appreciated by certain eminent literary men, and besides there has been the stimulus due to its favourable reception in Holland. The same influences, however, which in its own home have so greatly retarded the growth of Positivism, still impede it in Germany, notwithstanding its contact with England, the effect of such contact being neutralised by the unceasing vigilance of the metaphysicians. Nevertheless, the course of the movement, intellectually and socially, in the West, will not be long in over-riding these partial obstacles, as it evidences the powerlessness of the doctrine of Metaphysics, and the need of the true religion. Positivism will be, in Germany more than elsewhere, the defender of order, the organ of progress, in proportion as leaders and followers alike, as they watch the oscillation between anarchy and reaction, come to feel the necessity of shaking off the yoke of Metaphysics, the only aggravation of the natural fluctuations.

er and above their decline as a philosophical ta-
 physicians are already in discredit in Germany from their social
 incapacity, as specially displayed during the democratical agi-
 tation. Their governments justly reproach them with being the
 principal fomenters of the most dangerous communism; the
 people should reproach them with prolonging the oppression of
 Italy, by impelling Germany to take an attitude of isolation and
 domination. The culture of the fine arts, even where Protest-
 antism prevails, is so strong a bond of sympathy between Italy
 and Germany, that Positivism will honourably put an end to the
 monstrosity of German rule in Italy, by delivering the German
 nation from the sophisms of its pedantocrats. Under this form
 will first appear the direct appeal of the Religion of Humanity
 to the proletariat of Germany, the political intervention of
 which will be shortly as necessary in the interests of order as of
 progress, there being no other power competent to triumph
 decisively over the subversive agencies at work. And yet it
 will be from the Statesmen that will come the first welcome of
 Positivism, on the ground of its power of organisation; for their
 position raises them above the cloudy influence which turns the
 people from the renovating faith.

The oppres-
 sion of Italy
 by Germany
 ended.

All the provisional institutions, which throughout the West
 are to mark its temporal reorganisation as a political movement,
 will find ready comprehension in Germany, when the religion
 of Humanity is able to reach it in any considerable extent. The
 great difficulties will be in the spiritual domain, not as regards
 the regime, nor even as regards the doctrine, but in relation to
 the worship. The Germans will early appropriate the Positivist
 triumvirate as the only security against an unbridled road of commun-
 ism; and the Positivist school will easily take the place of the
 metaphysical Universities. But the regenerating faith will
 find great obstacles to overcome in introducing the worship of
 the past in a milieu deficient in antecedents. Such a milieu
 may have the sense of solidarity, allowing for some exaggeration
 due to the national tendency to mistake vigour for depth.
 For continuity, the conditions of German history make its full
 appreciation difficult, the German nation not tracing further
 back than ten centuries. Almost alien to the Roman incorpora-
 tion, and only late subjected to the training of Catholic-feudal-
 ism, Germany has not received even the intellectual develop-
 ment of Greece through the normal channel, whilst its connec-

The greatest
 difficulty
 spiritually
 will be in
 establishing
 the worship
 of the past.

tion with the Theocracy rests only on a confused tradition of the rudimentary Theocracy of Scandinavia.

The calendar
scantly wel-
comed in
Germany.

In confirmation of this view, we have the scanty welcome of the historical calendar in Germany, whereas in the rest of the West the institution is beginning to be popular. The difference is one hardly explicable by its not sufficiently satisfying German vanity; for the pride of Spain has acquiesced in the synopsis, though Spain has fewer representatives than any other Western nation. The opposition is traceable mainly to the tight fetters which press in Germany on the historical intelligence and sense, in spite of the cultivation in detail of an useless erudition and of vague conceptions on the philosophy of history.

Eventually
it will accept
the concrete,
and it has a
special apti-
tude for the
abstract,
worship.

Be the national difficulties however what they may, the intellectual and moral influences at work will have power sufficient to spread the concrete worship of Humanity in Germany, and that independently of the reaction of the other nations upon it. Moreover we may count on the special aptitude of the German nation for the abstract worship, the form which is ultimately to prevail, and which in its normal rudiments, will, during the transition, be combined with the historical commemorations. This decisive expansion of the Western worship is foreshadowed by the welcome it meets from the two appendices of Germany, from Holland and from Scandinavia, countries better prepared by their antecedents for the adoption of the Positive system of commemoration.

Institution
of a festival
marking the
close of the
transition.

This leads me to condense the considerations here offered on the last period of the Western transition, by instituting a festival fitted to denote its termination in principle. The whole temporal and spiritual construction reserved for the last generation of the nineteenth century, has, as its grand object, the reconstruction, in a better form than in the Middle Ages, of the Western Republics on the basis of the Positive faith, accepted as supreme by the metropolis of Humanity. The visible presentation of this result,—the decisive guarantee of the regeneration of mankind,—must be the completion of the concrete worship of Humanity by the solemn installation of her highest organs in the central temple of the Goddess of the Crusades. Adopting a proper cenotaph only in cases of necessity, we must in all others, induce, as a fraternal act, the several nations to resign the possession of their noble dead, to receive higher honour in the chief seat of the Religion of Humanity. Ravenna

Transfer of
the greatest
dead to
Paris.

was entitled to refuse repentant Florence the tomb of Dante; but Paris, purified from all temporal sway and become the centre of the ultimate spirituality, will obtain the relics of the incomparable poet, and, in succession, the other treasures for which it alone is the proper place. Their solemn and splendid transfer to the Holy City will prepare Western Europe for the unprecedented ceremony which is to mark the definitive advent of the demonstrable faith, and of peaceful activity under the guidance of that faith. If the founder of the religion of Humanity reach the great age of Fontenelle or of Hobbes, the crowning act of his career will be the inauguration of the worship—the abstract and concrete worship—of the Great Being, surrounded by deputations from all the elements of the West.

The transition in its most important portion thus accomplished, and its accomplishment coinciding with the end of the exceptional century, the West so reorganised may, in the next generation, secure the gradual triumph of the Positive faith, whilst it carries over the world the flag of Man's Future. At first sight it would seem that one generation must be insufficient for the extension to the race of the final religion, but two general arguments combine to show that such success is warranted by the whole system of sociological laws.

The transition in the rest of the world.

In definitive unison, in noble governance—both union and governance due to the religion of Humanity—the Western nations will exercise on the world a decisive influence, free as they will be from discord, free too from designs of oppression. For, as their expansion without was coincident with their internal disorder, it has hitherto lacked both the completeness and nobleness of which it is susceptible. Their empirical attempts to obtain conversions, attempts which were an illusion for themselves, an oppression for others, were besides inconciliable with the dissensions of men who can preach a religion which claimed universality whilst disputing with one another for an ascendancy which was rather temporal than spiritual. Quite otherwise will it be, when a faith in the truest sense common, a faith acceptable by all, shall preside over the expansion of the regenerated West, its intellectual and social communication of itself, with no other aim but to aid the spontaneous convergence towards the normal state of Humanity. The various forms of Monotheism having completely neutralised each other, the nations which believed in them turn elsewhere for the uni-

A generation sufficient, seeing the favourable circumstances.

versality which they vainly proclaimed. Amidst the nations the same disposition prevails; they reject ephemeral sects and instinctively aspire after the definitive faith, as the general outcome of the preparatory process on which the West has been engaged for the last thirty centuries. Finally, the Fetichist nations will welcome with gratitude a religion which, whilst it delivers them from tyrannical attempts, stamps with its approbation their beliefs, as the indispensable cradle and the normal complement of the human synthesis.

Positivism
addresses
the leading
minds.

Apart from these spontaneous tendencies to the adoption by the race of the solution elaborated by the West, we must take into account the power there lies in Positivism to gain the assent of the governors prior to its acceptance by the governed. Qualified as it is, by its very nature, to undertake the government of the world, the Religion of Humanity asks in each case solely for the conversion of the chiefs, everywhere at present predisposed to substitute an organic synthesis for effete creeds. Ill-guided as has been, hitherto, the intercourse of the Western nations with the other branches of the human family, it has in an empirical way led to relations which, under right guidance, will rapidly propagate a solution which is the object of general expectation.

The one
generation
that is to see
the conver-
sion of their
chiefs.

If we combine these last considerations with the preceding, we shall feel that this generation ought to be enough to enable the new West to secure the acceptance of its faith by the spiritual and temporal leaders of the nations. In naming a much longer period, as I did in the 'General View,' I had in view the final adoption of the universal religion by the populations those leaders govern. This result will in all cases be slow of attainment; meantime the conversion of the higher minds may always remove, as in the West, the main source of disturbance, the invariable origin of which is the exhaustion of the old beliefs and the apparent hopelessness of a substitute.

The conver-
sion of the
people to be
the work of
the second
generation.

Action of
Paris.

It is this propagation of the transition to the populations which the West is to direct, during the second generation of the normal period, as France was called to preside over the transition of the West in the last generation of the exceptional century. The preponderance of Paris will be more marked in this later process than in the earlier, but it will have a different character. Claiming no longer any temporal power, the city of the Western tombs will move in direct course towards that

ency of mankind which the Religion of Humanity gives it. It is, by giving its fullest extension to the concrete worship the Positive priesthood must organise at Paris the complementary transition, in which political action will be simply the assistant of philosophy and poetry now irrevocably identified. For this it will be sufficient to develop in an appropriate manner the germs of Islam, of Polytheism, nay even of Fetichism, which I have placed at the very opening of the historical calendar, and gradually to introduce most of the abstract festivals, hardly more than rudiments during the principal transition.

• This direction implies that the general transition is normally decomposable into three successive phases, analogous, though not numerically equal, to the phases of the Western transition. From the point of view now presented, I consider a period of seven years as sufficient for the action of the regenerate West to tell upon the monotheistic East. The other two phases will each require thirteen years for the satisfactory affiliation, to the metropolis of Humanity, first of the Polytheistic nations, then of the Fetichists. But, whilst from their dependence they cannot but be successive, the three parts of this secondary transition ought to be laboured simultaneously, even during the second half of the Western or principal transition. Before its complete accomplishment, idolatrists and missionaries, availing themselves in every case of the natural course of events, will have developed the direct affinities which exist between Positivism and every other form of human existence.

Three phases
of the general
transition.

In each phase of this secondary transition, we must allow for three distinct stages, the analogues of those offered by the transition of the West, when we group, taking France as the centre, the Catholic world and the Protestant world, each as a whole, around France. Although in these three stages, just as in the secondary transition as a whole, we proceed with our action simultaneously, the full results can never be reached but in succession—as was seen to hold good of the principal transition. Classification being naturally of more importance when the objects classified are more distinct, it is in it that lies the great difficulty of the sociological question which remains for me to solve. There is no room for hesitation in regard to the general transition when we limit ourselves to its three stages of

Three steps
in each
phase.

Monotheism, Polytheism, and Fetichism. But when we come to deal with the three subdivisions of each of them, it naturally appears more difficult at present to classify them than it was to classify the three cases of the Western transition, the French, the Catholic, and the Protestant, though the distinctions between these latter are less marked.

Their classification.

Taking the first phase of the complementary transition, I unhesitatingly solve the problem by representing the Positive regeneration as destined to prevail first in Turkey, then in Russia, lastly in Persia. This classification, which, as in every other case, sums up the comparisons to which it relates, follows from the conclusions we reached in the last volume, on the monotheistic or last of the three intermediate stages between Theocracy and Sociocracy. All I have now to do is, to systematise the historical theory of Islam, a theory thus seen to issue from the whole past, particularly from its modern period.

The Theory of Islam.

When I created, as I did in my fundamental work, the philosophy of history, it could not possibly at once attain the precision or the completeness requisite for a satisfactory estimate of the Monotheism of the East. I ought besides to confess that, unwittingly, I at that time shared in the prejudices against Islam derived from Catholic sources, and which involuntarily spread even on the most emancipated minds, the great Diderot not excepted. To these two sources I trace the radically mistaken judgment I originally passed on the social influence of Islam in the East as in the West of the Roman world. But my definite view, as my volume shows distinctly, that Monotheisms is, that they contributed equally, each in the completion of the education of mankind. The two transient syntheses, shaped, the earlier by St. Paul, the latter by Mohammed, differ not in their object; and both equally exhausted, both, though in different ways, are qualified to aid the advent of the final religion, a just presentiment of which is traceable in the noblest organs of the Great Being.

Respective parts played by Islam and Catholicism.

I regard the two systems as destined respectively to rule the two great sections of the Roman world, on which sections it devolved to elaborate, first, the intellectual, then the social movement. Though united under the banner of Monotheism, it was the second section alone which could carry on to its full effect the rudimentary effort at separation of the two powers,

The end aimed at in the theological concentration, and the source of its peculiar doctrinal characteristics. But the failure of Byzantinism as a social system, the natural result of the whole antecedents of Greece, compelled the true Catholicism to call itself Roman, and by so doing early to raise a presentiment, by the contradiction the term involved, that its claims to universality were in the last resort invalid.

It was under the influence of this contrast, quite sensible in the first phase of the Middle Ages, that Mohammed founded the Monotheism adapted for the governors, by consolidating the fusion of the two powers; as St. Paul had founded the Monotheism of the governed on the separation of the two. The aim of both is to regulate human life, on the basis of the whole earlier advance of man; the means adopted, in the one case, the discipline of command, in the other that of obedience. They were suited, then, to the respective wants of the two portions, the intellectual and social portions, of the world incorporated into one whole by the Roman Empire. Just as the Latins, at all times amenable to discipline, stood in need of an independent priesthood, competent to secure the just sway of universal morality over the active will; so the Greeks, who never had been disciplined, stood in need of an energetic concentration, such as Islam alone could systematically organise. I do not hesitate to look on the Mohammedans as the natural successors of the Romans in the government of the Greek nation; sacrificed as that population has to the culture of the intellect, it will never be able regenerated by Positivism.

The Monotheism of Mohammed addressed the governors; that of St. Paul the governed.

In the mission thus assigned it we have the only possible explanation of the aggregate intellectual and social characteristics of Islam, forming, as it did, a nation of patricians to rule, through its imperial Monotheism, those whom the Roman senate absorbed into its social Polytheism. As well suited to the East as the defensive Monotheism was to the West, it presupposed a conquered population, as the other did a people capable of discipline. In this empirical division, however, of the Roman world between the two, long contests were an inevitable incident, contests naturally originating with the more active and more concentrated faith. Equilibrium became possible only then, when the crusades had taught the Catholic world the impossibility of overcoming a more perfect form of belief; and

Historical relations of the two Monotheisms.

had diverted Islam from the conquest of the West. Hence arose, before the end of the first period of modern history, a tacit but decisive compromise, which reduced to order the latest phase of man's preparation, by leaving the Mussulmen to settle themselves firmly in the Greek world, to the entire disregard of the Byzantine appeals for Latin support.

Turkey.
Its incorpo-
ration with
the Western
systems.

This instinctive agreement marks the true beginning of conservative diplomacy, which ordinarily is made to date only from the disruption of Catholicism, on an untenable view of the Western revolution. More and more strengthened by the whole course of subsequent events, the division has resulted in the Turks becoming more thoroughly an integral part of the Western system than the Greeks ever could have been. But at the same time, by its dispelling, once for all, all hopes, on either side, of a true universality, this concurrent settlement has gradually made manifest the equal exhaustion of the two Monotheisms, the Monotheism of defence and the Monotheism of Empire, both, though in different ways, destined to prepare the way for Positivism.

The general
transition
will begin
with Turkey.

If we would give greater precision to this judgment, we must consider the Turkish government as in all essential respects adapted to the wants of Eastern Europe, though, on empirical grounds, opinion would confine it to Western Asia. The Positive transition must be far advanced before we can conceive of the Greeks as without the Turks, any more than the Turks without the Greeks, the Turks not being competent to feed, the Greeks to govern themselves. But whilst this theory rectifies a mistaken policy, the errors of which are now generally recognised, it is introduced here, to show at once the danger and the impossibility of prolonging the existence of the two Monotheisms. They cannot stand alone and they cannot combine, so that, great as is the tolerance—the necessary tolerance—of the ruling faith, they must both equally be expecting the universal ascendancy of the Positive religion, which in their various ways they concurred in preparing. It is, however, from the Turks more especially that there will come cooperation in furtherance of the organic transition, for they are more predisposed than the Greeks to second a doctrine, which, for the present, addresses itself to the governors as Islam did, whilst it effects the division of the two powers more completely than Catholicism.

Persia.

We must, then, think of Turkey, as beginning, under the

impulse of the West, the complementary position which, in the course of one generation, is to succeed the primary position directed by France with no other guide but Humanity. But the historical theory of Islam leads equally to the conclusion, that Persia will be the last of the Monotheistic nations to join in the organic transition. For the Mussulmen of the East differ radically from those of the West, in that they have not had, as the latter, an exceptional mission, the task singularly congenial to the conquering faith, of governing populations unsusceptible of discipline. In the absence of this vocation, one limited to the Greek portion of the Roman world, Islam in Persia became at once oppressive and subversive, so as to foster its natural defects, while the Turks generally managed to turn them. It is true, that in Persia, a substitute for the task of governing the Greeks seems offered by the care, on a large scale, of a population sacrificed to the premature advent of Monotheism, as Greece had been to the exclusive culture of the intellect. The two cases, however, never really corresponded, in consequence of the unavoidable dispersion which is characteristic of the Jews since the fall of Polytheism. The unfortunate race missed, through its blind obstinacy, its single opportunity of regaining its nationality when it rejected the noble advances of the great Mohammed, who might have become the Messiah of their vain expectations.

By the fifteenth law of the first philosophy it is little to be wondered at, that I thus place in close connection the remarks bearing on the two extreme forms of Eastern Monotheism, before describing the position of Russia, the representative of the modern developement of the intermediate form. When the adoption of Byzantinism had neutralised the Eastern Scandinavians, as the Western had been disciplined by their adoption of Catholicism, the former would be able to retain some of their aspirations after conquest, which had been debarred their natural course. Their Monotheism, however, was as little able to arouse enthusiasm as to inspire discipline; its doctrinal system being constructed to divide the two powers, its regime leading to their fusion. Hence a radical contradiction, one which should at one and the same time dispel the anxiety of Europe, and concentrate the attention of Asia. The three forms of Eastern Monotheism are destined simultaneously to pass under the sociological law, by which factitious aggregates are to be

decomposed as a natural process; and this even ~~has~~ nobly introduced system into this change among the Monotheists of the West. Notwithstanding this destiny, the storms occasioned by its empirical accomplishment will be naturally more dangerous and more immediate in Russia than in Turkey or even in Persia, as Russia is far more heterogeneous in composition, and its heterogeneity is of a more disturbing character. To remedy, as far as possible, the aberrations attendant on an ill-directed empirical policy, the autocratic government of this confused agglomeration of nations should make its policy dependent on the sociological position of Russia, following Turkey, that is, as in closer relations with the Western world.

Concluding
remarks on
the first
phase.

My course of lectures, fixed for 1862, on the whole organic transition, will be the proper occasion for expanding as they deserve the preceding remarks; at present I must limit myself to the general conception, a conception embodied in the classification of the Monotheisms. This first phase of the secondary transition enables us to foretaste the spiritual and temporal advantages, which are in reserve for the belated populations, approaching, as they will do, by a systematic process, the normal state, the natural outcome of the evolution of the West. In reference to the most important case, Turkey, the fusion in Islam of the two powers may be looked upon as calculated to facilitate for the Turk the establishment of a religion which addresses itself primarily to the upper classes. The concentration of wealth in Turkey will be a further aid in the introduction of the sociocratic regime, as there will be none of the hindrances arising from the intermediate position of the bourgeoisie in the West, between the patriciate and the proletariat. In the lectures above announced, these various considerations, over and above their own direct purpose, will throw light upon the Western movement, the several branches of which will, though in a less degree, admit of similar comparisons. Adapted to meet the wants of the latest phase of the central transition, such teaching is still more needed when the scale becomes larger, the divisions more marked. Above all I must look to those lectures for the full explanation of the two last instances of the regeneration of mankind, only the most summary statement being here admissible, though in regard to them our intervention may be more thorough and more efficacious.

In the initial phase of the secondary transition we have only

the influence of the West to look to ~~the~~ In the second phase, we have the additional assistance of the influence already regenerated Monotheists upon the polytheistic nations, with whom they are more peculiarly connected. Islam, in particular, possesses an aptitude for this, as, reducing command to a system, it enjoins toleration of all nations that have any law, be that law what it may. And, although the dominion of the Mussulmen, in the main, is exclusively adapted to the Greeks, their empire in India was less of a disturbing element than that of the Western Monotheists. More skilful in incorporating themselves with theocratic populations, their relations with them, when no longer supreme, remain more favourable to the advent of the Religion of Humanity than those of the passing Englishmen.

Second
phase.
Regenera-
tion of the
Polytheists.

Whoever be the Western apostles, Turks, and, still more, Persians, who preach the new faith to the Polytheistic nations, the system which must always guide them in its introduction is that of a fusion of doctrines. In the principal transition, the Western institutions which are meant to facilitate it, concern only the worship and the regime, because the intellectual preparation of the West, both negative and positive, is such as to allow of the direct introduction of the fundamental doctrine of Positivism. The same holds good of the first phase of the complementary transition, Islam, by virtue of the simplicity of its faith, requiring no intellectual modification. But when we come to the Theocracies, we feel the need of completing our general conception of the organic transition, by introducing into it the intermediate element. Then, besides the worship and the regime which at first were all that required modifying, we must institute a provisional doctrine, by its nature qualified to transform Polytheism into Positivism, without any intervention of Monotheism.

A transi-
tional doc-
trine requi-
red for
the Poly-
theists.

For this I must idealise the encyclopædic hierarchy, first however contracting it within due limits. And, although either of the two ternary arrangements is available for our object, we must select that in which the vital order forms the indispensable link between the inorganic and the human order. Hence we form the conception of three goddesses, the representatives respectively of Materiality, Vitality, and Humanity. Whilst, from the objective point of view, the three by their harmony express the economy of the world, from the subjective,

Indication
of this
transitional
doctrine.
See above,
p. 187.

that harmony is in agreement with the constitution of the brain. The phenomena of the first class, in consequence of the greater regularity which they owe to their greater simplicity, are suggestive of the intellect, in particular, by the idea of order; those of the second, point to progress through action; those of the third, build union on the foundation of love.

This degree of concentration sufficient to develop all the philosophical aptitude of theology.

Such is the legitimate limit of contraction for the synthesis of Theology, if the object be the distinct display of its powers as a philosophy, without really taking into account its efficacy as a political direction. The real destination of Monotheism was social; and it was oppressive to the intellect as devoting it to vague speculations, where there could be no satisfactory presentation of the great variety of phenomena. Nor is the presentation satisfactory even when we reduce Polytheism to its binary form, a form not more adapted to the wants of our intellect than to those of our moral nature. But the ternary form, a threefold causality, meets the demands of Theology, for the Positive spirit, though more analytical than Theology, employs habitually the three progressive terms which answer to this threefold causation. By substituting goddesses for gods, we sanction the legitimate preeminence of women, without clashing with our instinctive tendencies, clearly indicated by the gender of the word *use*. The peculiar character of each goddess, and even her ideal conception, may be easily determined by the nature of her attributes. Whilst the three preserve their independence, their relations to one another should embody, ideally, the real subordination of the phenomena they represent, a subordination at once objective and subjective, on the principle of decrease of simplicity and increase of dignity.

This trinity of philosophical creation may without difficulty be engrafted upon the several Polytheisms, on that of India especially, the object being to prepare the way for the ultimate establishment of Positivism. Whilst giving the tendencies to synthesis as complete a satisfaction as is compatible with Theology, it will excite a stronger desire for the purely subjective unity, engendered by the substitution of laws for causes, when in the growth of Positive conceptions we reach the only universal point of view, a point inaccessible to any absolute doctrine. Adapted to the generation which succeeds that for which I formed the concrete worship, this provisional faith may

last as long as shall be required for the reorganisation of the different intellectual states of the several nations, to receive the encyclopædic training of the normal state. In the evolution of the West, social reasons made Monotheism a necessity, otherwise such a condensation of Polytheism would have been more favourable to the advent of the final philosophy. In this way, then, the nations which have remained theocratic may find compensation for the delay, in passing more easily than all the other theological believers, through the common transition, by the aid of a dogmatic creation which adapts to their use the analytical process, for the synthetic result of which they are waiting.

On a comparison of the several cases which properly belong to the second phase of the subsidiary transition, our sociological theory dispels all uncertainty as to their classification, the past being a pledge of the future. As in the preceding phase, so here, it is in agreement with the order of their respective distance, locally, from the West. For Positivism must first regenerate the Polytheists of India, then of China, lastly those of Japan.

Classification
of the
Polytheists.

Although it will act simultaneously on the three; whether through the direct agency of the West or indirectly through the Muhammadan, it is impossible to doubt that the Theocracy which has suffered the least from time will be the most open to the regenerative process. Besides my lecture on this subject, I must refer to the preceding volume for explanations, inconsistent with the limits of my present sketch, to show the latent predisposition of the Brahmins in favour of the faith which will restore their social position whilst perfecting their moral nature and their mental organisation. I have announced already that the Positive priesthood would shortly be recruited by the adjunction of a very small portion of the Catholic clergy; I may now state that the theocratic caste is already disposed, at the fitting time, to furnish a much larger contingent. Positivism will deliver it from the oppression of the temporal power to which it has been subjected for twenty centuries, an oppression which it bows to more and more without ever losing its consciousness of its spiritual superiority, and the hope of seeing it definitively reestablished. Such a restoration, it is true, demands its complete renunciation of command and even of property, but the systematic guardians of human order will not be slow to accept

(a) India.

The Brahmins.

conditions in ~~the~~ name of their social mission and of ~~their~~ ^{their} ~~spiritual~~ ^{spiritual} dignity.

Positivism
will begin
by putting
an end to
the British
domination.

Positivism offers, then, to the regenerate Brahmins the re-organisation of the Brahminical body, but it offers them besides, and nothing else does, the gratification of the noble wish they have ever cherished to free their theocratic country from all foreign dominion. Appealing in fitting terms to the English nation, it will peaceably remove a yoke which, under whatever veil of illusion, justly inspires more antipathy than that of the Mussulmen. As it will have rendered this service prior to the introduction of the Positive faith in its true form, that faith will be readily welcomed as the consequence of the provisional doctrine, the great object of instituting that doctrine being to enable the Brahmins who have become Positivists to modify their theocratic milieu.

Thus the
speculative
race will
become
everywhere
subject to
the regene-
rating faith.

In this way it is, that Sociocracy should, in the earlier years of the next century, incorporate directly with itself, the best upholders of Theocracy, as realising their invincible aspirations after an universal religion, by the preeminence it assigns morality in its synthesis. By their adjunction, the speculative or intellectual portion of the race will, in all its branches, be subject to the regenerating faith, for it will have extended its sway over the Polytheistic complement of that portion.

The Active
race
(b) China.

Bouddhism.

The inferiority of the two other theocratic states must not be regarded as a direct consequence of a difference of race. It is due, principally, to the profound disturbance introduced into the caste system by the success of a mistaken effort at reform which failed in the country where it began. When driven from India, Bouddhism was almost successful in China, where the adoption of the examination system tended to change the Theocracy into a Pedantocracy, thus realising, as far as was possible, the dream of the Greek literateurs and their modern imitators.

In China
Positivism
will be
seconded by
the practical
wants.

The degeneration is one which throws great obstacles in the way of the intellectual and social ascendancy of a religion more hostile to Metaphysics than to Theology. Its introduction, however, into China will be mainly facilitated by practical considerations, whereas, in India, it will appeal to speculative tendencies. In disorganising the predominant caste, the Bouddhist revolution favoured the growth of industry, in accordance so far with the nature of the active race. As in the West, so in China, industry allows of direct contact between the Positive faith and

the popular reason. Yet, even in China, the Religion of Humanity must, at first, be best suited to the rulers, not merely the temporal rulers, but also to the spiritual guides, provided that it rightly avail itself of the local conditions. The metaphysical aberration cannot but be displeasing to the better Mandarins, interfering as it does with the full exertion of their legitimate action on society. First overcoming the empirical habits traceable to the excessive prominence of practical questions, they will welcome the only doctrine competent to direct systematically the activity of man.

The like dispositions, and with a stronger hold, are entertained by the rulers of Japan, emancipated from Theocracy by their military developements, as was the West, whilst they have avoided the danger of Pedantry, essentially a Chinese error. And yet I believe the Japanese to be less prepared than the Chinese for the acceptance of Positivism, considering the lower degree to which industrial existence has been developed. Although less tainted by Metaphysics, they have kept more of the habits and feelings of the theocratic state, the change from them having been more recent; this is evidenced by their isolation as a nation, the more striking from its being as it were in daily contrast with the emigrations of the Chinese. Hence it is, that the most eastern portion of the Polytheistic world will be most difficult of access to the religion of Humanity. Still, its relative character will allow of partial conversion there, so soon as the Japanese chiefs shall distinguish positive faith from the various Western creeds which excite a just anxiety. The synthesis which comes forward is the normal division of the two powers, is in direct congruity with the society most disturbed by their fusion. So a milieu must early appreciate the power Positivism has, to systematise its instinctive preference of action to contemplation and the persistent subordination of all special forms of activity to a paramount morality.

Such is the method on which, as a result of all the previous preparatory processes, first in the emancipated portion of mankind, then in the monotheistic, the polytheistic world will be regenerated during the intermediate phase of the secondary transition; the world, that is, which comprises, with its various appendages, the half of the human race. The movement of universal reconstruction, which has already passed from the speculative to the active race, will have only, then, to reach the

Complete
conversion
of Poly-
theists.

affective, the sociological characteristic of which is its adherence to Fetichism.

The affective race.
Fetichists.

In treating this, the last complement of the organic transition, enough that the whole preceding volume points to the competence of Positivism to deal directly with the question, ulterior explanations being reserved for my special course. Where there is incomplete intellectual emancipation, it is likely that the case of the affective race may appear to present almost insuperable difficulties, but the really regenerate in soul may even now feel that it will shortly offer the highest triumph of the true faith. The failure of Monotheistic, nay even of Polytheistic, efforts to modify the Fetichists, will but place in a stronger light the capacity of the most systematic of syntheses to incorporate with itself the most spontaneous.

Their conversion considered,
(1) Philosophically
(a) Mentally
(b) Morally.

The whole difficulty, intellectual and moral, of the transition of mankind is necessarily in Theologism, since it has to disappear entirely. Whereas, the sociological theory, with which my readers are now familiar, shows that Fetichism, sanctioned by Positivism, may enter into direct combination with it, without imposing any great changes either on the heart or on the intellect. The first step, alike in the search after causes and in the study of laws, the spontaneous mode of the fictitious synthesis does not originate the absolute philosophy; that really dates its reign from the introduction of indirect causality, and however inevitable the second mode was in the primary evolution, when we can direct the process of initiation, we may overleap it, if the mental development, whether of the individual or of the society, be fully systematised. For it is not difficult to turn the mind from causes when we reveal laws; a reduction of the general rectification of the Fetichist logic into the distinguishing properly activity from life. From the moral point of view, the passage is easier still, since all that Positivism does, is to adopt on system the superiority of the heart to the intellect, which was made by the instinct of Fetichism the permanent basis of the human synthesis. The assimilation by imagination of the external to the human order is indispensable, if the definitive religion is to complete our conceptions and develop our emotions, nor does any risk attend the process if we bear constantly in mind its essentially subjective character.

(1) Politically.

From the political point of view, the Positive regeneration of the Fetichist nations does not offer greater difficulties than

under the intellectual or moral aspect. In the original evolution, Theocracy was absolutely indispensable; and the subsequent military transition with its three stages was also necessary for the West; but it is only in regard to the original evolution that there are imperative reasons for such a course, for it could not otherwise be the preparation for the final state. But when that state is once definitively established in any single centre, its extension to the race requires, in no case, a repetition of the phases proper to the primary movement. The deficiency, socially, of the Fetichists, relating as it does to their inadequate development of public life, may be remedied by their direct acceptance of the peaceful form of activity under the control of the demonstrable faith, without any theocratic or military preliminaries. This systematic fusion of the primæval with the definitive form of existence has had its way so prepared, that it will be easiest to realise in the case of the oldest Fetichism, where the Religion of Humanity will not have even to modify a priesthood, beyond any other, susceptible of transformation.

Classification
of the
Fetichists.

The last phase of the complementary transition, as the two others, offers three independent cases, ranked again by their distance, locally, from the Western so that we deal with the Fetichists first in Africa, then in Asia, lastly in Oceania. But as the first phase, so here also, must treat the two extremes first, the middle last, as there is an analogous, and even more strongly marked, confusion between the tendency of the people itself and the influence exerted on it from without.

(a) Africa.

Ending once for all a proselytism which is a mockery and a disturbance, Positivism will invade Africa—the great seat of Fetichism—into the only religion capable of fully appreciating the affective race and binding it by proper ties to the two others. This is the final step towards our realising the extent to which Turkey should assist France in the systematic propagation of the complementary transition. For the Mussulmen, when regenerate, will be better qualified than the apostles of the West, to convert Africa, especially central Africa, their habits giving them an easier access and leading to greater results. The moral barriers of which the principal Fetichist nations wisely avail themselves in addition to their local isolation, will fall, the moment that the central civilisation presents itself in a form which they can assimilate. As the great satisfaction of the Africans is in domestic life, the aptitude of the new civilisation

to develop that life will be a direct inducement to them to overcome it, when no longer in dread of stupid or culpable attempts. Preserved from the military regime by their defective state-organisation and their territorial isolation, they will be quick in adopting a peaceful activity which must never be other than free, and which the religion of Humanity subordinates to its moral end. Where astrolatry prevails, the greater extent and order of the societies will smooth the advent of the new doctrine, provided that its apostles know how to use and to respect the local priesthood, better prepared than any other for Positivism.

(c) Oceania.

The intercourse of the Oceanians with the West is of a much later date than that of the Africans, but it has been on a greater scale, from their not being isolated, and it has been more fraught with disturbance from the absence of discipline. The tribes visited by Cook are scarcely to be recognised, and are rapidly tending to extinction from physical and moral degradation, unless Positivists succeed, while it is yet time, in rousing all emancipated thinkers to reprobate the interference of all theologists of whatever order. But the priesthood of Humanity will soon lead the public mind of the West to feel, that irreconcilable religions, each discredited at its own proper centre, cannot but be wholly incapable of propagating the central civilisation more particularly amongst the Fetichists. Besides that commercial or other ordinary intercourse is itself less disturbing, it will improve in proportion as the internal reorganisation of the several states acts as a dissuasive to European expansion, during the inevitable break-up of the colonial system which has already begun for all the Western nations. There is ground, then, for my hope that the religion of Humanity will have gained a decisive ascendancy in time to prevent the extinction by a natural process of the Fetichists of Oceania, and that the tribes thus saved will, in the name of the Great Being, take their part in the right management of its planetary home.

(d) America.

There remains for me only to explain the most difficult case in the whole secondary transition, that, viz., which concerns the gravest of the anomalies originating in the Western revolution, the examination of the Positive regeneration in regard to the American Fetichists. Their habitation of itself sufficiently indicates the position, so sadly exceptional, of the greater number, sprung as they are from the principal centre of the

affective race and transplanted to America by a monstrous policy, to repair a horrible depopulation. Although Catholicism was the first instrument of this European crime, it is Protestantism that must bear the greatest blame for its extension and aggravation. As far as it is possible to do so, Positivism is competent to make compensation for the aberrations of theologists, and it does so by enforcing a just appreciation of the oppressed, by exposing the sophisms of the oppressor. Adopting the decisive aphorism, which came into use at the opening of the French Revolution, it shows how irreconcilable is the regeneration of the West with the existence of this monstrous institution, even for nations who have been passive in the matter.

Leaving out of the question the sociological theory of the human races, the philosophy of history enables us to brand with reprobation this anomaly, directly contrary to the normal destination of slavery, which is only tolerable as the subjection of the labourer to the warrior. Hence, while in Antiquity slavery aided the progress both of the master and the slave, by bringing them into closer contact, its unnatural modern form degrades both by separating them. This is why the cessation, in the natural course of the slave trade, was sufficient to transform the slavery of Antiquity, whilst the systematic prohibition of that trade has hitherto only aggravated the slavery of modern times.

Modern
Slavery and
the Slave
Trade.

Though the anomaly is one which can come to no good end, the priesthood of Humanity will prepare the élite of the West to facilitate its inevitable extinction, by a right use and due extension of the particular centre which the oppressed race has courageously vindicated for itself. In expiation of the crime which for the last three centuries has stained indirectly or directly the whole West, the West Indian Archipelago must, with suitable indemnities, be given up to the free descendants of the transplanted Africans. There their own spontaneous efforts, already felt in Hayti, the centre of their freedom, to clear their Fetichism from the alloy of Theology, will enable Positivism to effect their regeneration more satisfactorily than that of their brothers in Oceania, by a larger introduction of Western influence.

The American Archipelago should be given up to the descendants of the American slaves.

Thus, after devoting the greater part of this chapter to France, as the typical case of the final transition, I have charac-

Conclusion.

terised the thirteen successive stages of its extension, to the
nations of Western Europe, to the nations who are yet in
the theological state, and to the Fetichist nations. As no one of
its important applications is excluded, I have submitted to a
conclusive and necessary test the determination of the future as
based on the explanation of the past, in order to prove that the
Religion of Humanity is competent to direct the present. The
whole range of human affairs thus grasped in one conception,
the reign of Humanity is inaugurated ; for it lies in this, above
all, that it systematises a progress beyond the reach of the
syntheses which could embrace a part only of time and space.

GENERAL CONCLUSION OF THE FOURTH VOLUME.

THE presentation of the normal state and of its universal acceptance—with this we complete the Positive synthesis whose foundations were laid, in the two preceding volumes, in the study of the human order and its evolution,—an evolution at once inevitable and indispensable, such study resting on the unity proclaimed in the first volume. Each of the five chapters constructed in the present volume is an essential contribution to the direct creation of relative harmony. Its subjective origin is a consequence, in the first chapter, of the fundamental theory of the Great Principle, a theory which finds immediate expression in the conception, first of the Religion of Humanity, then of the normal existence of mankind. The paramount importance of feeling,—such is always the foundation of Positive Unity; but it may take one of two forms in succession, according to the relative position of thought and action as the ministers of affection. I devoted the second chapter to the most direct form of the consensus, that in which action confines itself to helping the intelligence to express emotion; the form required for the period of our education and for the system of human worship; in the former of which the wants of life are not suffered to press on us; in the latter, for the time they are suspended. This done, the two next chapters establish the most complete unity, as they subordinate thought to action in order to modify the external necessities of our condition; in such a way as always to keep sympathy in accord with synthesis. Lastly, the concluding chapter consolidates this harmonious system, by proving its peculiar competence to be the immediate guide of the several nations in their action, and consequently of all individuals whatsoever.

Object of this volume to establish the relative unity.

Whatever the objective aim of this present volume, it is from its subjective appreciation above all that must flow its efficacy as a religious work. Looked at as a whole, the picture

It is in the subjective appreciation of the volume that lies

its value
under the
religious
aspect.

it constructs, the conception of a state of things which as yet
 has not been displayed, on a large scale, with irresistible evidence
 the capacity of our cerebral system for reflecting the universal
 order. A necessary consequence of that dependence of the sub-
 jective on the objective which lies at the root of our existence,
 this power manifests itself at the very earliest beginning of the
 upward movement of Humanity, in the development of rational
 prevision, such prevision step by step embracing more and more
 complex phenomena. The simplest astronomical calculation
 presents a marvellous coincidence between the actual chain of
 operations within us and the future succession of events without
 us. Such a result, under whatever fictitious synthesis, must, at
 all times, have foreshadowed the inevitable advent of the true
 harmony, since in such result man is in union with the world with-
 out, becoming the mirror of that world, when law is substituted
 for cause. But whatever the value attaching to the continuous
 enlargement of this faculty, it cannot determine the definitive
 renovation of the human understanding so long as it does not
 extend to the most important and the most critical order of
 phenomena. Thus judged, the volume that now ended is the
 principal portion of the religious construction which it com-
 pletes, for in it the brain shows itself not less able to reflect
 the human than the external order, and that by virtue of the
 invariability common to both.

On what the
reality of the
Positive con-
ception of
the Future
depends.

The demonstration of this power is a consequence, as at
 present, from the concurrence in the general of the two elabora-
 tions of unequal length, which in succession occupy the con-
 cluding volume, both uniformly under the guidance of the
 fundamental principle laid down at its opening. However
 satisfactorily the three chapters between the first and last may
 have delineated the three capital aspects of the normal exist-
 ence, if the result at which they arrive is to be conclusive, it
 can only be so by supplying us with the direct representation of
 its acceptance by the race. Thus, the reality of the conception
 of the future is a consequence, on the one hand, of its being
 deduced from the past, the general explanation of which past
 is irrefragable; and, on the other hand, of its enabling us to
 understand and regulate the present.

Humanity
thus directly
connected
with the
universal
order.

In this way it is, that the Positive synthesis takes definitive
 possession of its last and chief domain, the mastery over which
 were incomplete, were the theory of the human order confined

to determining its nature and its preparation without understanding its ulterior development. His failure on this decisive point proved the inadequacy of the attempt made by my eminent precursor, Condorcet, to lay the foundations of Sociology. My success on the same point, in this volume, ought to be a proof that the essential conditions have been satisfactorily complied with as regards the two systems of static and dynamical laws which serve as the basis of the achievement.

Thus directly linked to the universal of Humanity finds herself altogether emancipated from the imaginary guardianship which during the period of her initiation was her instinctive substitute for an external guide. She definitively inaugurates her all-embracing providence, applying the whole body of the laws, static and dynamic, which she obeys, to the understanding, in the general, the future and the transition which is necessary to introduce that future. This step taken, her priesthood is enabled to reduce to system the real life of man, acting on the interpretation of her into which no caprice nor indistinctness ever enter, with no need for any revelation. Such is the type, after which each wellcultivated brain attains as completely the faculty of imaging the world in reference to the most complex as in reference to the simplest phenomena. If at any time, in application, a more detailed and more exact prevision is requisite, it will be accessible, then as now, with minds so prepared. For the inward operations of such understandings are as much in agreement with the outward course of moral and social events as with that of vital or inorganic phenomena. Traceable in rudiment to the earliest beginnings of man's initiation, the subordination of the subjective to the objective has now reached such completeness, that they who systematically exemplify it become, of necessity, the advisers of all, in an existence which they alone grasp in its true fullness.

The result
intellectually.

Viewed, then, as an intellectual creation, the construction (2) Morally proper to this volume satisfies the external condition of real unity by completing the process by which man is linked to the world. But, viewed as a moral creation, it is as conclusive for the internal condition, since it makes synthesis a direct result of sympathy. In it, feeling is shown to be more qualified to regulate the intellect, nay, even the activity, than had been asserted in the 'General View,' the introduction to the religious construction here terminated. In it, all speculations are directed

to the support of universal love, the only power which can give them system, sanction, and discipline. In it again, from the same source is drawn the general ordering of practical life, the most trivial acts of which become as noble as they are coherent by their influence on affection. Thus made the general regulator, not merely of the worship, but also of the doctrine and of the regime, the instinct of sympathy has given full proof of its capacity for synthesis. So we see the close of the treatise on Sociology realising, and fulfilling, the promises of its opening, in that it develops the only form of harmony which at once and the same time meets all the wants of human nature under all its manifold aspects.

These results in equal conformity with the principle and the purpose of the Relative Synthesis.

Such result is in equal conformity with the principle of the relative synthesis and with its purpose, since the intellectual and moral order constitute the domain of Positivism. The absolute synthesis made human phenomena the special object of its attention, yet it was unequal to a systematic conception of them, because it was unable ever to place itself at the social point of view. As incapable of representing composite existence as it was of sanctioning the feelings to which that existence owes its origin, whatever social value it had, drew not from the capabilities of its doctrine, but from the instinct of its priesthood, so long as that priesthood was progressive. The explanations of Theology were confined to the external world quite as much as those of Fetichism, and they tended to become even more illusory than those of Fetichism as regards the intellectual and moral world, by exaggerating the importance of man and not recognising his subordination to matter. Hence the study of the sacred sciences could appertain only to Positivism, though it could not enter into possession till it had reorganised the profane sciences, by the gradual substitution of laws for causes. But however slow of accomplishment, this advent, it is which marks the true commencement of the normal existence of the Great Being, an existence previously hampered by the intellectual obstacle of a fictitious faith, by the moral obstacle of a destructive activity. At the present time we may look upon the minority of Humanity as definitively ended, since the full conception of the final state has been formed, as is shown by the contemporaneous and correlated development of sociological prevision and of allcomprehending love, as substitutes for Theology and war.

Condense to the utmost the general estimate of this volume, and it resolves itself into the decision which perfects the constitution of the religion; the decision, that is, to place the worship before the doctrine, in accordance with an ever-recurring wish, realisable by Positivism alone. Such a step in advance is the culminating point in, and is characteristic of the formation of the relative unity, the gradual outcome of the three preceding volumes. After establishing the doctrine on which the whole system rests, the system is reduced thereon, by the subjective method, to the systematisation of Positive logic, applying that method directly in the capital construction of the cerebral theory. This done, it was possible, in the second volume, to institute the universal synthesis, on the basis of the scientific supremacy of Morals, and to regulate its application to social questions by laying the foundations for the normal separation of the powers. The third condensed the philosophy of history into the final amalgamation of the two states which stand, the one at the beginning, the other at the end of man's education, by the direct combination of Fetichism with Positivism. Still the religious series would have remained incomplete, had the doctrine maintained its precedence over the worship, a precedence irreconcilable with the subordination of intellect to feeling. It is this seventh and last step which naturally sums up the decisive creation of Positive unity in a simple transposition, the whole of the concluding volume amply proving the power both for synthesis and sympathy of such transposition.

Condensed to the utmost the volume the character of its placing the Worship before the Doctrine.

CONCLUSION OF THE WHOLE WORK OF THE SYSTEM OF POSITIVE POLITY.

Connection
of the relig-
ious con-
struction
with the in-
fluence of
Miriam
de Vaux.

To appreciate as a whole the religious construction in the four volumes now ended, it should be compared with my lectures of 1847, lectures of capital importance, and in them, on my moral regeneration, there arose, by a gradual process, the true synthesis. It was but a first outline, of an essentially dogmatic character, but it contained, not merely the substance of the 'General View,' but also all the germs of the concluding volumes. In 1848, my teaching became mainly historical and in this form it was repeated three years, according to the programme given in the preface to the third volume. I have not gone on with it since the publication of my first volume, but still it gave occasion, by anticipation, to the decisive elaboration of the great leading conceptions, static or dynamical, peculiar to the several portions of the present work. Such is, unquestionably, the filiation which links my whole religious construction to the angelic impulse which was destined to make me feel to its full force the true source of Positive unity.

pp. xxii-
xxiii.

Conception
of his whole
career.

As early as 1845, I saw in its true light, under this holy influence, my whole career; I saw that its second half had to transform philosophy into religion, as its first had changed science into philosophy. So was coordinated the series of efforts which had been the spontaneous outgrowth of my original attempt to proceed directly with the regeneration of society. The smaller works, reprinted as appendices to this treatise, show how, with the aim of reconstructing the spiritual power, I was gradually led to the prior formation of a philosophical theory capable of inspiring fixed convictions which all might share. This foundation once laid by the creation of Sociology I felt that it was inadequate as a means of spiritual reorganization unless duly completed by comprehending feeling no less than the intellect and the activity. Hence I undertook the present

work to base the universal synthesis on Morals as paramount, in theory as in practice; giving systematic expression, that is, to the freedom of Theocracy and of Catholicism by the aid of all the knowledge acquired by man.

The connection between the two phases of my mission, if Positive unity is to be efficient and complete. Scientific theories are inadequate in a philosophy: moral ground, that we subject the subjective

whole, whose influence on the synthesis, which is by its very nature indivisible. It is in the spiritual order above all, that every isolated construction originate in the external absolute synthesis never embraced is unstable. Although the existence of man, and never was anything but the practical existence of his intelligence, its capacity to satisfy his emotional and speculative empire, so long as his progress in action and speculation not directly counter to it. But the relative unity cannot enter its entry into the only domain which advance of Positivity discipline all the other sciences.

This enlargement of the sphere of Positivism has nothing accidental in it; on the contrary, it is the continuous upward movement of the scientific spirit, from the simplest phenomena to the most complex. The causality of Fetichism began the study of the physical order, and the causality of Theology entered in that of the moral order.

The substitution of facts for causes was it possible the study of the intellectual or social order connect the two others. When, after a long and decisive step was taken, the new science followed speedily, the whole of man's real knowledge was summed up in the system of Humanity, the demonstration of its reality being drawn from our whole collective existence, and most especially from that existence under its dynamical aspect. Now, it was inevitable that such a condensation should at once raise the conviction of the necessary correlation between the satisfaction of our intellectual, and the satisfaction of our moral, wants. It was enough if the soul were so stirred as to feel that the Great Being, to whom we refer all our acts and thoughts is eminently qualified to form also the centre of our affections. Then of itself

The two phases of Positivism to complete the Positive Unity.

The extension of Positivism to Morals not a chance result.

arose complete unity, hitherto unattainable, and with its rise ends the initiation of man, as it implies the irreversible substitution of the relative for the absolute.

The Positive Synthesis could not triumph were it not for its social destination.

No attractions, however, either intellectual or moral, could have insured its triumph. By its constitution, in relation with the social order, it had evoked it. The Positive religion has generated the training of the mind, equally in the moral and esthetic point of view, and has been destroyed by the increasing indisciplines of the present day. Its chief mission is other, and concerns directly the existence of society, deeply imperilled, at the very centre of its organisation, by the utter exhaustion of the kingdom of God, which no substitute is possible but the ascendancy of Humanity. This mission is but the expression in a new form, under an irresistible impulse, of the great primary consciousness of the indivisibility of the whole problem; the indivisibility which, characteristic of all vitality, is most characteristic of the highest existence, and develops with the developement of the existence. When the empirical wisdom of practical men is at mere political reconstruction apart from the spiritual, it becomes more irrational and more disturbing than the empiricism of the theoretician, when it exerts itself to organise science apart from philosophy, or philosophy apart from religion.

This social mission enables it to overcome all resistance.

Its connection with this social purpose qualifies Positivism to overcome all the resistance, unconscious and concerted, which is the source of Positivism. For it alone can in each case use the

As early as 1845, to the case, appealing alternately to the influence, my whole career the exigencies of society, in the name of philosophy and progress, the sole possible combination of which it accommodates. Long centred in its founder, it inspired him, by virtue of this plenary comprehensiveness, with unshaken confidence in its proximate triumph in a sceptical milieu, for in such a milieu disunion neutralises all resistance to organic impulses, if sufficiently systematic. But the isolation of the founder ceased even before the philosophy issued in the religion, and more particularly at the time when the relative synthesis was really complete; without waiting for the termination of the work which accomplishes that synthesis. Already Positivists are justified in looking on themselves as destined, at no distant period, to sway the metropolis of Humanity with a greater power

one name
 theoretical and
 forward to claim as their
 due the general direction of the world; their object being
 'directly to construct the providence, moral, intellectual,
 and material, excluding ever from political supremacy
 all the various sects of God, Catholic, Protestant, or Deist,
 as at once a related and an element of disturbance.' This
 language, ratified by the assent, these two years past, of
 the different parties of the West, indicates, and even assists,
 the irresistible advent of the regenerating doctrine, the only
 doctrine which is exempt from all need of concession, as alone
 able to be always just, virtue of its plenary comprehensiveness.

Positivism alone susceptible of true universality, and
 unites in itself the opposite excellences of the two Monotheisms
 its precursors, for it surpasses Catholicism in its adaptation to
 the subject whom it raises, whilst it surpasses Islamism in the
 support it gives to the just power of the ruler. Its true disciples
 stand forth in relation to both, as the sole representatives of the
 two subjective powers of Humanity to its
 present in blind revolt against its masters
 Religion of Humanity will teach the cons
 how revolutionary they are; since Cath
 ascendant, broke the continuity of the race in decay,
 extended its useful social influence even to barbarity. With
 Mussulmen, the true believers will avail themselves of a more
 favourable disposition as regards the aggregate of human bonds,
 by setting forth the capacity of Positivism to satisfy the as-
 pirations of Islam. Throughout the world, it will bring the
 demands of progress into complete unison with the requirements
 of order representing the ultimate regeneration as consisting
 in the discipline of the forces evoked during the period of
 preparation.

Positivism
 unites in it-
 self the best
 attributes of
 Catholicism
 and Islam.

Its inherent superiority in presence of all other tendencies,

chical, or
other, conver-
sociocrats.

Positivism
will relieve
the chiefs
from a de-
grading
complaisance.

Substituting judicious respect for a degrading hypocrisy, Positivism, which finds its application primarily and especially in public life, undertakes to free rulers from the oppression which their scepticism involves, and reconstruction and not demolition is the order of the day. Such of them as are gifted with a real superiority must not sigh over their inability, in the absence of convictions to attain power without lowering their dignity by pandering to anarchical or retrograde beliefs which they do not and cannot share. The founder of the Religion of Humanity stands alone, at the present time, in the East as in the West, in never having made even tacitly, any degrading concession, during forty years of an active existence in constant opposition to the reigning opinions.

This applies
not only to
the political
leaders but
also to the
leaders in
science
and art.

The privilege was naturally long confined to him exclusively, but is only a far exceptional, as originating in a time when the intellectual disorder presses heavily upon all genuine intellect. It is not in politics only, nor even chiefly, that we are at present, to raise mediocrity above merit, of all regulation and calm. The ephemeral of art offer habitually a more deplorable spectacle. Political leaders, for with the latter, the greater impotence and greater definiteness of their office is more intolerant of incompetence and irresponsibility.

In this
troubled
medium
Positivism
offers a rally-
ing point
to all higher
natures.

In this vexed milieu, Positivism comes forward to rally the higher natures more satisfactorily, than encyclopædism, in the last century, clubbed together the stronger intellects. Placing them at the general point of view in regard to human affairs, a point hitherto never within reach, it does not shrink from urging them to take the government of a world into which they alone bring the requisite degree of synthesis and sympathy. As to their rank, nay, their sex, what it may, they stand nobly engaged

together, with a mission of unparalleled grandeur, one which allows them the noble expansion of all their powers, whilst it disengages them at once and for ever from an intolerable oppression.

It is true that this mission has a tendency to encourage the opposite evil, the development of presumption, often to a startling extent, a fault with which, these thirty years, I have heard much of my disciples charged and with justice. Their error, however, is usually exaggerated, and is a long way from the philosophical introduction, and been led thereby to exaggerate their intellectual advantages, to the neglect of the great purpose they should subserve. True Positivists do always 'make their moral bent' their prime care, are so glad to feel how sadly they fall short of their mission, a mission not of their instituting, one which any contempt imperies, though it require, within proper limits, an instinct of priority.

The development of all met by the Religion

That which confidence may never degenerate into presumption, it must rest on the satisfactory fulfilment of the several conditions prescribed for all who habitually take part in the work of organization. Such fulfilment exacts from the theoreticians the systematical disposition in its completeness, for without it they cannot at all times be the sum of human affairs. The generality of thought thus systematically formed gives them an irresistible influence in each particular case, necessarily dependent on the universal order, of which they thus become the interpreters. But synthesis requires more than the encyclopaedic preparation, its existence and its continuance are impossible without sympathy; so that the intellectual conditions are found to be inseparable from the moral obligations. Theoreticians who should make light of these latter would be the more blameable in that the correlation of the two is a fundamental dogma of Positivism, as a consequence of the true theory of unity. If theologians are justly suspected, at the present day of moral inferiority because they persist in denying the existence in man's nature of the benevolent instincts, the faith which adopts innate altruism leaves its disciples without excuse if they hold in slight esteem the cultivation of the affectio. Not to dwell on the fact that such culture may be, more than any other, common to all Positivists, it is on it that

To be confident certain conditions must be fulfilled

they mainly depend, and this holds good even of theoreticians, for their ascendancy.

The habits and feelings of the normal state, as described in this treatise, may begin even now on a decisive scale, among true believers, more particularly as regards private life. Complete Positivists need not wait for the full accomplishment of moral position which they ought to guide, they may at once premacy. Their religion by exemplifying in themselves the makes them more sober and reason, irreversibly, the sum and above such and such particular good results, the power of understanding better and turning that whilst they conquer the chief constituent of egoism in a struggle, it is indirectly, in the main, that they should come to affect the whole personality, by the persistent encouragement, that all the three sympathetic instincts. For this they have, first, aids offered them by domestic life, where alone is fostered the right estimate of woman; and besides, this perfecting of their nature may always be a result of the daily practice of private worship, now completely in the power of the higher natures. It is in this secret intercourse with the best representatives of the Great Being that each Positivist should even now cement the unity which he will spread around him. This moral culture renders easier and more effective the discharge of all other duties, public as well as private duties, at all times referred to humanity.

(2) In public life.

To modify public life in an equal degree is not possible, swayed as it is by an undisciplined milieu, but here the Positivists should at once manifest the moral efficacy of their belief by fulfilling better than their various opponents, the special obligations of their several professions. In their relations with society they can always set a decisive example of brotherly feeling to one another, of veneration of all for their head. Outside their own body, their habitual attitude should be one of goodwill and protection, as towards the reactionist, even the revolutionist, both but rarely responsible for the degradation, which is generally traceable to the imperable difficulties of their position.

The 'Emancipated'—future use of the term.

A designation, already current in the West, a fact of great weight, will before long acquire its full force with Positivists, as

expressing their general attitude in a disorderly milieu; it is the term *emancipated*. That force has hitherto been latent, for the name could only be applied to the persistent sceptic, who is, as such, powerless in a period where reconstruction is the dominant need. Nay, worse than powerless, he is involved in contradiction, for his position denies him genuine emancipation, as he is compelled to utter by turns the conflicting errors from which he deems himself freed. Quite other is the result when the most thoroughly emancipated are also the most conscientious, provided that they prove the power of those convictions by setting a constant example of complete discipline. Then, in accordance with the full acceptance of the term, they ought eventually to wield as regards their undisciplined milieu, so politics or theologians alike, a protective influence imperatively required during the whole of the organic transition.

So rise, an empire from which the world can only free itself by doing as its noble leaders have done, regenerating itself that is; those leaders being ever ready to put an end in due form to an extraordinary ascendancy, when it is no longer necessary to the advent of the normal state. When the empirical conservatives, recognising their powerlessness in the presence of anarchy, shall have handed over the government to the Positivists, as alone competent to meet Communism, the Western World will have undergone a radical transformation. The most complete—the most active faith will distinguish its chiefs, negation or doubt will become, as retrogradation is, the symbol or the justification of political inferiority.

But, to gain and to hold such ascendancy, Positivists must at once form a habit of individual exertion; otherwise, however superior their doctrine, they will remain as much below their mission as were the Encyclopædists when formerly invested with power. To them Humanity entrusts at the present day the defence of her fundamental institutions, not less imperilled by the appeal to God than by tendencies of a directly revolutionary character. It is for Positivism to make the poor the basis for the sole honourable and solid guarantee of wealth, implanting in all a just estimate of the concentration of material wealth and its security as indispensable to its social function. Without giving its sanction to wrongful acquisitions, Positivism will lay the greatest stress on the right use of power

The personal efforts of Positivists to gain and hold this ascendancy.

of whatever order, adjourning to a future time discussions which could only disturb the present. Nor is it merely in reference to the family and property that Positivists should show their power of organisation; they must extend it to the government, though not as yet in their hands. When the most completely emancipated shall be the most highly disciplined in presence of all authority, it will come home to the routine conservatives how inconsistent and dangerous is their habitual disposition to carp blindly at the ~~which~~ ^{by which} their safety depends. Such are the moral and intellectual dispositions ~~by which~~ ^{by which} Positivists will concur to smooth the way for their regenerative action and will deserve the ascendancy which that action demands, by perpetually combining love with faith on the basis of activity.

Difficult these conditions may appear, but difficult only to minds yet strange to the Religion of Humanity. Its true believers have already felt the charm for the individual of social precepts when fully obeyed. Beside their own ^{the} inherent attraction for the intellect and the moral nature, synthesis and sympathy support one another by constituting the true unity, always and everywhere the object of men's search, and henceforth unattainable except in Positivism. The coordination of the within by love, ~~the binding it to the~~ ^{the} without by faith, this gives the soul calm without apathy, the true constituent of happiness, and moreover the guarantee of health, as each one feels himself in his proper relation to ^{the} Great Being who protects all. Become more self-devoted, more energetic, and at the same time less egoistic, Positivists will find in the conditions imposed by Humanity a permanent source of unrivalled satisfactions, whilst still struggling with the anarchy which they have to overcome.

Only the
higher
natures at
present
satisfy the
require-
ments of
the Positive
Faith.

Nevertheless, at the present day, the destiny of one suited only to the higher natures, and the primary object should be to bring forward such natures in the teeth of the existing disorder, which pushes into the highest place those whose true position would be as subalterns. But difficult as the elimination may be, the faith which imposes it as a necessity enables us to perform it successfully, by furnishing us with principles of judgment. And although the absence of quiet hampers us in their application, such application will before long enable us to unite all who are worthy of supremacy, by a judicious estimate of per-

sonal merit, in spite of the obstacles due to circumstances, and even to education.

To facilitate the formation and growth of this nucleus, on which depends for the future the regeneration of the West, I am bound to recommend that it be not recruited from those who are leaders or abettors of the present agitation. My best disciples, both theoreticians and practitioners, will come from that portion of society which hitherto has been passive, though not really inert, and has passed from a dim consciousness of the incompetence of all opinions in vogue to deal with the problem in its full completeness. Above all, we must abandon all hope of any really efficient assistance from the class which at present provisionally intervenes between thinkers and the public, with the sole object of hindering the spread of the truth, which it formerly preached. Ever powerless to construct, the literateurs had their place only in destruction, and to their share in that they owed their temporary possession of spiritual ascendancy. Their instinct of anarchy makes them more adverse to Positivism than to Theologism, from their natural dislike to a discipline from which they cannot escape and to which they will not submit. They cannot be judges, for his superiors alone can judge any one; they think it beneath them to be mere reporters, so they always mingle their own views with the conceptions they undertake to transmit. One of the most intelligent of their number, one too of the best disposed, could not even quote my verse on the cerebral organisation without introducing an important change for the worse.

The danger attaching to such interference compels me to include in the preceding judgment the three literary men, who in England first, and then in France, have hitherto honourably aided in the propagation of Positivism. A celebrated logician was the first to proclaim the intellectual superiority of the new philosophy, especially from the point of view of method. He was soon followed by the able writer, who, living in the centre of the regeneration, was more successful in mastering, in its entirety, the conception of a mission which was as much social as intellectual, and which he relieved from a concerted silence. Then came the young Hellenist, who had the sagacity in writing the History of Philosophy, to order it with constant reference to the inevitable advent of Positivism. But although the three justly added to their own importance by

The classes from which the directing body will be drawn.

The three literary men who aided at first, but subsequently abandoned the cause.

popularising the new doctrine, we may verify, even for writers of such exceptional ability, the impotence of the literary world as regards the production of true apostles of the regenerative faith.

All three, with some partial affinities for the doctrine, affinities so strong as to seem conclusive, ultimately proved unable to shake ~~off~~ the influence of their Protestant origin and revolutionary habits, ~~and after nobly introducing Positivism to the knowledge of the public, the first early sacrifice of the tactics by~~ which, ignoring the indivisibility of my synthesis, the attempt is made to establish a contradiction between my philosophical creation and my religious construction. The second, some months after I had proclaimed him my chief colleague, left the Positive Society, because he could not recognise, in the dictatorial crisis, the spontaneous preparation for the systematic triumvirate to which he had given his distinct adhesion. Though the least incomplete of the three, the third offered a still more deplorable example than the others of the inherent inconsequence of literateurs, by his definitive adhesion to the most despicable of all the systems of theological hypocrisy. This threefold verification of a natural incompatibility is the more conclusive warning to me not to count on auxiliaries from the literary class, in that Positivism was calculated at first to awaken sympathies in some exceptional cases in the milieu most adverse to its supremacy.

We must
wait for true
adherents.

We must wait then till the religion of Humanity has formed organs for its propagation amongst its true disciples; this will be when the whole exposition of it in its fundamental outline shall have become sufficiently familiar. But we may confidently affirm that such aid will not fail the faith which is beyond all others calculated to impel to concert without compromising independence. In one admirable exception we have already an indication of the normal cooperation; I allude to the work of a distinguished lady who might have claimed to judge, but nobly limited herself to the function of reporter, discharging it with unparalleled success.

A successor
not as yet
nameable.

Till such time as Positivism finds complete organs, I am compelled to adjourn the accomplishment of a duty which I have stated to be incumbent on all leaders, when they have reached my age. The sacred law of continuity enjoins the founder of the true religion, more than any succeeding Pontiff, to name in time his successor, so that by the due influence of

opinion his choice may be corrected, or the acceptance of that successor be facilitated. But the preceding remarks dispense with my explaining why it is that I must still adjourn this duty, though it has twice inspired me with premature hopes. Not as yet able to find a successor, nor even a colleague, I declare that if I died without finding one, the growth of Positivism would be sounder if it relied on the free exertions of my true disciples, than under an incompetent chief. But it ~~remitted my hope that the~~ completion of my religious instruction will soon bring forward some one who may be acceptable, or, at any rate, that it will make impossible the acceptance of any literateur.

In terminating this great work, it is but natural that I should repeat the announcement with which the *Philosophie Positive* concludes, relative to the proper work of my second life. Of the four compositions which I had then to announce I have now accomplished, in seven years, the most vast, the most difficult, and the most important. The three others have been sufficiently described in the third chapter of this volume to make any recurrence to the subject unnecessary. Thus, before the normal period of retirement, I now enter upon a last seven years of full intellectual activity, the results of which should be: in 1856, the *System of Positive Logic*, or, *Treatise of Mathematical Philosophy*; in 1859, the *System of Positive Morals*, or, *Treatise of General Education*; and in 1861, the *System of Positive Industry*, or, *Treatise of the Combined Action of Humanity upon her Planet*. Such a body of works forms a complementary construction equivalent in extent to that just accomplished. Though less difficult and less important, it were to be regretted if death or extreme poverty prevented my fulfilling a promise, formally stated so early as 1822, in the small treatise which is the groundwork of all my subsequent writings. I am bound, then, to regard the present work as the basis of an indispensable complement, applying to myself the motto happily applied to Cæsar, a motto as suitable for the competent theorician as the great man of action:

Future
works.

See Appen-
dix, part III.

Nil actum reputans si quid superesset agendum.

Deeming nought done whilst aught remained to do.

LUCAN, *Pharsalia*, ii. 658.

FINAL INVOCATION.

(SEE DEDICATION TO VOLUME I.)

~~Non à l'âge en ma tanto profer~~
~~Che Dante's tender~~ ~~grazia.~~
 DANTE, ~~Inf. IV. 133~~

LIVE FOR OTHERS. LIVE OPENLY.

Paris : Monday, 9 Dante, 66. (24 July, 1854.)

NOBLE AND TENDER-HEARTED LADY, MY PATRONESS AND EXEMPLAR,

Eight years have passed since in gratitude, in regret, and in resignation I offered to thy sacred memory an exceptional dedication, in the middle of the year of mourning, though it could not be published till five years later. What I now write is still more alien to general custom, but it will excite less surprise, for it is the termination of a construction, the chief phases of which justify, and with increasing force, such an act of homage. Perhaps thereby I may originate a new practice, a complementary institution, which will, with the public sanction, henceforth enhance the effect of the dedication proper, when worthy of any elaboration involving a succession of efforts.

The involuntary delay in the publication of my original tribute was fortunately not without a compensation, in that it at once drew the sympathy of the nobler minds, as during the preceding three years the 'General View' had been preparing them to ratify the consecration therein announced. An analogous result is more certain now, when I here complete the holy dedication, the justice of which all competent readers have fully accepted. In the present state of mental indiscipline, this fourth volume will frequently be read, at first at any rate, when there is no acquaintance with the three others. But it suffices to justify this final homage, which will soon recall attention to the dedication of the first volume. As more systematic than either of the others, it brings into stronger relief the correlation between synthesis and sympathy, and it is to thee I owe its acceptance as a paramount influence.

Each of the seven essential steps in my construction of a religion has its own distinct trace of the angelic influence acknowledged at its opening. Thy aid is undeniable in regard to the three which are distinctive of the first volume, though it be adequately recognised only for the first of the three. My fundamental work, the *Philosophie*, revealed beyond dispute the composite and continuous existence which sways with increasing power the course of the world. It had even gradually reached the point of ~~the point of~~ ~~the supremacy~~ ~~the supremacy~~ of the heart over the intellect, as the only source, spontaneous or systematic, of human unity. The Great Being thus revealed in its nature and destination, it was enough, to render it possible to create the universal religion, that a holy love should adequately familiarise me with the basic principle in which my first life was seen to issue. So it was that the dogma of Humanity arose, on the first anniversary of the fatal event which separated us, in the decisive course of lectures from which this whole treatise 1847. springs. All who justly appreciate the filiation here traced must now acknowledge that it should be carried farther back, so as to extend to the dedication, which, a few months before, Oct. 4, 1846. gave their first formal expression to all the germs of the subsequent progress.

That thy participation in the two steps which mark the second half of the first volume is less felt, is only because they have not yet become as familiar to most of my disciples. When I introduced the same Positivist, the public, in its empiricism and scepticism, judged it to be as contradictory as it was strange. In thirty years I have so raised it, that it is now sought, as a pledge of order no less than of progress, by many who do not satisfy its main conditions. Of the seven meanings which it combines, the last—and fully to feel this last I was incapable without thee—is the least appreciated, though it be the most decisive, as bearing directly on the sole source of true unity. Those who most fully recognise the necessary interdependence of six of the characteristics of the Positive spirit, at once real, useful, certain, exact, organic, and even relative, have not gone so far in their regeneration as to link its intellectual claims to the moral signification of the term. But, though I still am the only one in whom *Positive*, thanks to thee, has become equivalent to *sympathetic*, I doubt not but that all my true disciples will soon follow me so far under the

irresistible impulse of the synthesis but now ended. Then the Western revolution, as a whole, will find, in familiar use, its condensed expression in the complete regeneration of a fundamental term, henceforth destined to connote the highest morality, whilst retaining the advantages attaching to its originally material connotation.

As foreshadowing this result I may appeal to the growing appreciation of the two complementary steps of the first volume, intellectual steps it is true, but yet ~~and~~ directly the emotional source of the true synthesis. The systematisation of the Positive logic, by virtue of the definitive adoption of the subjective method, gives form and expression to the whole of the influence on my intellect of thy holy ascendancy. How without thee should I have duly felt that feeling alone can combine images with signs to elaborate thought, in such a way as to bring into direct connection the instinct of Fetichism and the reason of Positivism? When once it is rightly understood that thou hadst as large a share in the second step of religious Positivism as in the first, there will be little delay in tracing thy influence on the third. My construction of the cerebral theory is so intimately bound up with the institution of the subjective method, that all who by sympathy are qualified for true synthesis will feel that thy aid was indispensable in a creation which has in it more of the feminine than the masculine element.

It is at this point that begins the increasing divergence between the Positivists, who style themselves intellectual, without being more intelligent, and the complete, that is to say, the religious Positivists. Although the majority of the former limit their adhesion to my philosophy, some have already advanced so far as to accept the dogma of Humanity, the connection of which with the whole of Sociology is hidden only to the sophist. Their acceptance, however, as purely intellectual, bears no fruit for them; it is not able to form the starting point for further advance, in default of a moral impulse. Hence it is that these abortive Positivists have found fault with my dedication, taxing it with sentimental exaggeration, and I doubt not that the present invocation will clash still more with their feelings, on the same ground. In their estimate of the subjective method and of the cerebral theory they differ but little from the thinkers who are so belated as to reject as ontological or mystical the dogma of Humanity, whilst admitting Sociology.

Wherever there has been a just sense of the rational inter-connection of the three steps which form the progression proper to my first volume, there will be no difficulty in appreciating the four other stages of religious Positivism. More particularly is the process easy in the case of the two gone through in the second volume, and principally of that one which, as occupying the centre of the regeneration by sympathy, will early be regarded as the most decisive of all. In assigning, at the opening of my social ~~study~~, the highest place in the encyclopædia to ~~Morals~~, even as compared with Sociology, I systematically placed my religious construction higher than my philosophical creation, which is its groundwork, in obedience to the true theory of unity. The influence of woman, and of such influence it was for thee to offer me the highest type, appears unmistakably in this advance, the best distinction between social and intellectual Positivism. Nor is it more possible to contest thy cooperation in the next step,—in close connection with the last,—which completes my second volume by basing the Sociocracy on the normal division of the two powers, a division which was familiar to thee, owing to thy Catholic instincts, in spite of the disturbing influences of scepticism.

With difficulty should I have brought thee, with thy extreme modesty, to acknowledge the large share thou hadst in the whole of the third volume, for its province is the most remote from thy own special education. But had we been able to accomplish the noble wish thou spontaneously didst express to me, to study history synthetically, thou wouldst now feel how greatly thou aidedst me in the systematisation of my dynamical conceptions. It would be enough for thee to understand that the historical synthesis necessarily finds its condensed expression in the establishment of a direct connection between the two extreme terms of man's initiation, Fetichism and Positivism. The admirable *canzone* which I have repeated every morning, these last nine years, is as characteristic an utterance of Fetichist poetry as thy sacred novel prefigures Positive idealisation. Under so spontaneous a form of cooperation, thou couldst not have refused to accept thy involuntary share in my construction of the philosophy of history, though it is an influence not as yet recognised even by the best of my disciples.

None will question thy influence in regard to the seventh step, which in this volume closes the regular upward ascent of

Vol. I, p. 612.

Vol. I, p. 602.

Published
1852.

religious Positivism, by its removal of the serious discrepancies I left in it last year. Had it been permitted thee to contemplate the best fruits of thy eternal ascendancy, thou wouldst on thy own promptings have pointed out to me the threefold dissonance which, perceived but late, was yet recognised in time to preserve this last volume from the peculiar defect of the Catechism. Though all my true disciples at once accepted the systematic determination which led me to place definitively the worship before the doctrine, no one of them could so completely rise above the empiricism of Theology and scepticism as to suggest the change. But, with thee, sympathy would have so aided synthesis that the improvement would have been realised even in the Catechism, the holy work in which thy cooperation was purely subjective. Not having thy help, I was near missing this final step, which, as condensing my whole religious development, will be naturally a greater shock to incomplete Positivists than were its six predecessors.

Thus, we see how the examination in detail of thy intimate cooperation in each phase of my religious construction issues in establishing more conclusively the fatal difference there is between subjective participation and objective assistance. Several years must elapse before Positivism, at length complete by virtue of the present work, pass from the most philosophical to the most poetical nation, there to receive its ideal expression, the decisive step in the progress and the only one beyond my power to take. The interval was to have been thine, that in it thou mightest prepare the way for the final acceptance of a religion, which is esthetic rather than scientific, by the formal sanction and intervention of the sex best qualified by sympathy for the state of synthesis.

The moral superiority of woman, with its legitimate complement derived from her social existence, enables her to move directly towards the unity which results from a gradual incorporation with Humanity. With women synthesis may remain unsystematic without detriment to their proper mission, a mission which, as never ambiguous and always with an immediate aim, transforms each act and each thought into a special development of the true worship, under the persistent stimulation of affection. Whereas the practical and intellectual duties of man prevent him from condensing the Positive religion in its fundamental constituent. Compelled to construct a

systematic synthesis that he may submit himself to the universal order, submit better and modify it more largely, he is diverted from the cultivation of the within by the effort he makes to connect it with the without. He neglects the end in the too constant consideration of the means, and so exhausts his intellect, and even his activity on fruitless or disturbing efforts, whilst love, ever tending to the good, chooses, amidst the number of appreciable relations, those only which can ameliorate us. When a sound estimate of human knowledge prevents the philosopher from being puffed up, nothing keeps him from drying up, owing to the fatal isolation without which the weakness of our understanding would defeat his philosophic meditations. Ever imminent, this deterioration cannot be overcome but by the due intervention, objective or subjective, of woman, aided by the esthetic culture which is naturally connected with such intervention.

He who was commissioned by the Great Being to institute the true religion by systematising Positive morality, even he could not but verify the law in his own person; for the mental contention involved in his labours counteracted the sympathetic influence which was the natural result of their synthetic character. Here, when completing the constitution of the true unity, I feel an inexpressible satisfaction at being able to contemplate directly its affective source without detriment to a construction which must benefit others more than myself. But this reward would have been more efficacious had it been given me to make thee whilst yet living a sharer in it, however highly I may estimate the nascent appreciation of 'the noble lady whose memory is cherished and venerated by all my true disciples.' This harmony of mind and heart becomes the best condensation of a construction, the most characteristic feature of which is the elaboration of the true theory of the affective sex. As representative of this bond, it were enough to bring together thy most remarkable sayings, adding to them the only one I have not quoted, and which will be considered the most touching when the occasion of it is known: 'The bad are often more in need of pity than the good.'

Reduced to a subjective identification with thee, as the result of one incomparable year of objective union, I have at any rate turned it to the best account, by availing myself to the full of the advantages attaching to its immutability. To

my public life not less than to my private life, may I apply the language which, for several years, has been a part of my daily prayers. 'Notwithstanding our separation, my last state surpasses all that I could hope, or even dream, before I knew thee.' Our love, which was always holy, made me first chaste, then sober; and the purification of these two instincts, fostered by thy subjective influence, enabled me the better to overcome the other self-regarding instincts, by the constant encouragement of the three instincts of sympathy. Thou wouldst perhaps still persist in reproaching me for endangering, by too great kindness and self-abandonment, a personal ascendancy, so many have easily acquired by an artful reserve. And yet I cannot regret this disposition of mine, calculated as it is to promote my main usefulness, in accordance with the aptness thou attributedst to me of becoming all things to all men, an aptness more appropriate in the founder of Relativism than in the founder of Catholicism. To thee I owe it that I have returned to the holy regime of the Middle Ages, that I have devoted, that is, for the last eight years, the first hour of each day to the direct culture of the better feelings of human nature. Evident as regards my moral, nay even my intellectual growth, the renovation extends even to my physical condition, equally with the others exempt from the ordinary forewarnings of old age, notwithstanding the laboriousness of my career, the prolongation of which will be thy doing.

In this holy patronage, thou wilt be always assisted by the unrivalled help of her whom thy great soul recognised as its worthy sister, in her who since thy death has so fully deserved the happiness which thou didst dream of *for us three*. Over and above its practical services, the family which she guides offers me daily a salutary spectacle, proving to what an extent the least cultivated may enjoy, under all forms, what thou calledst the pleasures of devotion to others. I am thus led to feel more deeply how dignity, happiness, and even health reside in unity, as in the impairment of unity lie our chief diseases, moral, intellectual, or physical. Thy simple-hearted companion revives, unknown to herself, my systematic tendency to judge acts and thoughts with special reference to their source in, or their influence upon, the affections, these naturally engaging her attention as a mother and a wife. Vowed equally with myself to moral cultivation, the frequent superiority of her empirical

suggestions leads me to a sounder estimate of woman's nature, and is the objective complement of thy subjective action upon me, for my personal improvement, as a man and as a citizen.

She, as thou, never was in personal contact with the venerable mother who failed, in spite of her zeal and her capacity, adequately to educate my heart; but as my adopted daughter she daily joins with me and with thee in my just adoration of her holy and unhappy memory. Thus placed under the threefold patronage which I have shown to be normal for each true believer, I have now so far set forth its constant influence on my public life as to warrant me in here asking posterity to connect it directly with my own immortality. These five years I daily complete my morning prayers with this resolution: 'I will venture to end my religious construction by an open injunction to my disciples of both sexes to obtain for me one day, as the principal reward of my services, my solemn interment in the midst of you three, in the name of the Great Being, with whom we shall be for ever incorporated.'

In this formal expression of my characteristic wish, I hope, in accordance with our faith, by a noble publicity to facilitate its attainment, for such publicity will allow not merely a truer sense of its reasonableness, but also an easier victory over any opposition. Supposing the venerable remains already dispersed, owing to Christian neglect, it will be enough that a noble cenotaph be attached to our tomb as in the case of my latest patroness.

The reward I here claim is one too well adapted to express the nature and manifest the ascendancy of the religion of Humanity to be denied me, even if it were to follow immediately upon the publication in its entirety of this holy treatise. Already thy angelic influence is appreciated so far that higher souls, even from across the seas, sympathise with my continuous adoration of thee. This just extension of my inadequate gratitude will shortly penetrate more deeply and spread more widely under the impulse of this last and most decisive volume. Thanks to the noble confidence of thy aged father, the painter's skill has been able to form a sweet image of thee after the sketch by thy mother. It is perhaps destined before long to be, to my disciples, the best emblem of the Great Being, the systematisation of whose worship was effected under thy holy influence.

The same pre-eminent patronage which directed the great work of my second life must preside over the three works which remain to complete it. I shall give a special appreciation of this its latest service, when I dedicate the most important of the three to her who, in my earliest childhood, implanted in me an instinctive anticipation of true morality. This complementary labour ended, my last publication will be, in ten years, the discharge of my solemn promise as to our holy correspondence, to be preceded by thy life and even by my own. But feeling, which alone consecrates everything, will perhaps justify me in ending my second life in the body by venturing on a sketch of the third, the full developement of which is denied me by the sum of the imperative conditions under which we live, though I feel its true character. After passing by a normal course from my philosophical foundation to my religious construction, it would be well, by an exceptional effort, to complete the latter by the poetical creation which alone will be able to procure for it universal ascendancy. Irreconcilable with the laws of bodily life, such completeness of accomplishment is sufficiently in unison with the laws of cerebral life, for me to have been able to conceive and propose the eminent composition which I may not execute. Whilst renouncing any fruitless attempt, I yet hope to complete the volume which concerns us by an outline of a poem, in thirteen cantos, on the second life which that volume explains in me through thee.

I must end this final invocation by referring to its true source an utterance in which the founder of the Positive religion completes the presentment of the normal manners, by throwing private acts open to the inspection and interference, under proper conditions, of the public. Over and above the general duty of proclaiming in time our last wishes, there is a special reason why at fifty-seven I here state three resolutions, which cannot be carried into effect without the voluntary aid of all Positivists.

280. 1st. The body of my adherents will continue the annuity of two thousand francs mentioned in my fourth Circular, in order that I may discharge, up to its natural termination, the obligation incurred in my youth by my only really grave fault.

2nd. An annuity of fifteen hundred francs shall be set apart, by the gratitude of the true believers, for the adopted daughter who, for the last thirteen years, has devoted to me her inestimable services.

3rd. This eminent proletary will keep, for my successor, in its actual state and at the cost of the universal church, the sacred residence in which was conceived and worked out the creation of the Positivist religion, and in which the sacred rites of that religion will continue to be celebrated till the acquisition of a temple.

So soon as this volume is sufficiently known, I will communicate directly to each of my thirteen executors the minor arrangements necessary to ensure the execution of these three resolutions.

My actions, my thoughts, and my feelings, all equally centre around her who presides over my second life, that life in which, now for eight years, there has been growing an unexampled harmony between the conduct of private and that of public life. When my love was sufficiently purified, I saw thee nobly accept my plan of legal adoption, which only failed through the catastrophe which befell us. Since thy influence has become exclusively subjective, veneration has more and more prevailed over attachment, without diverting me from benevolence, the culture of which has been constant through my just efforts to spread a right estimate of an angel who passed unknown. If this fusion of all the feelings of man for woman appear to involve a contradiction, it is only because of the coarseness of man's impulses. Anticipated in poetry and in religion, it authorises me to conclude this final invocation by combining the address and the wish, so amply characteristic, which I repeat aloud every morning, borrowing from the two sublime interpreters of the Middle Ages :

Vergine-Madre, figlia del tuo figlio,
Amem te plus quam me, nec me nisi propter te !

END OF THE FOURTH AND LAST VOLUME.

APPENDIX
TO
THE FOURTH VOLUME.
(See page 351.)

POSITIVIST LIBRARY IN THE NINETEENTH CENTURY

ONE HUNDRED AND FIFTY VOLUMES.

I. POETRY (THIRTY VOLUMES).

The Iliad and the Odyssey, in one volume, without any note.
Æschylus, with the King-Edipus of Sophocles, and Aristophanes, do.
Pindar and Theocritus, with Daphnis and Chloe, do.
Plautus and Terence, do.
Virgil, Horace (selections from), and Lucan, do.
Ovid, Tibullus, and Juvenal, do.
Fahliaux du Moyen Âge, collected by Legrand d'Aussy.
Dante, Ariosto, Tasso, and Petrarch (selections), in Italian, in one volume.
Select plays of Metastasio and Alfieri, do.
I promessi Sposi, Manzoni, do.
Don Quixote and Las Novelas, Cervantes, in Spanish, in one volume.
Teatro Español escojido, ed. Don José Segundo Florez, do.
Romancero Español escojido, with the Cid, do.
Select plays of Pierre Corneille.
Molière.
Select plays of Racine and Voltaire, in one volume.
La Fontaine, Fables, with some from Lamotte and Florian.
Gil Blas, Le Sage.
The Princess of Cleves. Paul and Virginia. The Last Abencerrage. To form one volume.
The Martyrs, Chateaubriand.
Select plays of Shakespeare.
Paradise Lost and Lyrical Poems, Milton.
Robinson Crusoe and the Vicar of Wakefield, in one volume.
Tom Jones, Fielding, in English, or Chéron's translation.

The seven masterpieces of Walter Scott: *Ivanhoe*, *Waverley*, *Fair Maid of Perth*, *Legend of Montrose*, *Old Mortality*, *Heart of Midlothian*, *The Antiquary*.

Select works of Byron. *Don Juan* in particular to be suppressed.

Select works of Goethe.

The Arabian Nights.

II. SCIENCE (THIRTY VOLUMES).

The Arithmetic of Condorcet. The Algebra and Geometry of Clairaut, the Trigonometry of Lacroix or Legendre (all in one volume).

The Analytical Geometry of Auguste Comte, preceded by the Geometry of Descartes.

The Statics of Poinsot, with all his Memoirs on Mechanics.

Lectures on Analysis by Navier, preceded by the Reflections on the Infinitesimal Calculus of Carnot.

Lectures on Mechanics by Navier, followed by the Essay on Equilibrium and Motion of Carnot.

The Theory of Functions, Lagrange.

The Popular Astronomy of Auguste Comte, followed by the Worlds of Fontenelle.

Mechanical Physics, by Fischer, with Biot's Comments.

Alphabetical Manual of Practical Philosophy, J. Carr (Weale's series).

The Chemistry of Lavoisier.

The Chemical Statics of Berthollet.

The Elements of Chemistry, Thomas Graham.

Manual of Anatomy, Meckel.

The General Anatomy of Bichat, preceded by his Treatise on Life and Death.

The first volume of Blainville on the Organisation of Animals.

The Physiology of Richerand with Bérard's notes.

Systematic Essay on Biology by Segond; also his Treatise on General Anatomy.

The New Elements of the Science of Man, Barthez (2nd ed. 1806).

The Zoological Philosophy of Lamarck.

Natural History, by Duméril.

Guglielmini on the Nature of Rivers (in Italian).

The Discourses on the Nature of Animals of Buffon.

The Art of Prolonging Human Life, by Hufeland, preceded by the Treatise on Air, Water, and Places by Hippocrates, and followed by Cornaro's work on Sobriety (all in one volume).

The History of Chronic Inflammations, by Broussais, preceded by his Propositions of Medicine, and by the Aphorisms of Hippocrates, in Latin, without commentary.

The Panegyrics on Savans, by Fontenelle and Condorcet.

III. HISTORY (SIXTY VOLUMES).

Abridgment of Universal Geography, Malte Brun.

Geographical Dictionary, Rienzi.

The Voyages of Cook. The Travels of Chardin.

The History of the French Revolution, Mignet.
 Manual of Modern History, Heeren.
 Age of Louis XIV., Voltaire.
 Memoirs of Madame de Motteville.
 Political Testament of Richelieu, and the Life of Cromwell (these in one volume).
 Davila, History of the Civil Wars in France (in Italian).
 The Memoirs of Benvenuto Cellini (in Italian).
 Memoirs of Philippe de Commynes.
 Abridgment of the History of France, Bossuet.
 Revolutions of Italy, Denina.
 Abridgment of the History of Spain, Ascargorta.
 History of Charles V., Robertson.
 History of England, Hume.
 History of the Middle Ages, Hallam.
 Ecclesiastical History, Fleury.
 History of the Decline and Fall of Rome, Gibbon.
 Manual of Ancient History, Heeren.
 Tacitus (translator, Dureau de la Malle).
 Herodotus and Thucydides (to form one volume).
 Plutarch's Lives (translator, Dacier).
 Cæsar's Commentaries, and Arrian's Alexander (to form one volume).
 The Travels of Anacharsis, Barthélemy.
 The History of Art in Antiquity, Winckelmann.
 Treatise on Painting, Leonardo da Vinci (in Italian).
 Memoirs on Music, Grétry.

IV. SYNTHESIS (THIRTY VOLUMES).

The Politics and Ethics of Aristotle (in one volume).
 The Bible.
 The Koran.
 The City of God, St. Augustine.
 The Confessions of St. Augustine, followed by the Treatise on the Love of God by St. Bernard.
 The Imitation of Jesus Christ, in the original, and the verse translation of Corneille.
 The Catechism of Montpellier, preceded by the Exposition of the Catholic Doctrine by Bossuet, and followed by the Commentary on the Sermon on the Mount by St. Augustine.
 The History of Protestant Variations, Bossuet.
 The Discourse on Method of Descartes, preceded by Bacon's *Novum Organon*, and followed by Diderot's Interpretation of Nature.
 Select Thoughts of Cicero, Epictetus, Marcus Aurelius, Pascal, and Vauvenargues, followed by Madame de Lambert's Advice of a Mother.
 Duclos, Considerations on Manners.
 The Discourse on Universal History by Bossuet, followed by the Sketch of Human Progress by Condorcet.
 Treatise of the Pope, De Maistre, preceded by Policy drawn from Holy Writ, Bossuet.
 The Philosophical Essays of Hume, preceded by the two dissertations

of Diderot on the Deaf and the Blind, and followed by the Essay on the History of Astronomy, by Adam Smith.

Theory of the Beautiful by Barthez, preceded by the Essay on the Beautiful by Diderot.

The Relations between Man's Physical and Moral Nature, Cabanis.

Treatise on the Functions of the Brain, Gall, preceded by the Letters on Animals of George Leroy.

Treatise on Irritation and Madness, Broussais (1st edition).

The Positive Philosophy of Auguste Comte (condensed by Miss Martineau). The Positive Polity, The Appeal to Conservatives, The Positive Catechism, The Subjective Synthesis, Vol. I.

AUGUSTE COMTE, 10 *Rue Monsieur-le-Prince*.

END OF THE APPENDIX TO THE FOURTH AND LAST VOLUME.

GENERAL TABLE OF THE SUBJECTS

CONTAINED IN

THE SYSTEM OF POSITIVE POLITY.

FIRST VOLUME (JULY 1851).

CONTAINING THE 'GENERAL VIEW' AND THE INTRODUCTORY PRINCIPLES.

	PAGE
Preface	ix
Dedication	xxxi
Complement of the Dedication { 1. Lucie, a novel	602
2. Letter on Social Commemoration	613
3. Pensées d'une fleur, <i>Canzone</i>	612

GENERAL VIEW OF POSITIVISM.

Table of Contents	xlvi
Introductory Remarks	1
I. Intellectual Character of Positivism	6
II. Social Aspect of Positivism	46
III. Action of Positivism on the People	101
IV. Influence of Positivism on Women	164
V. The Relation of Positivism to Art	220
Conclusion. The Religion of Humanity	257

INTRODUCTORY PRINCIPLES.

Scientific and Logical.

I. General Indications	325
II. Cosmology: Indirect introduction, mainly Analytic	360
III. Biology: Direct, naturally Synthetic	456
APPENDIX TO FIRST VOLUME.—FUNERAL DISCOURSE ON BLAINVILLE.	505

SECOND VOLUME (MAY 1852).

CONTAINING SOCIAL STATICS, OR THE ABSTRACT THEORY OF
HUMAN ORDER.

	PAGE
Preface	ix
For Preface and its Appendices see vol. iv.	
General Introduction	1
I. General Theory of Religion, or the Positive Theory of Human Unity	7
II. The Problem of Human Life, or Positive Theory of Property	120
III. Positive Theory of the Human Family	150
IV. Positive Theory of Human Language	182
V. Positive Theory of the Social Organism	221
VI. Positive Theory of Social Existence, systematised by the Priesthood	276
VII. Positive Theory of the General Limits of Variation in the order of Human Society	346
Conclusion	383

THIRD VOLUME (AUGUST 1853).

CONTAINING SOCIAL DYNAMICS, OR THE GENERAL THEORY OF
HUMAN PROGRESS.*Philosophy of History.*

Preface	ix
Appendix to Preface :	
1. Syllabus of a course of Philosophical Lectures on the General History of Humanity	xxii
2. Letter to the Czar Nicholas	xxiv
3. Letter to Reschid Pacha	xli
General Introduction	1
I. Positive Theory of Human Evolution, or General Laws of Intellectual and Social Progress	8
II. Positive Theory of the Age of Fetichism, or General Account of the Spontaneous Régime of Humanity	65
III. Positive Theory of the Theocratic State, or General Account of Conservative Polytheism	131
IV. Positive Theory of the Greek Elaboration, or General Account of Intellectual Polytheism	211
V. Positive Theory of the Roman Incorporation, or General Account of Social Polytheism	290
VI. Positive Theory of the Catholic Feudal Transition, or General Account of Defensive Monotheism	353
VII. Positive Theory of the Western Revolution, or General Account of the twofold Modern Movement	421
General Conclusion of the Third Volume	532

FOURTH AND LAST VOLUME (August 1854).

CONTAINING THE SYNTHETICAL PRESENTATION OF THE FUTURE OF
MAN.

	PAGE
Preface, with that of Vol. II. and its three appendices ¹	ix
General Introduction	1
I. The Fundamental Theory of the Great Being, whence a Con- spectus of the Religion of the race, and of its existence in the Normal State	8
II. General View of the Affective Life, or Definitive Systematisation of the Positive Worship	76
III. General View of the Intellectual Existence of Man, or Definitive Systematisation of the Positive Doctrine	142
IV. General View of the Active Existence of Man, or Definitive Systematisation of the Positive Regime	219
V. General View of the Last Phase of the Transition	315

GENERAL CONCLUSION OF THE FOURTH VOLUME . . . 455

CONCLUSION OF THE WHOLE SYSTEM OF POSITIVE POLITY . 460

Final Invocation 472

Appendix to the Fourth Volume.—The Positivist Library in the
Nineteenth Century 483

- ¹ I. Letter to Dr. J. McIlintock.
- II. Letter to M. Viellard, Senator.
- III. 'The Occidental Review.'

GENERAL APPENDIX
TO THE
SYSTEM OF POSITIVE POLITY
CONTAINING
ALL THE EARLY ESSAYS BY THE AUTHOR
ON SOCIAL PHILOSOPHY

PARIS
1854

GENERAL APPENDIX.



SPECIAL PREFACE.

THIS Appendix fulfils the promise which I made, in 1851, when I commenced the treatise now completed, of reproducing all my early Essays on Social Philosophy. Collected from periodicals long since forgotten, they may assist students disposed to follow my own course of philosophical development in their efforts to master Positivism. But their publication is more especially intended to demonstrate the perfect harmony which exists between my youthful efforts and my matured conceptions.

This complete continuity of thought is disguised by the exceptional magnitude of my task, and obscured by the analytical habits of our day, so unfavourable to any comprehensive judgment. All but those who grasp the necessary connexion between the philosophic basis and the religious superstructure must regard the two portions of my career as divergent. The fact, therefore, that my second life simply realised the aim which I proposed to myself in early life requires to be made clear. This the present Appendix is calculated to do, since it proves, that from the outset, I endeavoured to found that new Spiritual Power, of which I now lay the basis. As the final result of my early Essays, I was led to perceive that the Social operation presupposed an Intellectual elaboration, since without this the doctrine required to terminate the occidental anarchy could not be solidly built up. For this reason I devoted the first half of my career to constructing, out of the materials supplied by the sciences, a truly Positive Philosophy, this being the only possible basis of a universal religion. The theoretic foundation being thus laid, the residue of my life

was with good reason devoted to that Social Aim, which at first I had imagined was accessible without any intellectual preparation.

Besides the natural difficulty of comprehending so vast a scheme, antipathies also often interfere with a just perception of the intimate relation between my 'System of Positive Polity' and 'System of Positive Philosophy.' Notwithstanding the desire generally felt for the termination of the Occidental Revolution, active sympathies exist, especially among *littérateurs*, with that absence of discipline which is characteristic of our anarchic condition. Individual pretensions are wounded by the institution of a Priesthood, bound by its office to insist on the observation of rules affecting public and even private life; rules too which are inflexible since they always admit of verification. Hence a disposition to regard my religious construction as being at variance with its philosophic basis, the intellectual attractions of which were unalloyed by any such drawback. This Appendix however will demonstrate the inconsistency of all who adopting the Positive Philosophy reject those Social Applications which I announced from the outset. Whether their attitude spring from incapacity to grasp my conceptions in their entirety, or from regret for the cessation of the religious interregnum, their speculative adhesion to the new synthesis renders it incumbent on them to admit its legitimate development. The Political System far from being opposed to my Philosophy is so completely its outcome, that the latter was created as the basis of the former, and of this the proof is supplied by the present Appendix.

Keeping this object in view, those Essays alone are preserved which reveal my characteristic aspirations, all such being set aside as betray the unfortunate personal influence that overshadowed my earliest efforts. From these artificial productions I only extract two unmistakeable indications of my constant tendency towards the Positive Religion. In 1817 a publication of mine, otherwise without value, contained the characteristic maxim: *Everything is relative; this is the only absolute principle.* A second indication of the same nature, as decisive but more fully expanded, is furnished in an Essay of the year 1818 where I treated the liberty of the press as a means of securing to all citizens a consultative influence. Beyond these references I find nothing worthy of mention in my Essays composed before the six now collected for publication. I therefore disavow any other edition, and I have destroyed the unpublished materials.

The first Essay was written, in July 1819, for the 'Censor'—the only French periodical that posterity will deem noteworthy—but was never inserted. I publish it here, partly as proving that, even at one and twenty, I was tending towards the Separation of the Two Powers; partly because the views presented are still useful.

I now, as is just, reclaim possession of the second Essay, written in April 1820, the authorship of which, then known only to a few readers, was with my tacit consent abandoned to the editor of the journal (the 'Organiser') which inserted it. By giving its true title I mark it as the first outline of my general conception of Modern History, distinguishing that double movement, constructive and destructive, the union of which

characterises the revolution of Western Europe. The historical contrast between France and England, according as central or local government prevailed, was there established with sufficient clearness and guided several writers, who profited by the conception, without indicating its source.

The third Essay, published in May 1822, and containing the fundamental discovery of Sociological Laws, decisively indicated my philosophic and social tendencies. Its appropriate title, as here given, sufficiently discloses the intimate combination of the scientific and political points of view which had hitherto occupied my mind to an equal degree though separately. This decisive effort was first only published in one hundred copies gratuitously distributed as *proofs*. When reproducing it in 1824, with some additions of secondary importance in an impression of one thousand copies, I thought it right to add to its special title that of 'System of Positive Polity'—a title premature indeed but rightly indicating the scope of my labours. The promise in my earliest years of that systematisation which the present treatise could alone realise being thus evident, no one can ignore the unity of my career.

Even the title of the fourth Essay, published in November 1825, manifests more clearly my tendency to establish a new Spiritual Authority in harmony with a Scientific Philosophy. The demonstration of my two Fundamental Laws precedes the appreciation of the continuous advance of Humanity towards the reorganisation of the Theoretic Power.

Finally the publication of the fifth Essay, March 1826, in the same journal (the 'Producer'), decisively established the divisions, both philosophic and social, between the two elementary Social Powers.

My persevering aspiration to found a new Priesthood was thenceforward so manifest as to draw upon me opposing criticisms; the revolutionary school accusing me of theocratic tendencies while the retrograde party hailed me as a defender of social order. The widely different appreciation of the last mentioned Essay by two writers of repute (Benjamin Constant and Lamennais) already revealed the normal attitude of the new party founded by me towards the old parties they represented. When the eloquent defender of Catholicism, degenerating into a revolutionary declaimer, became blindly hostile to Positivism, this contrast could be verified in a single mind.

Anyone comparing these five Essays, but especially the three last, will perceive a constant progression, the last term of which reveals the general scope of the entire—to reorganise the Spiritual Power by renovating Philosophy. I thus prepared the way for my Fundamental Treatise, the oral elaboration of which began in 1826, although the first volume was not published until July 1830. In the course of this philosophical evolution, terminated in 1842, I steadily intimated that religious construction which its social destination, as originally designed, demanded.

The sixth and concluding Essay, published by the 'Journal of Paris' in August 1828, manifests the transition from my social *début* to my intellectual career, which began, the following year, with the completion of the course

of lectures commenced in 1826,¹ but soon after suspended by my cerebral attack. The insight gained through my personal experience was utilised in this review of the memorable work in which Broussais worthily combated the metaphysical influence. This concluding Essay will ever possess an historical interest since it roused the great biologist to the noble effort which produced, at the close of his admirable career, his just appreciation of the masterly conception of Gall, till then disregarded by him.

¹ I deem it right to preserve the memory of this first effort, by reproducing the short programme circulated in a manuscript form at the beginning of 1826.

COURSE OF POSITIVE PHILOSOPHY IN 72 LECTURES.

From the 1st of April, 1826, to the 1st of April, 1827.

GENERAL PRELIMINARIES, 2 lectures		{ i. Exposition of the scope of the course. ii. Exposition of the plan of the course.	
MATHEMATICS . . . 16 lectures		{ Calculus. Geometry. Mechanics.	
Geometrical.	{ ASTRONOMY . . . 10 "		
Mechanical.			
Science of	{ PHYSICS . . . 10 "		
inorganised bodies.			
	{ CHEMISTRY . . . 10 "		
Science of	{ PHYSIOLOGY . . . 10 "		
organised bodies.			
	{ SOCIAL PHYSICS . . . 14 "		

FIRST PART.

(July 1819.)

SEPARATION OF OPINIONS FROM ASPIRATIONS.

RULERS would gladly have it taken for granted that they alone can see aright in politics, and consequently are entitled to a monopoly of opinion on such matters. They have doubtless their own reasons for speaking in this way, while subjects have theirs for refusing assent to a principle which, under every point of view, is wholly absurd. For, on the contrary, rulers, even when honest, are by their position more disqualified from gaining a just and elevated view of general politics; since a continual preoccupation with details incapacitates for correct theory. Should a publicist wish to form large political conceptions, let him rigorously refrain from political office. How can he be both actor and spectator?

Positive
political
science is
needed.

But on this question men have run from one excess into another. Opponents of the absurd pretension of rulers to exclusive political wisdom have fostered among subjects the prejudice, less dangerous but equally absurd, that everyone is competent to form, by mere instinct, just views in politics; thus encouraging each citizen to set himself up as a legislator. It is remarkable, as observed by Condorcet, that men deem it ridiculous to affect a knowledge of physics or astronomy, &c., without having studied these sciences; yet believe that anyone can understand political science and possess a firm and decided opinion on its most abstract principles without any necessity for reflection or special study.

This arises, as Condorcet might have added, from politics not having yet become a positive science; for, evidently, when it has become such everyone will understand that the study of the observations and deductions which form its basis is indispensable for its comprehension.

However, in order to reconcile all, and exclude this prejudice without sanctioning the principle of political indifference so dear to rulers, it might be well to distinguish, more than is usually done, between opinions and aspirations. It is reasonable, natural, and necessary that every citizen should have political aspirations, since all have an interest in the conduct of social affairs. It is evident, for example, that all citizens who do not belong to the privileged class, and live by the fruit of their labour, must desire liberty, peace, industrial prosperity, economy in public expenditure, and a just employment of the revenue. But a political opinion expresses more than desires. It includes a judgment, for the most part decided and absolute, that these can only be satisfied by particular measures and by no others. Now on this head it is ridiculous and unreasonable to pronounce without special study. The question arises; is such a measure or in-

Opinions
and Aspira-
tions are
distinguish-
able.

stitution fitted to effect a given end? Evidently the reply involves a series of reflections that call for a particular examination, failing which the end proposed may be deemed attainable by means capable of producing an exactly opposite effect. Thus, many people, who sincerely desire liberty and peace, have, nevertheless, notions as to the means of securing these blessings so erroneous that, if put in practice, they must lead to disorder and arbitrary power.

Two important consequences in politics follow, as I believe, from this separation of opinions and aspirations.

Firstly, taking the view above suggested, and regarding unenlightened men as confounding in their political estimates the end and the means, it will be seen that a greater uniformity exists than is commonly imagined in the political aspirations of a nation. In France for example, among those who profess retrograde opinions, there are a few only, belonging to the privileged classes, who from conviction truly desire the reestablishment of ancient institutions. The majority at bottom, with the rest of the world wish for liberty, peace, and economy. The association of this desire with the idea of the feudal *régime*, arises simply from their regarding it as the only means adapted to secure the above ends.

In the second place, the above separation determines, as it appears to me, the share in the government which rightly belongs to the mass of the people. The public alone should indicate the end; because though it may not always know what is really wanted, it perfectly understands its own wishes, and no one else is entitled to dictate these.

When, however, public opinion has once clearly indicated the end, the consideration of the measures for effecting it exclusively belongs to scientific politicians. It would be absurd for the masses to reason about them. The business of the public is to form aspirations; that of publicists to propose measures; that of rulers to realise them. The failure to distinguish these three functions must in a greater or less degree cause confusion.

In a word, when politics shall have taken the rank of a positive science, the public should and must accord to publicists the same confidence in their department, which it now concedes to astronomers in astronomy, to physicians in medicine, &c.; with this difference however that the public will be exclusively entitled to point out the end and aim of the work.

Such confidence, attended as it has been, with most serious disadvantages, while politics have remained vague, mysterious, devoid of principle, in a word, theological, will so soon as they have been transformed into a positive science, be accompanied by no greater evil than the confidence which we daily and fearlessly accord to the physician, even in matters of life and death.

When this transformation has been effected the submission due to reason will be perfectly reconciled with the precautions needful against arbitrary power.

SECOND PART.

(April 1820.)

A BRIEF ESTIMATE OF MODERN HISTORY.

THE advance of civilisation calls on us to replace a system which was based upon the combination of the spiritual and temporal powers; the first being papal and theological, the second feudal and military.

Science and
Industry are
destined to
replace
Theology
and War.

As regards the spiritual element the birth of this system may be traced from the growing preponderance of Christianity in Europe, towards the third or fourth century. The origin of the temporal power is referable to nearly the same epoch, being that of the first great efforts of the Northern populations to establish themselves in the South of Europe, and the consequent dismemberment of the Roman Empire.

These two powers were definitely constituted during the eleventh and twelfth centuries. At this period Feudalism on the one hand was universally established on a settled basis as a National power; on the other Catholicism was completely organised as a European power.

Let us pause for a moment to make two important observations on this remarkable epoch.

In the first place this twofold organisation established itself in a short time and without much difficulty, because it had been gradually prepared during the seven or eight centuries that followed the birth of the two powers.

The establishment of the temporal power resulted from the overthrow of the Roman Empire by the Northern populations. Its consolidation however was unavoidably deferred until the termination of the irruptions by the victories of the earliest invading settlers over the later invaders. Such was the object of the wars of Charlemagne against the Saxons and Saracens, and afterwards of the Crusades.

The elevation of the spiritual power had been prepared by the overthrow of Polytheism and the establishment of the Christian religion whose numerous clergy had spread themselves over Europe.

When the Pope, Hildebrand, in the eleventh century openly proclaimed the supremacy of the Papacy as a European power over the National powers, he merely asserted a principle the foundations of which were already settled in all heads, or, in other terms, embodied a faith of which the elements had long been accepted.

In the second place it is worthy of remark that the two powers coincided, both in the period of their rise and in that of their consolidation. Their decline also manifests the same analogy. This constant corres-

pondence of the two powers tends to prove—and that apart from the arguments which demonstrate their mutual dependence—that they must disappear simultaneously; that the temporal power cannot be replaced by a power of a different nature without an analogous transformation in the spiritual power, and *vice versa*.

This social system had taken its rise during the preceding one, and even at the period when the earlier system had attained its complete development. In like manner when the Catholico-Feudal system culminated, the germ of its destruction commenced, as well as the elements of the system destined in our day to replace it.

In truth as regards the temporal power the Emancipation of the Commons dates from the eleventh and twelfth centuries. As regards the spiritual power, the Positive Sciences were introduced into Europe by the Arabs about the same time.

Let us fix our attention on this fundamental fact, since it forms the real starting point for the series of observations by which we now endeavour to throw light upon the existing political system.

The Feudal or military power must be replaced by the Industrial capacity.

So long as War was, in fact, and rightly, considered as the chief source of the prosperity of nations, it was natural that the direction of the temporal affairs of society should be in the hands of a military power and that Industry, occupying a subaltern position, should be only used as an instrument. On the contrary when experience has at last convinced society that the only road to riches lies through peaceful activity, or works of industry, the direction of affairs properly passes to the industrial capacity. Henceforward military force, in its turn, can only occupy a subordinate position, as a merely passive force, and one in all probability destined to become finally useless.

Now the Emancipation of the Commons laid the foundation for this new state of things; facilitating and even necessitating a change which as will presently be shown, ever after developed itself with increasing force. This emancipation established the Industrial Capacity as a social organisation distinct from the Military Power; thus conferring on it an independent existence.

Before this epoch not only were the artisans as a body absolutely dependent on the military class; but each of them was entirely at the mercy of the individual caprice of his territorial lord.

The Emancipation of the Commons while leaving in force the first or collective kind of subjection, abolished the second or individual, and in so doing prepared the way for the destruction of the former. Up to that time the artisans possessed nothing as their own. All they possessed, and even their persons, belonged to their lords, and they enjoyed only what these thought proper to relinquish. Their emancipation created an industrial property, springing from labour, a kind of property distinct from, independent of, and soon rivalling territorial property which in its origin and constitution was purely military.

Thanks to this memorable innovation the Industrial Capacity was enabled to develop, perfect, and extend itself, and nations could then organise themselves completely on a basis of industry. The ruling powers alone, together with the general government of which these continued in possession maintained a military character.

us next make observations in reference to the Spiritual Power, analogous to those which we have just made on the temporal power.

The Spiritual Power must, in like manner, be replaced by the Scientific or Positive Capacity.

At the period when all branches of knowledge were essentially conjectural and metaphysical the direction of society in spiritual matters naturally fell into the hands of a theological power, since theologians were then the only general thinkers. On the contrary as soon as the entire range of knowledge became based upon observation, the direction of spiritual affairs would rightly be confided to the scientific or positive capacity, since this is evidently superior to theology or metaphysics.

Now the introduction of the Positive Sciences into Europe by the Arabs created the germ of this important revolution which in our day has embraced all special branches of thought and even reached our general conceptions so far as regards their critical or negative aspect.

No sooner had the Arabs founded, in the portions of Europe conquered by them, schools for teaching the sciences of observation, than a general enthusiasm for this new enlightenment animated all distinguished minds. Schools of a like nature soon arose throughout Western Europe; observatories, schools of dissection, museums of natural history were established in Italy, France, England, and Germany. From the thirteenth century, Roger Bacon cultivated the physical sciences with distinguished success. The superiority of the positive over the conjectural, of physics over metaphysics was so strongly felt from the outset, even by the spiritual power, that several eminent members of the clergy, and among others two popes, went, about the same time, to complete their education at Cordova by studying at that school sciences of observation under Arabian professors.

Resuming then the preceding observations, we may take it as certain that at the moment when the Catholic-Feudal system assumed its definite organisation, the elements of a new social system took their rise. A positive temporal capacity, that is to say the Industrial Capacity, sprang up beside the existing Military Power, then come to full maturity; and a positive spiritual capacity, that is to say the Scientific Capacity, arose behind the Spiritual Power, at the moment when this began to develop its full activity.¹

Decline of the Medieval and growth of the Modern social system.

Before commencing our examination of the special facts, let us observe a remarkable difference between the old and new systems which shows itself from the very birth of the latter. This difference I have endeavoured to render by contrasting the words power and capacity. I do not say: a new power arises beside each of the two ancient powers, but: a *capacity* arises beside a *power*. In other words the action of principles then took its rise, and in our day substitutes itself for the action of men; Reason taking the place of Will.

The military character of the ancient system naturally demanded in the highest degree passive obedience from the nation. On the contrary the

¹ The social distinction between the Spiritual and Temporal Powers must subsist in the new as in the old system. This division which had no existence among the Romans is the most fundamental improvement which the Moderns have introduced into the organisation of society. By this alone, as permitting the separation of theory and practice, it became possible to make politics a science. There is however this difference that in the new system the separation is no longer between two Powers but between two Capacities.

industrial capacity, regarded as the rightful guide of the temporal affairs of society, is not and should not be associated with arbitrary power, since the plans which it may propose for advancing the public good on the one hand can be judged, and, on the other hand, can be executed without resorting to coercion.

The spiritual power, in like manner, being in its very essence conjectural, necessarily exacted the highest degree of confidence and mental submission. Such submission was an indispensable condition of its existence and action. On the contrary the positive scientific capacity, in directing the spiritual affairs of society requires no blind faith, nor even confidence; at least on the part of all who can comprehend demonstrations; while as regards those who cannot, experience has sufficiently proved that reliance placed in the unanimous conclusions of men of science, not being liable to abuse, cannot be prejudicial.

The positive scientific capacity may therefore, in so far as it is a creative force, be considered as the source of power; but of a power which replaces Revelation by Demonstration.

Such then is our starting point. In the eleventh century the temporal and spiritual powers attained their definite constitution, and at the same epoch two positive capacities took their rise, preparing the overthrow of the powers which they were finally destined to replace. In a word; one system culminated; another was born. Since that period the two systems have always co-existed in a state of mutual antagonism, at one time secret, at another open; the first however always losing ground while the second continually advanced.

An investigation of the past is, therefore, divisible into two parallel series, which respectively embrace the decline of the old and the growth of the new system. This division will form the basis of this Essay.

FIRST SERIES.

First open struggle between the old and new society in the sixteenth century.

AT the period above selected for the commencement of this investigation, the two systems—one at its apogee the other just springing into life—were so unequal in force that for a long time no direct and apparent struggle could arise between them. Accordingly history shows that the open conflict only dates from the sixteenth century. The four or five centuries, immediately preceding formed the period of greatest splendour of the Catholic-Feudal systems; but this splendour rested on a foundation already undermined.

The Religious and political revolutions gradually prepared.

Had historians more deeply analysed and examined the Middle Ages, they would not have confined their expositions to the obvious features of that period. They would have pointed out the gradual preparation of the great events afterwards developed, and would not have represented the sixteenth century as a series of sudden and unforeseen explosions. However this may be, unquestionably, the open struggle between the two systems only dates from that century.

The Spiritual Power was essentially characterised by its exercising a European function, and was consequently in reality subverted by the

attack of Luther and his co-reformers on the Papal authority. This also completely sapped the surviving influence of theological authority by destroying the principle of blind faith, and substituting for it that of the right of free inquiry, which, at first confined within narrow limits, was inevitably destined to expand continually and embrace, at last, an indefinite field.

This twofold change was accomplished as completely in countries that remained Catholic, especially in France, as in those which embraced Protestantism.

The two cases however presented one essential difference. In Catholic countries, the spiritual power feeling its downfall as a distinct and independent body, generally speaking, subordinated itself to the royal authority, devoting to its service and support the same doctrines by which the church had formerly predominated over the monarchy.

This change in the rôle of the clergy had the effect of prolonging its political influence somewhat beyond its natural duration; but it damaged the cause of royalty by associating its fortunes more closely with those of doctrines which had lost all credit among the educated classes.

The religious Reformation, by reason of the wars it occasioned, occupied the entire of the sixteenth and the first part of the seventeenth centuries. Immediately after this movement began the assaults upon the Temporal Power in France and England.

In each of these countries the Commons, guided by one of the two branches of the temporal power, led the attack. Between the two nations but one difference existed on this head. With the English Feudalism became the ally of the Commons against the royal authority, while in France they were headed by Royalty against feudalism.

This combination of the Commons with one element of the temporal power against the other element had originated in both countries after their emancipation, and had even contributed not a little to produce it. Long before the seventeenth century the alliance had produced unmistakeable results which prepared the important events of that century.

In France Cardinal Richelieu laboured for the overthrow of Feudalism; an enterprise terminated by Louis XIV., who reduced the nobility to entire insignificance and political nullity, leaving them no other office than that of guard of honour to royalty. It is essential to observe that both Richelieu and Louis XIV. powerfully encouraged the fine arts, the sciences and the industrial arts; they endeavoured to enhance the political importance of savants, artists and artisans, while lowering that of the nobles. This policy was most clearly manifested by the minister Colbert, himself an artisan. But this fact belongs to our second series of observations and it suffices to note it here.

In England the issue of the struggle was the revolution of 1688, which limited the royal power as far as could be done without subverting the ancient system. Thus in each of these two countries the attack on the Temporal Power, in distinct ways, weakened, as far as was possible, a different element of this power; so that the two nations had effected the overthrow of the temporal power up to the point where further change became impracticable without abandoning the ancient social system. To effectuate this final result, it was sufficient that each nation should adopt the modification made by the other. This has occurred in France, since the French adopted the English Constitution.

The coalition between the Commons and one element of the temporal

growth
of the
Commons.

power against the other element, and the active assistance which in several countries was accorded by the temporal against the spiritual power, renders it impossible, without a thorough investigation, to seize the true nature of these attacks.

Hence has sprung a widespread error which it is important to point out and refute. In place of seeing in these events the struggle of the Commons headed by certain elements of the Catholico-Feudal system against its other elements, historians have only seen a quarrel of kings and popes and of the royal and feudal authorities between themselves. The Commons have been merely regarded as instruments employed by the different powers and seldom in any other light.

Before proceeding to rectify the error just mentioned, it may be well to observe that, whatever view be taken, our present series will remain unaffected, since its main object is to prove the continuous decline of the ancient system. Nevertheless it is very far from being a matter of indifference whether we form a just or an erroneous conception of the extent to which this decline was wrought by the influence of the artisans, artists, and savants who collectively constituted the Commons.

It may be laid down as a principle that any discordance of elements constituting a system is an evident sign of its decay. Thus from the first great act of antagonism between the temporal and spiritual powers, the fall of both, sooner or later, might have been predicted.

Antagonism of this sort showed itself at a very early period in the ancient system, even anterior to its complete organisation; but became continuous almost immediately after its definitive establishment. Reflection shows that it was inherent in this system.

Powers are of necessity rivals and jealous of each other, even when their common interest manifestly dictates an intimate alliance. These powers being, in fact, incapable of a clear definition, it is natural that each should aspire to exclusive dominion. A true and enduring combination can only exist between positive Capacities. Combination then becomes possible, and, so to speak, inevitable, since each of these capacities naturally confines itself to its proper office, which is defined as sharply as possible. Pretensions to universal influence, which alone could disturb this natural arrangement, strike all men as absurd, and, consequently, could never muster a sufficient number of followers to make them dangerous.

The Commons being at their birth manifestly too feeble to struggle alone against the ancient system, were forced to attach themselves to the heads of the enemy's camp. They endeavoured to profit by the divisions that arose within it, and such was their prudence, they did in fact always profit by them. Their plan was very simple, and consisted in always supporting that power which at each period and in each country was most liberal, that is most in harmony with their interests. This plan they followed persistently, with an admirable instinct, in all the partial crises which preceded the two great struggles of the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries. Thus their conduct in these later periods was by no means accidental, but resulted from long established habits.

Now this explains why in England the Commons sided with the Lords against the King, while in France they took part with Royalty against Feudalism. At more remote periods the Commons both in France and England, had embraced the cause of the Spiritual Power because this was then the most liberal. In reality therefore, the Commons were not the mere

instruments of the ancient powers; on the contrary the latter, although moved by impulses peculiar to themselves, should rather be regarded as having been instruments of the former. In fact the attack upon the ancient system took place both through and for the Commons. They were not dupes, if any such there were, in the transaction.

Moreover, the Commons, in the struggles of the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries, exercised a direct action peculiar to themselves. Each of the two elements of the new system, the Industrial capacity and the Scientific capacity, contributed to the result. Although these always acted concurrently, nevertheless, as was natural, the latter principally concerned itself with the Spiritual power as the former did with the Temporal power. Each capacity fought hand to hand with the corresponding power and, as is worthy of remark, the scientific capacity, while endeavouring to overthrow the theological doctrines, felt itself obliged to take its stand upon theology, or at least, to accommodate its arguments to the theological method. This is mainly observable in the writings of Lord Bacon. This fact in the spiritual struggle corresponds to the alliance of the Commons with one of the elements of the military power in the temporal conflict.

It is not necessary to demonstrate the marked influence exercised by the Sciences of Observation upon the Reformation of Luther; since no one in the present day questions it. The best historians of this period have indicated the influence, which though less direct and decided, was exercised upon this reform by the progress of the Useful Arts; pointing out the great impulse given to commerce and manufactures by the discovery of America and the passage to the Indies round the Cape of Good Hope, which indeed itself resulted from the progress of the useful arts combined with the sciences of observation.

Discovery of America, Invention of Printing and Copernican Astronomy.

Two other discoveries of the first rank, made, one in the arts towards the end of the fifteenth century, the other in the sciences about a century later, confirmed and hastened the decline of the ancient system, and secured for the new an advance more direct and certain, more calm and more rapid.

Of these discoveries the first was that of Printing, which if it did not cause the Reformation, at least rendered its spread much more rapid and complete than it otherwise would have been. But this did not form its main influence in the overthrow of the ancient system.

The considerations are well known that prove the immense revolution which this discovery effected in social order, by rendering public opinion supreme. Passing these over, we shall present the subject in another aspect.

We say therefore: first, that the discovery of printing secured to the new system the means of taking a direct and complete initiative in replacing the ancient system independently of any protection from its declining elements; secondly, that it assuaged, in a large measure, the antecedent violence of the struggle, by substituting criticism for attack.

The second of these discoveries is that of the true Astronomical Theory devised by Copernicus, proved and established by Galileo.

Even the best minds rarely estimate at its true value, the vast influence which the change of ideas thus wrought exerted in the radical destruction of the theological system. So great was this influence that it alone would have sufficed to demolish that system. The following consideration, which my readers can develope, will suffice to show this.

The entire theological system is based upon the supposition that the earth is made for man and the whole universe made for the earth; remove this supposition and the basis of all supernatural doctrines gives way. Now Galileo, having demonstrated that our planet is one of the smallest, is in no respect distinguished from the others, and revolves with them about the sun, the hypothesis that nature is made for mankind alone so manifestly shocks good sense and contradicts fact, that it must appear absurd and collapse, and with it must fall the edifice of faith. In a word the theological doctrines are entirely incompatible with the truths of modern astronomy; and are so felt even by those whose astronomical belief does not rest on demonstration.

This consideration, when sufficiently weighed, must satisfy us that the Inquisition, in endeavouring to suppress at the outset the theory of Galileo, was faithful to its office as the police of the Spiritual Power.

To resume our previous remarks, it appears that by the end of the seventeenth century two attacks had been made on the ancient system; one in the sixteenth century on the spiritual power, the other in the seventeenth century on the temporal power.

At first sight this twofold attack might seem sufficient, but such was far from being the case. The system had been attacked in its elements but not as a whole; beaten in detail it still needed to be beaten as a system. Besides, each special struggle had been directed by a single branch of the ancient powers and thus was not sufficiently decisive. The victory of the new over the old system had not been made sufficiently clear; and this was an additional reason which necessitated a further struggle.

Anyone therefore living at the end of the seventeenth century, and well acquainted with the real state of affairs might have predicted with perfect confidence that the two antecedent but partial attacks were merely preparatory, and would in the succeeding century be followed by an attack directed against the entire old system and destined to effect its final destruction. Such events were the inevitable consequence of historical events since the eleventh century, but more immediately of the last two centuries.

18th
ary.

It would be superfluous to consider in detail facts so near to our own time and known to all. In truth, the eighteenth century was, as might be expected, the result, the complement, and the *résumé* of the two preceding centuries.

In reference to the Spiritual Power the principle of the Right of Private Judgment in religion (laid down by Luther though at first very timidly) was then pushed to its furthest limits. The boldest applications of this right advanced side by side with the efforts made to vindicate its supremacy. The theological creeds thus submitted to discussion were entirely overthrown, no doubt somewhat recklessly, precipitately, and superficially, with an exaggerated disregard of the past and an inadequate insight into the future; but they were irremediably overthrown, since criticism covered them with ridicule even among the least instructed classes. This is an undeniable fact; and we make the observation without discussing its grounds.

If we examine what were the destinies of the Temporal Power in France, where the eighteenth century should be principally studied, we shall find that Feudalism having in the preceding century lost all political power, forfeited in this all social consideration.

Royalty, after having, under Louis XIV., obtained complete dominion over the temporal power by the support which the Commons lent to it, ceased to ally itself with them; a serious mistake on its part.

Louis XIV. committed a great error in allying himself with the nobility, which—oblivious of its having once held an equal rank with the monarch—at last resigned itself to accept, in exchange for money and honors, a subordinate and insignificant political *rôle*.

Had not Louis XIV. committed this great error; had he abandoned to its fate a declining power irrevocably doomed, and whose destruction was hastened by himself; had he in fine simply continued to follow the direction taken by the Commons, he would, without doubt, have saved all the misfortunes which afterwards fell on Louis XVI.

This false step it was which originally discredited Royalty in the eyes of the Commons and alienated them from it. The discredit thrown on the royal power by the private life of the Regent and the libertinism of Louis XV., put the finishing stroke to this declension. At the same time the philosophers, having subjected the temporal, as they had the spiritual power, to discussion, it also succumbed the more easily because it was, since the Reformation, in great part founded on the same doctrines.

Thus the eighteenth century carried the criticism of the two powers to its last limits, and completed the ruin of the Ancient System, both in its elements and as a whole. A more detailed examination of the process by which its overthrow was effected would here be out of place.

I shall merely indicate the influence which the immense and ever increasing progress of the sciences of observation from the time of Galileo inevitably exercised for the destruction of theological doctrines. Newton's discovery of a general physical law, Franklin's analysis of the principal meteorological phenomenon, besides his invention for subordinating it to human power; in a word, all the numerous and remarkable discoveries made during this century in astronomy, physics, chemistry, and physiology contributed to the radical and irrevocable destruction of the theological system, more efficaciously than all the writings of Voltaire and his coadjutors, although these really exercised a prodigious influence. Neither the partisans nor the adversaries of the ancient system have adequately appreciated this fact.

Thus prepared or, to speak more truly, necessitated, the French Revolution burst forth. From the outset it took a wrong direction and the Royal Power was overthrown.

The royal power speedily raised itself once again. Forming as this did both head and heart of the ancient system, the one could only disappear with the other; and no system can disappear until a fresh one has come into being and is ready to replace its predecessor.

From this great movement resulted the abolition of privileges, the proclamation of the principle of unlimited liberty of conscience, and finally the establishment of the English constitution, granted by the crown.

The abolition of privileges completed the ruin of Feudalism, reducing the temporal power to the single element of royalty.

Unlimited liberty of conscience once proclaimed as a principle,¹ the Spiritual Power was wholly and irrevocably abolished.

¹ Its proclamation rendered impossible the establishment of any theological authority, either political, or simply moral. Doctrines having been abandoned

The establishment of the English constitution should be viewed under two aspects, differing from each other and in some degree opposed.

On the one hand it continued the work of demolition, by limiting the Royal Power, now the only surviving part of the ancient system, as far as could be done without abandoning this.

On the other hand, by establishing a Chamber intended to represent Public Opinion, this innovation provided the means of transition, through which it became possible, peaceably, easily, and promptly, to initiate the normal system so soon as this was prepared and ready to take its place.

Having thus terminated the first series of observations, I shall briefly resume the results of my examination.

I set out from this position :

In the eleventh century the Catholico-Feudal system had acquired its definite constitution both as to the spiritual and the temporal power.

From the same epoch dates the rise of the elements of the new social system. These were firstly the Industrial Capacity sprung from the enfranchisement of the Commons and represented by the artisans ; secondly the Scientific Capacity which took its rise with the introduction of the sciences of observation into Europe by the Arabs.

For four or five hundred years these two systems coexisted without any open conflict, their forces being so unequal ; but during this period the struggle was silently prepared.

From the commencement of the sixteenth century, three grand conflicts arose between the new and old system. Two of them were partial, one was general ; and each occupied about one century.

The sixteenth century witnessed the attack on the spiritual, the seventeenth that on the temporal power ; while the general and decisive attack on the ancient system took place during the eighteenth, determining the fall of the theologico-military system.

The true condition of the Ancient System may without exaggeration be thus described.

On the one hand, dogmatic faith no longer exists, all the beliefs which lay at its root being extinct or nearly so. Thus the spiritual power can now only exert an influence upon the lowest orders of society.

On the other hand, the temporal power stands reduced to one only of its two branches—royalty. This is itself reduced to the smallest dimensions consistent with the bare subsistence in an inert state of the ancient system.

In fine the ancient system in our day no longer possesses any force but such as is rigorously required for the maintenance of order until the establishment of the new one ; and its continued efficacy for this purpose would be very doubtful were the advent of the latter too long postponed.

to the good pleasure of each individual, perhaps no two professions of faith would have been identical, and that of each person might vary from morning to evening, altering with the ever varying state of his physical and moral sensibilities, and the changes in his social circumstances.

In a word it is evident that, as regards their political consequences unlimited liberty of conscience and entire theological indifference come to exactly the same thing. In neither case can supernatural beliefs serve as the basis of morals. Far from concealing this fact we cannot repeat it too often, since it proves the necessity for reconstructing and building on positive principles (that is to say principles deduced from observation) that morality which is the basis or rather the general bond of the social organisation.

neral
line of
Ancient
tem.

In conformity with this exposition I leave others to judge whether the organisation of the new system is urgent; and whether artists, scientific men and artisans do not gravely err when they are indifferent on this head.

Such is the true state of society at this moment with reference to the ancient system. The second series of observations will soon show us how far our social state is more satisfactory in relation to the new system.

SECOND SERIES.

If in the preceding series the march of civilisation has appeared stormy, in that on which we now enter we shall find it calm. Hitherto we have only considered the successive steps in the disorganisation of the ancient system of society. But contemporaneously with this decline, a New Social Order was completely, though gradually, created. This in our day has become sufficiently developed to replace the ancient and already decrepit order. It remains to study and explain the gradual development of the new system.

The new
society
based on
Science and
Industry.

Let us once more retrace our steps.

We have seen that in the eleventh century at the very moment when the ancient system culminated, the elements of a new social organisation had sprung up. These elements were, as regarded the temporal power, the Industrial Capacity born from the enfranchisement of the Commons, as regarded the spiritual, the Scientific Capacity resulting from the introduction of the positive sciences into Europe by the Arabs.

If at this epoch some man of genius could have looked with sufficient insight into the then condition of affairs he must infallibly have foreseen, from its very beginning, the entire of the great revolution since accomplished; he must have become aware that the two elements just created would inevitably tend to overthrow the two powers whose combination constituted the system then in vigour.

He must likewise have foreseen that these new elements would expand, more and more, at the expense of the two powers; so as, little by little, to found a system finally destined to replace the ancient one.

Applying ourselves to verify this fundamental view, we shall find that the second series is implicitly contained in its earliest germs. We shall next examine the manner in which the new system was effectively organised.

The twofold and inherent tendency of the new system—to destroy the ancient system and to replace it—was the immediate result of the two following causes.

In the first place, from the very nature of things the industrial capacity and the scientific capacity are antagonistic one to the military the other to the theological power.

In the second place the source of these two capacities placed them outside the ancient system, since they were represented by classes distinct from and independent of the temporal and spiritual power.

This latter feature, while it assured the future of both capacities and

their complete development, impressed upon them an indelible character of opposition to and incompatibility with the ancient system.

Up to the present time so little attention has been paid to this essential view that it becomes necessary to develop it at some length.

In the social state which still subsists in Russia, where all industrial undertakings are directed, in the last resort, by the feudal class, the industrial capacity does not present itself in natural opposition to the military power, or as properly belonging to a distinct state of society. It has not yet assumed its characteristic attitude. The artisans are only passive instruments in the hands of the military rulers. So also with the scientific capacity, so long as the sciences are cultivated by the theological powers alone, as was the case in the early periods of civilisation in the ancient theocracies of the East, and still is so in China. The scientific capacity is then merely an instrument of government in the hands of the priesthood.

Such in fact was the state of affairs in Europe down to the memorable period which we have selected as our starting-point.

Before the Enfranchisement of the Commons the small amount of agricultural, manufacturing, and commercial enterprise which then existed, if not directed by the temporal chiefs, was, at least, dependent upon them.

So likewise, before the introduction of the Positive Sciences into Europe by the Arabs, the small subsisting aggregate of knowledge was entirely in the hands of the spiritual power.

It is worthy of remark that this state of things, while it lasted, secured the perpetuation of the ancient system; not merely because the main-springs of the new one were completely at the mercy of the two ancient powers, but also because, for this very reason, the development of the two capacities was completely arrested.

When the sciences and arts are regarded simply as instruments, they can never rise above a certain, and that a very low point, as may be seen in China and India.

On the contrary as soon as the Commons were enfranchised, and the positive sciences exclusively cultivated by laymen, which happened shortly after their introduction into Europe, the face of things was entirely changed.

These two great events first permitted the arts and sciences freely to expand; no other limit being thenceforward imposed on the progress of the two positive capacities but that of the duration of the human race.

In the second place from this date the industrial capacity and the scientific capacity, disengaged for ever from the ancient system, established themselves in a solid manner outside of it, thus acquiring a separate and characteristic existence. But it was impossible they should cease to be instruments of the ancient system without becoming its enemies: as the proverb says, *Qui non est mecum, contra me est*.

This fundamental revolution, therefore, created two new social forces, the industrial force and the scientific force. These from their birth, and owing to their origin, were externally impressed with a twofold character; being at once antagonists of the ancient political order and elements of a new order.

The contempt and hatred which from that time forward Feudalism and Theology persistently manifested, the one towards the Industrial Arts, the other towards the Sciences of Observation, only strengthened this antagonism and rendered it more decided.

Thus the change wrought during the eleventh century contained in principle at once the destruction of the ancient system and the creation of a new order of things.

Since this epoch history has been nothing but the consequence and the development of the primitive social dualism above described. Having in the preceding series considered this social development in its first aspect, we now proceed to examine its progress under the second point of view.

It would assuredly be absurd to suppose that the new system has been organised by Savants, Artists, and Artisans, in accordance with a predetermined unvarying plan pursued from the eleventh century to our own time. At no period has the progress of society been regulated by a system conceived by a man of genius and adopted by the masses.¹ This would, from the nature of things, be impossible, for the law of human progress guides and dominates all; men are only its instruments. Although this force springs from ourselves, it is no more possible for us to withdraw from its influence or control its action than to change at our pleasure the original impulse which causes our planet to revolve around the sun.

Influence of
Savants, Ar-
tists and
Artisans, spontaneous
not systematic; social
not political.

Secondary results, alone, are subject to our control. All that we can do is consciously to obey this law, which constitutes our true providence, ascertaining the course it marks out for us, instead of being blindly impelled by it. Here, in truth, lies the goal of the grand philosophic revolution reserved for our own times. Nevertheless when the political order presents a series of events connected together exactly as if their human agents had framed such a plan, is not such an hypothesis admissible as a means of elucidating this connection of events?² In doing so we should merely employ, with still less departure from the reality, the method adopted in the physical sciences, where intentions and design are attributed even to inorganic matter in order to afford a clearer view of the phenomena. Besides as regards their consequences, a great resemblance subsists between a connected series of events and a premeditated plan; and we shall presently see that the evolution of the new system was determined by the original constitution of its elements.

The following may be regarded as the plan adopted by the Commons,

¹ The capital error of the legislators and philosophers of antiquity, in truth, lay in their endeavouring to regulate the progress of civilisation by their systematic views; whereas the latter should have been subordinated to the former. This error was, nevertheless, very excusable and natural, on their part; for at that epoch the origin of civilisation was too recent to allow of anyone observing its law of progress, or even perceiving the existence of such a law, much less recognising that its course lies beyond our control.

Evidently this truth could only be reached *à posteriori*, and not *à priori*. In other words politics could not become a science, without a basis of observation, and observations could only be made after a prolonged period of civilised existence. It was necessary to await the establishment of a social system, which should embrace numerous populations consisting of several great nations, and last a long while, before a theory could be founded upon this great experiment.

² I may be allowed also to remark that, admitting it to be true that science becomes positive only when founded on observed and acknowledged facts, it is equally certain (as the history of intellect in all directions proves) that no branch of knowledge acquires a scientific character until an hypothesis has combined all its fundamental facts.

Thus whenever politics shall have become a science, it is certain that it will employ hypotheses, as the other sciences do, and that they will be employed in the sense pointed out above.

from the period of their emancipation, for gradually preparing the re-organisation of society on a new and suitable basis: to employ themselves solely with operations upon nature in order to utilise her powers for the benefit of the human race; and to exercise an action upon men only so far as was necessary in order to enlist their co-operation in this aim.

Such in brief was the simple plan invariably pursued from the outset by men of science and artisans, who started with a single object, the former of studying nature in order to understand her, the latter of applying this knowledge to satisfy the wants and desires of mankind.

This course was so wise that a better could not have been selected, had scientific men and artisans framed one advisedly.

In fine this plan is so perfect that nothing remains for us now but to apply it to the general direction of society, in like manner as our forefathers, step by step, brought it to bear on each part of the social organisation.

It is easy to explain why this plan was followed without premeditation or even conscious action. After giving this explanation we shall briefly indicate the ground of its success.

The Commons by the very fact of their enfranchisement were freed from the state of individual dependence which previously weighed upon them; but the artisans and men of science remained collectively dependent upon the military and theological classes.

At the outset this dependence was so great and the Commons were so weak that they were manifestly unable to withdraw from it. But this obstacle which at first sight seemed inimical to their interests, really assured the success of their efforts. They were thus preserved from being led astray, and constrained, by an invincible necessity, to pursue the course which was really the wisest. Debarred from the idea of sharing in government, or even of withdrawing themselves from the collective despotism, the Commons only sought to profit by the degree of individual liberty they had gained in such a way as to develop to the utmost the scientific and industrial capacities.

Men of science and artists only endeavoured to act upon nature, the one to obtain, by observation and experiment, a knowledge of her laws, the other to apply this knowledge to the production of necessary, useful, or agreeable, objects. In adopting this course they simply followed a natural tendency to ameliorate our lot; for in consequence of their political inferiority this action upon nature was the only course which the Commons could adopt for improving their social condition. Hence we may clearly perceive the force which obliged the Commons to pursue, unconsciously, the plan above indicated.

As a means of showing how conformable to their real interests was this plan, let us put a case. Assuming then that the condition of affairs was not originally such as I have described it, let us imagine that the Commons had, immediately after their enfranchisement, obtained a full share of political power, what use would they have made of this power? what would have occurred? In all probability the result would have been as follows.

Their participation in political power would have caused them to lose sight of their true aim,—the development of the industrial and scientific capacities. At all events this development would have been far slower than it was, and consequently the Commons would have continued, for a much longer period, in subjection to the military and theological powers. For it

needed a powerful awakening of the sense of common interests combined with the force of demonstration to enable them to struggle with marked success against physical force combined with that of superstition. Accordingly both in France and in England, the Commons did not, until a comparatively recent period, evince any great anxiety to assume those legislative functions which were accorded to them in each country during the struggles of Royalty and Feudalism by one or other of these branches of the temporal power.¹

Let us now, directly, examine the advantages of the course followed by the Commons.

Without troubling themselves as to the way in which the military and theological authorities directed society, and putting, as it were, out of view the ancient system, the Commons set to work to organise all the special departments left to their control, with the single object of operating upon nature. By adopting this wise course, they were assured not only of giving no displeasure to the existing powers but of being agreeable to them and receiving from them every encouragement compatible with their exercise of authority. More than that; they were certain, little by little, through their extensive action on nature and the riches and consideration thus acquired, to redeem themselves gradually from the oppression that weighed upon them.

Finally they could reckon on being able, by the advance of industrial and scientific capacity, to acquire a progressive increase of force, which would gradually allow of their treating with their rulers as equals, and eventually of obtaining an ascendancy over them; and this has in our day really become possible.

Those who place their happiness in exercising an arbitrary authority merely for the pleasure of exerting it are, fortunately, very rare anomalies in human nature. The majority of men desire power, when placed within their reach, not as an end but as a means. They value it, less from love of authority,² than because their idleness and incapacity disposes them to

¹ The alliance of the Commons with one portion of the temporal power against the other, in France and England, was really very serviceable to the artisans and men of science; but this coalition should be considered in reference to the destruction of the old, and not to the organisation of the new system. In the first series of remarks, I have thus considered it.

The little anxiety evinced by the Commons to profit by the share in the legislative power secured for them by their allies in the ancient system, was clearly manifested in England, where, nevertheless, the Commons have pursued with greater vigour than elsewhere this kind of political progress. We know that previous to the epoch when they began to have a voice in the imposition of taxes, they regarded the sending of deputies to Parliament as a heavy burden, because the feudal nobility only summoned them in order to ascertain how much the Commons could pay, and to plunder them accordingly.

² This love of authority, though certainly indestructible in man, has nevertheless been, to a great degree, nullified by the progress of civilisation, or, at least, its inconveniences have almost disappeared in the new system. In fact, the development of our action upon nature has changed the direction of this sentiment, by guiding it towards things. The desire to command men has gradually transformed itself into that of modifying nature at our pleasure.

From this moment the love of power, born in all men, ceased to be hurtful or, at least, we may anticipate the time when instead of doing harm it will do good. Thus it is that civilisation has perfected man's moral nature; not merely as regards the intellect but also as to the passions. Though, by virtue of the laws of the human organisation, the latter order of vital functions is not directly susceptible of improvement, it becomes so through the influence exercised by the former

employ others in procuring enjoyments instead of themselves joining in this labour.

The dominant aim of almost all persons is not to act upon man, but upon nature. There is hardly anyone who does not eagerly renounce even absolute authority, when its exercise excludes the enjoyment of those advantages of civilisation which result from our action upon things. The English Nabob who has made his fortune in Bengal, and exercises an unlimited power over thousands of Hindoos, sighs for the moment when he can return to Europe and there possess the enjoyments of life; though he well knows that in England he cannot commit the smallest arbitrary act against the meanest sailor without risk to himself. We are therefore certain to succeed with most men, when it is proposed to sacrifice a certain degree of authority by way of exchange for a certain measure of dominion over things.

Thus the success of the plan followed by the Commons from the period of their enfranchisement was founded on a law of human nature.

We are in this way able to explain the cause of all the chief advances effected by the elements of the New Social System during their gradual organisation. These advances were essentially due to the perseverance of the Commons in following the simple and complete plan above expounded. Events, independent of this plan, accelerated its success; but the plan itself mainly determined the result. It, therefore, only remains for us to recapitulate the various kinds of progress realised.

In order to avoid confusion in expounding the new system, in reference to its Temporal and Spiritual development, it is requisite to distinguish between the advances effected by the mass of the Commons and those made by their temporal and spiritual Leaders. Moreover, the Social and the Political progress of the new system should be separately considered. By its social progress we understand its internal development, apart from all relations with the ancient system; by its political progress the influence which the latter allowed the new system to exercise in the formation of the political order, as well as the share of legislative authority which it obtained.

oral
as of
w so-
stem
the
aders.

Let us now consider the social and political progress of the new system under their temporal aspects; and among these, first, the social progress.

This is not the place for retracing, even in a summary way, the truly vast improvements effected by art and industry since the emancipation of the Commons. Let us simply review them in reference to the organisation of the new system.

Since this epoch the industrial capacity has attained to a development, which even the most vivid imagination cannot accurately represent. All the arts previously known have been prodigiously improved, and a far larger number of new arts discovered. Agriculture has multiplied its products enormously. Commercial relations have been incalculably improved and have been, at the same time, largely extended, especially since the discovery of the New World. In a word the action of the human race upon the external world has been, to an inappreciable degree, increased, and, so to speak, created.

As the result of this increased action a much larger portion of the human race in civilised countries, is now abundantly and securely provided with the necessaries of life, although population has greatly increased.

Objects of convenience and luxury have also come into use to a proportionate extent.

Such have been the chief results of this progress in reference to the temporal organisation of the new system.

The Commons have gradually acquired a preponderating influence and consideration. All social arrangements have fallen under their control, all the real forces of society have come into their hands, and, since the invention of gunpowder, even the military power has become subordinated to them.

On the one hand the discovery of powder destroyed the physical superiority over the artisans which the possession of arms conferred upon the military classes; and supplied the former with the means of self-protection without receiving a soldier's education. On the other hand it placed the entire system of war in dependence upon the industrial arts and sciences of observation.

At the same time war having thus become more and more costly, it could no longer be carried on without loans, for which the military power was dependent upon the Commons. In a word, matters gradually reached the stage when war became impossible if the industrial and scientific capacities refused their cooperation.

Under the temporal point of view the political advances of the new system were the direct and necessary result of its social progress. In proportion as the Commons acquired greater riches, with more consideration and civic importance, they augmented their influence over the general direction of society, and their direct political authority.

It is in England chiefly that the advance of the Commons in this respect should be observed, because it has there been most clearly revealed.¹

The Commons having, in the English Parliament, begun by slowly obtaining a kind of consultative voice in the vote on taxation, gradually obtained a deliberative voice, and in the end, the supply was specially conceded to them. Their exclusive right on this head was irrevocably made a fundamental principle of the constitution in the settlement of 1688.

At the same time, the influence of the Commons in the formation of the general political plan became increasingly large. At the same epoch, in England it reached such a height that the ancient rulers in principle admitted that social prosperity is based upon industry, and consequently that the political plan should be conceived in the interest of the Commons. Under both these aspects the ancient system has been modified in favour of the new one, as far as was possible, so long as society, as a whole, remained under the control of the ancient system.

¹ Almost immediately after their enfranchisement the Commons were invited, in France no less than in England, to cooperate in the formation of the States General; but in France this step produced hardly any results.

I take this opportunity of stating that I have not felt it desirable to consider the attempts made soon after their emancipation, at almost all points of civilised Europe, but especially in Germany and Italy, to organise industrial societies. These attempts, indicating the birth of the new system, have left no durable trace. They had not, nor could they have had an organic character. In so rapid a review, considerations of this kind, far from enlightening, would have confused the mind.

This progress effected by the Commons was assuredly very important, but it is also very important not to exaggerate its significance or to confound a mere modification with a total change of system.

The exclusive right of voting the taxes granted to the Commons, should, theoretically, have invested them with supreme political power. But in fact, up to the present time this right has benefited them very little, because they have not really exercised it. The House of Commons has been at bottom merely a sort of appendage to royalty and feudalism; an instrument in the hands of the ancient system. Moreover the maxim admitted in England by the temporal power that the political plan should be conceived in the interests of industry, has, to the present time, but slightly benefited the Commons. The reason for this is, that the ancient system, commanding the situation and of necessity preserving its position until the new system was definitely organised, could only place at the service of the Commons its peculiar modes of action—namely, force and cunning. In this way, since the famous Navigation Laws, the temporal power has systematically fought and plotted, in order to serve the interests of the Commons.

The establishment of the Parliamentary *Régime* in England must, therefore, be regarded as having, as far as was possible, modified the ancient system, and supplied a transition to the new system. In this respect only was it useful to the Commons, for, considered in itself and absolutely, its results were at least as mischievous as they were useful to them.

France, by her recent adoption of the English constitution, has placed herself on a level with England in both of the above respects; with this advantage however, that the change having been effected at a much more advanced period of civilisation, it was far more complete. Feudalism having been overthrown before the parliamentary *régime* was adopted the ancient system was modified far more deeply in France than in England. The principle which proposes the interests of the Commons, as the end and rule of political combinations, has there acquired a broader, more general, and preponderating character.

In fine, the parliamentary system having been first established in France at a period when the necessity for a total change in the political system was profoundly felt, its transitional character has become much more marked.

Let us next study the social and political progress of the new system, in reference to the spiritual power.

Before the introduction of the Positive Sciences into Europe all special as well as general knowledge was either theological or metaphysical. The few speculations about nature then suggested were exclusively founded upon religious beliefs. But from this memorable epoch the natural sciences, more and more, sought for a basis in observation and experiment. Nevertheless down to a recent period they suffered from an admixture of superstition and metaphysics. It was only towards the end of the sixteenth and the early years of the seventeenth centuries that they succeeded in entirely disengaging themselves from theological beliefs and metaphysical hypotheses. The epoch at which they began to be truly positive must be referred to Bacon who gave the first signal of this great revolution; to Galileo his cotemporary who furnished its earliest exemplification; and lastly to Descartes who irrevocably emancipated the intellect from the yoke of authority in matters of science. Then it was that natural philosophy arose and the scientific capacity acquired its true character, that of contributing the spiritual element of a new social system.

Spiritual
progress of
the new
social system
under the
new Leaders.

From this epoch, the sciences successively became positive in the natural order of sequence, that is to say according as they were more or less closely related to man. Thus, astronomy first, then physics, later chemistry and finally, in our own day, physiology, have been constituted as positive sciences. This revolution, then, has been completely accomplished for all special branches of knowledge, and evidently approaches its consummation for philosophy, morals, and politics. The influence of theology and metaphysics on these subjects has already been destroyed in the eyes of all educated men, though they are not yet based upon observation. The realisation of this condition is alone wanting for the spiritual development of the new social system.

In proportion as the sciences became positive and consequently advanced with increasing rapidity, a multitude of scientific ideas entered into general education, while the religious doctrines gradually lost their influence. Special schools for the sciences arose, in which the influence of theology and metaphysics was almost nothing. Finally the mental state has undergone such a change in this respect that in our day, the ideas of everyone, from the least instructed to the most enlightened, spring, almost entirely, from the positive sciences; the ancient beliefs occupying, comparatively speaking, but a small place, even in the classes over which these beliefs have maintained their strongest hold.

It may be said without exaggeration that the doctrines of religion influence men's minds only so far as morality is still associated with them. This influence will, of necessity, continue until the epoch when moral philosophy has undergone the revolution already effected in all special branches of knowledge, and become positive. From that moment the dominion of theological beliefs will cease for ever; since it is manifest that a state of things in which the different branches of knowledge have become positive, while the ideas destined to combine all remain superstitious, can only be transitional, since the contrary conclusion implies a contradiction in the order of nature.

The political advances of the new system in its spiritual aspects, have likewise been the inevitable consequence of its social progress.

Since the establishment of the first schools for teaching the sciences of observation in the thirteenth century, the royal power in France and the feudal power in England constantly and increasingly encouraged the sciences and elevated the *status* of scientific men.

In France royalty, more and more, adopted the practice of consulting men of science, seeking their approbation in reference to matters they were competent to decide, thus implicitly recognising the superiority of positive and scientific, over theological and metaphysical ideas.

Little by little our kings came to regard as a matter of duty acts which they originally regarded as praiseworthy, and recognised the obligation of encouraging the sciences and deferring to the decisions of scientific men. The creation of the Academy of Sciences, instituted under Louis XIV. by his minister Colbert, is a solemn declaration of this principle. At the same time that institution was a first step towards the political organisation of the spiritual element of the new system.

Since this epoch the mental action of the scientific capacity has greatly multiplied the number of Academies in all parts of Europe. This influence has been inaugurated in a regular and legal manner. Its political authority has proportionably increased; and has exerted a direct and ever increasing

influence upon national education. Regarded from this point of view, the legal attributes with which the first class of the Institute is actually endowed are nearly as extensive as they could be, so long as the body which exercises them is not charged with the teaching of morals.¹ But this cannot take place until morals have become a positive science. In this respect then, as in all others previously considered, the ancient system has yielded its place to a new one, preparing the way for this as far as possible. Further progress can only be effected by organising the new system.

It is essential to observe that while scientific activity has increasingly consolidated and extended itself in each European nation, considered apart from the rest, the scientific forces of the different countries have also become more and more closely connected. The sentiment of nationality has been, in this respect, usually set aside, and men of science in all parts of Europe have formed an indissoluble league which has always tended to make the scientific advances effected at each period European property. This Holy Alliance, against which the ancient system has no resource, is more powerful for realising the organisation of the new system than the coalition of all the bayonets of Europe can be for arresting or even for checking its progress.

Up to a certain point the same combination has taken place between the industrial capacities of the various European nations; but it has been far less complete. The sentiment of national rivalry, the inspirations of a savage and absurd patriotism, created by the ancient system and by it studiously kept alive, have still maintained a great influence over the temporal element. For this reason the alliance of the various European nations for the organisation of the new system can only begin in reference to the spiritual element. The coalition of the temporal capacities must arise after, and as a result of, the former movement.

Lastly; it is important to remark that while the two elements of the new system were separately effecting national and European progress towards their final political organisation, the combination of the two elements and consequently the formation of the system has also been accomplished with increasing success. A class, which occupies an intermediate position between men of science, artists, and artisans, that of engineers, sprang up; and thenceforward the combination of the two capacities may be considered as having begun. This alliance has increased to such an extent that, now, the concurring judgment of scientific men, and of artisans (though less decidedly as regards the latter) regards the sciences and arts as destined to modify nature for the benefit of man, the former by mastering her secrets, the latter by applying the knowledge so acquired.

¹ As a general proposition it is clear that the supreme direction of national education, and the teaching of morals ought to be in the same hands: it would be absurd to separate them. Accordingly so long as morals remain solely based upon religious beliefs it is inevitable that the general direction of education should appertain to a theological body or at least to the theological spirit.

The men who, in our day, speak so strongly against the Jesuits, the missionaries, and other religious corporations should therefore consider that the only way to deprive these societies of their remaining influence is to base morals upon the observation of facts. Until this has been accomplished, all such complaints must prove almost useless, because they are in great part unfounded.

Numerous establishments, both public and private, chiefly in France and England, have given life to this principle by organising the above combination. Such are, in France, the Conservatory of arts and trades, and the various schools connected with it; the Society for the encouragement of manufactures; the School for bridges and roads.

Thus not only has each of the two elements of the new system in its turn advanced towards complete organisation, and finally outstripped the corresponding element of the ancient system, but their combination has continually perfected itself, thus preparing the way for their joint direction of society.

In the preceding remarks we have only considered the social and political progress effected by the spiritual and temporal leaders of the new system. It remains to consider the steps accomplished by the mass of the people towards the new social organisation.

Progress of
the People
in reference
to the Tem-
poral Power.

- These steps have been of two sorts; one the capacity acquired by the Masses for living under the new temporal and spiritual order, the other their progressive coordination under the new temporal and spiritual Leaders.

A population must have reached a certain degree of temporal and spiritual capacity before it can live under a system of social order which is not based temporally on force and spiritually on blind faith. That man cannot be emancipated who, as to the former, has not contracted certain habits of order, economy and love of work, and who, as to the latter, does not possess, in a sufficient degree, knowledge and foresight. Such a man must continue in leading strings. So also as regards a nation: until it has fulfilled these conditions it can only be governed in an arbitrary manner. Thus, for example, the Russian serfs who in a time of pressing need, eat the seed-corn, are still incapable of enjoying any individual liberty. To attempt their emancipation before they had contracted better habits would be a real absurdity which could not lead to success. While in France, where the entire mass of the nation can endure hunger without touching the seed-corn, the people do not require to be governed (that is to say commanded). It is sufficient for the maintenance of order that the affairs of common interest should be regulated.

In like manner, as regards the spiritual function a people who, for example, has sufficient confidence in sorcerers to allow themselves to be guided by them in affairs of importance, requires to be arbitrarily governed by more enlightened men. Such a people could not be abandoned to their own guidance without injury to their interests. But it is evident that so soon as the mass of a nation is competent to conduct their ordinary affairs by their own knowledge, and thus satisfies the two conditions above mentioned, they do not need to be despotically ruled, but may be left to follow their own guidance without danger to public tranquillity. We may even say that every exertion of arbitrary power, exercised at a period when it has become useless tends to disturb tranquillity rather than to maintain it.

Since the enfranchisement of the Commons the mass of the French population has gradually contracted the habits and acquired the degree of enlightenment requisite for living under the new system. The abolition of slavery has of itself rendered all men proprietors, and since that time proletarians, in the rigorous acceptation of that word, have not existed. It is even fitting to observe that the industrial property, sprung from enfranchisement,

naturally requires a much greater capacity than territorial property as this has existed. For the latter, apart from its cultivation, requires no other talent than that of enjoying the income with sufficient moderation not to encroach on capital. It is the cultivator and not the proprietor who has need of capacity.

The people having acquired property, have gradually contracted a love for order and work, with habits of forethought and respect for property,¹ and have, at the same time, in France, England, and the North of Germany acquired the elements of knowledge.

Much, doubtless, remains to be done under both these aspects, and especially the second. But the progress made has been sufficient to render it unnecessary that the people should be governed by force and superstition. The masses have acquired sufficient capacity for living together under the new system, in which the action of government should be reduced to what is indispensable for establishing a subordination of work in that general action of man upon nature which is the final aim of the system.

In truth, the maintenance of public tranquillity is, in our times, essentially due to these new habits alone; the military apparatus of the temporal and the infernal apparatus of the spiritual power contributing to this end only in an accessory manner.²

Let us now examine in what way the population gradually organised itself under its new temporal and spiritual Leaders.

Before the enfranchisement of the Commons the only and permanent leaders of the masses were the military classes. On the contrary, since their enfranchisement the people have gradually detached themselves from these leaders and at the same time organised themselves under the guidance of the industrial leaders. Towards these the people have contracted habits of subordination and discipline which, though not strict, are quite sufficient for maintaining industrial order and the harmony of society.

To the origin of permanent and paid armies, as instituted by Charles VII., we may refer the epoch of the complete separation of the people from their military leaders. During the interval, which separated their enfranchisement from the birth of this institution the masses were placed, pretty equally, under the authority of the two kinds of leaders. As to all usual works of peace they were under the direction of the industrial leaders; but as to military works and exercises they were generally speaking under the command of the military leaders.

Standing and paid armies once established, the business of a soldier having thus become the pursuit of a particular class severed from the general population, the mass of the people had no longer any relation with the military leaders, and no other organisation than an industrial

¹ When in the terrible famine of 1794, at the very moment that the lowest class of the people was all-powerful, this same class was seen dying by thousands, without any disturbance to public tranquillity, we may well say that the French people know how to respect property.

² The influence of the ancient system is still indispensable for the maintenance of order, but in a different point of view from that we have just considered. It is only required as a check on the disturbance of public tranquillity by ambitious and intriguing men disposed to trouble it by engrossing powers which must excite their avidity until the new system has been definitively organised. But the people do not thus aim at power; those who do so are the idle and parasitic class of society, that is to say the ancient feudalism and the feudalism of Bonaparte.

one. The soldier no longer regarded himself, or was regarded as belonging to the people. He passed from the ranks of the new system into those of the old, from the commonalty into the feudal class, and that was all: he altered his own character and not that of the system to which he previously belonged.

Thus this institution of standing armies, which in our day has, by the progress of civilisation, become so burthensome and useless, was indispensable as a transitional step towards the organisation of the new system.

Considering the present condition of the people we shall perceive that, as regards temporal matters, they have no direct and constant relations except with their industrial leaders. Follow out in thought the daily relations of the workman, whether in agriculture manufactures or commerce, and you will find that he is brought into habitual contact with agricultural, manufacturing, and commercial leaders, and not at all, for example, with the great lord and landed proprietor, or the sleeping partner to whom the manufactory or commercial establishment wholly or in part belongs. Any connexion he has with the military leaders of society arises from the general relations of the new with the old system: he has none of a different kind.

This is the proper place for observing the fundamental and advantageous difference which exists between the present organisation of the people under their industrial leaders and their former subjection to their military leaders. This difference will bring out one of the most important and happiest contrasts between the old and the new system.

In the ancient system the people were *enrolled* under their leaders, in the new they are *combined* with them. The military leaders *commanded*; the industrial leaders only *direct*. In the first case the people were *subjects*, in the second they are *partners*. Such is the admirable character of industrial combinations that all the participants are in fact co-workers and partners, from the humblest workman to the richest manufacturer and the ablest engineer.

In a society embracing men who neither bring capacity nor capital, there must, of necessity, be masters and slaves; otherwise the workmen would not be so foolish as to consent to such an arrangement if they could avoid it: it is impossible to conceive such a society originating in any other way than by force. But in a system of cooperation where all bring capacity and capital, there is a real partnership, and no inequality exists but that of capacity and capital, both necessary (that is to say unavoidable). The disappearance of such inequality it would be absurd and mischievous to expect.

Each person obtains a degree of importance and advantages proportionate to his capacity and contribution, and this constitutes the highest degree of equality which is either possible or desirable. Such is the fundamental character of industrial society, and this the people have gained by organising themselves in subordination to the leaders of art and industry. Their new leaders exercise no authority over them save what is strictly necessary for maintaining good order in their work, and this amounts to very little. The industrial capacity is by its nature as averse to exercising as to suffering arbitrary power. Besides let us not forget that in a society of workers everything naturally tends to order: disorder always comes from the idle.

Finally let us remark that the progress of industry, the sciences, and

the fine arts, by multiplying the means of subsistence, diminishing the number of the unoccupied, enlightening men's minds, and softening manners, tend, more and more, to banish the three great causes of disorder—poverty, idleness, and ignorance.

Progress
of the People
in reference
to the Spirit-
ual Power.

We have now, in reference to the spiritual element to make observations analogous to those which have just been offered as regards the temporal aspects of society.

Before the introduction of the Positive Sciences into Europe, or to speak more correctly, before the sciences had passed from the hands of the clergy into those of the laymen—an event which followed the first very closely—the mass of the people was spiritually organised under their theological leaders. The people believed on their bidding, consulted them on every matter and blindly followed their decisions; such doctrines as it suited them to establish became the faith of the masses. In a word, the people contracted in relation to them a habit of absolute confidence and of unlimited mental submission. But from the moment that the positive sciences acquired a certain development this confidence and respect were gradually withdrawn from the clergy and transferred to the men of science.

This change was powerfully seconded by the analogous change effected in temporal relations. The people, industrially organised, soon perceived that their ordinary mechanical labours were in no wise connected with theological ideas, that they could not derive from theologians any real information about the objects of their daily occupations. Wherever they could establish a connexion, direct or indirect, with men of science, they lost the habit of consulting the clergy and adopted that of putting themselves into relation with those who possessed positive knowledge. Doubtless this relation is still very far from being as intimate as it might and ought to be, but this chiefly springs, not from a deficient love of knowledge among the people, but from the want of opportunities and of efforts to supply them with useful information. On the contrary the people are far more desirous of instruction than the idle frequenters of our drawing-rooms, because their labours at every moment impress on them their need of it. Whenever the people could study they have studied. But although the action of scientific capacity on them is still very small, compared with what it may become, it is much greater than we usually imagine. Striking and incontestable facts prove that the people in our day accord to the unanimous opinion of men of science the same degree of confidence which in the Middle Ages they accorded to the decisions of the spiritual power.

Thus for example, for about one century the people have unanimously ceased to believe in the immoveability of the earth, and accepted the theory of modern astronomy, with as much confidence as they ever accorded to the ancient religious beliefs. What is the cause of this revolution in popular opinion? Is it that the people have acquired a knowledge of the demonstrations which establish the theory of the movement of the earth? Certainly not, since these demonstrations are probably not understood by more than three thousand persons in the entire French population. The confidence of the people evidently flows from their having perceived the unanimity of men of science on this head.

Let us examine in like manner all the discoveries in the sciences of observation which have been popularised, and we shall find that they have become so in the same way. Thus the people have successively accepted

the circulation of the blood, the identity of thunder and electricity, &c. &c. Besides, as regards the sciences all who cannot comprehend demonstrations belong to the people. The same confidence which induced men of the world to accept the analysis of air and water, the law of universal gravitation, the decomposition of light, and so many other astronomical, physical, chemical, and physiological discoveries will induce their acceptance by the people somewhat later.

It is then proved by the plainest facts that the people have now, spiritually, confidence in and subordinate themselves to their spiritual leaders, just as they do, temporally, to their industrial leaders. Consequently I am entitled to infer that in the new system confidence has become organised as well as subordination.

We should likewise here observe that the confidence of the people in their new spiritual leaders is, by its nature, quite distinct from that which they felt under the old system for their theological leaders. The latter consisted in a state of mental submission altogether blind and which required from each individual an absolute negation of his own reason. Confidence in the opinions of men of science has an entirely different character. It is the assent given to propositions about matters susceptible of verification, and unanimously admitted by men who have acquired and established a capacity for judging them.

In truth the facts are admitted without proof; but they are thus admitted only because the public consider themselves incapable of following the demonstrations which establish these truths. This confidence always, by implication, reserves the right of contradiction in case new demonstrations should be produced which show it to be unfounded, or the believer should acquire sufficient knowledge to contest the received opinions. The people are thus far from renouncing the free exercise of their reason.

This confidence of the people in the opinions of men of science is absolutely of the same kind as, though much larger than, that of scientific men towards each other.

Every day mathematicians accept the results of physiologists upon the faith of their word, and reciprocally each class of savants in their respective spheres do the same.

In the same science do we not constantly see scientific men provisionally put faith in the assurance of the others before knowing and judging the demonstrations? What mathematician for example would refuse to admit without examination a proposition certified by Lagrange?

This faith produces no inconvenience in the sciences because it is only provisional. The confidence of the people in men of science has exactly the same character; only the provisional nature of their assent, though always regarded as such, is indefinitely prolonged. Thus this confidence is in no wise humiliating for the people, and could never affect their interests injuriously in the least degree, as did their mental subjection to the theologians.

The fear that a despotism founded on science may one day establish itself would be a ridiculous and absurd chimera, and could only arise in minds entirely foreign to positive ideas.

The people then being now, spiritually and temporally, organised for the new system the most difficult step towards its establishment has been accomplished. This great change has simplified, as far as possible, the

work of its definitive establishment, by reducing all that remains for its accomplishment to the relations between the leaders of the new and the leaders of the old systems.

The people no longer present any difficulty in solving the question.

The question will be resolved in the interest of the people, but they will remain outside and passive in relation to it.

The only danger to be feared, the only needful precaution, is that of not allowing ourselves to be turned aside from the end by the intrigues of ambitious men, who dispute among themselves the falling remnants of the ancient system.

Such, in a general view, are the principal parts of the picture which, since the eleventh century, is presented to us by the progress of civilisation, considered in reference to the gradual development of the new social system. Let us now resume, as briefly as possible, the results of this great organic series.

RÉSUMÉ OF THE SECOND SERIES.

WE set out from this fundamental fact: the Enfranchisement of the Commons and the introduction of the Positive Sciences into Europe in the eleventh century created the two elements of a new social system, industrial capacity and scientific capacity.

We next observed ;

1st. That the two elementary capacities of the new social system were established on bases of a character different from that of the powers on which the ancient system rested.

2nd. That these two capacities established themselves outside of the ancient system and so as to render themselves as independent of it as possible.

3rd. That the Commons, representing the union of the two capacities, from the beginning adopted the wise course of not pretending to share authority with the old system, but simply sought to profit by the independence they enjoyed with a view to exercising the greatest possible action upon nature.

4th. That this plan, persistently followed, had its twofold and natural effects. On the one hand the elements of the new system have acquired their full and complete development, whence has flowed the preponderance of their civil force; on the other hand they have gradually obtained a larger measure of liberty of which they have always made use in the same manner; and finally they have naturally acquired a portion of legislative authority to which they did not directly aspire.

5th. That the entire spiritual and temporal forces of society have passed into the hands of the Commons; the military force itself being subordinated to their influence.

6th. That the Commons have obtained as great an influence over the political plan laid down by the ancient system as was attainable, until they could themselves form the plan; the temporal power having admitted in principle that the social organisation ought to be framed in the interest of the Commons.

7th. That the temporal power has established the parliamentary *régime* which, by conceding—at least in principle—to the Commons the exclusive right of voting taxes, invested them with as large a share of legislative authority as they could without destroying their own.

8th. That this measure of authority more than suffices for enabling the Commons in our day to proceed, directly and in a legal manner, to the final organisation of the new system.

9th. That contemporaneously with the progress thus effected by the temporal and spiritual leaders of the new system, the mass of the people have entirely withdrawn from their military and theological chiefs and organised themselves, both under temporal and spiritual aspects, under the leaders of the two positive capacities.

Finally that the ancient has thus yielded to the new system all that could be yielded without self-destruction and has smoothed the way for the latter to arrive at its definitive constitution.

Such then is the actual condition of the new system as resulting from the past since the eleventh century. All the forces of society belong to it. All the doctrines necessary for its organisation exist in their germs; namely the sciences of observation. In a word society, in all its parts, is organised for acting upon nature. It only remains to organise it as a whole in the same way. The means which the Commons required to effect that object now exist.

GENERAL RÉSUMÉ OF BOTH SERIES.

WHEN the ancient system had attained its definitive constitution (in the eleventh century) the elements of the system destined to succeed it took their rise.

From this epoch two influences of a different nature have been simultaneously and uninterruptedly exerted by the new system, the one tending to destroy the ancient one, the other to replace it.

As regards the former influence the Commons allied themselves at first with one of the powers of the ancient system against the other, while profiting by the divisions which arose between them; and after having conquered the power against which they had fought the Commons formed a new league with one of the fractions of the power whose allies they had been against another fraction of this same power.

As regards the latter influence the Commons held themselves aloof from the ancient system, limiting themselves to action upon nature.

Destruction and construction have always been combined so that the new system possessed itself, one by one, of all the positions occupied by the ancient, according as they were abandoned by it.

During the period of its unabated vigour, the ancient system guided both the general action of society and all special social movements, both spiritual and temporal. Little by little all the private relations and special branches of knowledge disengaged themselves from the bonds of the ancient system and co-ordinated themselves in reference to the new. Finally the new system organised itself as to all the details of social life.

The ancient system after having completely lost all its influence on details, has, step by step, lost, in temporal and spiritual matters, the greater part of its command over the general action of society.

It still holds possession of the general political plan, which cannot be otherwise until the total organisation of the new system. But it is admitted as a fundamental principle that this plan ought to be framed in the interest of the Commons.

The temporal power has been reduced to the smallest dimensions compatible with its existence until the entire extinction of the ancient system and its replacement by the new one. The spiritual power, as a political element, has been completely overthrown. It retains no other influence than that derived from the fact that the teaching of morals remains in its hands, as being still based upon its doctrines.

The new system after having obtained the exclusive direction of all the details of society, has, step by step, gained in the ordering of the *ensemble* all that the ancient system has lost.

Under temporal aspects the right of the Commons to modify at their pleasure the general political plan has been recognised ; and the legal exercise of this right has been regularly constituted, the means of effecting the transition being thus also provided. Under spiritual aspects the Scientific Capacity has obtained all the influence it can possess over national education until the teaching of morals has passed into its hands.

The force of the two systems in relation to the action they exercise upon the direction of society, regarded as a whole, is in our day almost identical ; any difference being rather in favour of the new than the old system.

Thus the actual condition of society presents the co-existence of a declining and of an adult system, the former of which has lost all its influence over details and half of what it possessed over the *ensemble*, while the latter dominates every part and enjoys a larger share of influence over the *ensemble*.

The new system then needs to mount but one step more in order to reach a complete organisation and entirely to replace the ancient system. It only remains for it to complete its temporal and spiritual achievements ; in temporal matters by gaining possession of the House of Commons, in spiritual by establishing Morals on principles solely deduced from observation. In truth all is ready for this step ; the means exist, we only require to use them.

THIRD PART.

(May 1822.)

PLAN OF THE SCIENTIFIC OPERATIONS NECESSARY FOR REORGANISING SOCIETY.

INTRODUCTION.

A SOCIAL system in its decline, a new system arrived at maturity and approaching its completion—such is the fundamental character which the general progress of civilisation has assigned to the present epoch. In conformity with this state of things, two movements, differing in their nature, agitate society; one a movement of disorganisation, the other of reorganisation. By the former, considered apart, society is hurried towards a profound moral and political anarchy which appears to menace it with a near and inevitable dissolution. By the latter it is guided to the definitive social condition of the human race, that best suited to its nature, and in which all progressive movements should receive their completest development and most direct application. In the co-existence of these two opposed tendencies consists the grand crisis now experienced by the most civilised nations; and this can only be understood when viewed under both aspects.

Our social
anarchy and
its sources.

From the moment when this crisis began to show itself to the present time the tendency of the ancient system to disorganisation has predominated, or rather it alone is still plainly manifested. It was in the nature of things that the crisis should begin thus, so that the old system might be sufficiently modified to permit the direct formation of the new social system.

But now that this condition has been fully satisfied and the Catholic-Feudal system has lost its power, as far as is possible, until the new system has been inaugurated, the preponderance still maintained by the negative tendency constitutes the greatest obstacle to the progress of civilisation and even to the abolition of the ancient system. Its persistence forms the first cause of those terrible and continually renewed shocks by which the crisis is accompanied.

The only way of ending this stormy situation, of staying the anarchy which day by day invades society, in a word of reducing the crisis to a simple moral movement, consists in inducing the civilised nations to abandon the negative and to adopt an organic attitude; turning all their efforts towards the formation of the New Social System as the definitive object of the crisis and that for the attainment of which everything hitherto accomplished is only a preparation.

Such is the prime necessity of the present epoch. Such also is the general scope of my labours and the special aim of this essay, the object of which is to set in motion the forces capable of bringing society into the track of the new system.

A brief examination of the causes which have hitherto hindered and still do hinder society from frankly assuming an organic attitude, should naturally precede an exposition of the measures necessary for effecting this object.

Plan of reorganisation
misconceived by
Rulers and
the People.

The numerous and repeated attempts made by the People and Kings to reorganise society prove that the need of such a reorganisation is generally felt. But on both sides it is only felt in a vague and imperfect manner. These two kinds of attempts are, though for different reasons, equally vicious. To the present time they have not, nor could they have produced any real organic result. Far from tending to terminate the crisis these efforts only contribute to prolong it. Such is the true cause which, in spite of so many efforts, by keeping society in the negative track, leaves it a prey to revolutions.

To establish this fundamental proposition, it is sufficient to take a general view of the attempts at reorganisation undertaken by Kings and the People.

Errors of
Rulers.

The error committed by Kings is easier to understand. For them the reorganisation of society means the re-establishment pure and simple of the feudal and theological system in all its integrity. In their eyes no other means exist of terminating the anarchy which results from the decline of this system.

It would be unphilosophical to regard this view as if it were mainly dictated by the special interests of the governing classes. Chimerical though it be, this idea naturally presented itself to minds seeking, in good faith, a remedy for the existing crisis. They feel in its entire extent the need for a reorganisation; but they have not considered the general progress of civilisation, and, viewing the present state of affairs under one aspect only, they do not perceive the tendency of society to establish a new system more perfect, and not less harmonious, than the ancient one. In a word it is natural that this view should be taken by rulers, since from their position they must of necessity perceive more clearly the anarchical state of society and consequently experience more forcibly the necessity for applying a remedy.

This is not the place to insist on the manifest absurdity of such an opinion; which is now universally recognised by the majority of enlightened men. Doubtless Kings, while seeking to reconstruct the ancient system, do not comprehend the nature of the present crisis and are far from having measured the magnitude of their enterprise.

The downfall of the feudal and theological system does not spring, as they believe, from recent, solitary, and in some sort accidental causes. Their downfall in place of being the effect of the crisis is, on the contrary, its source. The decline of this system has come to pass continuously during the preceding centuries, by reason of a series of modifications, independent of the human will, to which all classes of society contributed, and of which Kings themselves have often been the first agents and most eager promoters. In a word it was the necessary consequence of the progress of civilisation.

In order then to re-establish the ancient system it would not be sufficient to push society back to the epoch when the existing crisis began to reveal

itself. For, even supposing this could be done, which it could not, we should have merely replaced the body politic in the situation which necessitated the crisis. Retracing past ages, it would be requisite to repair, one by one, all the losses suffered by the ancient system during six centuries in comparison with which all that it has lost for the last thirty years is of no importance.

No other mode of effecting this would be possible but to annihilate all the results of civilisation which have caused this decline.

Thus for example it would be absurd to assume that the eighteenth century philosophy—itsself the direct cause of the downfall of the ancient system considered in its spiritual aspects—could be destroyed unless we also assumed the annihilation of the sixteenth century; of which the philosophy of the last century is only the consequence and development. But, as the Reformation of Luther is, in its turn, simply a necessary result of the progress of the sciences of observation introduced into Europe by the Arabs, the re-establishment of the ancient system would not have been secured unless the positive sciences had been also suppressed.

In like manner, under temporal aspects, we should be led, step by step, to the necessity for replacing the industrial classes in a state of servitude, since in the last resort the enfranchisement of the Commons is the first and general cause of the decline of the feudal system. Finally such an enterprise is set in its true light by this reflection, that after overcoming so many difficulties, the least of which taken by itself surpasses the power of man, we should have gained nothing but the postponement of the definitive fall of the ancient system, by thus obliging society to recommence its destruction, since the principle of progressive civilisation inherent in human nature would not have been extinguished.

It is manifest that no person could entertain a project which is monstrous, whether we consider its magnitude or its absurdity. Man, in spite of himself, belongs to his epoch. Those who oppose, as they believe, the greatest resistance to the progress of civilisation unconsciously obey its irresistible influence, nay themselves second it.

Accordingly kings in projecting the reconstruction of the feudal and theological system, fall into perpetual contradiction; contributing, by their own acts, both to complete the disorganisation of this system and to accelerate the formation of that which must replace it. Facts of this kind offer themselves abundantly to the observer.

To point out, in this place, only a few of the most remarkable, we see kings esteem it an honour to encourage the cultivation and diffusion of the sciences and fine arts, and to stimulate the development of industry. We see them creating for this purpose numerous and useful establishments, although the decline of the ancient system is ultimately referable to the progress of the sciences, fine arts, and industry.

Thus again kings, by entering into the treaty of the Holy Alliance, degraded as much as in them lay the principal basis of the ancient system, the theological power, since they established a supreme European council in which that power had not even a consultative voice.

Finally the way in which opinions are now divided as to the struggle undertaken by the Greeks offers a still clearer example of this self-contradictory spirit. On this occasion,¹ we see the men who aim at restoring

¹ In order to appreciate the entire significance of this fact we must remember that the Pope himself adopted the above view by expressly refusing the young Roman nobles permission to go to the assistance of the Greeks.

their former influence to theological ideas involuntarily manifesting the decline of these ideas, since they do not fear to utter wishes in favour of Mahometanism which would have drawn down upon them the accusation of sacrilege during the ascendancy of the ancient system.

By pursuing the line of observation just indicated everyone can without difficulty add fresh instances, that occur continually. Kings, so to speak, do no act and take no step tending to re-establish the ancient system which is not immediately followed by an act directed in the contrary way; the same decree often containing both one and the other.

Such inconsistency in fundamentals is well fitted to place in the clearest light the absurdity of a plan which is not understood, even by those who endeavour to realise it with the greatest earnestness. It shows clearly how complete and irrevocable is the ruin of the ancient system. It is useless to enter here into greater details.

Errors of
the People.

The manner in which the People have hitherto understood the reorganisation of society, is no less erroneous than that adopted by kings, though in a different way. Their error however is more excusable since it lies in a misconception of the new system towards which the progress of civilisation transports them, though its nature has not, as yet, been clearly determined; while kings pursue an enterprise the entire absurdity of which is plainly demonstrable, even by a superficial study of the past. In a word Kings are at variance with facts, the People with principles, the last being always more difficult to grasp. But it is much more important to eradicate the misconception of the people than that of kings, because the former constitutes an essential obstacle to the progress of civilisation, and alone gives some show of reason to the latter.

The characteristic view which predominates in the popular mind as to the mode of reorganising society indicates a profound ignorance of the fundamental conditions necessary to give consistency to any social system.

It essentially consists in attributing an organic character to the negative principles which served to destroy the feudal and theological system: in other words, it mistakes mere modifications of the old system for the system which has to be established.

If we attentively examine the doctrines now accredited among the people as exhibited in the speeches of their ablest adherents and as expounded in the most systematic writings; considered in themselves and in their successive growth, we shall find that they are conceived in a purely critical spirit, incapable of affording any basis for reorganisation.

The government which in a regular state of affairs stands at the head of society as the guide and agent of general activity is, by these doctrines, systematically despoiled of every active influence. Deprived of any important participation in the organic life of the body politic, it is reduced to an office of mere negation. It is even thought that the entire action of the body politic upon its members ought to be strictly limited to the maintenance of public tranquillity. But in no active society has this ever been other than a subordinate object, the importance of which has even been singularly diminished by the development of civilisation since this has made it easy to maintain order.

Government is, thus, no longer regarded as the head of society destined to bind together the component units and to direct their activity to a common end. It is represented as a natural enemy encamped in the midst of our social system against which society needs to fortify itself by the

guarantees already obtained while maintaining a permanent attitude of mistrust and defensive hostility ready to break forth at the first symptom of attack.

Passing from the *ensemble* to details, the same spirit is still more apparent. It suffices here to prove this in reference to the principal points affecting spiritual and temporal relations.

Under spiritual aspects the principle pervading the popular aim is the dogma of unlimited Liberty of Conscience. Considered in the sense which it originally had, that is to say, in reference to a negative destination, this dogma is nothing but the extension of a great general fact, the decline of theological beliefs.

Liberty of
Conscience
and Sovereignty
of the People.

Itself the result of such decline, this doctrine has, by a necessary reaction, powerfully contributed to accelerate and propagate it; but by the nature of things its influence stopped there. Regarded simply as a means of combating the theological system the dogma in question favours the progress of the human mind. But it ceases to do so and loses all its value when conceived as a basis for the great social reorganisation reserved for our epoch. It then becomes just as injurious as before it was useful, since it constitutes an obstacle to reorganisation.

Proclaiming the sovereignty of each individual reason, this doctrine in fact essentially tends to hinder the uniform establishment of any system of general ideas, without which nevertheless society cannot exist. For let the mass of men become as highly instructed as is possible, it is evident that the greater part of the general conceptions currently received can only be accepted by them on trust and not as the result of demonstration. Thus such a dogma is, by its very nature, only applicable to ideas destined to vanish and therefore regarded with indifference; and in point of fact it has only been applied to such at the moment of their decline and in order to hasten their fall.

To apply this doctrine to the new as well as to the old system, still more to see in it an organic principle, is to fall into the strangest contradiction. If such an error could last, the reorganisation of society would be for ever impossible.

In astronomy, physics, chemistry and physiology there is no such thing as liberty of conscience; that is to say everyone would deem it absurd not to place confidence in the principles established for these sciences by competent thinkers. If the case is different in politics, this arises from the circumstance that, the old principles having been abandoned while the new are yet unformed, established principles during this interregnum do not in a just sense exist. But to convert this transitory fact into an absolute and eternal dogma and treat it as a fundamental principle, evidently amounts to a proclamation that society should always continue deprived of any general doctrinal basis. It must be admitted that such a notion justly deserves the charge of anarchy brought against it by the ablest defenders of the theological system.

Under the temporal aspect the dogma of the Sovereignty of the People corresponds to the dogma just considered of which it is only the political application. It was created as a means of combating the principle of Divine Right, itself the general political basis of the ancient system, shortly after the dogma of liberty of conscience had been formed to destroy the theological ideas on which this principle was founded.

What has been said for one applies therefore to the other. The anti-

feudal, like the anti-theological dogma, having effected its negative aim, has reached the natural term of its career. The former can no more furnish the political basis of the social reorganisation than the latter its moral basis. Both, being devised for purposes of destruction, are equally unfitted for construction.

One of these doctrines, far from furnishing an organic principle, merely substitutes individual for papal infallibility; the other only replaces the arbitrary power of kings by that of the people, or rather of individuals. The 'sovereignty of the people' tends to dismember the body politic by placing power in the least capable hands; while the 'right of private judgment' tends to the complete isolation of thinkers by investing the least enlightened men with an absolute right of control over the system of ideas conceived by superior intellects for the guidance of society.

The criticism just developed as to the two fundamental doctrines can be easily applied to all the more special notions which constitute the popular philosophy. The result will always be the same. It will be seen that all of these, like the two principal ones, are merely the formal expression of corresponding historical facts relative to the decline of the feudal and theological system. It will also be seen that all alike have a simply negative destination, which constitutes their only value, and renders them wholly unfitted for reorganising society.

Thus a careful examination of the popular doctrine confirms the anticipations of a philosophic *coup d'œil*, showing that weapons of war cannot be metamorphosed into instruments of construction. This doctrine, purely negative, both as a whole and in detail, was most serviceable in seconding the natural course of civilisation as long as the main operation was the struggle with the ancient system. But when regarded as capable of presiding over social reorganisation, it is completely inadequate. It forces society into a condition of chronic anarchy both in temporal and spiritual relations.

Doubtless it was natural to human weakness that the people should begin by attributing an organic character to negative principles, rendered familiar to them by continual applications. But it is not the less true that the prolongation of such an error constitutes the principal obstacle to the reorganisation of society.

Next, comparing the two distinct modes,—hitherto considered separately—in which the People and Kings conceive this reorganisation, it will be seen that each of them, owing to its peculiar vices, is equally powerless to launch society on an organic course, and so to secure the future against the return of the convulsions that have continually accompanied the great crisis which characterises the present epoch. Both are alike anarchical, the one by its own nature, the other by its necessary consequences.

In this respect the only difference between them is that, in the opinion of kings the government purposely places itself in direct and continuous opposition to society; while according to the popular view society takes up a permanent attitude of hostility to government.

These two opposed and equally vicious conceptions, by their very nature tend reciprocally to strengthen each other and in consequence to maintain indefinitely the source of revolutions.

On one hand the attempts of kings to reconstruct the feudal and theological system necessarily provoke on the part of the people an explosion of the negative doctrines in all their dangerous energy. It is even apparent

that in the absence of such attempts these doctrines would have already lost their main vigour, as no longer possessing any object. Now that kings have solemnly adhered to their fundamental principle (the dogma of liberty of conscience) with its consequences, the irrevocable decline of the ancient system is clearly established. But the efforts to reanimate the divine right of kings revive the sovereignty of the people and give it new life.

On the other hand, owing to the fact that the modifications introduced into the ancient system already permit efforts directed towards forming the new system, the preponderance which the people still accord to negative principles naturally impels kings to re-establish the ancient system as the only means of averting a crisis which, under its present aspect, appears to lead to nothing but the dissolution of society. And, in truth, such a prolongation of negative philosophy when a social reconstruction is needed alone imparts plausibility to the views of kings. For admitting that their view, owing to the utter impossibility of realising it, is not really more organic than that of the people, in theory at least it is so; and since some system must exist, this circumstance places the kingly conception in some, though a very imperfect, relation with the wants of society.

Let us add to this faithful picture of our social situation the influence of the various factions whose projects are so eminently facilitated by such a state of things. If we study their efforts to prevent light being thrown upon the social problem and to hinder a better understanding and recognition of their mutual errors on the part of kings and people we shall form a just estimate of the melancholy situation in which society is now placed.

The preceding considerations demonstrate that the way of final escape from this deplorably vicious circle, this inexhaustible source of revolutions, lies neither in the doctrine of kings nor in that of the people. The formation and general adoption by both people and kings of Organic Conceptions can alone suffice to withdraw the latter from their retrograde, the former from their negative direction.

Such a doctrine can alone terminate the crisis by forcing society into the track of the new system, which the growth of civilisation has prepared and now offers as a substitute for the feudo-theological system.

By the unanimous adoption of this doctrine satisfaction will be afforded to all that is reasonable in the existing opinions both of the people and of kings, their discordant and vicious elements being discarded. The just apprehensions of kings as to the subversion of society being dissipated, no legitimate motive can any longer urge them to oppose the growth of the human intellect. While the people, turning all their aspirations to the formation of the new system, will no longer feel irritated against the feudo-theological system, but will await its peaceable extinction in the natural course of events.

Having thus established the necessity for adopting a new and truly organic doctrine, we shall next examine its opportunity. It will sufficiently appear from the following considerations that the moment for commencing this great operation has at last arrived.

A careful study of the actual state of the most advanced notions forces upon the mind a singular and almost self-contradictory observation. Although no other political ideas subsist but such as are founded either on the retrograde or the negative doctrine, neither of these possesses a real

A Constructive Doctrine both necessary and opportune.

preponderance, and neither exerts an action sufficiently powerful to direct society. These two doctrines which, as above shown, theoretically lend force to each other, are notwithstanding employed only to impose reciprocal limits or rather to annul one another in the general conduct of affairs.

The great political movement produced during the last thirty years by the spread of negative ideas has destroyed their chief influence. On one hand by giving the finishing blow to the ancient system it has terminated their natural existence, and has almost completely taken away the ground which enlisted popular sympathies on their side. On the other hand the application of the modern ideas to the reorganisation of society has completely manifested their anarchical character. Since this decisive experiment negative aspirations have inspired no real passion among the people. Consequently, notwithstanding any appearances to the contrary, retrograde passions can no longer exist among kings, since they have distinctly recognised the decline of the feudo-theological system and the necessity for abandoning it.

In neither direction is any real action exerted within the sphere of government or of society. Kings and people in practice employ the retrograde or negative doctrine in an essentially passive way, that is to say as a weapon of defence. Nay more, each side uses the two doctrines by turns and almost to the same extent, with however one natural difference. Regarded as an instrument of reasoning, the negative doctrine attracts the people because they feel more completely the necessity for abandoning the ancient system, while kings adhere to the retrograde doctrine, since they experience more deeply the need of social order.

It is easy to verify and elucidate this remark by observing the existence of and the credit enjoyed by a Mongrel Doctrine which is nothing but a mixture of retrograde and negative ideas. This phase of opinion, though possessing no influence at the outset of the crisis, has now become predominant both among rulers and the ruled. Both of the active parties unequivocally recognise its ascendancy since they equally adopt its language.

The prevalence of such an opinion clearly establishes two facts most essential for the correct understanding of the present epoch. In the first place it proves that the insufficiency of the negative doctrine for the great actual wants of society is felt as profoundly and universally as the incompatibility of the feudo-theological system with the present state of civilisation. In the second place it furnishes a guarantee against the ascendancy either of the negative or of the retrograde view. For whenever one of them seems about to acquire a preponderance, the disposition of men's minds immediately inclines to the other, and so remains until this, encouraged by seeming approval, has become sufficiently active to cause similar alarms and in consequence experiences a similar revulsion of feeling.¹ These succeeding oscillations produce themselves sometimes in

¹ The merits of this intermediate, or rather self-contradictory doctrine precisely consists in its supplying an organ for the above attitude. Besides it is evidently devoid of constructive power, since it has no special character and is compounded of opposing views which mutually destroy each other. As experience has already clearly shown, its ascendancy can have no other result than that of causing society to oscillate between negative and retrograde tendencies. In the existing political situation, and while awaiting the establishment of a truly organic doctrine, this undecided course is certainly indispensable, as a means of preventing

one direction, sometimes in another according as the natural course of events specially reveals either the absurdity of the ancient system or the danger of anarchy. Such at this moment is the working system of practical politics, and such it will remain until men's attention is directed towards the mode of reorganising society; and a public opinion has been created capable of fulfilling the two grand conditions demanded by our epoch, but hitherto regarded as contradictory, namely the abandonment of the ancient system, and the establishment of a regular and stable order of society.

This reciprocal annulling of the two opposed doctrines, observable even in opinions, is especially evident in active life. In truth when the important events of the last ten years are examined with reference both to the negative and retrograde tendencies, we shall discover that they have never contributed to the effective progress of the corresponding system and that their result has only been to hinder the preponderance of the opposing system.

To resume then; not only are the popular and monarchical doctrines equally incapable of satisfying that fundamental need of reorganisation which characterises the present epoch—whence results the necessity for a new general doctrine—but the triumph of either in our day is alike impossible. Neither in truth can exercise any decided influence; and hence we may infer that men's minds are sufficiently prepared to receive the organic doctrine.

The destination of society now come to maturity is neither to inhabit for ever the old and miserable but which its infancy erected, as kings suppose; nor to live eternally without shelter after having left it, as the people imagined. Its destiny is rather this, that, aided by acquired experience, it should with all the accumulated materials construct an edifice fitted for its needs and enjoyments. Such is the great and noble enterprise reserved for the present generation.

GENERAL VIEW.

The defects in the modes of conceiving the Organisation of Society by the People and by Kings having been shown, we are forced to conclude that both have pursued wrong methods in framing the plan of reorganisation. Such a state of things admits of but one explanation; but it is important to establish this assertion directly and accurately.

the violent disorders to which the preponderance of either the retrograde or negative party would expose society. In this sense all rational men should be eager to forward it. But while such a policy renders the revolutionary epoch less stormy, it uncontestedly tends to prolong its duration. For a view which elevates a self-contradiction to the rank of a system, and induces men carefully to avoid the total extinction of the two extreme doctrines in order that one may always be opposed to the other, of necessity prevents the social body from ever attaining a stable condition. In a word in our day this policy is reasonable and useful if maintained as simply provisional, but becomes absurd and dangerous when regarded as definitive.

Such are the reasons why, in my examination of the existing opinions on social reorganisation, I have not mentioned the above point of view.

The inadequacy of the monarchical view and of that of the people proves the necessity for a new and truly organic doctrine, alone capable of ending the terrible crisis which agitates society. So likewise by examining the methods which, on either hand, have led to these imperfect results we shall discover the proper mode of shaping and establishing the new doctrine, and the social forces destined to direct this great work.

The general defect of the method pursued, alike by the people and by kings, in framing the Plan of Reorganisation lies in the very erroneous conceptions formed respecting the nature of such a work. Hence it followed that they confided this important mission to men who were necessarily unqualified for it. This is the primary cause of the fundamental aberrations pointed out in the preceding chapter.

Although this cause has operated as much with kings as with the people; it is useless to consider it specially in reference to the former. For kings not having invented anything and having confined their efforts to reproducing the ancient doctrine to meet the wants of the new social order, their incompetence to conceive a true reorganisation has, by this fact alone, been sufficiently established. On the other hand for the same reason their course, though in principle as absurd as that of the people, has naturally been more methodical, since it was furnished to their hand in detail. The people alone having produced a sort of new doctrine our examination should be mainly directed to their mode of proceeding in order to discover the source of its defects. It will be easy, afterwards, to apply to kings, with suitable modifications, the general remarks made in reference to the people.

Constitutions do not supply Social Reorganisation.

The multitude of the so-called Constitutions produced by the people since the beginning of the crisis, and the excessive minuteness of their dispositions, manifested more or less in all, would alone suffice to convince every capable intellect how entirely the nature and difficulty of forming a plan for social reorganisation have been hitherto misunderstood. When society shall have been reorganised our descendants will be amazed, by the production, within a period of thirty years, of the constitutions, each in succession proclaimed eternal and irrevocable, several of which contain more than two hundred very circumstantial articles without reckoning the organic laws thereto annexed. Such verbiage would disgrace the human mind in politics, were it anything but a mere phase and an unavoidable transition towards the true and final doctrine.

But society does not and cannot progress in this way. The pretension of constructing offhand in a few months or even years a social system, in its complete and definitive shape, is an extravagant chimera absolutely incompatible with the weakness of the human intellect.

Let us observe the mode which our intellect adopts in analogous but far simpler cases. When a science is reconstituted on a new theoretical basis, sufficiently prepared, in the first instance the general principle is announced, discussed, and verified: subsequently by a long series of efforts all the parts of the science are worked out and their coordination established, which, at the outset, no one, not even its founder, could have conceived. Thus, for example, after Newton had discovered the law of universal gravitation a century of arduous labours and the cooperation of all European geometers was needed to confer on physical astronomy a constitution in harmony with the law. So likewise in the arts. To cite but a single example, when the elastic force of steam was conceived as a new moving power applicable to machinery, nearly a century was needed for developing

the series of manufacturing improvements which directly resulted from this discovery. If such evidently be the necessary and invariable course of the human mind in revolutions which, despite of their importance and difficulty, are only special, how absurd must appear the presumptuous course hitherto followed in reference to the most general, momentous and difficult of all revolutions—that which aims at completely recasting the social system.

If we pass from these comparisons, which, though indirect, are decisive, to direct comparisons, we shall always arrive at the same result. Let us examine the rise of the Catholico-Feudal system, a revolution of precisely the same nature as that of our own time. Far from this system having been constituted offhand, it did not assume its true and definitive shape until the eleventh century, that is to say more than five centuries posterior to the general triumph of Christian doctrines throughout Western Europe, and the definitive settlement of the Northern populations in the empire of the West. No man, whatever might be his genius could, in the fifth century have foreshadowed, with any degree of precision, the plan of this constitution, although the fundamental principle, whence it necessarily flowed, was then solidly established, both under temporal and spiritual aspects. Doubtless, owing to the progress of knowledge and the character of the social system—in itself more simple and natural—which has to be established in our day, its complete organisation should be much more rapidly effected. But the progress of society, depending as this does on the permanent nature of mankind, must be at all times essentially the same; the differences consisting simply in greater or less rapidity. Hence the above great experiment proves the absurdity of attempting to improvise a complete plan for reorganising society down to its smallest details.

Confirmation of this conclusion, if needed, would be furnished by observing the growth of the Negative Doctrine among the people. It is, manifestly, nothing but the general development and complete application of the individual Right of Private Judgment asserted, in principle, by Protestantism. Now two centuries almost were needed before all the main consequences of this doctrine were deduced, and its theory formed. No doubt the resistance of the feudo-theological system has greatly influenced the slowness of its advance. Evidently, this could not have been the only cause; the slow progress was due to the very nature of the work. Now what is true of a negative doctrine should *a fortiori* be true of one truly organic.

We must therefore conclude from this first class of considerations that, down to the present time, the People have not comprehended the great work of Social Reorganisation.

Endeavouring then to ascertain in what precise way the nature of this work has been misconceived, we find that the error consists in regarding an enterprise which is essentially theoretical, as purely practical.

The formation of any plan for social organisation necessarily embraces two series of works as distinct in their objects as in the intellectual efforts they demand. One, Theoretical or spiritual, aims at developing the leading conception of the plan—that is to say the new principle destined to co-ordinate social relations—and at forming the system of general ideas, fitted to guide society. The other, Practical or temporal, decides upon the distribution of authority and the combination of administrative institutions best adapted to the spirit of the system already determined by the theo-

Theory and
Practice
must be
separated

retical labours. Since the second series reposes on the first, of which it is only the result and realisation, the general enterprise must of necessity begin by the former. It constitutes its soul and, although merely preliminary, forms its most important and difficult portion.

In consequence of their having overlooked this fundamental distinction or, in other words, of having exclusively fixed their attention on the practical side, the People have naturally been led to conceive Social Reorganisation in accordance with the defective doctrine which we have examined in the previous chapter. All their errors flow from this profound original aberration; and their derivation from it is easily shown.

In the first place owing to this infraction of the natural law of the human mind the people, while imagining that they were constructing a new social system, really continued in the track of the ancient one. This was unavoidable, since the aim and spirit of the new one were left undetermined. So it must ever be until this indispensable condition has become fulfilled.

Every social system, whether constructed for a handful of men or for several millions, aims definitively at directing all special forces towards a general result; for the exercise of a general and combined activity is the essence of *society*. On every other hypothesis there is merely an agglomeration of a certain number of persons upon the same soil. This it is which distinguishes human society from that of other gregarious animals.

Hence it follows that the clear and precise ascertainment of the active aim constitutes the first and most important condition of a true social order, since this fixes the true meaning of the system.

On the other hand a society, however numerous it may be, can, just as an individual, propose to itself only one of two possible active aims. These are a violent action upon the rest of the human race, that is to say conquest; and an action upon nature modifying it for the advantage of man, or production. Every society which is not definitely organised for one or other of these aims, must be mongrel and devoid of character. The military aim characterised the ancient, while the industrial aim characterises the modern system.

The first step needed for social reorganisation was therefore to proclaim this new aim. Since this was not done, we have not abandoned the ancient system even when seeming to diverge from it most widely. Now, this strange deficiency in our so-called constitutions has, clearly, sprung from the desire to organise a system in detail, before the *ensemble* had been conceived. In other words it was the consequence of having directed attention exclusively to the practical side of the reorganisation without having first decided on the theoretical part or even thought of constituting it.

As a necessary consequence of this primitive error, mere modifications of the ancient system have been mistaken for a complete transformation. Its substance has remained essentially unchanged; all the alterations made bearing on the form alone. The only aim has been a redistribution of the ancient powers and an opposition between different branches. Discussions bearing upon this object have been and still are regarded as the sublime in politics, though in truth they constitute only a very subordinate detail. The direction of society and the nature of social powers have been conceived as being always the same.

Moreover it is essential to point out that these mere discussions on the

distribution of powers, have, by a further consequence of the original error, been as superficial as possible. For no account has been taken of that capital division into Spiritual and Temporal powers, which was the chief improvement introduced by the ancient system into general politics. Attention having been wholly directed to the practical side of social reorganisation, men have naturally adopted the absurd notion of a constitution devoid of a spiritual power, which, if it could last, would in truth be a retrograde step leading to barbarism. The temporal aspect has been alone considered. Nothing has been regarded but its distribution into legislative and executive powers, and this evidently forms a subdivision only.

In order to guide their intelligence through the modified phases of the feudo-theological system the people were necessarily obliged to assume as organic those negative principles which helped them to struggle against the ancient system from the time when its decline became evident and which therefore were destined to modify it. We must not omit to observe that, while overlooking the separation of theory from practice as a part of the general scheme of reorganisation, the people have involuntarily verified the necessity for this law, as resulting from the very nature of things, by themselves conforming to it in their efforts to modify the ancient system.

Such is the strict concatenation of consequences, resulting from the fundamental error of treating as simply a matter of practice that labour of social reorganisation which is in its essence theoretical. In this way the people have gradually come to regard as a truly regenerated social system, as the final outcome of a perfected civilisation, that which is only the ancient system deprived of all that gave it vigour and reduced to the miserable state of an emaciated skeleton. Such is the true origin of the fundamental errors pointed out in the preceding chapter.

Since the want of a true reorganisation always makes itself apparent and must do so until it has been satisfied, the spirit of the people is agitated and exhausts itself in seeking new combinations. But, being inflexibly confined within the narrow circle where their erroneous course originally placed them, and from which civilisation vainly urges their departure, the people imagine they can reach the goal of their efforts through fresh modifications of the ancient system, and more complete applications of the negative doctrine. Thus from change to change, that is to say by destroying more and more entirely the feudo-theological system, but without replacing it, the people rapidly advance towards complete anarchy which is the only natural issue of such a course.

This conclusion evidently proves the urgent and unavoidable necessity for adopting in the great work of Social Reorganisation the plan so clearly pointed out by the nature of the human intellect. It constitutes the only means of escaping from the disastrous consequences with which the people are threatened in consequence of having pursued a different course.

This proposition being of fundamental importance for determining the true direction of the great political operations needed in our time, it cannot be rendered too clear. It is therefore useful briefly to repeat the direct philosophical considerations on which it is based, although it may be regarded as sufficiently established by the foregoing investigation of the erroneous course hitherto pursued by the people.

• It does little honour to the human intellect to be obliged to prove that a separation universally recognised as indispensable in the cases of least complexity is indispensable as regards the most general and difficult of

Plan of Social Reorganisation.

undertakings. We admit as an elementary truth that the direction of any manufacture, the making of a road or bridge, the navigation of a vessel, &c., must be guided by antecedent theoretical knowledge. Yet it is supposed that the reorganisation of society can be confided to merely practical men.

Each entire human operation, from the simplest to the most complicated, whether executed by an individual or by a multitude, is unavoidably composed of two portions; in other words gives rise to two kinds of considerations; one theoretical another practical, one concerning the conception another the execution. The former of necessity precedes the latter which it is destined to guide. In other words all action presupposes antecedent speculation. Even in operations seemingly of the most routine character this analytic process is observable; the difference being only in the correct or erroneous conception of the theory. The man who pretends, whatsoever the subject may be, to emancipate himself from theories, as is well known, merely refuses to admit the theoretical advances effected by his contemporaries, and upholds antiquated theories long since superseded. Thus for example those who affect to disbelieve in medicine generally abandon themselves with stupid eagerness to the greatest charlatanism.

In the earliest infancy of the human mind theoretical and practical labours are executed by the same person for all operations; yet this circumstance while rendering the distinction less evident does not affect its reality. Soon however these two classes of operations begin to disengage themselves, as demanding different, and in some respects contrasted, capacities and culture. As the collective and individual intelligence of the human race developes itself, this separation becomes more and more pronounced and general, and constitutes the source of new advances. The degree of a nation's civilisation, philosophically considered, may be really measured by the extent to which theory and practice have been separated and harmonised. For the grand instrument of civilisation consists in the Division of Labour and the Combination of Efforts.

By the definitive establishment of Christianity the separation of theory and practice was systematically and completely effected in relation to the general action of society, as it had already been in relation to all special operations. It was vivified and consolidated by the creation of a spiritual power, distinct and independent of the temporal power, and which maintained towards the latter the natural attitude of a theoretical towards a practical authority, modified of course by the special character of the ancient system. This great and beautiful conception was the principal cause of the admirable vigour and consistency which distinguished the Feudo-Catholic system during its flourishing period. The inevitable decline of this system has for the moment obscured this important distinction. The superficial and negative philosophy of the last century misconceived its importance. But it is evident that the distinction should be carefully preserved, as well as all the other acquisitions which the human intellect effected under the influence of the ancient system and which cannot perish with it. It should occupy the first rank, and govern the spiritual and temporal powers of another sort in the system which must be established in our day. Doubtless society ought not to be organised with less completeness in the nineteenth century than it was in the eleventh.¹

Now if the necessity for the separation of theory and practice demands

¹ This great question of the Separation of the Spiritual and Temporal Powers will form hereafter the subject of a special essay.

recognition as regards political operations of daily and ordinary occurrence, how much more must this division, based as it chiefly is on the weakness of the human intellect, be called for in so vast an operation as that of the total reorganisation of society. It constitutes, in fact, the first condition for treating this great question in a way adequate to its importance.

The indications of philosophical observation are confirmed by direct experience. No important innovation has ever been effected in the order of society, until the practical efforts which were its immediate object, had been prepared by adequate conceptions, fitted to guide and support the former. History furnishes two decisive confirmations of this truth.

The first of these relates to the formation of the theologico-feudal system, an event which should be to us a source of inexhaustible information. The *ensemble* of the institutions which in the eleventh century constituted this system had manifestly been prepared by theoretical labours which date from the elaboration of Christianity by the School of Alexandria. The establishment of the Papacy, as the supreme European authority, was the necessary consequence of this antecedent development of Christian doctrine. The general institution of Feudalism, based on reciprocal duties of obedience and protection between the weak and the strong was, in like manner, only the application of this doctrine to the regulation of social relations incident to the then state of civilisation. Who can fail to see that neither of these institutions could have been founded without the preceding development of the Christian theory.

The second confirmation, still more obvious, since it almost falls under our own eyes, is furnished by the progress of the modifications which the people have introduced into the ancient system since the commencement of the existing crisis. It is manifest that they have been entirely based upon the development and systematic arrangements which the philosophy of the eighteenth century imparted to negative principles. These labours, although being negative they were of subordinate importance, had so decidedly a theoretical character and were so distinct from the subsequent practical labours, that not one of the men who contributed thereto, formed any clear or enlarged idea of the modifications which they might produce in the following generation. This reflection ought to have struck any person who has attentively compared their works with the succeeding changes. Yet, if in the writings and discourses of even the ablest men who laboured in framing our pretended constitutions, the ideas directly borrowed from the philosophies of the eighteenth century were suppressed, the residue would amount to very little.

The question now before us, if considered from the historical point of view, may be easily decided by the following considerations which we merely indicate, intending to develop them hereafter.

In our day society is disorganised under both spiritual and temporal aspects. Spiritual anarchy has preceded and engendered temporal anarchy. In the present epoch the social malady depends much more on the first than on the second cause. On the other hand an attentive study of the progress of civilisation proves that the spiritual is now more completely prepared than the temporal reorganisation of society. Thus our first efforts to terminate the revolutionary epoch should aim at reorganising the spiritual power; yet hitherto attention has only been fixed upon the renovation of the temporal power.

The preceding considerations manifestly enforce the necessity of separa-

ting the theoretical and practical operations required for our social reorganisation in the present day; in other words of conceiving and executing the operations which concern the spirit of the new social order and the corresponding system of general ideas in contradistinction to those which affect social relations and administrative results. Nothing essential and durable can be effected in practice until the theory is elaborated, or at least far advanced. To proceed differently would be like building without a foundation; putting form before the substance; in a word perpetuating the fundamental error committed by the people. This, as we have just seen, is the prime source of their aberrations, the obstacle above all to be overcome with a view to the reorganisation of society on a plan fitted to the existing state of knowledge.

Scientific
men and
Industrial
chiefs represent the new
Spiritual and
Temporal
organisa-
tion.

Having established the nature of the preliminary labours which must be executed in order to place the organisation of the new social system upon a solid foundation, it is easy to determine what are the Social Forces destined to fulfil this important mission. This remains to be settled before we explain the scheme which has to be worked out.

Having now demonstrated that the mode of proceeding adopted by the people is radically wrong, it would, doubtless, be superfluous to insist much on the truth that the men to whom this great work was confided were absolutely incompetent. The people having misconceived the nature of the work, they could not but deceive themselves in the choice of the men destined to execute it. The very fitness of the men chosen for the work, as conceived by the people, rendered them unfit to direct it in the way that it ought to be conceived. The incapacity of these representatives, or rather their incompetence, has then been what might be expected, since no one is competent to fulfil two offices essentially opposite in their nature.

The class of Lawyers has chiefly furnished the men selected to direct the elaboration of the so-called constitutions established by the people during the last thirty years. Naturally and necessarily they have been invested with this function, as hitherto conceived.

In fact, since the people merely sought to modify the ancient system, and the negative principles destined to guide such modifications were fully established, the power of eloquence was the force specially needed for the work, and lawyers have habitually cultivated it. This sort of ability, though of subordinate importance, since it is merely adapted to secure the triumph of any given view without reference to its formation and grounds, is for that very reason eminently fit for propagandism. The principles of the negative philosophy were not elaborated by lawyers but by Metaphysicians, who, besides, constitute spiritually the class which corresponds to that of lawyers under temporal aspects. These principles however have been propagated by lawyers. They occupied, for the most part, the political arena during the struggle with the feudo-theological system. On them therefore naturally devolved the task of instituting the modifications needed to bring this system into harmony with the negative philosophy, which they alone were accustomed to apply.

Manifestly the case is no longer the same as regards those organic operations the urgency of which has been demonstrated. The active employment of eloquence or the power of persuasion is no longer specially called for, but reasoning or the faculty which investigates and coordinates. Lawyers are generally endowed with the largest share of ability under the first head; but, for that very reason, they are the least capable as regards

the second. Professing to discover the method of recommending any opinion whatever, the more practised they are in this sort of work the more unfit they become to coordinate a theory according to its true principles.

Here then is no mere question of self-love; the entire question resolves itself into the necessary and exclusive relation which subsists between each sort of capacity and each kind of work. Lawyers directed the formation of the plan of reorganisation when this was conceived in a manner wholly erroneous. They have done their appropriate work. Invited to modify and criticise they did modify and criticise. It would be unjust to reproach them with the faults of a direction which they did not choose and the rectification of which does not belong to them. As long as the direction was useful and even indispensable, so also was their ascendancy. But at the same time we should recognise the necessity for the disappearance of this influence when an opposite direction ought to prevail. No pretension can be more absurd than that of aiming at the reorganisation of society on a purely practical basis and without first executing the indispensable theoretical works. But a still greater absurdity would be the singular hope of effectuating a true reorganisation by an assembly of orators strangers to every positive theoretical conception and selected without regard to any definite condition of capacity by men who are, for the most part, still more incompetent.¹

The nature of the works to be executed, of itself sufficiently indicates the class on which their execution must devolve. Since these works are theoretical, it is clear that those whose professed aim it is to form theoretical combinations, in other words Savants occupied with the study of the sciences of observation, are the only men whose capacity and intellectual culture fulfil the necessary conditions. It would be evidently abnormal when the most urgent social needs call for a general work of the highest order of importance and difficulty, to entrust this work to any but the greatest intellectual forces we can command and to men who pursue a method of which the superiority is universally recognised. Doubtless in other branches of society men may be found equal and even superior in theoretical capacity to that of the majority of savants, for the effective classification of individuals is far from conforming universally to the natural or physiological classification. But in a work so essential we must consider classes and not individuals. Besides even as regards such exceptional instances, education, that is to say, the system of intellectual habits which results from the study of the sciences of observation, can alone

¹ I am far from drawing the inference that the class of Lawyers ought no longer to follow any political career. I only wish to prove that their action should take a different course.

According to the views just put forward the present condition of society requires that the supreme direction of intelligence should cease to appertain to lawyers; but they are not the less called by their vocation to second, in some very important ways, that new general direction which others must originate. In the first place, possessing as they do, more than any other class, the means of persuasion and the habit of placing themselves at the political point of view, they should powerfully concur in the propagation of the organic doctrine. In the second place the lawyers, and especially such among them as have profoundly studied positive law, exclusively possess the capacity for making regulations; one of the great capacities necessary to the formation of the new social system, and one that will be utilised as soon as the purely spiritual portion of the general work of reorganisation has been terminated or even sufficiently advanced.

develop their natural theoretical capacity. In a word whenever society requires theoretical work of any given sort, it is conceded that this must be confided to the corresponding class of savants. Hence it devolves on the *ensemble* of the scientific corps to guide the general theoretical work the necessity for which has been demonstrated.¹

Besides, the nature of the case forbids any mistake on this head; since liberty of choice is absolutely interdicted for several reasons which point to the class of savants as the only one qualified to execute the theoretical labour of social reorganisation.

In the system to be constituted the spiritual power will be confided to the hands of savants, while the temporal power will belong to the heads of industrial works. These two powers then should naturally proceed to the formation of this system; just as they will when it is established undertake its daily application; due allowance being made for the superior importance of the work now to be executed. This work embraces a spiritual portion which ought to be treated first and a temporal portion which will follow. Accordingly on the savants devolves the task of undertaking the first series of works and on the leaders of industry that of organising, on the bases thus established, the administrative system. Such is the simple course indicated by the nature of things, which teaches us that the very classes which form the elements of the powers of a new system and must one day be placed at its head, can alone create it because they alone are capable of truly apprehending its spirit, and impelled in this direction by the combined force of their habits and their interests.

Another consideration places in a still clearer light the necessity for confiding to the cultivators of Positive Science the theoretical labour of reorganising society.

In the preceding chapter it has been remarked that the negative doctrine encourages in most minds, and increasingly strengthens, the habit of setting themselves up as the supreme judges of general political conceptions. This anarchical state of intellect, when erected into a fundamental principle, is a manifest obstacle to the reorganisation of society. The intellects really competent to construct the true organic doctrine destined

¹ In accordance with ordinary practice, we include under the term Savants, men who though not devoting their lives to the special cultivation of any of the sciences of observation, possess a scientific capacity and have studied the positive sciences sufficiently to become penetrated with their spirit and familiar with the principal laws that regulate natural phenomena.

Without doubt the active formation of the new social doctrine, hitherto too rare, is essentially reserved for this class of savants. The other savants are too much preoccupied with their special pursuits, and even still too much affected by certain erroneous intellectual habits, resulting from this speciality, to allow of their being really active in establishing political science. But they will nevertheless fulfil, though passively, a most important office in this great elaboration; as judges of the work. The results obtained by the men who follow out the new philosophical direction, will have neither value nor influence until adapted by the special savants, as possessing the same character as their own works.

I have thought it necessary to offer this explanation, in order to meet an objection which naturally presents itself to the majority of readers. It is however evident that this distinction between two sections of the scientific world, one actively and the other passively engaged in elaborating the organic doctrine, is wholly secondary and in no wise affects the essential proposition laid down in the text.

to end the existing crisis would therefore labour in vain unless from their antecedent position their authority was in fact recognised. Deprived of this condition and subjected to the capricious control of a policy of inspiration their work could never be uniformly adopted. Now casting our eye over society we shall soon perceive that this spiritual influence in our day lies exclusively in the hands of the savants. They alone as regards theory exercise an uncontested authority. Thus, apart from their being alone competent to form the new organic doctrine, they are exclusively invested with the moral force essential to secure its recognition. The obstacles to such recognition presented by the negative prejudice which attributes a moral sovereignty to each individual as his inborn right would be insurmountable by any other than that class. They possess the only leverage capable of overthrowing this prejudice, in the habit gradually contracted by society since the foundation of the positive sciences of submitting to the decisions of the savants as regards all special theoretical ideas. This habit the savants will easily extend to general theoretical conceptions as soon as they undertake their coordination.

Thus the savants in our day possess, to the exclusion of all other classes, the two fundamental elements of spiritual government, Capacity and Authority in matters of theory.

Lastly, one other essential characteristic, which like the above exclusively belongs to scientific power, calls for notice.

The existing crisis is manifestly common to the several nations of Western Europe although all do not participate in it to the same degree. Nevertheless it is treated by each of them as if it were purely national. Yet it is evident that a European crisis demands a European treatment.

This isolation of the nations forms a necessary consequence of the fall of the feudo-theological system, followed by the dissolution of the spiritual bonds which this system had established among the people of Europe and which it has been vainly sought to replace by a state of reciprocal hostility, disguised under the name of a European Balance of Power. The negative doctrine is inadequate to restore the harmony it destroyed with the ancient fundamental principle; on the contrary postpones its realisation. In the first place the negative philosophy, by its very nature, tends to isolation; in the second place the nations cannot come to a complete understanding on the principles of that philosophy, because each of them endeavours to modify the ancient system by its instrumentality in a different degree.

The true Organic Doctrine can alone produce the harmony so imperatively demanded by the condition of European civilisation. This doctrine should, perforce, realise it by offering to the nations of Western Europe the system of social organisation adapted for all, and which they will enjoy in its completeness, sooner or later, according to the special state of their intelligences. Besides, it should be observed that this harmony will be more perfect than that produced by the ancient system where it only subsisted under the spiritual aspect; while in our day it should equally subsist under the temporal aspect, so that the nations are invited to constitute, in a complete and permanent manner, a true and general social organisation. And, in truth, if such an investigation were in its right place here, it would be easy to show that each of the nations of Western Europe is, by the special character of its civilisation, placed in the most favourable position for forwarding such or such a part of the general system, whence the immediate advantage of their cooperation becomes evident. But this

consideration proves that all European nations alike should work in common to found the new system.

Considering the new organic doctrine under this point of view, it is manifest that the force destined to shape and establish it, having to produce the combination of the different civilised nations, should be a European power. Now this office forms, no less than the others already enumerated, the special attribute of the scientific power. It is clear that scientific men alone constitute a really compact and active body, all of whose members throughout Europe have a mutual understanding and communicate easily and continuously among themselves. This springs from the fact that they alone, in our day, possess common ideas, a uniform language, a general and permanent aim. No other class possesses these powerful advantages, because no other fulfils the above conditions in their integrity. The industrial classes even, so eminently disposed to union by the character of their labours and habits, are still too much influenced by the hostile inspirations of a savage patriotism to allow of their establishing as yet a real European alliance among themselves. Such a result is reserved for the active labours of scientific men.

It is doubtless superfluous to demonstrate that the existing relations of scientific men must acquire a far greater intensity when they direct their general efforts towards the formation of the new social doctrine. This result must follow since the force of the social tie is necessarily proportionate to the importance of the aim sought by association.

In order to appreciate aright and in its entire extent the value of this European force which appertains to the savants, it is requisite to compare the conduct of rulers with that of nations in relation to this matter.

It has been above observed that rulers while adopting a plan absurd in principle pursue its execution much more methodically than the people, because the course they follow is prescribed by the past in the greatest detail. Thus under the aspect which we are considering, the rulers throughout Europe combine their efforts while the nations remain isolated. By this circumstance alone the rulers obtain a relative advantage over the people who have no corresponding way of combating such combination, which thus becomes of extreme importance.

The leaders of opinion among the people have no other resource than to exclaim against such a superiority of position which not the less subsists. They proclaim, as a general proposition, that the different States have no right to interfere in the social reforms of each other. Now this principle, which is nothing but the application of the negative philosophy to external relations, is, like the other dogmas that compose it, absolutely false; like them it is only the vicious generalisation of a transitory fact—namely the dissolution of the relations which, under the ancient system grew up between the European nations. It is clear that the nations of Western Europe, by the common character and connexity of their civilisation, both as regards its gradual development and its actual condition, constitute one great community, the members of which possess reciprocal rights, less extended no doubt but of the same nature with those belonging to the different portions of a single State.

Moreover we see that this negative conception, even if true, does not promote, but rather hinders its end, since it tends to prevent the nations from uniting. As one force can only be restrained by another, the people, regarded from a European point of view, will manifestly continue subordinate to their rulers, until the scientific force, which alone possesses a

European character, presides over the great work of social reorganisation. This force alone can furnish to the people the true counterpoise to the Holy Alliance, making due allowance for the necessary superiority of a spiritual over a purely temporal coalition.

To resume then;—the necessity for confiding to Scientific Men the preliminary theoretical labours recognised as indispensable for reorganising society is solidly based upon four distinct considerations, each of which would have sufficed to establish it: 1stly. scientific men are by the character of their intellectual capacity and cultivation alone competent to execute these works; 2ndly. from the nature of the case this office is reserved for them as constituting the spiritual power of the system to be organised; 3rdly. they exclusively possess the moral authority requisite in our day to determine the adoption of the new organic doctrine when formed; 4thly. and lastly, of all the social forces in existence that of scientific men is alone European. Such a combination of proofs should, without doubt, place the great theoretic mission of scientific men beyond question and controversy.

From all that precedes it follows that the fundamental errors committed by the People in their mode of conceiving the Reorganisation of Society are in the first instance referable to the mistaken course which they have adopted for attaining this end; that the error of this course consists in treating social reorganisation as a purely practical operation, though it is essentially theoretical; that the nature of things and the experience of history demonstrate the absolute necessity of dividing the entire work of reorganisation into two series, one theoretic the other practical of which the former should be first executed and serve as basis to the latter; that the preliminary execution of the theoretical works demands the exertion of a new social force distinct from those which have hitherto occupied the scene but have become entirely inadequate finally that for various decisive reasons this new force should appertain to scientific men devoted to the sciences of observation.

The *ensemble* of these views may be regarded as intended to lead reflecting minds to that elevated point of view whence both the vices of the course hitherto followed for the reorganisation of society and the character of that which should, in our day, be adopted may be embraced at a single glance. In the last resort all resolves itself into establishing, through the combined efforts of European savants, a positive theory in politics distinct from practice, and one which shall bring our social system into harmony with the present state of knowledge. Pursuing this course of reflection we shall perceive that the above conclusions may be resumed in a single conception: *scientific men ought in our day to elevate politics to the rank of a science of observation.*

Savants
must render
Politics
Scientific.

Such is the culminating and definitive point of view at which we should place ourselves. From this point of view it is easy to condense into a series of very simple considerations the substance of all that has been said in the present essay. It remains to effect this important generalisation, which can alone supply the means of advancing further by rendering the march of thought more rapid.

From the nature of the human intellect each branch of knowledge in its development is necessarily obliged to pass through three different theoretical states: the Theological or fictitious state; the Metaphysical or abstract state; lastly the Scientific or positive state.

Law of the
Three States

In the first state supernatural ideas serve to bind the small number of isolated observations which then constitute science. In other words the facts observed are explained, that is to say, conceived *à priori*, by means of invented facts. Such is the necessary state of all knowledge in its infancy. With all its imperfections this forms the only mode of connecting facts possible at that epoch. It furnishes therefore, the only instrument by means of which we can reason on facts, thus sustaining our intellectual activity which above all requires a rallying point. In a word this state is indispensable as a condition of further progress.

The second state is simply destined to serve as a means of transition from the first to the third. It has a mongrel nature, connecting facts by ideas which are no longer entirely supernatural and have not yet become completely natural. In a word these ideas are personified abstractions, which the mind can at will regard as the mystic name for a supernatural cause, or the abstract statement of a mere series of phenomena, according as it approximates more nearly to the theological or the scientific state. This metaphysical state presupposes that facts, multiplied in number, have at the same time become more closely connected by more extended comparisons.

The third is the definitive state of all knowledge whatsoever; the two first having been destined to prepare it gradually. Then facts become connected by general ideas or laws of a completely positive kind, suggested or confirmed by the very facts, which are themselves frequently only simple facts sufficiently general to be elevated to the rank of principles. We constantly endeavour to reduce these to the smallest possible number, yet without proposing any hypothesis incapable of being sooner or later verified, and always regarding these principles simply as a general mode of stating the phenomena.

Men familiar with the progress of the sciences can easily verify the truth of this general historical *résumé* in reference to the four fundamental sciences already rendered positive, Astronomy, Physics, Chemistry and Physiology, as well as their dependent sciences. Those even who have only considered the sciences in their present state can make this verification as to physiology which, although it has at last become as positive as the other sciences, still subsists under the three states in different classes of intelligence. This fact is particularly evident in reference to the phenomena specially called *moral*: for these are conceived by some as the result of a continuous supernatural action; by others as incomprehensible results of the action of an abstract entity; and lastly by others as connected with organic conditions susceptible of demonstration and beyond which it is impossible to go.

Considering Politics as a science and applying to it the preceding remarks, we find that it has already passed through the two first states and is now on the point of reaching the third.

The doctrine of Kings represents the theological state of politics. In the last result, this is in truth based on theological ideas. It exhibits social relations as resting on the supernatural idea of Divine Right. It explains the successive political changes of the human race by an immediate supernatural guidance, exercised continuously from the first man to the present day. In this way alone was political science conceived, until the ancient system began to decline.

The doctrine of the People expresses the metaphysical condition of politics. It is wholly founded on the abstract and metaphysical hypothesis

of a primitive Social Contract antecedent to all development of the human faculties by civilisation. The instruments of reasoning which it habitually employs are 'rights,' regarded as natural and common to all men in the same degree and guaranteed by this contract. Such is the primitive negative doctrine, originally drawn from theology as a means of warfare against the ancient system and which has been subsequently erected into an organic idea. Rousseau was its chief systematiser, in a work which served and still serves as the basis of the ordinary reflections upon social organisation.

Lastly the Scientific Doctrine of politics considers the social state in which the human race has always been found by observers as the necessary effect of its organisation. It conceives the scope of this social state as determined by the rank which man holds in the natural scale, the result of facts which are not themselves susceptible of explanation. It perceives in truth that from this fundamental relation results the constant tendency of man to act upon nature in order to modify it for his own advantage. It then considers the social order as aiming at a collective development of this natural tendency, so as to give the highest possible efficiency to this useful action. This being settled, it endeavours, by direct observations on the collective development of the race, to deduce from the fundamental laws of the human organisation the evolution it has undergone and the intermediate states to which it has been subjected before reaching its definitive state. Guided by this series of observations this doctrine regards the improvements reserved for each epoch as necessitated, without resorting to any hypothesis, by the stage of development which the human race has reached. Thus, in reference to each degree of civilisation, it views political combinations as merely intended to facilitate natural tendencies when these have been sufficiently ascertained.

Such is the spirit of the positive doctrine which it is important to establish in our day, applying it to the present state of civilised man and considering antecedent states only so far as may be necessary in order to establish the fundamental laws of the science.

It is easy to explain at once why politics could not sooner become a positive science and why at the present time they are destined to become one.

Two fundamental conditions, distinct yet inseparable, were indispensable for that object.

In the first place, it was essential that all the Special Sciences should have successively become positive, for the *ensemble* could not acquire that character so long as the elements were devoid of it. This condition is now fulfilled.

The sciences have become positive, one after the other, in the natural order of effecting this revolution. This order is that of the greater or less degree of complication in their phenomena, or, in other words, of their more or less intimate connection with man. Thus at first astronomical phenomena, as the simplest, and then in succession, physics, chemistry, and physiology have been reduced to positive theories; the last of these only quite recently. The same reform could not be accomplished for politics until it had been effected for the other phenomena, since political phenomena depend upon these and are the most complicated of all. But if this renovation could not be effected sooner, its realisation now has become an evident necessity.

Classification
of the
Sciences.

In the second place, it was essential that the Preparatory Social System

during which action upon nature was only the indirect object of society should have reached its last stage.

On one hand, the just theory could not arise until then, because it would have been too far in advance of practice. The former being destined to guide the latter, could not precede it too long. On the other hand it could not earlier have obtained a sufficient experimental basis. It was requisite that a social order should have been founded and accepted by a very large population, embracing several considerable nations, and lasting as long as possible, before a theory could be founded upon this vast experiment.

The second of these conditions is now satisfied no less than the first. The theological system, destined to prepare the human intellect for the scientific system, has closed its career. This is undeniable since the metaphysical system, the only object of which is to subvert the theological system, has, generally speaking, obtained a preponderance among the nations. A Scientific Polity must therefore arise, for some theory being indispensable, we should otherwise be driven to assume the reconstitution of a theological polity; the metaphysical polity being, to speak correctly, not a true theory but a negative doctrine suitable only for a transition.

To resume,—no moral revolution ever existed at once more inevitable, more ripe, and more urgent than that required to elevate politics to the rank of the natural sciences, through the combined efforts of European savants. This revolution can alone introduce into the great crisis of our day a really preponderating force, capable of preserving society from the terrible explosions of anarchy which threaten it, by putting it on the track of that improved social system which the state of our knowledge demands.

In order to set in motion with the utmost possible promptitude the scientific forces destined to fulfil this salutary mission, it was essential to lay down the general prospectus of the theoretical works required for the reorganisation of society, by raising politics to the rank of the natural sciences. I have ventured to conceive this plan which I now solemnly submit to the savants of Europe.

Profoundly convinced that, whenever this discussion commences, my plan, be it adopted or rejected, will necessarily lead to the formation of the definitive plan; I do not hesitate in the interests of society now threatened with long and terrible convulsions which their intervention can alone avert, to adjure all the European savants to express, freely and publicly, their well-considered judgment upon the general scheme of constructive operations which I submit to them.

This prospectus embraces three series of works.

The first series aims at forming a System of Historical Observations upon the general progress of the human intellect destined to become the basis of a positive polity, thus wholly freeing it from a theological and metaphysical character and impressing on them a scientific character.

The second series seeks to establish a complete system of Positive Education adapted to a regenerated society constituted with a view to action upon nature; in other words it aims at perfecting such action so far as this depends upon the faculties of the agent.

Lastly, the third series embraces a general exposition of the Collective Action which civilised men, in the present state of their knowledge, can exercise over Nature so as to modify it for their own advantage, directing their entire forces to this end and regarding social combinations only as means of attaining it.

FIRST SERIES OF WORKS.

THE fundamental condition which must be fulfilled in order to treat politics in a positive spirit, consists in determining with precision the limits within which, by the nature of things, the combinations of social order are contained. In other words, it is necessary in politics, as in the other sciences that the offices of observation and of imagination should be rendered perfectly distinct and the latter subordinated to the former.

The creation of Social Science demands that Observation should preponderate over Imagination.

In order to place this leading conception in a clear light, it is necessary to compare the general spirit of positive politics with that of theological and metaphysical politics. In order to simplify their comparison the two last must be considered under one head; but this cannot alter the results since, as pointed out in the preceding chapter, the second is merely a modification of the first, differing from it only by having a less pronounced character.

The theological and metaphysical states of any science possess one characteristic in common—the predominance of imagination over observation. The only difference which exists between them under this point of view, is that in the first the imagination occupies itself with supernatural beings, and in the second with personified abstractions.

The necessary and constant consequence of such a state of the human mind is to persuade man that he is, in all respects, the centre of the natural system, and consequently endowed with an indefinite control over phenomena. This opinion, it is evident, results directly from the supremacy exercised by the imagination, combined with the natural tendency which disposes men in general to form exaggerated ideas of their importance and power. Such an illusion constitutes the most prominent characteristic of the infancy of human reason.

Regarded from the philosophic point of view, the revolutions which have led the different sciences up to the positive state have produced the general result of inverting this primitive order of our ideas.

The fundamental characteristic of these revolutions consisted in transferring to observation the preponderance hitherto exercised by the imagination. Consequently the results have been in like manner reversed. Man has been dethroned from his central position and reduced to the rank he really occupies. In the same way his activity has been confined within its just limits, having been reduced to the office of modifying, more or less, by their interaction a certain number of the phenomena which he is destined to observe.

The mere statement of this historical view entitles all who have clear notions about the sciences which have become positive to verify it.

Thus in Astronomy man commenced by considering the celestial phenomena, if not as subject to his influence, at least as having direct and intimate relations with all the details of his existence. Indisputable and multiplied demonstrations were needed to induce man to accept with submission a subordinate and imperceptible position in the general system of the universe. So also in Chemistry he imagined himself competent to modify at will the intimate constitution of bodies, before he limited his efforts to observing the reciprocal action of the different terrestrial substances as shown in their effects. In Medicine too, it was only after having long hoped to remedy at will the disorders of his organisation, and even to resist

indefinitely the causes of destruction, that man finally recognised that his action was of no avail until it coincided with the natural working of the organisation, and much more when opposed to this.

Politics have not, any more than the other sciences, escaped this law based upon the nature of things. The condition in which it has hitherto existed and still remains, presents a perfect analogy with the relation of astrology to astronomy, of alchemy to chemistry, and of the search after a universal remedy to medical science.

In the first place it is evident, from the preceding chapter, that theological and metaphysical politics considered in reference to their method, agree in giving a preponderance to imagination over observation. It cannot indeed be denied that observation has been employed in theoretical politics, but it was so only in a subordinate manner, subject to the caprices of imagination, as for example in chemistry during its alchemistic phase.

This predominance of the imagination in politics necessarily led to consequences analogous to those above described for the other sciences. We can easily verify this by direct observations upon the common spirit of theological and metaphysical politics, regarded from a theoretical point of view.

Down to the present time man has had faith in the unlimited power of his political combinations to perfect social order. In other words the human race has hitherto been regarded politically as unmoved by any inherent forces, and always disposed passively to receive whatever impulse the legislator, armed with a competent authority, wished to give.

By a necessary consequence the absolute has always reigned and still reigns in Theoretic Politics, whether theological or metaphysical. The common end which they propose is to establish, each in its own way, the eternal and most perfect type of social order, without taking into account a given state of civilisation. Both pretended to the exclusive discovery of a system of institutions capable of attaining that end. The only thing which in this respect distinguishes them, is that the former formally prohibits any important modification of the plan traced by it; while the latter permits criticism provided this moves in the given direction. With that difference they are both alike by nature absolute.

This absolute character is still more apparent in their applications to Practical Politics. Each of them perceives in its peculiar system of institutions a sort of universal panacea applicable to all political evils, of whatever nature these may be, and whatever may be the stage of civilisation actually reached by the people for whom the remedy is destined. In like manner both judge the *régimes* belonging to different nations at distinct epochs of civilisation, in reference only to their greater or less concordance with, or opposition to their own unvarying types of perfection. Thus, to quote a recent striking example, the adherents of theological and metaphysical polity have, each in their turn and at brief intervals of time, proclaimed the social organisation of Spain to be superior to that of the most advanced European nations, without paying any regard to the actual inferiority of Spanish civilisation in comparison with that of the French and English above whom the Spaniards have been elevated as to the political *régime*. Such judgments, other examples of which it would be easy to cite, show clearly how entirely the spirit of theological and metaphysical polity disregards the actual state of civilisation.

To complete their characterisation it is important to remark that they both, generally speaking, though for different reasons, agree in setting up a very imperfect state of civilisation as the perfection of social reorganisation. We may even see that the most consistent adherents of metaphysical polity (such as its coordinator Rousseau) have been led to regard the social state as a degeneration from a State of Nature; the creation of their own imagination and simply the metaphysical counterpart of the theological conception of the fall of human nature through Original Sin.

This accurate *résumé* confirms the belief that the preponderance of imagination over observation, has produced in political science results exactly similar to those it engendered in the other sciences before they were rendered positive. The absolute search for the best possible government, taking no account of the state of civilisation, is evidently of the same nature as that for a panacea applicable to all maladies and all temperaments.

The general spirit of theological and metaphysical polity being thus reduced to its simplest expression, we gather from the preceding remarks that it essentially resolves itself into two considerations. As regards method it consists in the preponderance of imagination over observation. As regards general ideas destined to guide the operations, it consists, on one hand, in a purely abstract consideration of social organisation, regarded as independent of the state of civilisation, and, on the other hand, in viewing the progress of civilisation as not being subject to any law.

By reversing this process we should necessarily discover the point of view adapted to Positive Politics, since, as above pointed out, the same opposition may be observed between the conjectural and positive state of the other sciences. By this mental operation, we shall only extend to the future the analogy observed in the past; and we are thus led to the following results.

In the first place, in order to impress a positive character on political science we must introduce into this, as into all other sciences the preponderance of observation over imagination. In the second place, that this fundamental condition may be fulfilled, we must on one hand, conceive Social Organisation as intimately connected with the state of civilisation and determined by it, on the other, consider the Progress of Civilisation as being subject to an invariable law based upon the nature of things. Politics cannot become positive, or, what comes to the same thing, observation cannot obtain a preponderance over imagination until these two last conditions shall have been fulfilled. But it is clear, inversely, that if they are fulfilled, if the theory of politics is consistently established on this basis, the imagination will spontaneously become subordinated to observation and politics be rendered positive. Thus the final analysis reduces everything to these two conditions.

Such then are the two fundamental ideas that should preside over positive efforts in theoretic politics. Having regard to their extreme importance it is indispensable to consider them in greater detail. It is not our business here to demonstrate them, for this is precisely the scope of the operations we have to accomplish. We only seek to state them with sufficient completeness, in order that competent minds may, in some degree, verify them by comparing them with facts generally known. Such a verification is sufficient to convince the mind of the practicability of

treating politics in the same way as the sciences of observation, and our chief object will be attained if we create such a conviction. •

Social organisation is determined by the state of Civilisation.

Civilisation properly so called, consists on one hand in the development of the human mind, on the other in the result of this, namely the increasing power of man over nature. In other words the component elements of civilisation are Science, the Fine Arts, and Industry; this last expression being understood in that enlarged sense which I have always assigned to it.

Regarding civilisation from this precise and elementary point of view it is easy to perceive that the state of the social organisation essentially depends on that of civilisation and should be regarded as its result; whereas imaginative polity considers the former as isolated from and even quite independent of the latter.

The state of Civilisation necessarily determines that of the Social Organisation, whether spiritual or temporal, under the two most important aspects. In the first place it determines its nature by fixing the aim of social action; in the next place it prescribes its essential form by creating and developing the social forces, temporal and spiritual, destined to guide this general action. In truth it is clear that the collective action of the social body, being nothing else than the resultant of the individual action of all its constituent members directed to a common end, cannot be constituted otherwise than its elements, which are manifestly determined by the more or less advanced state of the sciences, the fine arts, and industry. It is still more evident that the prolonged existence of any political system is inconceivable, unless it confers supreme power on the predominant social forces, the nature of which is invariably prescribed by the state of civilisation. Reason points to this conclusion and experience confirms it.

All the varieties of social organisation which have hitherto existed, have only been modifications more or less extensive of a single system, the Military and Theological system. The original formation of this system was the evident and necessary result of the imperfect condition of civilisation at the epoch when it arose. When industry was in its infancy, society adopted War as its active aim. It did so naturally and reasonably, since such a condition of affairs both supplied the resources of war and enforced its practice by the most energetic stimulants that can act upon man,—the necessity for exercising his faculties and that of living. In like manner it is clear that the theological state, which then affected all special theories, necessarily impressed the like character on the general ideas destined to form the social bond. The third element of civilisation,—the Fine Arts—then predominated; and was in truth the chief instrument of founding the primitive organisation. Had it not developed itself we cannot conceive how society could have been organised.

If we next observe the successive modifications which this original system has undergone, and which metaphysicians have mistaken for so many different systems, we shall find the same result. In all of them we shall see the unavoidable effects of the ever growing expansion of the Scientific and Industrial elements, at the outset so insignificant. Thus it came to pass that the passage from polytheism to theism, and later the Protestant reformation were chiefly produced by the continual, though slow, progress of positive knowledge; in other words, by the action exerted upon older general conceptions, by special ideas which gradually

acquired a positive character. In like manner under temporal aspects the transition from the Roman to the Feudal State, and, still more manifestly, the decline of the latter through the enfranchisement of the Commons and its results, are essentially referable to the increasing importance of the industrial element. In a word all the general facts prove the close dependence of the social organisation upon the state of civilisation.

The best thinkers, those who approximate most closely to the positive condition in politics, now begin to perceive this fundamental principle. They feel that it is absurd to conceive the political system as an isolated fact, and to attribute to it those social forces which on the contrary produce it. In a word they already admit that the political order is and can only be the expression of civil order; in other words, that the preponderating social forces, of necessity, at last, become the directing ones. Only one step more is needed to recognise the subordination of the political system to the state of civilisation. For if it is clear that the political order is the exponent of the civil order, it is, at least, equally apparent that the civil order itself is merely the exponent of the state of civilisation.

Doubtless social organisation in its turn inevitably reacts on civilisation in ways more or less marked. But this influence which, notwithstanding its great importance, is only secondary, cannot overturn the natural order of dependence. This reaction itself, rightly considered, proves that the order is that above described. For experience always shows that if the social organisation be constituted in a sense at variance with the coexisting civilisation, the latter in the end invariably gets the upper hand.

It must then be admitted, as one of the two fundamental ideas constituting the essence of Positive Polity that the social organisation, whether past or present, should not be considered apart from the state of civilisation whence in truth it necessarily flows. If to facilitate investigation, we sometimes find it useful to consider them separately, this abstraction should always be regarded as simply provisional, without allowing ourselves to lose sight of the subordination established by the nature of things.

The second fundamental idea is this; that Civilisation progresses according to a necessary Law.

The experience of the past proves, in the most decisive manner, that the progressive march of civilisation follows a natural and unavoidable course, which flows from the law of human organisation and, in its turn, becomes the supreme law of all practical phenomena.

In this place it is manifestly impossible to expound the law in question with precision, or to verify it historically, even in the briefest manner. We only propose to offer some reflexions on this fundamental conception.

The first reflexion points to the necessity for assuming that such a law does exist in order to explain the political phenomena.

All men who possess a certain knowledge of the leading facts of history, be their historical views what they may, will agree in this, that the cultivated portion of the human race, considered as a whole, has made uninterrupted progress in civilisation from the most remote periods of history to our own day. In this proposition, the term civilisation is understood in the sense explained above, including therefore the social organisation.

No reasonable doubt can be raised about this fundamental fact as regards the epoch which extends from the eleventh century to the present

The growth
of Civilisation
follows
Laws.

time, in other words commencing with the introduction of the Sciences of Observation into Europe by the Arabs, and the Enfranchisement of the Commons. But the truth is equally incontestable as regards the antecedent period. Savants are now well convinced that the pretensions to advanced scientific knowledge put forward on behalf of the ancients by *littérateurs* are devoid of all real basis. The Arabians are proved to have surpassed them. Such also has been the case, even more decidedly, as regards industry, at all events in reference to all that calls for real ability, and does not result from mere accident. Even if the fine arts were deemed to constitute an exception, their exclusion is susceptible of a natural explanation which would leave the main proposition essentially untouched. Lastly as regards the social organisation, it is perfectly manifest that this, during the same period, made the greatest progress, owing to the establishment of Christianity, and the formation of the Feudal System, so superior to the organisation of Greece and Rome.

It is therefore certain that civilisation has, under every aspect, made constant progress.

On the other hand, while discarding the disparaging spirit, alike blind and unjust, introduced by the metaphysical philosophy, we cannot but perceive that in consequence of the state of infancy which has hitherto characterised political speculations, the practical combinations that have until now guided civilisation were not always those best adapted to promote its progress, and, frequently, tended rather to impede than to assist this. There have been epochs the main political activity of which was of a purely stationary character. Such, generally speaking, were those of social systems in their decline; for example, of the Emperor Julian, of Philip II. and the Jesuits, and lastly of Bonaparte. Let us also bear in mind that, as already pointed out, the social organisation does not regulate the course of civilisation, but, on the contrary, results from this.

Frequent cures, effected in spite of a treatment manifestly erroneous, have revealed to physicians the powerful action by which every living body spontaneously tends to rectify accidental derangements of its organisation. In like manner the advance of civilisation, notwithstanding unfavourable political combinations, clearly proves that civilisation is governed by a natural law of progress, independent of all combinations, and dominating them. If this principle were denied, in order to explain such a fact, and comprehend how it has come to pass that civilisation in place of being retarded by errors committed, has almost invariably benefited by them, we could only have recourse to direct continuous supernatural guidance, after the fashion of theological politics.

Lastly, it is well to remark that too frequently events have been regarded as unfavorable to civilisation which were only apparently so. The chief cause of this misapprehension has been, the insufficient attention paid, even by the best intellects, to an essential law of organised bodies, which applies with equal force to the human race acting collectively, as to a single individual. It consists in the necessity for a certain degree of resistance in order that all forces may be fully developed. But this remark in no way affects the preceding consideration. For though obstacles are needed to develop forces, they do not produce them.

The conclusion deduced from this fundamental consideration would be much strengthened, if we took into account the remarkable identity observable in the development of the civilisation of different nations,

between whom no political intercommunication can with probability be assumed. Such an identity could only have been produced under the influence of a natural progress of civilisation uniformly applicable to all nations as resulting from the fundamental laws of the human organisation, common to all. Thus, for example, the customs of the early times of Greece, as they are described by Homer, are found to be almost identical with those which subsist among the savage nations of North America. So likewise the feudalism of the Malays closely resembles that of Europe in the eleventh century. These points of resemblance, it is clear, can only be explained in the way above mentioned.

A second consideration will render evident the existence of a natural law regulating the progress of civilisation.

If, in conformity with the view above submitted, we admit that each phase of the social order is necessarily derived from that of the corresponding civilisation, we may in our observations lay out of consideration this complex element; and the results arrived at for the residuary facts will equally apply to the organisation of society.

Reducing thus the question to its simplest terms, it becomes easy to perceive that civilisation follows a determined and invariable course.

A superficial philosophy, which would make this world a scene of miracles, has immensely exaggerated the influence of chance, that is to say of isolated causes, in human affairs. This exaggeration is peculiarly apparent in reference to the Sciences and the Arts. Among other remarkable examples, everyone knows the great admiration excited even in intelligent minds by the idea that the law of universal gravitation was revealed to Newton by the fall of an apple.

All sensible men in our time admit that chance plays only a very small part in scientific and industrial discoveries; that in none but insignificant discoveries does it rank as chief agent. But to this error has succeeded another which, though in itself much less unreasonable, has nevertheless almost the same disadvantages. The office of chance has been in like manner transferred to genius. This explanation hardly accounts more felicitously for the action of the human mind.

The history of human knowledge clearly proves that all our labours in the sciences and arts are so connected, whether in the same or in succeeding generations, that the discoveries of one age prepare those of the following, as the former had been themselves prepared by those of the preceding. It has been demonstrated that the isolated power of genius is greatly less than that with which it has been credited. The man most justly distinguished by great discoveries almost always owes the largest share of his success to his predecessors in the same career. In a word the human mind follows, in the development of the sciences and arts, a definite course, one that transcends the greatest intellectual forces, which arise; so to speak, only as instruments destined to produce in due course successive discoveries.

Confining our observations to the sciences whose progress we can follow most easily from remote periods, we see, in truth, that their main historic epochs,—that is to say their passage through the theological and metaphysical into the positive stage,—are rigorously determined. These three states succeed each other necessarily in an order prescribed by the nature of the human mind. The transition from one to the other takes place according to a course the steps of which resemble each other in all the sciences,

nor can the greatest amount of genius dispense with passing through them. Turning from this general review to the subdivisions of the scientific or definitive state, we observe the same law. Thus for example, the great discovery of universal gravitation was prepared by the labours of the astronomers and geometers of the 16th and 17th centuries, chiefly by those of Kepler and Huygens. They were indispensable to its birth, and certain, sooner or later, to produce it.

It appears, therefore, from the preceding remarks that the elementary march of civilisation is unquestionably subject to a natural and invariable law which overrules all special human divergencies. But as the state of the social organisation of necessity follows that of civilisation the same conclusion applies to civilisation, considered as a whole or in its elements.

The two considerations above announced, though insufficient to furnish a complete exposition of the progress of civilisation, nevertheless, prove its reality. They show the possibility of determining with precision all its attributes by a careful observation of the past, and of thus creating positive polity.

The science of Positive Politics is essential for Social Reorganisation.

Our business is next to fix exactly the practical aim of this science; and its general points of contact with the wants of society; especially its connexion with the real work of reorganisation which is so imperiously required by the actual state of the body politic.

To effect this, it is necessary at the outset to ascertain the limits of all true political action.

The fundamental law which governs the natural progress of civilisation rigorously determines the successive states through which the general development of the human race must pass. On the other hand, this law necessarily results from the instinctive tendency of the human race to perfect itself. Consequently it is as completely independent of our control as are the individual instincts the combination of which produces this permanent tendency.

Since no known fact authorises us to believe that the human organisation is liable to any fundamental alteration, the progress of that civilisation which flows from it is in essentials unalterable. To speak more precisely, none of the intermediate steps which it prescribes can be evaded, and no step in a backward direction can really be made.

Nevertheless, the progress of civilisation is more or less modifiable, and may vary in point of rapidity within certain limits, from various causes, physical and moral, which can be estimated. Among these causes, are political combinations. In this sense only is it possible for man to influence the course of his own civilisation.

This action upon the race is quite analogous to that which is attainable in relation to the individual; the analogy resulting from the identity of source. By employing suitable means we can, up to a certain point, accelerate or retard the expansion of an individual instinct; but we can neither destroy it nor alter its nature. So likewise with the instincts of the race; paying due attention to the varying extent of this modifying power when the duration of the race is compared with that of the individual.

The natural progress of civilisation, therefore, determines with entire certainty for each epoch the improvements of which the social state is susceptible, whether in its parts or as a whole. Such improvements alone can be carried out, as in fact they are carried out, by the combinations of philosophers and statesmen, at times even in spite of these combinations.

All men who have exercised a real and durable action on the human race, whether in temporal or spiritual matters, have been guided and sustained by this fundamental truth, which the usual instinct of genius partially revealed to them, although never yet systematically demonstrated. They have, at every epoch, perceived what were the changes which the state of civilisation tended to bring about. These they enunciated, and proposed to their cotemporaries doctrines and institutions in harmony with them. Whenever their conceptions were in accord with the real state of affairs, the changes so foreseen were speedily realised or consolidated. The social forces which had long been silently growing, suddenly appeared at their voice on the political scene with all the vigour of youth.

History having been, up to the present time, written and studied in a superficial spirit, such coincidences and striking results, in place of instructing men, as might be naturally supposed, have only astonished them. These facts, when misapprehended, even help to keep alive the theologico-metaphysical belief in the indefinite power of legislators over civilisation. They maintain this superstitious idea in minds otherwise disposed to reject it, were it not apparently supported by observation. This untoward result arises from the circumstance that in these great events we see only men, never the forces which irresistibly impel them. Instead of recognising the preponderating influence of civilisation the efforts of these farseeing men are regarded as the true causes of the improvements effected, but which would equally have taken place, though somewhat more slowly, without their intervention. No one troubles himself with considering the enormous disproportion between the alleged cause and the results; a disproportion which would make the explanation much more incomprehensible than the fact itself. People look at the appearance and neglect the reality which is behind. In a word, according to the ingenious expression of Madame de Staël, we mistake the actors for the drama.

Such an error is exactly of the same nature as that of the Indians who attributed to Christopher Columbus the eclipse which he had foreseen.

Generally speaking when the individual appears to exert a great influence, it is not due to his own forces, since these are extremely small. Forces external to him act in his favour according to laws over which he has no control. His entire power lies in the intelligent apprehension of these laws through observation, his forecast of their effects, and the power of subordinating them to the desired end which he thus obtains, provided he employs them in accordance with their nature. The effect once produced, ignorance of natural laws leads the spectator, and sometimes the actor himself, to attribute to the power of man what is really due only to his foresight.

These general remarks apply to political action in the same way, and for the same reasons, as to physical, chemical, and physiological action. All political action is followed by a real and durable result, when it is exerted in the same direction as the force of civilisation, and aims at producing changes which the latter necessitates. On every other hypothesis it exerts no influence or a merely ephemeral one.

The most fatal case, without doubt, is that in which the legislator, temporal or spiritual, acts, designedly or otherwise, in a retrograde sense, for he then places himself in opposition to that which alone gives him force. But the course of civilisation so entirely regulates political

action, that this is resultless, even if advancing with society, when it endeavours to progress more rapidly than circumstances permit. Experience, indeed, proves that the legislator, however great may be his power, necessarily fails if he undertakes to realise improvements which, though in harmony with the tendencies of civilisation, are too far in advance of its actual condition. Thus, for example, the great attempts of Joseph II. to civilise Austria beyond what its condition permitted, were as completely nullified as the vast efforts of Bonaparte to carry France back to the feudal system; though both personages possessed the largest measure of arbitrary power.

It follows from the above considerations that the true polity, the positive polity should no more seek to govern phenomena than the other sciences do. This ambitious chimera, which characterised their infancy, they have abandoned for the simple task of observing and correlating their phenomena. Political science should do the same. It should exclusively employ itself in coordinating all the special facts relative to the progress of civilisation and in reducing these to the smallest possible number of general facts, the connexion of which ought to manifest the natural law of this progress, leaving for a subsequent appreciation the various causes which can modify its rapidity.

The practical utility of such a political science of observation may now be easily estimated.

A sound political system can never aim at impelling the human race, since this is moved by its proper impulse, in accordance with a law as necessary as, though more easily modified than, that of gravitation. But it does seek to facilitate human progress by enlightening it.

There is a great difference between obeying the progress of civilisation blindly and obeying it intelligently. The changes it demands take place as much in the first as in the second case; but they are longer delayed, and, above all, are only accomplished after having produced social perturbations more or less serious, according to the nature and importance of these changes. Now the disturbances, of every sort, which thus arise in the body politic, may be, in great part, avoided, by adopting measures based on an exact knowledge of the changes which tend to produce themselves.

Such measures consist in so ordering affairs that the anticipated ameliorations may be effected directly, instead of being produced by the sheer force of necessity athwart all the obstacles which ignorance engenders. In other words the essential aim of practical politics is, properly speaking, to avoid the violent revolutions which spring from obstacles opposed to the progress of civilisation; and to reduce these to a simple moral movement, as regular as, though more intense than, that which gently urges society in ordinary periods. Now, in order to attain this end, it is manifestly indispensable that we should know, as precisely as possible, the actual tendency of civilisation so as to bring our political conduct into harmony with it.

It would, doubtless, be chimerical to hope that the movements which, more or less, compromise the ambitious and interested aspirations of entire classes, can be effected with complete calmness. But it is, nevertheless, certain that hitherto far too much importance has been given to this cause in explaining revolutionary convulsions, the violence of which has been, in great part, due to ignorance of the natural laws which regulate the progress of civilisation.

Scientific
Provision
can avert or
mitigate
violent
Revolutions.

It is only too common to attribute to egotism what essentially springs from ignorance, and this mischievous error contributes to maintain irritation between men, in their private and public relations. But, in the present case, is it not evident that those who have placed themselves in opposition to the course of civilisation, would not have adopted this attitude if its antagonistic character had been clearly demonstrated? No one is so foolish as knowingly to place himself in opposition to the nature of things. No one has any satisfaction in exerting an influence of which he clearly discerns the ephemeral nature. In this way the demonstrations of a polity based on observation are capable of acting upon the classes whom prejudice and interest would otherwise engage in a struggle against the course of civilisation.

Doubtless, we should not exaggerate the influence exerted by the intellect over the conduct of men. But, assuredly the force of demonstration is far more important than has hitherto been supposed. The history of the human mind proves that this force alone has often decided changes in effecting which it had to struggle with a combination of the greatest human forces. To cite only the most remarkable example, the power of positive demonstration has alone caused the adoption of the theory of the movement of the earth. Yet this had to overcome, not only the resistance of the theological power, at that period still so powerful, but, above all, the pride of the human race, supported by the most plausible arguments ever advanced in favour of an erroneous idea. Experience of so decisive a kind should enlighten us as to the great power of real demonstrations. The absence of such demonstrations has been the chief reason why statesmen have allowed themselves to be carried away by serious political aberrations. Let demonstrations appear, and the aberrations will soon cease.

Besides, even if we consider the question of interests alone, it is easy to see that a positive polity ought to supply the means of avoiding violent revolutions.

In truth, if the improvements called for by the progress of civilisation have to struggle with some ambitious and interested aims, others of the same kind are favourable to them. Besides, from the very fact that these improvements have reached their maturity, the real forces which favour them are stronger than the opposing forces, though appearances do not always bear out this conclusion. Knowledge of the law of progress enforces resignation, and, still more, guides action. The governing classes, clearly perceiving the end which they are called on to realise, can reach it directly, in place of wasting their forces on tentative and mistaken efforts. They will by anticipation combine measures for overcoming opposition with others calculated to facilitate the acceptance of the new order of things by their opponents. In a word the triumph of civilisation will operate in a manner at once as prompt and as calm as the nature of things will permit.

To resume, the course of civilisation does not, properly speaking, advance in a right line. It is composed of a series of progressive oscillations, more or less ample or slow, on either side of a mean line, which may be compared with that presented by the mechanism of locomotion. But these oscillations may be made shorter and more rapid, by political combinations based on a knowledge of the mean movement which always tends to prevail. Such is the permanent practical utility of this kind of knowledge. It evidently becomes more important in proportion as the changes necessari-

tated by the course of civilisation are themselves more momentous. Its usefulness has accordingly reached its maximum in our day; since the social reorganisation which alone can terminate the existing crisis, is of all the revolutions which the human race ever experienced the most comprehensive.

The Method
of the science
of Positive
Politics.

The fundamental datum and positive starting point of general practical politics consists therefore in a determination of the real tendency of civilisation. By ascertaining this we can harmonise political action with it and render as mild, and as short as possible, the crisis which the human race inevitably undergoes during its successive passages through the different stages of civilisation.

Persons who, though intelligent, are unfamiliar with the method which suits the human mind, and even those who see that a knowledge of the laws which regulate the progress of civilisation can alone furnish a solid and positive basis for political combinations, may suppose that this historic investigation need not be pushed back to the origin of civilised society, but that it will suffice to consider its present condition. Such a view is natural, having regard to the narrow way in which politics are now regarded. But its delusive character is easily shown.

Experience has proved that, so long as the human mind advances in a positive direction, there are many advantages and no inconveniences in rising to the highest degree of generality, because it is far easier to descend than to ascend the scale. In the infancy of positive Physiology it was supposed that the human organisation could be understood by studying man alone; an error completely analogous to that now under discussion. It has been since recognised that the formation of clear and large conceptions of the human organisation requires us to consider man as forming the limit of the animal series; and even, in a still more general point of view, as forming part of the system of organised bodies. Physiology has only received its definitive constitution since the comparison of the different classes of living beings has been carried out on a large scale, and systematically employed in the study of man.

In Politics the various states of civilisation correspond to the different organisations in Physiology. But, the reasons which compel us to consider all the epochs of civilisation are still more imperative than those which have induced physiologists to institute a comparison of all organisations.

Doubtless a study of the present condition of civilisation, considered apart, and independently of the states which have preceded it, may furnish very useful materials for the formation of positive polity, provided the facts are observed in a philosophical spirit. Nay it is certain that, by studies of this kind, true Statesmen have hitherto been enabled to modify the conjectural doctrines which guided their efforts, so as to render these less discordant with the real wants of society. But it is not the less evident that such a study is totally inadequate to form a true positive polity. It can furnish nothing but materials. In a word, the observation of the present state of civilisation, considered by itself, can no more determine the actual tendencies of society, than the study of any other isolated epoch can do.

The reason for this is, that the existence of a law cannot be established by a single term. Three terms, at least, are needed, in order that the connexion ascertained by comparing the two first, and verified by the

third, may serve to reveal the following ones. Such prevision is the practical object of every law.

When, in tracing an institution and a social idea, or a system of institutions and a complete doctrine, from their birth to their present stage, we find that, from a given epoch, their influence has always been either diminishing or increasing, we can foretell with complete certainty the destiny which awaits them. In the first case, it is proved that their tendency is at variance with that of civilisation, and hence their final disappearance may be predicted. In the second case, on the contrary, we may conclude that they will ultimately predominate. The period of their fall or triumph may even be calculated, within narrow limits, from the extent and rapidity of the variations observed. Manifestly therefore such a study is a fruitful source of positive knowledge.

But what can we learn from the observation of a single State where we must embrace, at one view, doctrines, institutions, and classes, both growing and declining, without reckoning the ephemeral action which only depends on the routine of the moment? What human sagacity could avoid confounding these opposed and heterogeneous elements? How could we discover the realities which make so little noise amid the phantoms which hurry over the stage. It is clear that, amid such confusion the observer could only advance if guided by a knowledge of the past, for this alone can teach him to direct his view so as to see things as they really exist.

The chronological order of historic epochs is not their philosophical order. In place of saying: the past, the present, and the future, we should say the past, the future, and the present. In truth it is only when we have conceived the future by the aid of the past that we can with advantage revert to the present so as to seize its true character.

These considerations, though applicable to every epoch, are so, in a still higher degree, to the present. In our day three different Systems coexist in the heart of society: the theologico-feudal system, the scientific-industrial system, and lastly the mongrel and transitional system of metaphysicians, and lawyers. In the midst of such confusion it is entirely beyond the grasp of the human mind to make a clear and exact analysis, or to frame real and precise statistics of the body politic, unless it be enlightened by the past. It is demonstrable that sound intellects, which if better guided would have risen to a truly positive polity, have continued in a metaphysical state because they considered the present condition of affairs apart from their antecedents, and even because they did not go back far enough in the series of observations.

We therefore are bound to study, as profoundly and completely as possible, all the states through which civilisation has passed, from its origin to the present time. We must consider their coordination and connexion and how they can be combined under general heads capable of furnishing principles; making manifest the natural laws of the development of civilisation, and exhibiting the philosophic picture of the social future as deduced from the past, in other words determining the general plan of reorganisation destined for the present epoch. Lastly we need the application of these results to the present state of things so as to determine the direction which ought to be impressed on political action with a view to facilitate the definitive transition to the new social state. Such are the operations essential

Conflict of
Social Sys-
tems.

for giving to political theory a positive basis adequate to the best and urgent needs of society.

The above constitutes the first series of theoretic problems, for the solution of which I venture to invoke the combined forces of European savants.

The considerations above set forth having sufficiently indicated the spirit of Positive polity, its comparison with Theological and Metaphysical polity may be rendered more precise.

Comparing them in the first place, under the most important point of view, in reference to the actual wants of society, the superiority of positive polity is easily explained. Its superiority consists in the fact that the positive system *discovers*, whereas other systems *invent*. Theological and metaphysical polity devise plans for regulating the present state of civilisation which accord with the absolute conditions assumed to be the highest good. Positive polity proposes measures based on observation; simply as being those which the course of civilisation tends to produce. This difference in method renders it equally impossible for the polity of imagination to discover, or for the polity of observation to miss the true social reorganisation. The one makes the greatest efforts to invent a remedy without considering the malady. The other, persuaded that the principal source of recovery is the vital force of the patient, confines itself to ascertaining, from observation, the natural issue of the crisis, in order to facilitate it by eliminating the obstacles that spring from empiricism.

In the second place, a scientific polity can alone furnish men with a theory about which it is possible to agree, and this is a matter of the first importance.

Theological and metaphysical polity, aiming at the best possible government, lead to interminable discussions, since such a problem cannot be reduced to certainty. The political *régime* should be, and of necessity is, in harmony with the state of civilisation. The best for each epoch is that which suits it best. Therefore there is not and cannot be any political *régime* absolutely preferable to all others; there are merely some states of civilisation more perfect than others. Institutions good at one period may be and most frequently are bad at another and *vice versa*. Thus, for example, Slavery which is now a monstrosity, was certainly at its origin an admirable institution, designed to prevent the strong from destroying the weak, constituting an unavoidable transition in the general development of civilisation. In like manner, conversely, Liberty which, to a reasonable extent, becomes so useful to individuals and nations that have reached a certain stage of knowledge, and contracted some habits of foresight, by permitting the development of their faculties, is very mischievous to those who have not yet fulfilled these two conditions; and who require for the sake of themselves, as well as of others, to be kept in tutelage. It is therefore evident that there can be no common understanding as to what forms the absolutely best possible government. To reestablish harmony no other expedient is admissible but that of entirely proscribing any discussion of the plan laid down. This is the course which the theological polity has adopted; more consistent in this respect than metaphysical polity, since its actual persistence proves that it fulfilled the conditions of existence. We know that metaphysics by giving unrestrained scope to the imagination has induced a doubt and even a formal denial of the utility of the social state for the happiness of man, a conclusion which strikingly illustrates the impossibility of agreement upon such questions.

The practical aim of scientific politics being, on the contrary, to ascertain the system which the march of civilisation, indicated by the past, now tends to bring about, the problem is altogether positive and can be decided by observation. The freest investigation can and should be accorded, without any fear of its leading to disorder. After the lapse of a certain time competent minds, and finally all men, must agree as to the natural laws which govern the progress of civilisation, and the resultant system, whatever may originally have been their speculative opinions; just as men have ended in a common understanding about the laws of the solar system, those of the human organisation, &c.

Finally positive politics furnish the only road by which the human race can find an issue from arbitrary courses, under the dominion of which it must remain so long as the theological and metaphysical polity predominate.

The absolute, in theory, of necessity leads to the arbitrary, in practice. So long as the human race is considered to contain no spontaneous principle of movement, but to owe its impulse to the legislator, so long, in spite of the most eloquent declamations, must the arbitrary subsist in the highest degree and affect the most essential aspects of life. The nature of things imposes this necessity. The human race being thus abandoned to the discretion of the legislator, who decides on the best possible form of government, arbitrary power may be limited as to details, but manifestly can never be excluded from the *ensemble*. Whether the supreme legislative office be in the hands of one or of many, whether it be hereditary or elective, makes no difference in this respect. Even if the entire body politic became the legislator, supposing this were possible, the result would be the same; with this difference only, that arbitrary power being then exerted by society on itself, the inconveniences would become greater than ever.

On the contrary scientific polity wholly excludes the arbitrary, because it banishes those absolute and vague conceptions which gave birth to and maintain this. Under such a *régime* the human race is regarded as subject to a natural law of development which can be ascertained by observation, and which prescribes for each epoch, in the most unequivocal manner, the political course it is possible to pursue. The arbitrary then, of necessity, ceases. Government by measures replaces government by men. Then arises in politics a true law, understood in the real and philosophic sense which the illustrious Montesquieu attached to that phrase. Whatever may be the form of government as to its details, in substance, at least, the arbitrary cannot then appear. In politics all is settled by a truly supreme Law, recognised as superior to human forces; since it ultimately flows from the nature of our organisation, over which it can exert no influence. In a word, this law excludes with equal efficacy, the arbitrary of theology, or the Divine Right of Kings, and the arbitrary of metaphysics, or the Sovereignty of the People.

If some should regard the supreme dominion of such a law, merely as another form of the arbitrary, as it now exists, they should in consistency also complain of the inflexible despotism exercised over the whole of nature by the law of gravitation, as well as of the despotism,—no less real, and more analogous as being more susceptible of modification,—exercised by the laws of the human organisation, of which the course of civilisation is merely the result.

The preceding remarks naturally lead us to mark out with precision the

Positive Polity must be based on Observation but propagated by the aid of Imagination.

respective domains of observation and imagination in politics. This investigation will complete our sketch of the general spirit of the new politics.

In truth it is necessary to distinguish between two sorts of operations. The first, constituting properly speaking political science, aims at forming a system suitable to the present period, the second concerns its propagation.

In the first class of operations, it is clear that the imagination ought only to play a subordinate part, remaining at all times under the guidance of the observing powers, as in the other sciences. The study of the past, can and should be employed to assist the discovery of means for provisionally coordinating facts, until their definitive relations can be deduced from the facts themselves, the point always to be kept in view. Even this use of the imagination should only embrace secondary facts, any other being manifestly erroneous. In the second place the determination of the system according to which society is, in our day, destined to effect its own reorganisation should be almost wholly inferred from observation of the past. Its study will determine not only the *ensemble* of the system but its most important portions, with a precision which will probably astonish the savants when they commence the work. It is, nevertheless, certain, that the degree of precision obtainable by this method, cannot reach the point at which the system could be confided to the leaders of industry for actual use by them in practical combinations as indicated in the preceding chapter. Accordingly under this latter aspect also, imagination should play a secondary part in scientific politics. This will consist in conferring the necessary degree of precision on the outlines of the new system, the general plan and the characteristic features of which have been determined by observation.

There is however another sort of operations, equally indispensable for the definitive success of the grand enterprise of social reorganisation, though subordinate to the preceding, where the imagination finds full scope for its exercise.

In ascertaining what is to be the new system, it is necessary to put aside its advantages or inconveniences. The principal, indeed the only question should be: what is that Social System indicated by observation of the past, which the progress of civilisation must establish. To occupy our thoughts about the excellence of that system, would be to confuse everything and even to miss our goal. We should confine ourselves to the simple conception that, inasmuch as the positive idea of goodness and that of harmony with the state of civilisation are identical, we are certain to obtain the best system now attainable, if we discover that which is most in harmony with the present state of civilisation. The idea of goodness having as a positive conception no separate existence, and becoming positive only when connected with the state of civilisation, we should apply ourselves to the latter as constituting the direct object of our researches, and alone capable of rendering politics positive. To point out the advantages of the new system and its superiority over the antecedent states should be regarded as merely secondary and not allowed to exercise any influence in guiding our labours.

It is incontrovertible that by proceeding in this way, we shall found a polity truly positive, and in harmony with the grand wants of society. The new system should be thus ascertained; but it is clear that to ensure its definitive adoption by society, it ought not to be presented under a shape which is very far from being the fittest to determine a social adhesion.

In order to establish a new Social System, just conceptions will not suffice. It is necessary that the mass of society should feel attracted by it. This condition is not merely indispensable to overcome the obstacles, more or less serious, which this system must encounter among the classes who are losing their ascendancy. It is needed above all for the satisfaction of the moral craving for enthusiasm inherent in man when he enters upon a new career. Without such enthusiasm he could neither overcome his natural inertness nor shake off the powerful yoke of ancient habits; without which it is impossible to secure the free and full development of all his faculties in their new occupation. Since this necessity always manifests itself even in the least complicated cases, its absence would involve a contradiction in the most complete and important changes, in those which must most deeply modify human existence. Accordingly all history testifies in favor of this truth.

It is therefore clear that the right mode of conceiving and presenting the new system under a scientific polity is not at all fitted to fulfil this indispensable condition.

The mass of mankind will never be inspired with a passion for any system, by proving to them that it is one which the progress of civilisation has prepared and now demands for the guidance of society. A truth of this nature is accessible to a very limited circle and for them even demands too long a series of mental operations, to allow of its inspiring an attachment. It can only produce among savants that profound and tenacious conviction, the necessary result of positive demonstrations, which offers a stronger resistance, but, for that very reason, is less active than the lively and captivating persuasion of ideas that excite the passions.

The only way of obtaining this result consists in presenting a vivid picture of the ameliorations which the new system should bring about in the condition of mankind, regarded under all points of view, and apart from its necessity and opportunity. Such a perspective alone, can induce men to effect the moral revolution within themselves, essential for establishing the new system. This alone can repress that egotism, now rendered predominant by the dissolution of the ancient system, and which, after our ideas have been enlightened by scientific labors, will remain as the only serious obstacle to the triumph of the new social organisation. This alone can draw society from its apathy, and impress on it that active devotedness which is demanded by a social state destined to maintain all the human faculties in constant action.

Here then we find a sort of work in which the Imagination should perform the principal part. Its activity can produce no bad effect, since this will be exerted in the direction pointed out by scientific labors; and it will aim, not at inventing a new system, but at spreading one which has been determined by positive polity. Thus set in motion the imagination ought to be entirely left to itself. The more open and free its attitude, the more complete and salutary will be its indispensable activity.

Such is the part specially reserved for the Fine Arts in the general work of social reorganisation. Thus this vast enterprise will obtain the cooperation of all the positive forces; that of the savants to determine the plan of the new system; that of the artists to cause its universal adoption, that of the industrial chiefs to put it into immediate execution by establishing the needful practical institutions. These three great forces will lend

each other a mutual support in founding the new system, as they will do to ensure its daily application, when established.

In determining, then, the social system suitable to the present epoch the positive polity invests observation with the supremacy now accorded to imagination. At the same time it confides to the imagination a new and more perfect office than that which the theologico-metaphysical polity assigned to it; for since the human race has advanced near the positive state the imaginative faculty, though supreme, has revolved in a circle of obsolete ideas and monotonous pictures.

Review of
the chief
efforts to
found Posi-
tive Polity.

Having sketched the general nature of positive polity it is useful to cast a rapid glance over the chief attempts heretofore made to raise politics to the rank of the sciences of observation. We shall thus gain a twofold advantage; that of demonstrating the opportunity of such an undertaking, and of throwing light upon the spirit of the new polity by exhibiting it under several points of view differing from those already indicated.

Montesquieu

Montesquieu must have the credit of the earliest direct attempt to treat politics as a science of facts and not of dogmas. Such evidently is the true aim of the *Spirit of Laws* (*l'Esprit des Loix*), as all who understand this work will concede. The admirable Introduction where the general conception of *law* is presented would alone suffice to establish this aim. It is clear that Montesquieu mainly aimed at ranging, as far as possible, under a certain number of heads all the political facts known to him and at exhibiting the laws of their connexion.

Were it our task to appreciate such a work, its merits should be judged relatively to the period of its execution. We would then perceive that the *Spirit of Laws* decisively establishes the philosophic superiority of Montesquieu over his cotemporaries. To have emancipated himself from the negative spirit at the time when it exerted the most despotic power even over the greatest intellects; to have profoundly felt the worthlessness of a metaphysical and absolute polity; to have appreciated the necessity for departing from it at the very time when, in the hands of Rousseau, it was assuming its definitive form; these are decisive proofs of Montesquieu's mental superiority.

But in spite of the supreme ability evinced by Montesquieu, as will be, more and more, acknowledged, his labors are far from having raised politics to the rank of a positive science. They have not in the least, satisfied the fundamental and indispensable requisites for attaining this object as above stated.

Montesquieu did not perceive that great fact which regulates all political phenomena, the natural development of civilisation. Hence it follows that his researches can only be employed as materials, as a collection of observations and hints towards the creation of the positive system of politics. For the general views which he employed to connect the facts are not positive.

Notwithstanding the manifest efforts of Montesquieu to disentangle himself from metaphysics he did not succeed in doing so. From metaphysical considerations he undoubtedly deduced his principal conception. This conception has a double fault. Instead of being historical it is dogmatic; in other words it does not sufficiently regard the necessary succession of the different political states. In the second place it attributes an exaggerated importance to a fact, which is altogether secondary,—the form of government. Accordingly the preponderating influence which

Montesquieu has given to this idea is purely imaginary, and contradicts the best established facts. In a word the political facts have not really been *coordinated* as they should be in every positive science. They have merely been *grouped* under hypothetical ideas, contrary, for the most part, to their true relations.

The only important portion of the theoretical works of Montesquieu possessing a truly positive character, is that which concerns the political influence of outward and local circumstances, acting continuously, designated by the term Climate. But it is easy to see that, even in this respect, in consequence of the general error of his method, the ideas put forward by Montesquieu can only be employed when they shall have been entirely recast.

In truth it is now clearly recognised by all observers that Montesquieu has in several respects greatly exaggerated the influence of climate. Such exaggeration was unavoidable.

No doubt climate exerts over political phenomena a real action which it is very important to understand. But such action is only indirect and secondary. It is confined to accelerating or retarding in a certain measure the natural progress of civilisation; but this cannot in itself be affected by these modifications. In truth this progress is identical, in all climates, except as regards its rapidity; because it springs from more general laws, those of the human organisation, essentially the same for all localities. Since then the influence of climate over political phenomena merely modifies the natural course of civilisation, which maintains its predominance, this influence cannot be studied with advantage and properly estimated until the fundamental law has been ascertained. If the indirect and subordinate cause were studied before the direct and principal cause, such a violation of the laws of the human mind would unavoidably give an entirely false idea of the influence of the former and lead to its being confounded with that of the latter. This is what happened in the case of Montesquieu.

The foregoing reflexions on the influence of climate manifestly apply to all other causes which, without essentially altering the course of civilisation, can modify its rate of advance. This influence can only be determined with precision when the natural laws of civilisation shall have been established, by eliminating all such modifications. Astronomers in commencing their study of the laws of the planetary movements omitted all consideration of the perturbations. After these laws had been discovered, the modifications could be determined and finally even reduced to the general law which had only been established with reference to the principal movement. If the attempt had been made, in the beginning, to account for the irregularities, it is plain that no precise theory could ever have been constructed. The case is exactly the same as regards the subject in hand.

The inadequacy of the political system of Montesquieu can be clearly verified in its applications to the wants of society.

The necessity for a social reorganisation in the most advanced countries existed as truly in the time of Montesquieu as it does now. For the bases of the feudo-theological system had already been destroyed. Subsequent events, by completing the destruction of the ancient system, have only rendered this necessity more evident and more urgent. Montesquieu, however, did not propose the creation of a new social system as the

practical aim of his labors. Since he had not coordinated the political facts by a theory fitted to render evident the necessity for a revolution at the stage which society had then reached, and at the same time to exhibit the general character of the new system, he could, as in fact he did, only confine himself to indicating improvements in detail suggested by experience, which simply constituted modifications, more or less important, of the feudo-theological system.

Montesquieu no doubt showed a wise moderation, in confining his practical suggestions within the limits which the facts as imperfectly studied by him imposed, when, on the other hand, he could so easily have invented utopias. At the same time, he clearly evinced the inadequacy of a theory which was unfitted to meet the most essential demands of practical life.

To resume, then, Montesquieu felt the necessity of treating politics by the same method as the sciences of observation; but he did not form any conception of the general operation needed to effect this purpose. His researches, nevertheless, were of the utmost importance. They facilitated the intellectual combination of political ideas, since they presented a mass of facts coordinated by a theory which, though far removed from the positive state, approached it much more nearly than all anterior efforts.

Condorcet.

Condorcet it was who grasped the general conception of the operation fitted to raise politics to the rank of the sciences of observation. He first saw clearly that civilisation is subject to a progressive course, every step of which is strictly connected with the rest by virtue of natural laws; discoverable through philosophic observation of the past, and which determine, in a positive manner for each epoch, the improvements adapted to the social state as a whole, and to each portion of it. Not only did Condorcet thus conceive the method of impressing on politics a truly positive character, but he endeavoured to demonstrate the theory in the work entitled 'Sketch of an historical view of the progress of the human mind;' of which the title and introduction alone should suffice to secure for its author the eternal honour of having created this great philosophic conception.

If this capital discovery has hitherto remained wholly barren, has, as yet, made hardly any sensation; if no one has pursued the track pointed out by Condorcet; if, in a word, politics have not become positive, we must attribute this, in great part, to the fact that the sketch which Condorcet traced was executed in a way quite at variance with the scope of his undertaking. He completely misconceived its most essential conditions, so much so that the work needs to be entirely recast. It is necessary to prove this.

In the first place the Distribution of Epochs constitutes the most important portion of the plan in a work of this nature, or, to speak more correctly, it alone constitutes the plan considered in its greatest generality; since it determines the principal mode of coordinating the facts observed. Now the method of distributing the facts which Condorcet adopted is absolutely erroneous since it does not fulfil even the most obvious condition, that of presenting a homogeneous series. We see that Condorcet by no means felt the importance of a philosophic distribution of the epochs of civilisation. He did not perceive that this distribution should itself be the object of a preliminary operation, the most difficult of those which the formation of positive politics demands. He imagined that he could ade-

quately coordinate facts by assuming, almost arbitrarily, for the commencement of each epoch some remarkable event, now industrial, now scientific, now political. By adopting this plan, he remained within the circle of literary historians. It was impossible for him to form a true theory, that is to say, to establish a real connection between the facts, since those intended to connect all the rest were disconnected from each other.

To the Naturalists, as being of all savants those who are obliged to form the most extended and difficult classifications, are due the chief advances in the general method of classifying. The fundamental principle of this method has been established from the time that botany and zoology produced philosophical classifications, that is to say, classifications based on real relations, and not on hypothetical groupings. The true principle consists in making the order of generality of the different degrees of division conform, as far as possible, to that of the relations observed between the phenomena to be classed. In this view the hierarchy of families, of genera, &c. is nothing but the statement of a coordinated series of general facts, divided into different ranks more and more specialised. In a word Classification then becomes merely the philosophic expression of Science, the progress of which it follows. To know the classification is to know the science, at least in its more important portion.

This principle is applicable to every science. Accordingly Political Science, seeking to attain a solid basis, should profit by this philosophical conception as disclosed, employed, and verified by the other sciences, and take it as a guide in distributing the different ages of civilisation. The grounds for arranging the various epochs of civilisation in reference to the general history of the human race according to their natural relations, exactly resemble those which naturalists employ in arranging the vegetable and animal organisations under one law. In political science, however, they are still more urgent.

For, if an appropriate coordination of facts is of the first importance in every science, it is all in all for political science, which if this condition were unfulfilled would entirely fail in its practical aim. This aim is, as we know, that of determining by the observation of the past the Social System which the progress of civilisation tends to realise in our day. Now this determination can only result from a correct coordination of the anterior states, which govern the law of this progress. It is clear from this view, that political facts, however important they may be, possess no practical value unless coordinated, while in the other sciences the knowledge of facts independently of their mutual relations has, for the most part, a certain utility.

The different epochs of civilisation, then, in place of being distributed, as Condorcet did, without regard to their natural order and merely in reference to events of greater or less importance, ought to be disposed in accordance with the philosophic principle already recognised by savants as that which should govern all classifications. The principal division of epochs should offer the most general view of the history of civilisation. The secondary divisions, to whatever degree it may be deemed advisable to carry them, should offer in succession views more and more special of this same history. In a word the tabular Arrangement of Epochs should be of such a nature as to present, in itself, an abridged expression of the *ensemble* of the work. The work if it fell short of this would only be provisional, and however well executed would have no value except as a collection of materials.

Condorcet's
Classification
of
Epochs er-
roneous.

It is evident that such a division of epochs cannot be invented, and that, even in its most general aspect, it can only spring from a first sketch of the synoptic view, a first *coup d'œil* over the general history of civilisation. Doubtless, however important, and even indispensable, this method may be, in the formation of positive polity, its application would be impracticable and a provisional work only could be accomplished, if this operation were not already sufficiently prepared. But the histories heretofore written, and particularly those produced within the last half century, although very far from having been conceived in a right spirit, furnish a tolerable equivalent for the preliminary collection of materials. We can therefore immediately undertake the task of a definitive coordination.

Law of the
Three
States.

In the preceding chapter I have submitted, though under the spiritual aspect only, a general view which, as it seems to me, fulfils the conditions above stated for effecting the primary coordination of the past. It constitutes the first result of a philosophic study of the *ensemble* of the history of civilisation.

I believe that this history may be divided into three grand epochs, or states of civilisation, each possessing a distinct character, spiritual and temporal. They embrace civilisation at once in its elements and its *ensemble*; which, as above pointed out, evidently constitutes an indispensable condition of success.

Of these the first is the Theological and Military epoch.

In this state of society, all theoretical conceptions, whether general or special, bear a supernatural impress. The imagination completely predominates over the observing faculty to which all right of inquiry is denied.

In like manner, all the social relations, whether special or general, are avowedly and exclusively military. Society makes conquest its one permanent aim. Industrial pursuits are carried on only so far as is necessary for the support of the human race. Slavery, pure and simple, of the producers is the principal institution.

Such is the first great social system produced by the material progress of civilisation. It existed in an elementary shape from the very commencement of regular and permanent societies. In its entirety it becomes completely established only after a long series of generations.

The second epoch is Metaphysical and Juridical. Its general character is that of possessing no well-defined characteristics. It forms a link and is mongrel and transitional.

Under spiritual aspects it has been already characterised in the preceding chapter. Observation is still kept subordinate to imagination, but the former is, within certain limits, allowed to modify the latter. These limits are gradually enlarged, until, in the end, observation conquers the right of examining in every direction. At first it obtains this right in reference to all special theoretical conceptions, and gradually, by force of exercise, as to general theoretic ideas, which constitutes the natural termination of the transition. This period is one of criticism and argument.

Under temporal aspects industry in this second epoch becomes more extended, without as yet acquiring the upper hand. Consequently society is no longer frankly military and yet has not become frankly industrial, either in its elements or in its *ensemble*. The special social relations are modified. Industrial slavery is no longer direct; the producer, still a slave, begins to obtain some rights in his relations with the military. Industry makes fresh advances which finally issue in the total abolition of individual

slavery. After this enfranchisement, the producers still remain subject to a collective arbitrary authority. Nevertheless, the general social relations soon undergo a modification. The two aims of activity, conquest and production, advance *pari passu*. Industry is at first favoured and protected as a military resource. Later its importance augments; and finally war is regarded and systematically pursued as a means of favouring industry: which is the last term of the intermediate *régime*.

Lastly, the third epoch is that of Science and Industry. All special theoretic conceptions have become positive and the general conceptions tend to become so. As regard the former observation predominates over imagination; while in reference to the latter observation has dethroned the imagination, without having as yet taken its place.

Under temporal aspects industry has become predominant. All the special relations have gradually established themselves upon industrial bases. Society, taken collectively, tends to organise itself in the same manner, by making production its only and constant aim.

To resume, the last epoch has ended as regards the elements and is commencing as regards the *ensemble*. Its direct point of departure dates from the introduction of the Positive Sciences into Europe by the Arabs, and the enfranchisement of the Commons, that is to say, from about the eleventh century.

In order to prevent all confusion in applying this general view, we should never lose sight of the fact that civilisation necessarily progressed in reference to the spiritual and temporal *elements* of the social state, before advancing in regard to their *ensemble*. Consequently the three great and successive phases were inevitably inaugurated as to their elements before they commenced as to the *ensemble*, a circumstance which might occasion some confusion if we did not make a large allowance for this unavoidable difference.

Such then are the principal characteristics of the three epochs into which we can divide the entire history of civilisation, from the period when the social state began to acquire real solidity until the present time. I venture to submit to savants this primary division of the past; which appears to me to fulfil the essential conditions of a good classification of the *ensemble* of political facts.

If this be adopted we must discover at least one sub-division, in order to execute a first sketch of the great historic view. The principal division will facilitate the discovery of those which succeed it, by supplying the means of considering the phenomena from a point of view at once general and positive. It is clear also that, in conformity with the fundamental principle of classification, these different subdivisions should be conceived in the same spirit as the principal division, and constitute simply a development of it.

Having thus appreciated the work of Condorcet as regards the distribution of epochs, we must consider the spirit which presided over its execution.

Condorcet did not perceive that the first direct effort of a work which aimed at the formation of a positive polity should be to destroy for ever the critical philosophy of the eighteenth century, by turning the efforts of thinkers towards the reorganisation of society, as the practical aim of their labours. Consequently, he did not feel that the preliminary condition, the fulfilment of which was indispensable for executing the important enter-

prise, consisted in divesting himself, as much as possible, of the prejudices introduced into all minds by this negative philosophy. Far from doing so he allowed himself to be blindly governed by these prejudices. In place of observing, he condemned the past. Hence his work simply became a long fatiguing declamation, from which no positive instruction can be derived.

Admiration and reprobation of phenomena ought to be banished with equal severity from every positive science, because all pre-occupations of this sort directly and unavoidably tend to hinder or mislead examination. Astronomers, physicists, chemists, and physiologists neither admire nor blame their respective phenomena. They observe them, although these phenomena may afford ample subject for reflections of each sort; of which numerous examples may be cited. Savants, with reason, leave such considerations to artists within whose sphere they really fall.

It should be the same in this respect in political science as in the other sciences. Such exclusion of admiration or reprobation is, however, much more needed for the former, because there it becomes more difficult, and affects the investigation more deeply, inasmuch as, in this science, the phenomena are much more closely connected with the passions than in any other. Thus, the Critical Spirit to which Condorcet yielded is directly contrary to that which ought to reign in scientific politics, even though all the criticisms it makes on the past were well founded. But the mischief does not stop here.

Doubtless, as has been already remarked in this chapter, the practical combinations of statesmen have not always been conceived in a suitable way; and frequently they have even been guided in a sense adverse to civilisation. This observation, however, merely amounts to this, that statesmen have endeavoured to continue, beyond their natural existence, doctrines and institutions no longer in harmony with the state of civilisation. Assuredly such a mistake will appear very excusable; if we consider that hitherto no positive mode has existed of discovering that it was an error. But to apply to systems of ideas and institutions a view applicable only to facts of secondary importance; to represent, for example, as simply an obstacle to civilisation, that feudo-theological system which constituted, on the contrary, the most marked provisional progress of society, and enabled it to affect so many definitive conquests; to hold up the classes who during a long succession of ages, led the general movement of society as engaged in a permanent conspiracy against mankind; such a spirit, equally absurd in its principles and revolting in its consequences, is, I say, the irrational result of the philosophy of the last century, and it is deplorable that a man like Condorcet should have been unable to withdraw himself from its influence.

This absurdity, springing from the inability to comprehend the natural connection between the advancing steps of civilisation, manifestly makes it impossible to explain them. Accordingly the work of Condorcet, generally speaking, is in constant contradiction with itself.

On one hand it proclaims the state of civilisation reached in the Eighteenth Century as being in very many respects far superior to its original condition. But the total progress could only be the sum of the partial advances effected by civilisation during all the preceding states. Condorcet, however, almost always, represents these as having been, from the most essential points of view, periods of retrogradation. We are thus

landed in a perpetual miracle, and the progressive march of civilisation becomes an effect without a cause.

In a truly Positive Polity an entirely opposite spirit should prevail.

We should regard institutions and doctrines as having reached, at every period, the greatest perfection compatible with the corresponding civilisation, and this must have been the case, at least after a certain time, since they were necessarily determined by it. Moreover during their greatest vigour, they always manifested a progressive and never a retrograde character. Otherwise they never could have held their ground against the march of civilisation whence their power was derived. Only in the period of their decline they usually exhibited a stationary character, a fact easily explicable, partly by the repugnance to extinction, as natural to political systems as it is to individuals, partly by the state of infancy in which politics have hitherto continued.

We must consider in the same spirit the passions developed at the various epochs by the governing classes. During their greatest vigour the social forces are necessarily generous, for they have nothing more to gain and they have not yet learnt to fear. It is only when their decline commences that they become egotistic, because all their efforts are then directed to preserving a power the foundation of which is sapped.

These views are in evident conformity with the laws of human nature, and alone furnish a satisfactory explanation of political phenomena. In a final analysis, then, instead of regarding the past as a tissue of monstrosities, we should, generally speaking, consider society as having been, on the whole, guided with all the wisdom which the situation allowed.

If, at first sight, some special facts appear to contradict this general fact, it is always more philosophical to endeavour to discover the cause of the seeming deviation than at once to allege the existence of a contradiction. For it would be a departure from established scientific method to subordinate the most important and best established fact to one of secondary nature and less frequent occurrence.

It is evident indeed that this, like every other general idea, should not be used without proper limitations.

Doubtless some resemblance is discoverable between the spirit of positive polity thus regarded, and the famous theologico-metaphysical dogma of Optimism. The analogy is, in truth, real. But there exists an immeasurable difference between a general observed fact and an hypothetical creation of the imagination. The difference becomes still greater when we take the consequences into account.

The theologico-metaphysical dogma by proclaiming as an absolute truth, that everything is as well ordered as possible, tends to make the human race stationary, since it takes away all prospect of real improvement. The positive conception that the social organisation for a certain period during each epoch is as perfect as the state of civilisation permits, by no means checks the spirit of improvement. On the contrary this view imparts in practice a more efficacious impulse, since it directs to their true end,—the perfecting of civilisation,—efforts which would have remained abortive had they been directly applied to social organisation. Besides, such a conception, being neither absolute nor mystical, incites man to reestablish harmony between the political *régime* and the state of civilisation, in cases where that relation has been temporarily deranged. But it throws light on the operation, by warning us not to mistake the effect for the cause.

In reference to this analogy it is useful to observe that, in other matters also, the positive philosophy can by a suitable transformation, appropriate a general idea originated by the theologico-metaphysical philosophy. True general ideas, however erroneous may be the form they assume, never lose their value as methods of reasoning. The ordinary progress of the human mind consists in adapting them to its different states by transforming their character. We can verify this in all the revolutions which have conducted the different branches of knowledge to the positive state.

Thus, for example, the mystic doctrine of the Influence of Numbers, originated by the School of Pythagoras, has been reduced by geometers to this simpler and positive idea: phenomena which do not offer much complication can be reduced to mathematical laws. In like manner the doctrine of Final Causes has been transformed by physiologists into the principle of conditions of existence. The two positive ideas, doubtless, differ widely from the two theologico-metaphysical ideas. But the latter, no less manifestly, contain the germ of the former. A well conceived philosophical operation sufficed to impart a positive character to these two hypotheses, the products of genius in the infancy of the human race. Moreover this transformation, far from impairing, has augmented their value as means of reasoning.

The same reflections are exactly applicable to the two general political ideas, one positive the other fictitious, above compared.

Before terminating our examination of the work of Condorcet, it is well to deduce from it a third point of view under which we may consider the spirit of positive polity.

Condorcet has frequently been reproached with having ventured to terminate his work with a picture of the Future. This bold conception is, on the contrary, the only philosophical view of great importance introduced by Condorcet into his work, and one that ought to be carefully preserved in the new history of civilisation, of which such a picture evidently constitutes the natural conclusion.

The reproach which may with reason be addressed to Condorcet is not that of having endeavoured to determine the future, but of having determined it erroneously. This arose from his mode of conceiving the past, which, for the reasons already stated, was completely erroneous. Condorcet, having coordinated the past in a mistaken way, the future could not be deduced from it. This inadequacy of observation obliged him to frame the future in accordance with his imagination, and as a necessary consequence of this he conceived it wrongly. But this want of success, the cause of which is obvious, does not prove that, supposing the past to be rightly coordinated, we cannot determine, with certainty, the general characteristics of the social future.

Such an idea only seems strange because we are not yet accustomed to regard politics as a true science. For, thus regarded, the determination of the future through the philosophic observation of the past, would, on the contrary, strike us as perfectly natural, being familiarised to us by other kinds of phenomena:

All sciences aim at prevision. For the laws established by the observation of phenomena are generally employed to foretell their succession. In truth all men, however little advanced, make predictions, based on the same principle, the forecast of the future from the past. All men, for example, predict the general effects of terrestrial gravity, and a multitude of other phenomena sufficiently simple and usual to reveal their order of succession

to the least capable and attentive spectator. The power of prevision is measured in each person by the extent of his knowledge. The prevision of the astronomer who predicts, with complete accuracy, the condition of the solar system many years in advance, is absolutely the same in kind as that of the savage who predicts the next sunrise. The only difference lies in the extent of their knowledge.

Manifestly then, it is quite in accordance with the nature of the human mind that observation of the past should reveal the future in politics as it has done in astronomy, physics, chemistry, and physiology.

Such a determination of the future should even be regarded as the direct object of political science, as of the other positive sciences. It is clear, in truth, that the ascertainment of the Social System in which the *élite* of the human race are in our day called on to take part, constitutes the true practical object of positive politics, and is nothing but a general determination of the future of society regarded as the result of the past.

To resume, Condorcet was the first to conceive the true nature of the general operation required for raising politics to the rank of the sciences of observation; but his execution of this conception was, under the most essential aspects, completely erroneous. The end was entirely missed; first in theory and consequently in practice. Thus this operation must be once more undertaken as a whole, in accordance with a truly philosophical method; Condorcet's attempt being considered merely as an indication of the real end of scientific politics.

In order to complete this brief examination of the efforts hitherto made to raise politics to the rank of the positive sciences, it remains for us to consider two other attempts. These, unlike the two former, do not fall within the true course of intellectual progress in political science; nevertheless, it is useful to mention them.

The necessity for rendering Social Science positive is so evident in our day; this great enterprise has so completely arrived at maturity; that several superior minds have endeavoured to achieve it by treating politics as an application of other sciences, already rendered positive, by bringing it within their sphere. As these attempts, from their nature, could not be realised, they were much oftener projected than followed out. It will therefore be sufficient to consider them from the most general point of view.

The first consisted in the attempt to treat social science by Mathematical Analysis, and in especial by the Calculus of Probabilities. This road was opened by Condorcet,¹ and mainly followed by him. Other geometers pursued his path and shared his hopes, but added nothing essential to his labours, at least under the philosophical aspect. All agreed in regarding this method as the only one adapted to impress a positive character on politics.

Mathematical attempt to found the science of Positive Politics—Condorcet.

The considerations developed in this chapter seem to me to establish sufficiently that the application of mathematical analysis is in no degree necessary to render politics a positive science. We cannot, however, stop here, for it is easy to see that such a mode of regarding social science is purely chimerical and consequently altogether erroneous.

Were it our business to examine here in detail the works of this sort

¹ Such a project on the part of Condorcet proves, as we have seen in our previous inquiry, that he was far from having clearly conceived the fundamental importance of the History of Civilisation. For, had he discerned in the philosophic observation of the past the method of rendering social science positive, he would not have sought this elsewhere.

hitherto executed, we could easily prove that they have added no idea of any value to the mass of acquired knowledge. For example, we should find that the efforts of geometers to press the Calculus of Probabilities beyond its legitimate scope, have only resulted in offering, after long and troublesome calculations, some almost trivial propositions as to the theory of certainty, the truth of which is perceived at once by every man of good sense. But we must confine our examination to the enterprise itself regarded in its greatest generality.

In the first place the considerations by which several physiologists, especially Richat, have shown the entire impossibility, generally speaking, of any real and important application of Mathematical Analysis to the phenomena of organised bodies, are, in a direct and special manner applicable to moral and political phenomena, which are only a particular development of the former.

These considerations are based on the fact that the most indispensable preliminary condition of bringing phenomena within mathematical laws is that their degrees of quantity be fixed. Now in all physiological phenomena every result, whether partial or total, is subject to vast changes in quantity, which succeed each other with the greatest rapidity and in the most irregular manner, under the influence of a multitude of different causes not susceptible of any precise estimate. This extreme variability is one of the leading characteristics of the phenomena peculiar to organised bodies, and constitutes one of the broadest differences between them and unorganised bodies. It manifestly excludes all hope of ever submitting them to real calculations, such, for example, as those relating to astronomical phenomena; the best fitted to serve as a type in comparisons of this sort.

Having laid down this proposition one can easily understand that this perpetual variation of effects,—resulting from the extreme complication of the causes that concur in producing them,—should reach its maximum in reference to the moral and political phenomena of the human race, since these are of all physiological phenomena the most complicated. They are in truth the phenomena of which the quantitative variations are the greatest, the most frequent, and the most irregular.

Weighing these considerations with due care, we may, without forming too low an opinion of human capacity, unhesitatingly affirm that, not merely in the present state of our knowledge, but when this has reached its highest conceivable range, every great application of Mathematics to Social Science is, and will remain necessarily impracticable.

In the second place, even supposing such a hope could be realised, it is incontestably true that in order to realise it, Political Science must first be studied directly, that is to say by endeavouring simply to coordinate the series of political phenomena.

In truth, admitting the high importance of mathematical analysis when rightly employed, we must not lose sight of the fact that it is nothing but a means to an end or a Science of Method. In itself it teaches nothing real; but only becomes a fruitful source of positive discovery when applied to observed phenomena.

Within the sphere of those phenomena which admit of its being applied the application can never take place immediately. It always assumes, in the corresponding science, a preliminary degree of cultivation and improvement, consisting in the knowledge of precise laws discovered by observation relating to the quantity of phenomena. So soon as such

GENERAL APPENDIX—THIRD PART.

laws have been discovered, however imperfect they may be, mathematical analysis becomes applicable. From that time analysis, affording a powerful instrument of deduction, facilitates the reduction of phenomena to a small number of laws, often to a single law; enables us to bring within its range, with the utmost precision, a multitude of phenomena which at first sight seem not to fall under it. In a word it establishes in the science a complete coordination, unattainable to the same extent by any other means. But it is manifest that any application of mathematical analysis, if attempted before this preliminary condition of the discovery of certain laws of quantity has been fulfilled, would be entirely illusory. Far from rendering any branch of knowledge positive, such a proceeding would only replunge the study of nature into the metaphysical domain by transferring to abstractions what exclusively belongs to observation.

Thus for example we can understand why mathematical analysis has been applied, with great success, to astronomy, geometrical or mechanical, to optics, to acoustics, and quite recently to the theory of heat, as soon as the progress of observation within these various branches of physics established exact and quantitative laws between their phenomena; though before these discoveries, such applications could have had no real basis. In like manner, again, even those chemists who are most deeply convinced of the possibility of applying, at some future day largely, yet in a positive spirit, mathematical analysis to chemical phenomena do not on that account abstain from this direct study. For they are well convinced that a long series of investigations, based on observation and experiment, are essential for arriving at those numerical laws without which such an application of analysis would want a real foundation.

The indispensable condition just indicated is the more difficult of fulfilment, and demands, in each science, a degree of progress and perfection all the greater in proportion as the phenomena are more complicated. In this way, astronomy became, at least in its geometrical portion, a branch of applied mathematics before optics, optics before acoustics, and lastly the theory of heat. So also chemistry in our day is very far from this state, if indeed it can ever reach it.

Estimating therefore, by these indisputable principles, the application of mathematics to physiological phenomena in general, and particularly to the social phenomena of the human race, we see that, even admitting such an application to be possible, it could in no way dispense with a direct study of social phenomena, which, on the contrary, it prescribes as a condition precedent to any mathematical analysis. Moreover, considering with attention the nature of this condition, we shall see it presupposes, as regards the physics of organised bodies in general, and social physics in particular, a degree of perfection which, even if attainable, could manifestly only be attained after ages of cultivation. The discovery of precise and calculable laws in physiology would indicate a degree of progress far beyond what is anticipated even by those physiologists who entertained the highest hopes of the future destiny of this science. In truth, for the reasons above pointed out, such a state of perfection should be regarded as being entirely chimerical, incompatible with the nature of the phenomena, and quite disproportioned to the real grasp of the human intellect.

The same reasons evidently apply, with still greater force, to Political Science, having regard to the greater complication of its phenomena. To imagine the possibility of one day discovering quantitative relations between

the phenomena of this science assumes that it can be perfected to such a degree that, even before it had reached that point of perfection, everything really interesting would have been discovered to an extent far exceeding all reasonable expectations. Thus, mathematical analysis would only become applicable at a time when its application could no longer have any real importance.

It results from the preceding remarks that on one hand the nature of political phenomena absolutely forbids all hope of applying to them mathematical analysis, on the other that its application, assuming it to be possible, could not raise politics to the rank of a positive science, since this presupposes the existence of political science.

Up to the present time, Geometers have not sufficiently attended to the great and fundamental division of our positive investigations, into the study of inorganic and of organised bodies. This division, which we owe to physiologists, is now settled on a basis that cannot be shaken, and is established more and more firmly in proportion as it is carefully examined. It limits, in a precise and unalterable way, the true applications of mathematics, even when extended as far as possible. We can establish as a principle the impossibility of extending mathematical analysis beyond the physics of inorganic bodies, the phenomena of which are the only ones which offer the degree of simplicity and consequently of fixity requisite for their reduction to numerical laws.

If we take into account how, even in the simplest applications of mathematical analysis, its progress is embarrassed when we endeavour to bring its abstract results sufficiently into harmony with concrete facts, it will be seen that its real sphere is rather exaggerated than underestimated by the principle above stated.

The idea of treating Social Science as an application of Mathematics in order to give it a political character, had its source in the metaphysical prejudice that outside of mathematics there can be no real certainty. This prejudice was natural at the period when all positive knowledge lay within the sphere of applied mathematics, and when in consequence everything not embraced by them was vague and conjectural. But since the rise of two great positive sciences, chemistry and especially physiology, where mathematical analysis plays no part, and which are not the less felt to be as certain as the rest, such a prejudice is entirely inexcusable.

Astronomy, optics, &c., are not positive and certain sciences because they are applications of mathematical analysis. This character belongs to them in their own nature. It results from their being founded on observed facts, and can only result from that, for mathematical analysis when isolated from the observation of nature has merely a metaphysical character. Undoubtedly, in the sciences to which mathematics are inapplicable, we should keep much closer to the line of simple and direct observation. Deductions cannot be prolonged so far with safety, because the means of reasoning are much less perfect. With this single difference and within proper limits, their certainty is as great. We obtain, no doubt, a less complete coordination, but one sufficient for the real wants of scientific application.

The chimerical search after an unattainable perfection could have no other result but the unavoidable retardation of the progress of the human mind; wasting great intellectual forces and turning the efforts of savants from their efficacious positive direction. Such is the definitive judgment

which, I believe, should be passed on attempts, past or future, to apply mathematical analysis to social physics.

A second attempt, and one in its nature infinitely less misleading than the preceding, but equally unattainable, is that which seeks to give a positive character to Social Science by treating it simply as a direct consequence of Physiology. Cabanis is the author of this conception, and by him chiefly it was elaborated. It forms the true philosophic aim of his celebrated work entitled, 'Relations between the Physical and the Moral in Man;' and will be so regarded by every person who has considered the general doctrine expounded in his work as organic and not purely critical.

Physiology
and the
science of
Positive
Politics—
Cabanis.

The considerations submitted in this chapter on the spirit of Positive Polity prove that this attempt, like the one last noticed, was, of necessity, misconceived. But we must accurately point out its error.

This consists in a disregard of that direct observation of the social past which should supply the fundamental basis of positive politics.

The superiority of man as compared with the other animals has, and in truth can have, no other cause than the relative perfection of his organisation. Therefore everything that the human race has effected, and can effect, must manifestly be regarded as being in the last resort a necessary consequence of organisation modified in its results by external circumstances. In one sense Social Physics, that is to say the study of the collective development of the human race, is really a branch of physiology, or the study of man conceived in its entire extension. In other words the History of Civilisation is nothing but the indispensable result and complement of the Natural History of man.

But if it be important to understand thoroughly and never to lose sight of this incontestable filiation, on the other hand it is a complete mistake to draw the conclusion that it is unnecessary to institute any clear demarcation between Social Physiology and Physiology properly so called.

When physiologists study the natural history of an animal species endowed with sociability,—that of the beavers for example,—they rightly include the history of the collective action exerted by the community. They do not consider it necessary to establish a line of demarcation between the study of the social phenomena affecting the race and that of the phenomena which concern the individual. Such an absence of precise thought does no real harm in this case, although the two orders of phenomena are distinct. For, inasmuch as the civilisation even of the most intelligent among the sociable races is arrested almost at its commencement, mainly by the imperfections of their organisation, and secondarily by the preponderance of the human race, so short a series of connected facts offers no difficulty to the coordination of the collective phenomena with the individual phenomena. Thus the general ground for creating divisions calculated to facilitate study,—namely our intellectual inability to follow too long a chain of deductions,—does not here exist.

On the other hand, let us suppose the species of beavers to have become more intelligent, its civilisation developing itself freely, so that a continual chain of progress from one generation to another existed, we shall at once feel the necessity for treating apart the history of the Social Phenomena of the species. As to the earliest generations this study might be connected with that of individual phenomena. But in proportion as we receded from the commencement, the deduction would become more difficult of verifica-

tion, and at last impracticable. This is exactly what takes place in the highest degree with reference to man.

No doubt the collective phenomena of the human race, as well as its individual phenomena, must, ultimately, be traced to the special nature of its organisation. But the condition of human civilisation in each generation directly depends only on that of the preceding, and directly produces only that of the following generation. It is possible to follow this connection, as precisely as is requisite, from the beginning, if we only attempt to establish the immediate relations of the succeeding terms of the series. On the contrary it would entirely exceed our mental force to connect the later and earliest steps of progress if we suppressed all intermediate links.

The rashness of such an enterprise in the study of the race, may be illustrated by a reference to individual phenomena. Assume the case of a physiologist who, convinced that the different phenomena of the successive periods of life are simply the consequence and necessary development of the primitive organisation, should attempt to deduce with precision the history of any given vital epoch from the condition of the individual at his birth, and discard all direct examination of the different periods as not required for the comprehension of the developed state. The error is even more serious as regards the race than it would be in reference to the individual, seeing that the successive terms of the series are both much more complicated and much more numerous in the first than in the second case.

An obstinate perseverance in this impracticable course would not only render it impossible to study the History of Civilisation in a satisfactory manner, but unavoidably lead us into fundamental errors. For, owing to the total impossibility of directly connecting the different states of civilisation with the original and general starting-point as determined by the special nature of man, we should soon be led to attribute to the immediate action of secondary organic circumstances facts that really are remote consequences of the fundamental laws of our organisation.

Thus for example several distinguished physiologists have given an exaggerated importance to characteristics of Race as explaining political phenomena. They have attributed to them national differences, almost invariably due to the inequality of advance in civilisation. Hence the unfortunate error of treating what in truth is but momentary, as if it were unalterable. Such aberrations, of which it would be easy to multiply examples, and which are all derived from the same primitive error in the mode of proceeding, clearly confirm the necessity for separating the study of social from that of ordinary physiological phenomena.

Mathematicians who have attained to philosophical conceptions consider the phenomena of the universe, both organic and inorganic, as embraced by a small number of immutable laws common to them all. On this physiologists with reason observe that, even supposing all these were one day perfectly known, the impossibility of making an uninterrupted series of deductions would necessitate the maintenance of the division between the study of living and that of inert bodies, which is now founded on the diversity of laws. The same reason is directly applicable to the division between social physics and physiology properly so called, in other words between the physiology of the race and that of the individual. The separation is, no doubt, much less marked, since the one is a secondary the other a primary division. But, allowing for this difference of degree, there is a similar impossibility of deduction.

The total insufficiency of this deductive mode of proceeding can be easily verified, if, in place of regarding it merely in relation to the theory of positive politics, we consider its bearing on the Practical Aim of this science, that is to say the determination of the system in accordance with which society should now be reorganised.

No doubt we can demonstrate from physiological laws what is the general state of civilisation most conformable to the nature of the human race. But it is evident from the preceding remarks that we cannot advance farther on this road. Such an idea taken by itself is merely speculative, and cannot practically lead to any real and positive result. For it does not enable us to know positively, how far the human race at present falls short of this point, the course that should be followed to reach it, or the general plan of social organisation corresponding thereto; all matters requiring a direct study of the history of civilisation.

If, notwithstanding, we seek to give a practical basis to this speculative and incomplete conception it becomes impossible to avoid the absolute. For the application of Social Science would thus consist in forming an unvarying type of vague perfection, without any distinction of epochs, after the model of conjectural polity. The conditions by which the excellence of this type is determined are certainly much more positive than those which serve to guide theological and metaphysical polity. But this does not change the absolute character inherent in such a problem, treat it as we may. Politics therefore can never become truly positive in this way.

Thus, whether from the theoretical or practical point of view, it is equally erroneous to conceive Social Science as simply a result of Physiology.

The true and direct relation between the knowledge of the Human Organisation and Political Science, as characterised in this chapter, consists in the fact that the former supplies the latter with its point of departure.

To physiology exclusively belongs the positive demonstration of those causes which render the human race competent to develop a constantly progressive civilisation, so long as the condition of our planet opposes no insurmountable obstacle. Physiology alone can mark out the true character and the general course of this civilisation. Lastly it alone can throw light upon the formation of the primitive aggregations of men, and deduce the history of the childhood of our race down to the period when this gave the first impulse to civilisation by creating Language.

Here naturally stops the office of directly physiological considerations in relation to social physics, which should then be based simply on the immediate observation of the progress of the human race. Beyond the point thus indicated the difficulty of deduction would surpass our forces, because thenceforward the advance of civilisation becomes much more rapid, so that the number of phenomena requiring coordination suddenly augments. On the other hand the office which physiology should perform in the study of the past of society would no longer be necessary, or required to supply the want of direct observation. For reckoning from the creation of language immediate data for tracing the development of civilisation exist, so that no gap occurs to mar the completeness of positive conceptions.

To obtain a complete view of the true office of Physiology in social physics we must add to the preceding remarks another consideration. As Condorcet truly felt, the development of the race,—being only the resultant

of individual development passing from one generation to another,—should, of necessity, present a general likeness to the natural history of the individual. Owing to this analogy the study of man, considered by himself, supplies certain means of verification and reasoning, as regards that of the race, of a kind distinct from those above mentioned, and which, though less important, have the advantage of embracing all epochs.

To resume, although the physiology of the race, and that of the individual constitute two sciences exactly similar in kind, or rather two distinct portions of a single science, it is nevertheless indispensable to conceive and treat them separately. It is necessary that the former should seek its basis and starting-point in the latter, if it would become truly positive. But it should then be studied apart, and repose upon the direct observation of social phenomena.

The attempt to place Social Physics exclusively in the domain of Physiology was natural, when no other way could be found of impressing the former with a positive character. But this error would be without excuse now that we can easily satisfy ourselves of the possibility of rendering Political Science positive by basing it on the immediate observation of the history of society.

In the second place, at the epoch when the study of the intellectual and moral functions was transferred from the sphere of metaphysics to that of physiology, it was difficult to avoid all exaggeration in ascertaining the true domain of physiology and not to include in this the investigation of social phenomena. The period of conquests cannot be that for assigning precise limits. Accordingly Cabanis, who was one of the chief cooperators in this great revolution, is specially excusable for his illusion on this head. But now when a severe analysis can and ought to succeed to the enthusiasm of the original impulse, nothing should any longer prevent our recognising the necessity for a division indispensably demanded by the weakness of the human intellect.

No real ground now exists for isolating, in the study of the individual, the phenomena specially called moral from the rest. The revolution which has bound them all together must be regarded as the most essential step that physiology has made as yet under the philosophical aspect.

On the contrary, considerations of primary importance demonstrate the absolute necessity of separating the study of the collective phenomena of the human race from that of individual phenomena; while establishing, nevertheless, the natural relations that exist between these two great sections of physiology. The endeavour to dispense with this necessary division would be an error, less serious indeed, but of the same sort as that, so justly combated by true physiologists, which presents the study of living bodies as a mere consequence of and appendix to that of inorganic bodies.

Such are the four chief attempts, made to the present time, to raise politics to the rank of the sciences of observation, and which, taken together, decisively prove the necessity and maturity of this great enterprise. Each, when specially examined from a distinct point of view, confirms the principles already set forth in this chapter as to the true mode of giving a positive character to politics, and consequently of forming with certainty the general conception of the New Social System which can alone terminate the existing crisis of civilised Europe.

We may then take it as demonstrated, both *à priori* and *à posteriori*,

that this great result can only be attained by considering Political Science as a special kind of physics based upon direct observation of the phenomena relative to the collective development of the human race. Its aim must be the coordination of the social past, and its result the determination of the system which the march of civilisation tends to produce in our time.

Social Physics a science based on the direct observation of the collective development of mankind.

This Science of Social Physics is, evidently, as positive as any other science of observation, and its certainty quite as real.¹ The laws which it discovers, being based on the *ensemble* of observed phenomena, their application deserves our entire confidence.

This science, like all others, possesses general resources for verification, even independently of its necessary relation with physiology. These resources are based on the fact that in the present condition of the human race, considered as a whole, all degrees of civilisation coexist on different points of the globe, from that of the New Zealand savages to that of the French and English. Thus the connection established by the succession of epochs can be verified by a comparison of places.

At first sight the new science seems to be reduced to simple observation, and wholly deprived of the help of experiment; yet this, as astronomy proves, would not prevent it from becoming positive. But in physiology, setting aside experiments on animals, pathological cases are really equivalent to direct experiment on man, because they change the habitual order of phenomena. In like manner and for similar reasons, the various epochs when political combinations tended more or less to arrest the development of civilisation should be regarded as real experiments in Social Physics, even better fitted than pure observation to manifest or confirm the natural laws which preside over the collective progress of mankind.

If, as I venture to hope, the considerations submitted in this chapter convince savants of the importance and possibility of founding positive political science in the sense above indicated, I shall offer in greater detail my opinion on the mode of executing this first series of operations. But I deem it advisable to repeat the necessity for dividing it into two kinds, the first embracing general conceptions, the second special investigations.

The first kind of investigations should aim at establishing the general progress of mankind, putting aside the various causes that may modify the rate at which civilisation advances and consequently all the differences between nations, however great these may be. The second kind of investigations should aim at estimating the influence of their modifying elements, thus drawing the final picture in which each nation shall fill the special position appropriate to its own development.

Both classes of investigations, but especially the latter, admit of various degrees of generality, the necessity for which will probably make itself apparent to savants.

The propriety of treating the first order of investigations before the second is based on this evident principle,—as applicable to the physiology

¹ Doubtless it is superfluous to refute the exaggerated objections presented by different authors, especially by Volney, against the certainty of historic facts. Even supposing these objections could be adopted to the extent urged by these writers, they would not in the least affect the most important and general facts, which alone need be considered in the study of civilisation.

of the race as to that of the individual,—that peculiarities should only be studied after establishing general laws. If this rule were disregarded, we should be obliged to forego the acquisition of any clear conception.

The possibility of proceeding in this way results from the fact that an adequate number of special points have in our day been sufficiently investigated to allow of our attempting their general coordination. Physiologists did not postpone the task of framing a conception of the *ensemble* of our organisation until all the special functions were known. It ought to be the same in Social Physics.

Social Physics, like Physiology, must advance from the general to the particular.

Stating the foregoing considerations with more precision, we see that they tend to establish the necessity for proceeding from the general to the particular in forming Political Science. Examining this precept in a direct manner, we easily recognise its truth.

The method pursued by the human mind in the investigation of the laws which govern natural phenomena under the point of view we are now considering presents an important difference, according as it occupies itself with the physics of inorganic or of organic bodies.

As regards the former branch, man forms an imperceptible portion of an immense series of phenomena, the entirety of which we can never, without great presumption, hope to grasp. As soon therefore as he begins to study these in a positive spirit, he must consider the most special facts in order gradually to raise himself to the knowledge of some general laws, which in turn become the starting-point for fresh investigations. On the other hand in the physics of organised bodies man is himself the most complete type of the *ensemble* of phenomena. Hence his positive discoveries of necessity begin with the most general facts, which afford him an indispensable assistance in studying a class of details the precise knowledge of which he is, by their nature, for ever precluded from ascertaining. In a word, in both cases, the human intellect proceeds from the known to the unknown; but in the first he rises from the particular to the general, because the knowledge of details is more accessible to him than that of the *ensemble*; while in the second, he begins by descending from the general to the particular, because he is more intimately acquainted with the whole than with the parts. The perfecting of these two sciences, viewed philosophically, consists in allowing each to adopt the method of the other, although the characteristic method must always have the preference.

Having considered this law from the highest point of view which positive philosophy affords, it admits of an easy verification by observing the development of the Natural Sciences down to the present day, beginning with the moment when each of them definitively ceased to possess the theological or metaphysical character.

In the study of inorganic bodies, considering only its main divisions, we find astronomy, physics, and chemistry at first quite isolated from each other, and afterwards becoming mutually related to such an extent that they now tend to become a single science. In like manner, considering each branch apart, we trace it springing from the study of facts at first incoherent, and gradually reaching the generalisations now known. It is only in astronomy and some sections of terrestrial physics that the human mind has as yet succeeded, to any great extent, in following a different course. It may even be said that in astronomy the original course has only been altered by the law of universal gravitation in a secondary degree, as regards the *ensemble* of phenomena, though in the most im-

portant way as regards ourselves. For it has not yet embraced, and, in all likelihood, never will bring within the sphere of its applications, the most general astronomical facts, namely the relations of the different solar systems of which we possess no knowledge. This remark, concerning the most perfect branch of inorganic physics, offers a striking verification of the principle above stated.

If we next examine the application of this principle to the study of living bodies its confirmation is equally evident. In the first place the general relations that connect the component functions of an organism are now assuredly better understood than the partial activity of each organ. In like manner, considered from a still more general point of view, the study of the general relations that exist between the various organisms, whether animal or vegetable, is, doubtless, more advanced than that of each special organism. In the second place the main branches of organic physics were at first confounded under one head. Only in consequence of the progress of positive physiology have we succeeded in analysing with precision the different general points of view under which a living body can be considered so as to found a rational division of the sciences upon these distinctions. So certain is this, that, having regard to the recent date when the physics of organised bodies really acquired a positive character, the distribution of its chief parts has not even yet been clearly settled. The above view is still more apparent in reference to savants than to the sciences, since physiologists are evidently less special in their investigations than the savants devoted to the study of inorganic bodies.

We may therefore consider it established, by observation and reasoning, that the human intellect ordinarily advances from the particular to the general in inorganic physics, but on the contrary from the general to the particular in organic physics; that, at all events, the latter science undoubtedly advances for a long while in this direction from the moment it assumes a positive character.

If, hitherto, the second part of this law has been ignored, if it has been assumed that, in every kind of research, the human mind, of necessity, proceeds from the particular to the general, this error admits of an easy explanation. The physics of inorganic bodies having been, as was natural, first established, the precepts of positive philosophy were naturally based on the observation of its progress. But the continuance of this error would be inexcusable, now that philosophical observation can embrace both orders of natural sciences.

Applying, then, to Social Physics, which is only a branch of physiology, the principle just demonstrated, it proves that in studying the development of the human race we must commence by coordinating the most general facts, descending from these to deductions of increasing speciality. But, in order that there may be no uncertainty as to this essential point, we shall do well to verify the principle directly for the particular case.

All historical works hitherto written, even the best of them, have merely had and could only have the character of *annals*; that is to say they described, in chronological order, a certain series of special facts, more or less important and correct, but always isolated from each other. No doubt considerations relating to the coordination and the filiation of political phenomena have not been wholly neglected, especially during the last half-century. But it is clear that this introduction of new ideas has not, as yet, remoulded the character of this sort of composition which still

wears the literary stamp.¹ As yet there exists no true *history*, conceived in a scientific spirit, that is to say aiming at the discovery of those laws which regulate the social development of the human race; the object of the series of investigations considered in this chapter.

The distinction thus pointed out suffices to explain why it was, almost universally, believed up to the present time, that in history we should proceed from the particular to the general, and why, on the contrary, we ought now to proceed from the general to the particular, under the penalty of obtaining no result.

For when we only endeavour to frame with accuracy general Annals of the human race, we should manifestly begin by constructing those of the different nations, which in turn can only be founded on provincial and civic chronicles or even on simple biographies. In like manner, in order to form complete annals of each portion of the population, it is indispensable to group a series of separate documents relative to each point of view under which they ought to be considered. In this way we ought, unquestionably, to proceed in order to collect the general facts that form the materials of Political Science, or rather the objects with which its combinations are concerned. But a wholly opposite course becomes indispensable, as soon as we aim at the direct formation of the science, that is to say, the study of the connection of the phenomena.

In truth, from their very nature, all kinds of social phenomena develop themselves simultaneously, and under the influence of each other, so that it is absolutely impossible to explain the course pursued by any of them, without having first formed a general conception of the progress of the whole.

For example, everyone knows, in our day, that the reciprocal action of the different European states is too important to allow of their histories being really separated. But the same impossibility is not less apparent, in reference to the different kinds of political facts subsisting in a separate society. Is there not a manifest connection between the advance of one science or art and that of the other sciences or arts? Is not the progress of the study of nature related to that of our command over nature? Are not both intimately bound up with the condition of the social organisation, and reciprocally? Therefore in order to ascertain with precision the real laws affecting the development of the simplest branch of society, we ought to reach the same degree of precision for the rest; which is evidently absurd.

On the contrary we should make it our primary aim to conceive, in its greatest generality, the development of the human race, that is to say to observe and connect with each other the most important advances it has successively made in different directions. Next we should endeavour gradually to impart to this picture an increasing degree of precision; subdividing, with greater distinctness, the lines of separate observation and the phenomena to be observed. In like manner in a practical point of view, the picture of our social future, at first determined in a general manner, by a primary study of the past, will become more and more detailed, in proportion as our knowledge of the antecedent progress of the human race increases. The final perfection of the science,—one which in all likelihood will never

¹ I am here only seeking to establish a fact, not to judge it. Besides, I am well convinced of the utility, and even of the absolute necessity, of this class of writings considered as preliminary operations. But it is equally certain that annals are no more history than collections of meteorological observations are physics.

be completely attained,—would consist, as regards theory, in conceiving with precision the Filiation which, from the commencement, connects the advances made by each generation with those of the preceding and succeeding generations, embracing the entire body politic, every science, art, and portion of the political organisation. As regards practice, such perfection would consist in a rigorous determination, embracing every essential detail, of that system which by the natural progress of civilisation ought to prevail as the Final Social System.

Such is the method strictly prescribed by the nature of Social Physics.

FOURTH. PART.

(November 1825.)

PHILOSOPHICAL CONSIDERATIONS ON THE SCIENCES AND SAVANTS.

The Law of
the Three
States.

IN whatever way we study the general development of the human intellect, whether according to the rational method or empirically, we discover, despite of all seeming irregularities, a fundamental Law to which its progress is necessarily and invariably subjected. This law consists in the fact that, the mental constitution of man, and every portion of it, of necessity, passes through three successive phases, the Theological, the Metaphysical, and the Positive or physical. Thus man began by considering phenomena of every kind as due to the direct and continuous influence of supernatural agents; he next regarded them as products of different abstract forces, residing in the bodies but distinct and heterogeneous; while he ends by viewing them as subjected to a certain number of natural and invariable laws, which are merely the general expression of the relations observed in their development.

All who have adequately studied the state of the human mind at the various epochs of civilisation will easily verify the correctness of this general statement. A very simple observation suffices to guide us to this verification now that the revolution has been effected in reference to the larger portion of our ideas. The education of the individual, so far as this is spontaneous, necessarily presents the same essential phases as that of the race and *vice versa*. Now at the present day everyone who is on a level with his time can easily see by his own experience, that he was during his infancy a theologian, in his youth a metaphysician, and has become a physical thinker in his mature age. The history of the sciences proves that the same has taken place in reference to the human race. But in addition to this fact, it is possible to explain why the formation of human ideas necessarily followed this course.

In order to comprehend this inevitable concatenation, we must consider the above law, like all other social facts, from a twofold point of view; under the physical aspect, as being inevitable and flowing from the natural laws of human organisation, and under the moral aspect, as being indispensable, and constituting the only mode adapted to the development of the human mind.

Under the first of these aspects the law is easily intelligible.

A natural and irresistible instinct disposes the human race to adopt theological before reaching physical philosophy. The personal action exerted by man on other beings is the only kind of which he comprehends the *modus operandi*; through his consciousness of it. He is thus led to conceive in an analogous way the reaction which external bodies exert upon

himself, and likewise the action they exert upon each other, of which he can only see the results. At all events he must conceive them in this way until the progress of observation has revealed the striking differences that separate these phenomena from his own. If, subsequently, he alters his conceptions on this subject, it is only because, having been dis-abused by experience and reflection of original illusions, he entirely renounces the attempt to penetrate the mystery which envelops the mode of producing phenomena,—all knowledge of their nature being for ever inaccessible to him,—for the mere observation of their effective laws. Even, at the present time, after all our advance in positive notions, if we endeavoured, in reference to the simplest phenomena to understand how the fact we name a *cause* engenders the other fact we name an *effect*, we should be unavoidably compelled to resort to images analogous to those which served as the basis of the primitive human theories: as Barthez, generalising an idea of Hume, has judiciously remarked.

Man, then, necessarily begins by regarding all the bodies which attract his attention as so many living beings, animated with a life resembling his own; but, generally speaking, more intense, by reason of their greater activity. Afterwards, continued observation leads man to convert this primitive hypothesis into another, less enduring one, that namely of a dead nature guided by a larger or smaller number of invisible superhuman agents, distinct and independent of one another, corresponding in attributes and authority to the kind and extent of the phenomena attributed to their agency. This theory, originally applied only to the phenomena of external bodies, is at a subsequent period extended even to those of social and individual man, so soon as our range of thought has embraced these. Then it is that Theological Philosophy begins to acquire real consistency and to influence powerfully the progress of the human mind.

But the inevitable and continued improvement of our knowledge of nature before long modifies and in the end destroys this system.

In truth, man has never been entirely in the theological condition. Some phenomena have always existed, so simple and regular, that, from the first, he could only consider them as subjected to natural laws, in the way which Adam Smith has well explained.¹ But such phenomena were at the outset neither the most numerous nor the most important. As to other phenomena, it may be said that man had recourse to theological explanations only so long as physical conceptions were impossible. Whenever they became attainable, he adopted them exclusively.

The first effect of the progress of observation was to dispose the human mind gradually to reduce the number of supernatural agents; attributing to one the operations which originally demanded several, according as the relations of phenomena acquired greater generality. This result, pushed as far as possible, finally simplified the theological system so far as to reduce it to unity.

From this period, the continuous action of the identical principle which at first guided the human mind from Fetichism to Polytheism, and finally from Polytheism to Theism, led him to confine the intervention of the great

¹ See in his Posthumous Works the 'Philosophical Essay on the History of Astronomy.' This work, too little known on the Continent, and generally insufficiently appreciated, is more positive in its character than the other productions of Scottish philosophy, those of Hume excepted. Remarkable in its day it may even yet be studied with great advantage.

supernatural cause within limits more and more narrow, always reserving its application for those phenomena whose laws remained unknown. As to all other phenomena, when the discovery of their laws permitted their accurate prediction, and consequently allowed man to regulate them more completely than theological theories could do, he discontinued, more and more, the employment of these in his habitual speculations and resorted increasingly to the deceptions which ministered more completely to his two grand necessities,—prevision and action. Finally, from the time that natural conceptions acquired sufficient extension and generality (that is to say in our own day), and embraced in their essentials all the objects of investigation really accessible to us, the human intellect, extending analogically to all, even unknown, phenomena, what had only been verified for a certain number, considered all of them as subject to physical laws, the discovery of which, with increasing accuracy, became thenceforward the only reasonable object of our speculative labours. From that time the Theological Method, which had not entirely ceased to be employed, was considered as inapplicable to our investigations, and the Positive Method began exclusively to direct the action of our intelligence.

Having thus considered this great revolution as inevitable, it is necessary to explain why it was indispensable to the development of the human reason. The Positive Method has in our day obtained so complete an ascendancy over the intellect that we find a difficulty in understanding why the Theological and Metaphysical Philosophy were at any period useful, far less necessary, as an instrument of research. They, but especially the former, are almost universally regarded as aberrations of the intellect, even by the small number of thinkers who perceive that they were unavoidable. It is, then, necessary to rectify our conceptions on this important point, since, if it be not explained, we could understand the law of the succession of the three philosophic ^{er}very imperfectly and in a way greatly to limit the extent and value of its applications. It is, without doubt, important to prove that the human mind has not continued down to our time in a state of madness; and that at each epoch it has constantly employed that method which was most favourable to its progress, at least as regards the general scope of its efforts.

Assuredly it cannot now be denied that observation of facts is the only solid basis for human knowledge. Taking this principle in its most rigorous sense, we may say with strict truth that no proposition which does not admit of being reduced to a mere enunciation of fact, particular or general, can have any real or intelligible sense. But it is no less certain that the development of the Imagination must precede that of Observation. The causes which necessitate this order in the education of the individual, render it still more indispensable in that of the race.

The positive method is the safest and even the only safe one; but it is, at the same time, the slowest, and for this reason quite unsuitable to the infancy of the human mind. If this be appreciably felt even when our intelligence has long been in full activity, we can easily see that it must have been so much more decidedly at the period of our earliest efforts. The mere possibility of such a method presupposed a series of observations, prolonged in proportion as the most elementary natural laws demand more time for their discovery. On the other hand, whatever may be asserted to the contrary, pure empiricism is impossible. Unless man connects facts with some explanation, he is naturally incapable not merely of combining and making

deductions from them, but even of observing and recollecting them. In a word it is as impossible to make continuous observations without a theory of some kind, as to construct a positive theory without continuous observations. It is therefore plain that the human mind would have unavoidably remained in a perpetual torpor, had it been compelled to defer all reasoning about phenomena until their relations, and the mode of investigating them, could be derived from observation. Accordingly the earliest advances of the human intellect could not be effected in any other way than the theological method, the only one susceptible of spontaneous development. It alone possessed the important property of presenting from the outset a provisional theory, vague and arbitrary, it is true, but direct and easy, which immediately grouped the primary facts and, by cultivating our faculties of observation, prepared the advent of a positive philosophy.

Were it possible here to enter into some details on this great subject, we should see clearly that the Theological Philosophy, as a whole, not only was indispensable for preparing the development of the positive method; but that its various improvements, the result of accumulating observations, by a necessary reaction contributed much to accelerate these. To mention only the most remarkable example, it is evident that unless Polytheism had risen to Theism, natural theories could never have developed themselves. This admirable simplification of theological philosophy reduced the action of the chief supernatural power, in each special case, to a certain general direction, the character of which was unavoidably vague. Thus the human mind was authorised, and even strongly impelled, to study the physical laws of each class of phenomena regarded as a mode of action of this power. On the contrary, before this epoch, since the positive investigation of even the simplest phenomena encountered so many special and minute theological explanations, every physical enquirer was unavoidably an irreligious person.

The necessity for pursuing this course becomes still more evident if we consider that the theological philosophy was, not merely the only one possible, but the only one adapted to the nature of those researches which of necessity first engaged the human mind.

Except by experience, based on the very exercise of his faculties, man could not learn their true limits. Originally he is always disposed to over-estimate their extent. This disposition is, at that time, singularly strengthened by his ignorance of natural laws, which gives rise to the hope of exercising over nature a power, so to speak, unbounded. In this mental state the only investigations which seem worthy of seriously occupying the human intellect are those relating to the origin and end of the universe, and all its phenomena. In truth they alone are fitted to do so. At first we are amazed to find such temerity united to such profound ignorance. Further reflection, however, shows us the impossibility of supplying a motive sufficiently energetic to engage and sustain the human intellect at its earliest stage in theoretical researches without the powerful attraction inspired by these vast problems, that seem to comprehend all others, and even without the chimerical hopes of indefinite power connected with their solution. Kepler had a lively sense of this necessity as regards Astrology in connexion with Astronomy, and Berthollet has made the same remark as to Alchemy in reference to Chemistry. But let the explanation have what value it may, the fact, itself incontestable, suffices to prove how completely the theological philosophy is alone adapted to the primitive condition of the human intellect. For the essential feature of positive philosophy is precisely that

of regarding all these great questions as insoluble by the human mind. Interdicting our intelligence from all enquiries into the first and final causes of phenomena, it confines its operations to the discovery of their actual relations. It is therefore evident that, had it even been possible, at the outset, to choose between these two methods, the human mind would not have hesitated to reject with disdain that which, promising little and in its nature slow, ~~harmless~~ ^{harmful} badly with the extent and eagerness of our intellectual requirements in their earliest stage.

The preceding reflections therefore prove that, having regard only to the Philosophic Conditions of the development of the human mind, it was long necessary to employ the theological method before taking for its guidance the positive method. But this necessity becomes still more evident, if we also take into account Political Conditions, no less indispensable than the former for the intellectual growth of mankind.

The spiritual development of man apart from his temporal development, as likewise the progress of the intellect apart from that of society, can only be separately studied by a mental abstraction; for these two movements, though distinct, are not independent, but, on the contrary, exercise a reciprocal influence indispensable to each of them.

It is not sufficient to state the general proposition that the cultivation of the intelligence is only possible in society, and by society. We should also recognise that the nature and extent of social relations at each epoch determine the character and rate of our spiritual progress, and reciprocally. For example, everyone now knows that no real and durable progress of the human mind is conceivable in a condition of society where each person is constantly obliged to provide his own subsistence. For in that state there can be no separation of theory and practice; the primary condition of mental development. But among pastoral, and even among agricultural populations whose mode of living has overcome the original obstacle, this fundamental condition is often far from being realised. It is further necessary that the social organisation should be sufficiently advanced to allow of the regular establishment of a class of men who, being freed from the cares of material production and of war, can dedicate themselves uninterruptedly to the contemplation of nature. In a word, on this head, as on many others of no less importance, the formation of human science presupposes a complicated state of society. But, on the other hand, no real and coherent society can form and maintain itself except under the influence of some system of ideas, fitted to surmount the opposition of individualising tendencies, always so strong at the outset, and to make these concur in maintaining a settled order. This essential function could therefore only be fulfilled by a philosophic theory which should dispense with that slow preliminary elaboration necessary for the development of real knowledge, but demanding the prolonged duration of a regular and complete political order. Such is the admirable character of the theological philosophy, as distinguished from all others. To it we must naturally ascribe the original establishment of all social organisation. Deprived of the powerful and happy influence which it alone can exert on men in the infancy of nations, we can imagine no permanent social classification fitted to sustain and stimulate, up to a certain point, the advance of the human faculties. From the point of view which we are now considering, what other influences but that of theological doctrines could, in the midst of a population of warriors and slaves, admit of and maintain the existence of a corporation simply occupied with intel-

lectual labours, far less secure to it a preponderance alike indispensable to its earliest operations, and to the stability of society?

¶Thus, having regard to the conditions, whether moral or political, of the development of the human intellect, we find that its activity, of necessity, began with theological philosophy, before reaching positive philosophy. It is easy to demonstrate, with equal certainty, that the human mind could only pass from one to the other by employing the Metaphysical Philosophy.

Theological and positive conceptions are too heterogeneous, nay too antagonistic, to allow of our intelligence,—which only advances by almost imperceptible degrees,—passing from one to the other without intermediate steps. Such intermediate steps have been, and could only be, metaphysical conceptions. These, belonging at once to theology and physics, or rather being nothing but the former modified by the latter, are by their very nature eminently fitted to second this operation, in which all their utility consists.

Theological philosophy, placing itself at the prime source of all phenomena, is essentially occupied in unfolding their efficient causes, while positive philosophy,—laying aside all search after *causes*, as being inaccessible to the human mind,—is exclusively occupied in discovering *laws*, that is to say, the constant relations of similitude and succession which subsist between facts. Between these two points of view is naturally interposed the metaphysical, which regards each phenomenon as the product of an abstract force peculiar to itself. This method is valuable from the facility it gives for reasoning on phenomena, without directly considering supernatural causes, which the human mind was thus enabled gradually to eliminate from its combinations.

In point of fact, it is by such a process that this change has been effected in all intellectual departments. As soon as the progress of observation enabled man to generalise and simplify his theological conceptions, in each class of phenomena the primitive Supernatural Agent was replaced by a corresponding Entity, to which thenceforward attention was exclusively directed. These entities were, at first, a kind of emanations from the supreme power. But, thanks to their indeterminate character, they were finally spiritualised so as to be no longer regarded as anything but abstract names for phenomena. This transformation took place in proportion as the increase of natural knowledge manifested the emptiness of such a mode of explaining facts, and at the same time permitted the substitution of another for it. Thus metaphysics became a mode of transition, at once natural and indispensable, from theology to physics. Its triumph is on one hand the unmistakeable sign, on the other the direct cause, of the decline of the former and the rise of the latter.

The above considerations clearly prove that theological and metaphysical theories constituted an indispensable preparation for the human mind; but they also show that these doctrines could have had no other destination since their development has only been a continuous and progressive advance towards positive theories. Their very fitness as guides for the infancy of human reason renders them powerless as guides for its mature state. Once the intellect abandons a theory, it is never again taken up. The vigour and influence of a method should be measured by the number and importance of its applications. Methods which produce no results are soon entirely abandoned. Now, seeing that during at least two centuries those

theologico-metaphysical methods, which presided over our earliest intellectual efforts, have become entirely sterile; seeing that the most exclusive and important discoveries, those which do most honour to the human mind, have, since this epoch, entirely resulted from the employment of the Positive Method, this fact alone clearly proves that to the latter must henceforward belong the exclusive direction of human thought.¹

While rendering full justice to the important and innumerable services of every kind heretofore rendered by theology and metaphysics, it cannot be concealed that our intellect is not destined to compose theogonies indefinitely, or for ever to content itself with logomachies. To acquire the most exact and complete knowledge attainable of the laws of nature, and thus to discover the influence which the human race is destined to exercise over the external world, such are the true and constant objects of the efforts of human genius when its preparatory education has terminated. Positive philosophy is, then, the definitive state of man, and should only cease with the activity of our intelligence. The interest with which it inspires us, its perfect harmony with our spiritual wants, are such, that, from the time of its earliest formation by the discovery of some great laws, the most distinguished intellects renounce, with singular facility, the seductive hopes of an absolute and transcendental knowledge offered by theology and metaphysics, and seek with ardour the pure intellectual satisfaction attached to real and precise science. In our day it is doubtless unnecessary to insist much on proofs of a tendency which manifests itself at every moment and in a thousand ways, even in the least advanced mind. Wherever positive conceptions have been placed in competition with mystical and vague conceptions, disgust with the latter has speedily manifested itself.²

From the considerations, then, above indicated, results the demonstration, theoretical and experimental, of the grand fact above enunciated: the human intellect naturally passes successively, in every department of its activity, through three different theoretic phases—the theological state, the metaphysical state, and the positive state. Of these the first is provisional, the second transitory, and the third definitive.

This fundamental Law should henceforth be, in my opinion, the starting-point of all philosophical researches about man and society.

Inasmuch as the theological and metaphysical doctrines still maintain some activity, or at least considerable influence, it is evident that this important revolution is not terminated. To what extent is it so? What remains to complete its accomplishment? This has now to be investigated.

The present is not the place for examining by what series of operations so great a change has been produced. It is sufficient to fix our ideas by

¹ Already at the end of the sixteenth century Bacon compared theological conceptions to virgins consecrated to the Lord, who had become sterile. In our time, he would assuredly have extended the comparison to metaphysical conceptions, the sterility of which is equally evident.

² Language which, historically considered, presents a faithful picture of the human intellect, furnishes us with clear proof of this. The word 'science,' which, at first, was applied only to theologico-metaphysical speculations, and subsequently to the researches of pure erudition which they engendered in our day, when employed without qualification, imports, even in common acceptation, only the positive branches of knowledge. Whenever another signification is sought to be imposed upon this word, it becomes necessary to have recourse to periphrases, the use of which clearly proves that, in the view of the existing public, true knowledge alone consists in positive conceptions.

noting a fact. It is to the movement of the human intellect, determined by the precepts of Bacon, the conceptions of Descartes, and the discoveries of Galileo,—a movement which was itself only the final and inevitable result of all the anterior labours,—that we must refer the direct origin of a truly positive philosophy, that is to say, of a philosophy disengaged from that theologico-metaphysical alloy which had theretofore more or less debased natural theories.

During the two centuries elapsed since this memorable epoch the various branches of knowledge have at last reached the positive state. But if, for our present object, it is of little consequence how this transformation has been effected, it is on the other hand very important to remark carefully in what order our different kinds of ideas have been transformed; since this notion is indispensably necessary for completing our knowledge of the law above stated.

On this head a very simple and natural course is observable.

Our different conceptions have successively become positive in the same order in which they became, first theological, then metaphysical. This order corresponds to the degree of facility which the study of the correlative phenomena presents. It is determined by their greater or less complication, their greater or less dependence, their degree of speciality, and their more or less direct connection with man—four grounds, which, though each exerting its distinct influence, are at bottom inseparable. Here, then, we have the classification which is dictated by the nature of the phenomena, such as we now know them to be.

The Classification of the Sciences.

Astronomical phenomena are at once the most simple, the most general, and the most remote from man: they influence all the rest without being influenced by them, at least in any degree appreciable by us; they obey one law only, the most universal in nature, that of gravitation. After them come the phenomena of terrestrial physics properly so called, which are mixed up with the preceding class and besides obey special laws more limited in their results. Next come chemical phenomena, dependent on both of the preceding, and in which we discover a fresh series of laws, concerning affinities, less extensive in their range. Lastly come physiological phenomena in which we observe all the laws of physics, celestial and terrestrial, and of chemistry, but modified by other laws peculiar to themselves, the sphere of which is still more limited.

From this simple exposition it follows that our conceptions, assuming one or other of the three general forms above designated, may have acquired a considerable extension in reference to the inferior portions of the encyclopædic scale without having developed themselves in reference to the higher. The former conceptions are independent of the latter; while, on the other hand, they cannot have been formed as to the higher phenomena, without having first acquired a certain degree of consistency with respect to the lower, the influence of which must unavoidably be taken into account in every theory. This classification, therefore, inevitably determines the order of development of each of the three philosophies. The facts are in accordance with this theory, as it is easy to verify. The verification is more particularly easy as regards the positive philosophy, the recent formation of which, being naturally slower, presents more distinct intervals.

Observing, from this point of view, the progress of the human mind during the last two centuries, we perceive that Astronomy was the first to become a positive science; then Physics; next Chemistry; and, lastly, in our

own time, Physiology. Such is the present condition of intellectual development.

In order to ascertain with the necessary precision the exact stage which this great revolution has reached, we must, as regards the last science, distinguish between the portion which concerns the intellectual and affective functions and that which embraces the organic functions.

The Moral Phenomena were the latest of all to pass out of the domain of theology and metaphysics and enter into that of physica. This was, doubtless, conformable to the encyclopædic scale above laid down. But if this circumstance makes the transformation less apparent in reference to these phenomena, the fact is no less real, though as yet unobserved by the majority of thinking people. All who are truly on a level with their age, are aware that physiologists, in our day, study moral phenomena exactly in the same spirit as the other phenomena of animal life. Extensive labours have been undertaken in this direction, and pursued with ardour for the last twenty years; positive conceptions, more or less fruitful, have sprung up; schools have spontaneously arisen to develop and propagate such ideas; in a word, all the signs of human activity have unequivocally revealed themselves in reference to moral physiology. It would serve no purpose here to take a side for or against any of the views which divide opinion, as to the kind, number, extent, and reciprocal influence of the organs assignable to the various functions, whether intellectual or affective. No doubt, on these points the science has not yet definitively constructed its basis: only some generalities, inadequate though valuable, have been solidly established. But the very existence of this diversity of theory, evincing an uncertainty unavoidable in every young science, clearly proves that the great philosophic revolution has been accomplished for this branch of our knowledge, as for all others, at least in the intellectual vanguard of the human race, whose example is, sooner or later, followed by the masses. For, amidst their divergencies, the positive method is admitted on all hands to be that alone admissible. Everyone recognises that the only legitimate aim is the combination of the anatomical with the physiological point of view. Theology and metaphysics are, by common consent, eliminated from the question; at least they never play any important part, and, whatever may be the final result of the discussion, it can only diminish their influence. In a word, these discussions being confined within the domain of science, philosophy has no further concern with them.

I have particularly insisted on this last philosophical fact for two reasons. First, because it has hitherto been hardly observed and, not unfrequently, even disputed. Secondly because it furnishes to everyone who has rightly comprehended my classification of the sciences, at once a new proof, indirect indeed but unanswerable, and a clear *résumé* of the entire intellectual transformation.

Having thus shown by facts the point which the formation of positive philosophy has now reached, we must consider what remains to be done for its completion.

The natural series of phenomena furnishes, so to speak, of itself the reply to this question.

The four great classes of observation already established do not embrace, at least in express terms, all the points of view under which existing beings can be considered. We evidently miss the social point of view as regards beings which can be so regarded, and especially man. It is, however, equally clear.

that this omission is the only one. Thus we already possess celestial physics; terrestrial physics, mechanical and chemical; vegetable physics; animal physics. We still need one physical science,—social physics,—in order to complete the natural sciences. This condition once fulfilled, we can, resuming all our various conceptions, at last construct a true Positive Philosophy, capable of satisfying every real requirement of our intelligence. Thenceforward the human intellect will be no longer obliged to recur on any subject to the theological or the metaphysical method, which, having lost all their utility, will cease to exist, except historically. In a word, the human mind will then have entirely completed its intellectual education, and can directly pursue its definitive destination.

Such are the important considerations which it is now my duty to develop.

My present limits do not permit me to characterise, completely, the spirit and method which specially appertain to this last branch of natural philosophy. To prevent all confusion I simply remark that I understand *Social Physics* to mean that science which occupies itself with the study of social phenomena,¹ considered in the same light as astronomical, physical, chemical, and physiological phenomena, that is to say as being subject to natural and invariable Laws the discovery of which is the special object of its researches. Thus it directly seeks to *explain*, as precisely as possible, the great phenomena of the development of the human race, under all its essential aspects, that is to discover by what necessary chain of successive transformations the human race, starting from a condition barely superior to that of a society of great apes, has been gradually led up to the present stage of European civilisation. The essence of this science consists in regarding the thorough study of the past as furnishing the true explanation of the present and a general indication of the future. Always considering social facts, not as subjects for admiration or criticism, but as subjects for observation, this science alone concerns itself with establishing their mutual relations, and appreciating the influence which each exerts on human development as a whole. In reference to practice, social science, setting aside all absolute ideas of good or evil institutions, considers them as being always relative to a definite condition of society and varying with it. At the same time, it considers them as always capable of springing up spontaneously by the mere force of their antecedents, independently of any direct political intervention. Its applications therefore simply aim at a demonstration of the various tendencies peculiar to each epoch in accordance with the natural laws of civilisation and observation. These general results become in their turn the positive starting-point for the labours of the statesman. He seeks simply to discover and institute the practical forms which correspond to the fundamental conditions in order to avoid, or at least, to soften as much as possible, the more or less serious crises, that spring out of the natural course of events, when this has not been anticipated. In a word, in

¹ Social phenomena, as belonging to man, are no doubt included under physiological phenomena. For this reason social physics must necessarily start from individual physiology and maintain continual relations with this science. Nevertheless, the former must be considered and cultivated as an entirely distinct science, by reason of the progressive influence of human generations upon each other. This influence, which in social physics is the preponderating consideration, cannot be rightly studied from the physiological point of view.

this as in every other order of phenomena, science leads to forethought, and forethought allows us to regulate action.

In order to make this general view really useful, I must add to the above description, unavoidably imperfect, of the nature of Social Science, a succinct intimation of the fundamental principle which pervades the Positive Method characteristic of this science. It is this—the intellect, in investigating social laws, must proceed from the general to the particular, that is to say, must begin by apprehending in its *ensemble* the entire development of the human race, distinguishing at the commencement only a very small number of successive states. Afterwards it must gradually descend, increasing the numbers of intermediate steps, with ever increasing precision, the natural limit of which would be the interval of a single generation in the coordination of the terms of this great series. Such a mode of proceeding is essentially common to all parts of the physics of organised bodies, but it is peculiarly necessary in Social Physics.¹

Social Physics
hitherto
unattainable
but now in-
table.

Such then, so far as I can here point out, is the nature of the new physical science, destined to complete the system of our positive knowledge. After giving this definition, which I consider indispensable in order to fix our ideas, it is easy to explain why this last branch of natural philosophy could not be sooner constituted, and why also it must inevitably begin in our time.

Social theories, even regarded under a purely philosophical aspect, necessarily preserved longer than the rest the theologico-metaphysical character, in accordance with the law of formation above established. For their phenomena manifestly occupy the last rank in our encyclopædic scale, as being at once the most complicated, the most special, the most immediately connected with man, and the most dependent on all the rest. It is undoubtedly inconceivable that the human mind should attain to positive ideas about social phenomena, without having first acquired a sufficiently extended knowledge of the fundamental laws of the human organisation. But this knowledge presupposes the previous discovery of the chief laws of the inorganic world. And these, moreover, directly influence the character and conditions of human societies.

Readers accustomed to the consideration of natural laws, will easily feel the extent and force of this universal and profound relation. To indicate only one very marked case, where, however, the relation is least obvious, it is easy to convince oneself that astronomical phenomena by their great generality exert a preponderating influence over social phenomena. Their laws could not be changed, in the slightest degree, without introducing a profound alteration in the nature and development of human societies. For example, who does not see that the movement of the earth, at first ignored and afterwards discovered, must have deeply influenced our entire intellectual system? It may even be said that the simplest circumstances affecting form or position, insignificant as part of astronomical order, possess a supreme importance in the political order. Let us suppose a variation of some degrees in the obliquity of the ecliptic, which would redistribute climate; a

¹ Besides, the nature of social physics may be easily apprehended if we consider it as established by the fundamental Law above expounded. For on this supposition the science has already come into existence. The discovery of this law, its truth being admitted, constitutes the first direct step in social physics; since it presents a primary link of the most general description, between the phenomena of society.

slight increase or diminution in the distance of the earth from the sun, changing the length of the year and the temperature of the globe, and as a probable consequence the duration of human life: or let us suppose many other similar modifications, astronomically speaking of very small moment; it is manifest that the course of human development must then have differed widely from its actual one. We can easily multiply similar hypotheses, of every sort, adapted to exhibit the real interdependencies of the various order of phenomena. They will readily show that the conditions of existence of human societies are in a necessary and continuous relation, not only, as is evident, with all the laws of our organisation, but with all the physical or chemical laws of our planet, and those of the solar system of which it forms a part. So intimate is this relation that, if any important change arose in even one of those numberless influences of every kind under the absolute dominion of which our societies exist, the development of the human race would be profoundly changed; assuming even the absence of any variations which might affect its existence.

It is therefore evident that social phenomena by their very nature could not be reduced to positive theories before a similar revolution had been effected for astronomical, physical, chemical, and physiological phenomena. Seeing that such a transformation has only been effected in reference to these last in our time, and is hardly yet commenced for moral phenomena, the theory of which is indispensable to social physics, it is easy to understand why this science has been hitherto unattainable.

This explanation becomes still more clear if we consider another circumstance altogether peculiar to social phenomena. In truth their positive study became possible only when the growth of the human race had reached a stage sufficiently advanced to disclose some natural laws of succession. If we endeavour to measure the influence of this condition it seems to me that the experimental basis of social physics could not have been sufficiently extensive had it not embraced the entire development of the human race down to our time. This conjecture is demonstrable to all who admit the law above stated; for this law could not manifest itself until the revolution it involved had been entirely undergone by the human mind, in reference to the greater part of our ideas. Now this brings us exactly to the epoch indicated by other grounds.

The same considerations which explain the causes that have hitherto hindered the positive method from extending itself to social theories prove, with equal evidence, that this latter part of the great intellectual renovation should necessarily be effected in our day.

The human intellect constantly tends towards unity of method and doctrine; this is its regular and permanent condition, every other being only transitory. We cannot employ habitually a certain method in the greater part of our combinations, without finally either renouncing it entirely or extending it to all the rest. The latter supposition is alone possible relatively to methods the superiority of which has been established by experience. It would therefore be self-contradictory to suppose that the human mind, after having raised itself to the power of reasoning in a positive way upon all astronomical, physical, chemical, and physiological phenomena, should always continue to reason theologically and metaphysically, as regards social phenomena. Whoever has studied the intellectual nature of man, will feel that it cannot be so. Inevitably, therefore, it must happen either that astronomy, physics, chemistry, and physiology will again become

metaphysical, and even theological, an absurd supposition; or that politics will become positive, a proposition assuredly certain.

A philosopher of the nineteenth century who more than any other fathomed the nature of the former condition of the human race, M. de Maistre, deeply felt the necessity for this alternative. He clearly saw that the development of the natural sciences tended radically to destroy the rule of theology and metaphysics. He realised that, in order to be truly consistent in his regret for the decline of the ancient system, intellectual and social, he must boldly ascend to those ancient times when mental unity was achieved by subordinating all our conceptions to supernatural philosophy.¹

Doubtless, seeing that all the positive sciences could not be simultaneously constituted, periods, more or less prolonged, must have existed, during which the human mind employed at one and the same time each of the three methods for a certain order of ideas.² Metaphysical philosophy, according to its practice, converting a transitory state into an immutable principle, has established as a maxim, a fundamental and absolute apportionment between theological and positive method, under the abstract names of Faith and Reason. But experience clearly proves that this doctrine has served no other purpose than that of extending the domain of reason at the expense of that of faith; and this in truth constituted the natural office of this principle of transition, itself long useful. In despite of this eternal truce between theology and physics the latter has always tended, more and more, to invade the entire system of our ideas, and its power in that direction has increased in proportion to the conquests already effected. As nothing now remains to be mastered by the positive method but social ideas, it is evident that it must end by embracing these also within its dominion; and that at no distant period, if we consider the immense power it gains by its exclusive dominion over all other classes of ideas.

The inference drawn from this consideration respecting unity becomes still more apparent when we examine the formation of the theological or metaphysical theory of social phenomena.

The superficial philosophy of the eighteenth century generally represented the theological doctrine of society as the work of unbelieving legislators, who saw in it an instrument of domination. Without here insisting on the revolting absurdity of such an hypothesis, which it is no longer necessary to refute, experience shows us that theological philosophy, in conformity with the general law of development established at the beginning of this essay, extended itself to social phenomena, and consequently became an instrument of organisation simply through the empire which it had at first acquired by affording an explanation of external nature, and of man himself. This explanation furnished the origin and fundamental condition of the general supremacy obtained by the theological system. The same

¹ Among other passages, see in the '*Soirées de Saint-Petersbourg*,' a very remarkable comparison between the character of ancient and that of modern science.

² This passing and unavoidable confusion is the chief difficulty in verifying the law above expounded. But the difficulty will disappear if we consider the encyclopædic classification already established, and observe that the three methods have never been simultaneously employed in reference to the same order of ideas.

Within my experience the fact of this coexistence of the three methods is in truth the only serious objection hitherto made to this fundamental law. Moreover, this objection has never been presented by any but persons who, though intellectually superior, were unacquainted with the positive sciences.

relation is always observable in the various forms which it successively assumes. For example, is it not apparent that, the human intellect having once risen to the idea of one great supernatural cause producing all the phenomena of the external world and the phenomena of individual man, could not but apply the same doctrine to the direction of societies? The same thing occurred when human conceptions became metaphysical. So soon as this transformation had taken place as to astronomical, physical, chemical, and physiological ideas, its prompt extension to political ideas might be foreseen. There is a connection, profound, though indirect, between the conceptions of Aristotle about terrestrial and celestial physics, the scholastic doctrines of the Middle Ages, and the social contract of Rousseau. The spirit is the same, extending itself to a new order of ideas. Therefore, since social theories have in fact always stood in close and necessary relation with those which concern other phenomena; since, again, the transformations that have hitherto affected the former have always corresponded to those experienced by the latter; the same course must repeat itself,—and that still more decidedly by reason of the greater discordance of methods,—as regards the advent of the positive spirit, which having embraced the phenomena of nature must inevitably extend itself to political phenomena.

In truth all the symptoms, general or special, which could mark such a revolution, have manifested themselves with an energy which leaves no doubt of its speedy accomplishment.

The absolute preponderance obtained, during the last century, by Metaphysical Philosophy in the region of social ideas is an incontrovertible sign of the complete decline of theology. On the other hand, the profound disgust generally displayed towards a Metaphysical Polity since the experience of the French Revolution, without however removing the ascendancy of theological doctrines, is no less certainly an indication of the approaching formation of a Positive Polity, alone capable of determining a universal assent by minds who will no more submit to the dominion of abstractions than to the authority of oracles, and refuse to yield any longer to aught but the force of facts.

We may even say that direct attempts, more or less complete, have already been made by the most distinguished thinkers to satisfy this new need of the human mind. Such, essentially, is the character of the works of the great Montesquieu. First in his work on the Romans, but above all in the *Spirit of Laws*, he endeavoured to connect political phenomena with each other and to seize the laws of their interdependence. This attempt was, doubtless, too premature to succeed, but the fact of its having been made clearly proves the tendency of the human mind. At a later period Condorcet, moving in the same direction, rose to a direct and final conception, proposing to himself the study of the successive developments of the human race: and although his work was an entire failure, it shows, no less, how deeply the want was felt. From the same point of view we may consider the efforts made in England during the last century to perfect history by imparting to it the character of scientific explanation, instead of the descriptive or literary character which had theretofore marked it. In Germany the works of Kant¹ and Herder on the philosophy of history, and subse-

* ¹ Kant, in a small work written in 1784, of which even the title is remarkable ('Introduction to a General History of the Human Race'), expressly laid down that social phenomena, like all others, should be regarded as reducible to natural laws.

quently the formation among Jurists of a school which regards legislation as always necessarily determined by the state of civilisation, manifest, with equal clearness, the general tendency of our age towards positive doctrines in politics. Every day a taste for the works which display this character is increasingly manifested; dominating even the spirit of party. The men who most earnestly endeavour to re-establish the empire of theology, unconsciously yielding to the genius of the age, make it a point of honour to employ chiefly positive considerations¹ in establishing their views.

The period has then at last arrived when the human mind, as the final result of all its previous labours, can complete the *ensemble* of natural philosophy, by reducing social phenomena, as all others have been reduced, to positive theories. The various preliminary efforts above pointed out indicate the necessity for this operation, and render it immediately practicable; but they leave it still to be effected. Such is the great philosophic effort reserved for the nineteenth century by the natural progress of our intellectual development.

When this work shall have been completed, or rather, sufficiently advanced to show that the human mind has irrevocably entered upon this new path, we can and should proceed to the construction of a general system of human knowledge, all the elements of which will then exist.

Both before and since the Encyclopædia of the Eighteenth Century, a number of attempts were made in this direction: but none of them have succeeded. Every day we see new ones arise which attain to no greater success, and serve no end but that of proving how strongly our intelligence needs to reduce its acquirements to order and unity. The worthlessness of all these efforts arises from the circumstance, that, the various branches of human knowledge being heterogeneous, it was necessarily impossible to combine them in a single system. At former periods it was possible to construct a theological or metaphysical encyclopædia. Thus, for example, all the systems of the Greek philosophers were, in their age, so many encyclopædias. When social physics have acquired some consistency, it will become possible to construct a Positive Encyclopædia. But to attempt, as has hitherto been attempted, the formation of an encyclopædia at once theological, metaphysical, and positive, is to aim at constructing an *ensemble* out of elements which mutually exclude each other. It is not surprising that enterprises so ill-conceived should have ended in throwing discredit upon such a project for all sound intellects. But such ought no longer to be the case when, social science having become positive, and theology, with metaphysics, having been expelled from their last asylum, the system of our ideas will be exclusively composed of homogeneous elements. Then it will be sufficient to resume the various kinds of knowledge corresponding to the different classes of phenomena, in order to discover their natural connection, and thus to form a true positive philosophy, much more complete and more closely united in its parts than was possible for the metaphysical and even the theological philosophy, which, being by their nature provisional, were never strictly universal.

This vast undertaking, which, without doubt, the present century will

¹ For example, the philosophical excellence, unquestionably great, of the work 'The Pope,' is essentially owing to the circumstance, that, by a grave self-contradiction, the author sought, as far as possible, to employ only positive reasoning, and has made a very secondary use of considerations drawn from theological and metaphysical philosophy.

see carried out, should be regarded as the last act and final aim of the great revolution begun by Bacon, Descartes, and Galileo. It is indispensable, as being the only possible spiritual basis of the new social state towards which the human race so strongly tends in our day; for as an *ensemble* alone can any doctrine obtain the leadership of society. So long as positive conceptions remain isolated; until they offer themselves to the mind as various portions of a single and complete system, they may possess a great importance in special cases, they may even obtain great advantages in a struggle against the political authority of theology and metaphysics; but they can never replace these in the supreme direction of social order. Doubtless the perfecting of our knowledge indispensably demands the establishment within the domain of science of a permanent division of labour, and even that the specialisation of each kind of researches should be pushed as far as possible. But it is equally incontestable that the social masses, which perpetually need all these different results at once, and which neither can nor ought to be preoccupied with this internal mechanism, can only be brought to adopt scientific doctrines as their habitual guides by seeing them presented as branches of one and the same tree. This condition is no less indispensable in reference to the scientific body itself, in order to impart unity and homogeneity to its political action, which will always be very weak unless concentrated. So long as this state of things shall subsist, theology and metaphysics, in spite of their manifest decrepitude, will still maintain, simply by virtue of their generality, a legitimate title to moral sovereignty.

Social Physics the indispensable remedy for our mental and moral Anarchy.

This last consideration brings us in another way to the necessity for social physics. In the reasonings hitherto employed I intentionally put aside the point of view of Social Order, the *raison d'être* in order to fix the attention solely upon the philosophic movement which actually could determine this change. But the conclusion deduced from this peculiar order of considerations is singularly fortified if we reflect, as we ought to do, on the great political wants of our existing society. I shall now confine myself to one general aspect of this important portion of the question, which I shall hereafter treat in detail.

Manifestly, society, regarded from a moral point of view, is in a condition of real and profound Anarchy, acknowledged by all observers, whatever may be their speculative opinions. This anarchy results, in the last resort, from the absence of any preponderating system, capable of uniting all minds in a communion of ideas. Positive conceptions have acquired an extension sufficiently great to annul, in fact, the political influence of theology, and even of metaphysics, without having as yet become sufficiently general to replace these in the spiritual guidance of society. As a result of this fundamental opposition, minds, no longer united by any real bond, diverge on all essential points, with that licence which unregulated individualism must produce. Hence the entire absence of public morality; the universal spread of egotism; the preponderance of considerations purely material; and, as a last inevitable consequence, corruption erected into a system of government, as being the only kind of order applicable to a population become deaf to all appeals made in the name of a general ideal and alive only to the voice of private interest. In order completely to terminate this disorder which, if it could last, must result in the entire dissolution of social relations, it is necessary to destroy its source, by bringing society back, in one way or another, to a state of unity. Now, this can only be

accomplished in one of two modes ; either by restoring to theological philosophy—for it is useless to speak of metaphysics, which is merely transitional—all the influence it has lost ; or by completing positive philosophy so as to make it capable of definitely replacing theology. To these simple terms we can now reduce the great social problem. If then we consider that the impossibility of re-establishing theology in the entire extent of its ancient dominion is demonstrated—and assuredly no one doubts this—no other solution is possible than the definitive formation of the positive philosophy. Our business is not to enquire whether that is advantageous or regrettable ; whether the operation is difficult or easy ; whether it requires a long or a short time. All such idle questions are put aside by one unanswerable observation : society has no other issue, we must then forthwith put our hand to the work. Besides, the other considerations here pointed out show that the last revolution needed to re-establish society on a sure basis of order, far from being beyond the existing forces of the human mind, as is supposed, has been so completely prepared by its antecedents, that it has now become inevitable.

Thus the formation of Social Physics, which, viewed intellectually, has been proved indispensable for a complete philosophical system, is no less necessary from a political point of view, as the condition of a homogeneous social education, itself the basis of a fixed and well-ordered hierarchy. These two essential conditions are, as is evident, complementary. For education and philosophy stand in close and necessary relation ; since it is impossible to develop a society otherwise than under the influence of some preponderating system of ideas. Social education was first theological, then metaphysical, because philosophy passed through each phase in succession. In our day it is at once ~~theological~~ metaphysical, and positive, because philosophy offers ~~three~~ three aspects in reference to different classes of ideas ; or rather, neither education nor philosophy now really exist precisely because three systems prevail which naturally exclude each other. Lastly in the new social era on which the human race is about to enter, philosophy, and consequently general education, ought to become entirely positive. These two great operations, the first of which should form the basis of the second, correspond to the same fundamental wants of our actual civilisation considered under two different aspects, the need of a doctrine and that of guidance.

In my judgment this work has already commenced, for I consider social physics as having, even now, come into existence ; and this point of view will always predominate in my philosophical labours. But I do not ask my readers to share immediately my conviction on this head. I merely desire to direct their attention to this natural and continuous progress of the human race, always more decidedly attracted towards positive philosophy. I hope to show them that the period has arrived when this revolution must unavoidably extend itself to social theories, and, finally, to satisfy them that its accomplishment is the only real way of reestablishing moral order in society, without attempting to raise any useless discussions as to the opportuneness or exact mode of this change.

The considerations here presented naturally lead us to study the Sciences under a new point of view.

In my estimation they are not simply the rational basis of the action of man upon nature. Their importance in this respect, although assuredly very great, is only indirect and secondary. It does not adequately account for

the profound interest which the human mind, guided by an admirable instinct, has always taken in the most abstract scientific theories, without any idea of material advantage; an interest which still subsists in full force, despite of the vicious preponderance accorded during the last three centuries to the merely practical point of view.

I consider that the Sciences, even in their actual condition, are directly and mainly destined to satisfy this fundamental need of our intelligence,—a system of positive conceptions as to the different classes of phenomena which can become the subject of our observations.

Viewed historically, the Sciences have emancipated the human mind from the tutelage of theology and metaphysics, which, though indispensable for its infancy, tended afterwards to prolong this indefinitely. Viewed in their present state, the sciences ought, by their methods and general results, to determine the reorganisation of social theories. Viewed with reference to the future, the sciences, once systematised, must constitute the permanent spiritual basis of social order, so long as our race shall continue to exist.

This general *résumé* presents the social existence of men of science under a point of view which departs from ordinary ideas. It remains then to develop it in order to take a complete grasp of the great moral revolution that now tends to realise itself in the human race.

The political history of Savants, regarded as a whole, presents three great epochs which correspond exactly to the triple condition—theological, metaphysical and positive—of human philosophy that forms the subject of our first article. I must here confine myself to a summary exposition of this new series of general facts.

The first social system under which the human mind was enabled to achieve real and lasting progress, was essentially characterised by the confusion of the temporal with the spiritual power; or, more accurately, by the complete subordination of the one to the other. To speak with still greater precision, it essentially consisted in the general and absolute preponderance of a Philosophic Caste, organised under the influence of theological philosophy.

Every primitive society, so far as its development is indigenous and spontaneous, manifests a natural tendency towards such an organisation. But this *régime* could not establish itself completely and acquire a great consistency in any countries but those where, by a favourable conjunction of climate and position,—which this is not the place to explain,—the theological philosophy was enabled soon to attain its complete development, and in consequence to gain an irresistible ascendancy over the other parts of the social system. These conditions were fulfilled in Egypt, in Chaldaea, in Hindostan, in Thibet, in China, and in Japan, to which we may add Peru and probably Mexico, some generations before the discovery of America.

Considering this state of society merely from an abstract point of view, one is especially struck by this profound character of unity and interdependence, which then so entirely predominated in the intellectual system. Never, since this period, did the *esprit d'ensemble* manifest itself to the same extent; and it can never again be realised except by the direct construction of the positive philosophy.

The primary cause of this absolute systematization doubtless lay in the homogeneity of human conceptions, then uniformly theological. But this cause, though operating universally, did not everywhere produce the same

The Political History of Savants harmonious with the Law of the Three States.

The Theocracies.

object, at least not in so eminent a degree. An organisation of the scientific body peculiar to this social state was also requisite.

By the mere existence of a Philosophic Caste it may be said that a regular and permanent division had been established between theory and practice. But in the first place, this division was incomplete in one very important respect, since it did not extend to social combinations; in the second place there existed no precise distribution of labour within the theoretical domain. Such is the special nature of this primitive scientific organisation.

That universality of knowledge, which is now so justly regarded as an ambitious chimera, then, on the contrary, constituted the dominant character of the members of the spiritual corporation. In the upper ranks of the hierarchy each minister of worship was at once astronomer (or rather astrologer), physicist, doctor, even engineer, and also a legislator and statesman. In a word the names of Priest, Philosopher, and Savant, which have since acquired such different significations, were then exact synonyms. The combination of these three characters is well marked in the person of Moses, whom we may consider as the best known type of this primitive condition of the human intellect.

It is easy to explain this pretension to universal knowledge, since it directly depends upon the same causes which produced the preponderance of the learned caste, and it is at least as inevitable. Granting that a given combination of physical causes has permitted human conceptions to attain, in certain countries, a development sufficiently rapid to allow of their being quickly systematised under theological inspiration, it manifestly resulted from this very rapidity that at the period of coordination the different branches of knowledge were too extensively to demand or to admit of a real and durable division.

But this unity of work is not only coincident and necessarily connected with the social supremacy of the learned caste, it also forms its strongest support. The credit obtained by the Priests as astronomers, doctors, and engineers was the basis of their political authority; and *vice versa* the power they enjoyed was an indispensable condition for the development of their scientific speculations.

We must seek in the nature itself of this spiritual organisation the true and fundamental explanation of the admirable vigour and consistency always so characteristic of this primitive social system, as compared with all societies that have since existed. In a society whose elements are so closely connected that no portion can be impaired without shaking the *ensemble* ought we to be astonished at the energy of resistance which has hitherto triumphed over all known forces? Accordingly this social state should be considered as the glorious epoch of the theocratic system. However real may have been its subsequent influence, we may say, without exaggeration, that after this period it continually declined. To this point therefore must the human race recede, if retrogradation were possible.

While recognising that the theocratic régime was at once the necessary consequence and the indispensable condition of the earliest advances of human intellect, we cannot disguise from ourselves the fact that this system, by its nature, tended to become a permanent and almost invincible obstacle to more extended progress. Whether there be a necessary incompatibility between the complete consolidation of the social system and its perfectibility, or whether, rather, the combination of these two qualities was merely

